

# The Palgrave Macmillan A History of Modern Indonesia since c.1200

M. C. Ricklefs

---

Fourth Edition



A History of Modern Indonesia  
since *c.* 1200

Fourth Edition

## ***Related titles from Palgrave Macmillan***

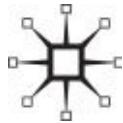
<b><i>A History of Malaysia</i></b> , 2nd edition	Barbara Watson Andaya and Leonard Y. Andaya
<b><i>A History of South East Asia</i></b> , 4th edition	D. G. E. Hall
<b><i>A History of Japan</i></b>	Kenneth G. Henshall
<b><i>A Short History of Asia</i></b> , 2nd edition	Colin Mason
<b><i>A History of China</i></b> , 2nd edition	J. A. G. Roberts
<b><i>South East Asia: Past and Present</i></b> , 4th edition	D. R. SarDesai
<b><i>The Rise of Asia</i></b>	Frank B. Tipton

# A History of Modern Indonesia since c. 1200

Fourth Edition

M. C. Ricklefs

palgrave  
macmillan



© M. C. Ricklefs 1981, 1993, 2001, 2008

All rights reserved. No reproduction, copy or transmission of this publication may be made without written permission.

No paragraph of this publication may be reproduced, copied or transmitted save with written permission or in accordance with the provisions of the Copyright, Designs and Patents Act 1988, or under the terms of any licence permitting limited copying issued by the Copyright Licensing Agency, 90 Tottenham Court Road, London W1T 4LP.

Any person who does any unauthorized act in relation to this publication may be liable to criminal prosecution and civil claims for damages.

The author has asserted his right to be identified as the author of this work in accordance with the Copyright, Designs and Patents Act 1988.

First edition published 1981

Second edition published 1993

Third edition published 2001

Fourth edition published 2008 by

PALGRAVE MACMILLAN

Hounds Mills, Basingstoke, Hampshire RG21 6XS and

175 Fifth Avenue, New York, N.Y. 10010

Companies and representatives throughout the world

PALGRAVE MACMILLAN is the global academic imprint of the Palgrave Macmillan division of St. Martin's Press, LLC and of Palgrave Macmillan Ltd. Macmillan® is a registered trademark in the United States, United Kingdom and other countries. Palgrave is a registered trademark in the European Union and other countries.

ISBN-13: 978-0-230-54685-1

hardback

ISBN-10: 0-230-54685-4

hardback

ISBN-13: 978-0-230-54686-8

paperback

ISBN-10: 0-230-54686-2

paperback

This book is printed on paper suitable for recycling and made from fully managed and sustained forest sources. Logging, pulping and manufacturing processes are expected to conform to the environmental regulations of the country of origin.

A catalogue record for this book is available from the British Library.

A catalog record for this book is available from the Library of Congress.

10 9 8 7 6 5 4 3 2 1  
17 16 15 14 13 12 11 10 09 08

Printed and bound in China

*Remembering*  
***Deborah***  
***(1977–2007)***

---

# Contents

*List of Illustrations*

*List of Maps*

*Preface*

*A Note on Orthography*

*Abbreviations and Acronyms*

## I The Emergence of the Modern Era

- 1 The Coming of Islam
- 2 General Aspects of Pre-colonial States and Major Empires, *c.* 1300–1500
- 3 The Arrival of the Europeans in Indonesia, *c.* 1509–1620
- 4 The Rise of New States, *c.* 1500–1650
- 5 Literary, Religious and Cultural Legacies

## II Struggles for Hegemony, *c.* 1630–1800

- 6 Eastern Indonesia, *c.* 1630–1800
- 7 Western Indonesia, *c.* 1640–1800
- 8 Java, *c.* 1640–82
- 9 Java, Madura and the VOC, *c.* 1680–1745
- 10 Java and the VOC, *c.* 1745–92

## III The Creation of a Colonial State, *c.* 1800–1910

- 11 Java, 1792–1830
- 12 Java, 1830–1900
- 13 The Outer Islands, *c.* 1800–1910

## IV The Emergence of the Idea of Indonesia, *c.* 1900–42

- 14 A New Colonial Age
- 15 The First Steps towards National Revival, *c.* 1900–27
- 16 Repression and Economic Crisis, 1927–42

## V The Destruction of the Colonial State, 1942–50

- 17 The Second World War and the Japanese Occupation, 1942–5
- 18 The Revolution, 1945–50

## VI Independent Indonesia

- 19 The First Democratic Experiment, 1950–7
- 20 Guided Democracy, 1957–65

- 21 Creating the New Order, 1965–75
- 22 The New Order at its Peak, 1976–88
- 23 The Challenge, Crisis and Collapse of the New Order, 1989–98
- 24 Reforming Indonesia, 1998–2004
- 25 Indonesia since 2004

***Notes and References***

***Bibliography***

***Maps***

***Index***

---

# List of Illustrations

Graves at the Trawulan site, East Java

Mosque of Wapauwe, Hila, Ambon, locally said to have been constructed in 1414

Caretakers at the grave of Sunan Giri, traditionally said to have died c. 1506, Gr̄sik, East Java

Mosque at Kudus, north coast of Java, dated AH 956/AD 1549, reflecting Old Javanese architectural styles

Grave site of Sunan Bayat, T̄embayat, Central Java; the gateway erected by Sultan Agung in 1633 is in the centre of the photograph

From a *wayang kulit* set made by Yogyakarta Sultan Hamēngkubuwana VIII (1921–39): the character Gathotkaca from the Javanese version of the *Bhāratayuddha*

Grave of Shaikh Yusuf Makassar (1626–99), Makassar, Sulawesi

Captain Tack depicted in Javanese theatre as a *wayang* ogre (left), and Surapati as hero (centre and right)

Batavia city hall, built in 1710, now restored in the older area of modern Jakarta

Old houses in the former Chinese quarter of Batavia, now a part of the modern capital city of Jakarta

Inside the *kraton* of Yogyakarta, established by Sultan Hamēngkubuwana I in 1755–6

The former residence of Governor General H. W. Daendels (1808–11), on Medan Mērdeka, Jakarta

President Sukarno (centre) with Vice-President Hatta (left) and Prime Minister Sjahrir (right), Yogyakarta, 1946

Al-Azhar mosque, Kēbayan Baru, Jakarta, built after independence and reflecting Middle Eastern influences

General Soeharto, 1966

Modern Jakarta, 1998

Modern mosque in Makassar, Sulawesi, built in the 1990s with a five-pointed '*Pancasila* style' roof

The 1998 riots: a devastated shopping street in the Mangga Dua district of Jakarta

President B. J. Habibie in 1999. Reproduced courtesy of Rex Features Ltd

Student banner at the Medical Faculty, University of Indonesia, central Jakarta, 1999, demanding reform, democracy, the rule of law and the prosecution of Soeharto

Vice-President Megawati Sukarnoputri with President Abdurrahman Wahid.

Reproduced courtesy of Rex Features Ltd

Street banners in Jakarta, June 1999. The upper banner demands that the investigation of former President Soeharto be stopped lest there be bloodshed. The lower banner urges people to give blood to the Indonesian Red Cross

Abu Bakar Ba'asyir, 2007

The wreckage of the Sari Club, Kuta, Bali after the October 2002 bombing. Reproduced courtesy of Rex Features Ltd © Sipa Press/Rex Features Ltd

The future President Susilo Bambang Yudhoyono and his wife Kristiani Herawati voting in the presidential election, July 2004. Reproduced courtesy of Rex Features Ltd © Luhur Hertanto/Rex Features Ltd

A lone mosque remains standing in an Acehnese village wiped out by the tsunami of 26 December 2004. Reproduced courtesy of Rex Features Ltd © Action Press/Rex Features Ltd

The Sidoarjo 'mud volcano' disaster, 2007

---

# List of Maps

The Indonesian archipelago

Sumatra and the Malay Peninsula

Java and Madura (*Part A: West*)

Java and Madura (*Part B: East*)

Bali and Lombok

Kalimantan

Eastern Indonesia

Archipelago topography

The Second World War in the Pacific, with dates of major Allied battle victories, 1942–  
5

---

# Preface

The first edition of this book was published in 1981. It is designed for those who wish to study the history of Indonesia since the coming of Islam. My aim is to provide a basic but detailed narrative of Indonesian history since c.1200, an introduction to the major issues of the period and a guide to the most important readings on the subject.

Indonesia's recorded history does not begin where this book begins, but about a thousand years before. The earliest inscriptions of the Indonesian archipelago are on seven stone pillars from Kutai in East Kalimantan, which on palaeographic grounds are dated to c. AD 400. Chinese references are also available from a very early time. Indigenous sources and Chinese records have enabled scholars to reconstruct much of the history of the pre-Islamic states of Indonesia, which included some of the major empires of the ancient world. One of the greatest of these, Majapahit, is discussed briefly in [Chapter 2](#) simply because it falls within the chronological limits of this book.

These pre-Islamic states were Hindu-Buddhist, and they left major literary and artistic legacies which, as will be seen in [Chapter 5](#), continued to be influential long after the coming of Islam. The social, administrative and political traditions of these states also had an abiding influence. This early period has many problems of evidence and interpretation and is in much need of further study. For this reason, I decided not to attempt to cover it in this book. Some important works on Majapahit are listed in the notes and references for [Chapter 2](#). On the other pre-Islamic states see Krom, *Hindoe-Javaansche geschiedenis*; Coedès, *Les états hindouisés* (in English as *Indianized states of Southeast Asia*); Wolters, *Early Indonesian commerce*; and van Naerssen's essay in van Naerssen and de Jongh, *The economic and administrative history of early Indonesia*. (For publication details the reader is referred to the bibliography at the back of the book.)

The period since c.1200 appears to me to make a coherent historical unit, which this book calls Modern Indonesian History. There are of course significant sub-periods within modern Indonesian history, as is reflected by the division of the book into parts and chapters. Three fundamental elements give the period historical unity. The first is cultural and religious: the Islamisation of Indonesia which began c.1200 and continues today. The second is topical: the interplay between Indonesians and Westerners which began c.1500 and still continues. The third is historiographical: primary sources for most of this period are written in the modern forms of Indonesian languages (Javanese, Malay and so on, rather than Old Javanese or Old Malay) and in European languages. Between c.1200 and c.1500 these elements emerged, and have remained ever since.

The writer of any general history must decide whether to give preference to broad

interpretative themes or to the detailed, and sometimes confusing, progress of events. My experience suggests that students find interpretative treatments more readable but less useful than detailed narratives. I also prefer a detailed narrative in principle, for if the basic evidence is presented, readers are more able to arrive at their own generalisations or to question others. I therefore decided that this book should give first place to the detailed historical evidence. There is no attempt here to impose any new synthesis upon Indonesian history, although of course my views are implicit throughout the volume.

This book gives the history of Java greater precedence than it may seem to deserve. There are four reasons for this. First, Java has received more historical study than the other islands and is therefore better known. Second, its people represent over half the population of Indonesia. Third, it has been the centre of much of the political history of both colonial and independent periods and exerted an influence over other areas greater than their influence outside their own regions; it thus carries greater significance for the history of Indonesia as a whole. And fourth, it is the area upon which all of my own research has concentrated and this personal element has naturally coloured the book. In this fourth edition, however, the coverage is less heavily Java-centric than was once true. Since the first edition of 1981, much progress has been made in the study of Indonesian history outside of Java and each new edition has sought to reflect that progress.

This fourth edition again aims to guide readers to the main themes and events in Indonesian history since the coming of Islam and to advise about the best sources for further reading. There have been amendments to most chapters, in some cases quite significant changes reflecting the contributions of new research. Everything on the period since *c.* 1999 has been substantially rewritten or is new. The bibliography has been substantially revised.

It is now difficult for any one scholar to stay on top of the subject matter covered in this book – eight centuries of history in the world's largest archipelago. Recent developments in Indonesia have exacerbated this problem, for the introduction of the policy of regional autonomy at the start of this century means that Indonesian history now becomes the history of over 400 highly autonomous areas. From being one of the most tightly centralised political systems in the world, within a few years Indonesia has gone to being one of the most decentralised – a recognition of its geopolitical realities. Each of these autonomous regions seeks its own identity within (and, rarely, outside) the larger Indonesian framework, has its own local interests and players, its own aspirations and problems. But that makes it all the harder for one mind to encompass the complexity that is now Indonesia.

Indonesia has also attracted more attention since the third edition of this book in 2001 because of its unhappy prominence as a site for Islam-inspired terrorism. This has itself produced a problem for anyone interested in learning more about this nation. There has been some good research done on terrorism in Indonesia but, unfortunately, also some poor, pedestrian and downright ignorant work by writers who seem seriously deficient in their understanding of either Indonesia or Islam. Terrorism seems to generate an intellectual parallel to Gresham's Law, with bad research driving good work out of the public gaze. Readers searching for high quality analysis would be well

advised to pay particular attention to the work of the International Crisis Group. Other good references are to be found in relevant sections of the Notes and References which follow [Chapter 25](#).

As always, I have turned to colleagues for advice in preparing this new edition. I am grateful particularly for the help of Associate Professor Tim Barnard, Dr Terance Bigalke, Dr Hans Hägerdal, Ms Sidney Jones, Professor R. William Liddle and Associate Professor Eric Tagliacozzo. None of them, of course, is responsible for the errors that may still lurk in this book.

I hope that readers of this edition will find it as useful as the previous ones, and perhaps even more so. As always, I have learned much from preparing this book and am grateful for the opportunities it has given me to broaden my own understanding of Indonesia – particularly of Indonesia beyond Java, on which my personal research continues to be focused.

***M. C. Ricklefs***

---

# A Note on Orthography

The various Indonesian languages that appear in this book sometimes have differing transcription systems or orthography. For all words and proper names in modern Indonesian languages, I have used a standardised spelling based upon the reformed Indonesian system of 1972. Old Javanese appears in the standard Sanskrit transcription. For words that exist in both Indonesian and regional languages, I have ignored regional spellings (thus, Indonesian *dalang* rather than Javanese *dhalang*). For the twentieth century, however, there are exceptions which are explained below. Since the 1972 system does not distinguish among the different pronunciations of the letter *e*, I have added *ě* to represent /ə/ (like the *e* in ‘fallen’). The character *e* is pronounced either /e/ or /ɛ/ (like either the *a* in ‘fate’ or the *e* in ‘set’). In some names which are commonly used in English, I have used a conventional spelling (thus, Malacca rather than Mělaka and Java rather than Jawa).

Consonants have generally the same value as in English except for *c* which is pronounced like the *ch* in ‘chair’ and *sy* which is pronounced like the *sh* in ‘share’. Vowels are also pronounced as in English, except for the *a* in Javanese words which is pronounced rather like English *o* when it appears in penultimate and final syllables without final consonants. Thus Mangkuněgara is pronounced ‘Mangkuněgoro’ but Mangkuněgaran is pronounced as it is spelled. As an aid to pronunciation, it is generally true that the stress in Indonesian languages falls upon the penultimate syllable.

As local scripts gave way to romanization in the twentieth century, a variety of spellings was used. In this book I have followed the principle of spelling personal names and publication titles as they were spelled at the time. Organisations, however, have been spelled according to the standard 1972 system unless there is a clearly established convention in modern scholarly works (thus, *Budi Utomo* rather than the correct form *Budi Utama*).

In the twentieth century, individuals used Dutch orthography and either pre-1972 or (now) post-1972 Indonesian orthography. Javanese commonly use *o* rather than *a* where the latter is pronounced ‘o’. The pre-1972 orthographies differ from the 1972 system primarily in using Dutch rather than English consonants: *tj* rather than *c*, *dj* rather than *j*, and *j* rather than *y*. Dutch orthography additionally differs in using *oe* for *u*. Thus, in the twentieth century the Javanese name Sujana (pronounced ‘Sujono’) might be spelled Soedjana, Soedjono, Sudjono, Sudjana, Sujana or Sujono. In the last two cases, there is no way of knowing whether this is a person named Sujana using the 1972 system or one named Suyana using the pre-1972 system.

For Arabic words, names and titles, a conventional transcription system is used.

Chinese names are given in Pinyin, but the first time a name is mentioned it is also given in the Wade-Giles transcription if this differs from Pinyin. Wherever I have been able to establish them, life- or reign-dates are given when an individual is first mentioned.

---

# Abbreviations and Acronyms

ABRI	<i>Angkatan Bersenjata Republik Indonesia</i> , Indonesian Armed Forces
AD	<i>Anno Domini</i> , the Christian era
AH	<i>Anno Hijrae</i> , the Islamic era
AJ	<i>Anno Javano</i> , the Javanese era
AMS	<i>Algemeene middelbare scholen</i> , General middle schools
ASEAN	Association of South East Asian Nations
b.	born
CSI	<i>Centraal Sarekat Islam</i> , Sarekat Islam Central (headquarters)
d.	died
DPD	<i>Dewan Perwakilan Daerah</i> , Regional Representative Council
DPR(–GR)	<i>Dewan Perwakilan Rakyat (-Gotong Royong)</i> , (Mutual-Cooperation) People's Representative Council
f.	Dutch florins/guilders
FPI	<i>Front Pembela Islam</i> , Islamic Defenders' Front
GAM	<i>Gerakan Aceh Merdeka</i> , Independent Aceh Movement
GDP	Gross domestic product
GNP	Gross national product
HIS	<i>Hollandsch-Inlandsche School</i> , Dutch–Native School
HTI	<i>Hizbut Tahrir Indonesia</i> , Indonesia Party of Liberation
ICMI	<i>Ikatan Cendekiawan Muslim se-Indonesia</i> , All-Indonesia Union of Muslim Intellectuals
IGGI	Inter-Governmental Group on Indonesia
IMF	International Monetary Fund ISDV <i>Indische Sociaal-Democratische Vereeniging</i> , Indies Social-Democratic Association
JI	<i>Jemaah Islamiyah</i> , Islamic Community (terrorist organisation)
JIL	<i>Jaringan Islam Liberal</i> , Liberal Islamic Network
KNIP	<i>Komite Nasional Indonesia Pusat</i> , Central Indonesian National Committee
LIPIA	<i>Lembaga Ilmu Pengetahuan Islam dan Bahasa Arab</i> , Institute for the Study of Islam and Arabic
MIAI	<i>Majlis Islam A 'laa Indonesia</i> , Supreme Islamic Council of Indonesia
MMI	<i>Majelis Mujahidin Indonesia</i> , Indonesian Holy Warriors' Council
MPR(S)	<i>Majelis Permusyawaratan Rakyat (Sementara)</i> , (Provisional) People's Consultative Assembly
MUI	<i>Majelis Ulama Indonesia</i> , Indonesian Islamic Scholars' Council
MULO	<i>Meer Uitgebreid Lager Onderwijs</i> , More Extended Lower Education (school)
NGO	Non-governmental organisation
NU	<i>Nahdlatul Ulama/Nahdlatul Ulama</i> , Rise of the Religious Scholars (organisation)

OPEC	Organisation of Petroleum Exporting Countries
OPM	<b><i>Organisasi Papua Merdeka</i></b> , Free Papua Organisation
OSVIA	<b><i>Opleidingschool voor Inlandsche Ambtenaren</i></b> , Training School for Native Officials
PAN	<b><i>Partai Amanat Nasional</i></b> , National Mandate Party
PBB	<b><i>Partai Bulan Bintang</i></b> , Crescent Star Party
PDI	<b><i>Partai Demokrasi Indonesia</i></b> , Indonesian Democracy Party
PDIP	<b><i>Partai Demokrasi Indonesia Perjuangan</i></b> , Indonesian Democracy Party of Struggle
PKB	<b><i>Partai Kebangkitan Bangsa</i></b> , National Awakening Party
PKI	<b><i>Partai Komunis Indonesia</i></b> , Indonesian Communist Party
PKS	<b><i>Partai Keadilan Sëjahtera</i></b> , Prosperous Justice Party
PNI	<b><i>Partai Nasional Indonesia</i></b> , Indonesian Nationalist Party
PNI-Baru	<b><i>Pendidikan Nasional Indonesia</i></b> , Indonesian Nationalist Education (party)
PPP	<b><i>Partai Persatuan Pembangunan</i></b> , United Development Party
PRRI	<b><i>Pemerintah Revolucioner Republik Indonesia</i></b> , Revolutionary Government of the Indonesian Republic
PSI	<b><i>Partai Sosialis Indonesia</i></b> , Indonesian Socialist Party
PSII	<b><i>Partai Sarekat Islam Indonesia</i></b> , Indonesian Islamic Union Party
r.	reigned
Rp.	Rupiah
Ś	Śaka era
SI	<b><i>Sarekat Islam</i></b> , Islamic Union
SOBSI	<b><i>Sentral Organisasi Buruh Seluruh Indonesia</i></b> , All-Indonesia Workers' Organisation Centre
STOVIA	<b><i>School tot Opleiding van Inlandsche Artsen</i></b> , School for Training Native Doctors
UN	United Nations
USSR	Union of Soviet Socialist Republics
VOC	<b><i>Vereenigde Oost-Indische Compagnie</i></b> , (Dutch) United East India Company

*I*

---

## The Emergence of the Modern Era

## **Chapter 1**

---

# The Coming of Islam

The spread of Islam is one of the most significant processes of Indonesian history, but also one of the most obscure. Muslim traders had apparently been present in some parts of Indonesia for several centuries before Islam became established within the local communities. When, why and how the conversion of Indonesians began has been debated by several scholars, but no definite conclusions have been possible because the records of Islamisation that survive are so few, and often so uninformative. In general, two processes probably occurred. On the one hand, indigenous Indonesians came into contact with Islam and made an act of conversion. On the other, foreign Asians (Arabs, Indians, Chinese and so on) who were already Muslims settled permanently in an Indonesian area, intermarried and adopted local lifestyles to such a degree that in effect they became Javanese or Malay or whatever. These two processes may often have occurred in conjunction with each other, and when a piece of evidence survives indicating, for instance, that a Muslim dynasty had been established in some area, it is often impossible to know which of these two processes was the more important.

There must have been an Islamic presence in maritime Southeast Asia from early in the Islamic era. From the time of the third Caliph of Islam, ‘Uthman (644–56), Muslim emissaries from Arabia began to arrive at the Chinese court. By at least the ninth century there were several thousand Muslim merchants in Canton. Such contacts between China and the Islamic world would have been maintained primarily via the sea routes through Indonesian waters. It is therefore not surprising that Muslims seem to have played an important role in the affairs of the great Sumatran Buddhist trading state of Śrivijaya, which was founded in the later seventh century. Between 904 and the mid-twelfth century, envoys with Arabic names came from there to the Chinese court. In 1282 the king of Samudra in northern Sumatra sent two emissaries with Arabic names to China. Unfortunately, the presence of foreign Muslims in the Indonesian area does not demonstrate either that local Islamic states had been established or that a significant level of local conversions had occurred.

The most reliable evidence for the spread of Islam within a local Indonesian society consists of Islamic inscriptions (mostly tombstones) and a few travellers’ accounts. The earliest surviving Muslim gravestone on which the date is clear is found at Leran in East Java and is dated **Anno Hijrae** (AH) 475 (AD 1082). This was the gravestone of a woman, a daughter of someone named Maimun. It seems, however, that this stone was not originally attached to a grave in Java, but instead arrived at the port town of Leran

having been recycled for use as an anchor on a ship from the Middle East. Since the deceased appears to have been a non-Indonesian Muslim, this stone sheds no light on the establishment of Islam among Indonesians.

The first evidence of Indonesian Muslims concerns the northern part of Sumatra. In the graveyard of Lamreh is found the gravestone of Sultan Sulaiman bin Abdullah bin al-Basir, who died in AH 608/AD 1211. This is the first evidence of the existence of an Islamic kingdom in Indonesian territory. When the Venetian traveller Marco Polo touched at Sumatra on his way home from China in 1292, he found that Perlak was a Muslim town, while two nearby places which he called ‘Basma(n)’ and ‘Samara’ were not. ‘Basma(n)’ and ‘Samara’ have often been identified with Pasai and Samudra, but this identification is open to question. It is possible either that ‘Samara’ is not Samudra, or if it is that Polo was wrong in saying that it was non-Muslim. For the gravestone of the first Muslim ruler of Samudra, Sultan Malik as-Salih, has been found, and is dated AH 696 (AD 1297). Further gravestones demonstrate that this part of North Sumatra remained under Islamic rule. The Moroccan traveller Ibn Battuta passed through Samudra on his way to and from China in 1345 and 1346, and found that the ruler was a follower of the Shafi‘i school of law. This confirms the presence from an early date of the school which was later to dominate Indonesia, although it is possible that the other three Orthodox schools (Hanafi, Maliki and Hanbali) were also present at an early time.

Two late-fourteenth-century gravestones from Minye Tujoh in North Sumatra appear to document the continuing cultural transition there. The two stones are in the same form, but one has an Arabic inscription and the other an Old Malay inscription in paleo-Sumatran (Indian-type) characters, both inscriptions being Islamic. They both date the death of a daughter of a deceased Sultan Malik az-Zahir, but although they have the same month, date and day of the week, they differ by ten years (AH 781 and 791/AD 1380 and 1389). It seems likely that there is an error in one of the years, that both inscriptions refer to the same woman and that she was therefore commemorated with inscriptions in two languages and two scripts. After this time, the documents from North Sumatra are wholly in the Arabic script.

From the fourteenth century survives evidence of the spread of Islam to Brunei, Tréngganu (in what is now northeast Malaysia) and East Java. An Arabic inscription on a tombstone from Brunei praises a dead ruler called both Sultan (Arabic) and Maharaja (Sanskrit) of Brunei; although the stone is undated, Chen argues that it must have been made in Quanzhou (Kwangchow), South China, and imported from there early in the fourteenth century, in any case before 1366. Another gravestone records in Chinese the death in Brunei in 1264 of a Chinese who was apparently a Muslim. The Tréngganu stone is a fragment of a legal edict. The date at the end appears to be incomplete, however, and the possible range of dates for this inscription is between AD 1302 and 1387. The stone appears to represent the introduction of Islamic law into a previously non-Islamic area, as is suggested by the predominance of Sanskrit over Arabic words, even for such an important word as God, which is given in one case as ***dewata mulia raya*** rather than ***Allah***.



*Graves at the Trawulan site, East Java*

A particularly significant series of gravestones is found in the East Javanese graveyards of Trawulan and Tralaya, near the site of the Hindu-Buddhist court of Majapahit (see [Chapter 2](#)). These stones mark the burial of Muslims, but with one exception they are dated in the Indian Šaka (Ś) era rather than the Islamic *Anno Hijrae* and use Old Javanese rather than Arabic numerals. The Šaka era was used by the Javanese courts from Old Javanese times down to AD 1633, and its presence on these tombstones and the use of Old Javanese numerals mean that these are almost certainly the tombs of Javanese, as opposed to foreign, Muslims. The earliest is found at Trawulan, bearing the date Ś 1290 (AD 1368–9). At Tralaya is a series of gravestones extending from Ś 1298 to 1533 (AD 1376–1611). These stones carry Qur'anic quotations and pious formulae. From the elaborate decoration on some of them and their proximity to the site of the Majapahit capital, Damais concluded that these were probably the graves of very distinguished Javanese, perhaps even members of the royal family.

These East Javanese stones therefore suggest that some members of the Javanese elite adopted Islam at a time when the Hindu-Buddhist state of Majapahit was at the very height of its glory. These were, moreover, the first Javanese Muslims of whom evidence survives. Since evidence is so scanty, of course it cannot be said with certainty that these were the first Javanese adherents to Islam. But the Trawulan and Tralaya gravestones certainly contradict, and therefore cast grave doubts upon, the view once held by scholars that Islam originated on the coast of Java and initially represented a religious and political force which opposed Majapahit.

The likelihood or otherwise of Javanese courtiers embracing Islam before Javanese coastal communities did so is influenced by one's view of the relative importance of traders and Sufis as the bringers of Islam; this issue is discussed below. There can be little doubt that Majapahit, with its far-flung political and trading contacts outside Java (see [Chapter 2](#)), would have seen foreign Muslim traders. The problem is whether its sophisticated courtiers would have been attracted to a religion of merchants. Mystical Islamic teachers, perhaps claiming supernatural powers, seem a more plausible agent of conversion in Javanese court circles, which had long been familiar with the mystical speculations of Hinduism and Buddhism.

When Islam began to be adopted among the communities of the north coast of Java is unclear. During a voyage of 1413–15, the Chinese Muslim Ma Huan visited the coast of Java. He reported in his book *Ying-yai shenglan* ('The overall survey of the ocean's shores', published in 1451) that there were only three kinds of people in Java: Muslims from the west, Chinese (some of them Muslims) and the heathen Javanese. Since the Trawulan and Tralaya gravestones show that there were Javanese Muslims at the court some fifty years before this time, Ma Huan's report suggests that Islam was indeed adopted by Javanese courtiers before coastal Javanese began to convert. An early Muslim gravestone dated AH 822 (AD 1419) has been found at Gr̄esik, one of the most important East Javanese ports. It marks the burial of one Malik Ibrahim, but since this gentleman was apparently not Javanese it merely confirms the presence of foreign Muslims in Java, and sheds no further light on the question of coastal Javanese conversion. Local traditions, however, say that Malik Ibrahim was one of the first nine apostles of Islam in Java (the *wali sanga*), a tradition for which there is no documentary evidence.

Around the beginning of the fifteenth century, the great Malay trading state of Malacca was founded. Its history will be considered briefly in [Chapter 2](#). Malacca was the most important trading centre of the western archipelago, and therefore became a centre for foreign Muslims and apparently a supporter of the spread of Islam. From Malacca and elsewhere survive gravestones showing this spread in the Malay Peninsula. The gravestone of Malacca's sixth Sultan, Mansur Syah (died (d.) AH 882/AD 1477), has been found, as has the gravestone of the first Sultan of Pahang, Muhammad Syah (d. AH 880/AD 1475). From Pēngkalan Kēmpas in Nēgēri Sēmbilan survives an inscription which appears to show that this region was in transition to an Islamic culture in the 1460s. The stone is in two parts, one written in Malay with Arabic script, and the other in Malay with Indian-type characters like those found on the Minye Tujoh inscription. The stone uses the Indian Šaka era, and apparently records the death of a local hero named Ahmat Majanu in Š 1385 (AD 1463–4).

Returning to North Sumatra, late fifteenth- and sixteenth-century graves document the establishment of further Islamic states there. The first Sultan of Pēdir, Muzaffar Syah, was buried in AH 902 (AD 1497), and the second, Ma'ruf Syah, in AH 917 (AD 1511). At the very tip of North Sumatra, the state of Aceh was founded in the early sixteenth century; it was soon to become the most powerful North Sumatran state and one of the most powerful states of the Malay-Indonesian area. The first Sultan of the Acehnese 'empire' was Ali Mughayat Syah, whose tombstone is dated AH 936/AD 1530.

Outside of Java, Sumatra, Brunei and the Malay Peninsula, there is no evidence of the adoption of Islam by Indonesians before the sixteenth century. It is quite clear, however, that Islam had spread to some points farther east, for near Jolo (in the Sulu archipelago, southern Philippines) there was a tombstone dated AH 710 (AD 1310) marking the grave of a Muslim who was apparently of foreign origin but who had become some sort of local ruler. Much later legendary sources from Mindanao and Sulu, the Islamic areas of the Philippines, describe the bringing of Islam by Arabs and Malays from the western archipelago. It seems probable that Chinese Muslims also played a role in the spread of Islam in this area.

Before the sixteenth century, the fragmentary evidence shows that the spread of

Islam began in the western archipelago. There does not, however, seem to have been a continuous rolling wave of Islam, with one contiguous area after another adopting the new faith. The evidence provides only a few brief hints of the process which was under way, but it was apparently complicated and rather slow. By the early thirteenth century, Islam was established in North Sumatra; in the fourteenth century in northeast Malaya, Brunei, the southern Philippines and among some courtiers in East Java; and in the fifteenth century in Malacca and other areas of the Malay Peninsula. A few gravestones or travellers' accounts can only provide evidence about the presence of indigenous Muslims in a certain place at a certain time. The fact that no evidence of Islamisation happens to have survived from other places does not necessarily mean that there were no Muslims there. And the surviving evidence cannot answer more complex questions – such as, for instance, how many of the people of Lamreh other than the ruler were Muslims in 1211, or how deeply the lifestyles or religious ideas of the first Indonesian converts were affected by Islam. As will be seen in subsequent chapters, Islamisation is a process which has continued down to the present day. It must not be assumed that once an area is known to have had a Muslim ruler, the process of Islamisation was complete. Indeed, this probably symbolises more the beginning than the end of Islamisation among the populace.

In the early sixteenth century, an extraordinary European source makes possible a general survey of Islam in the Indonesian archipelago. Tomé Pires was an apothecary from Lisbon who spent the years from 1512 to 1515 in Malacca, immediately after its conquest by the Portuguese in 1511. During this time he personally visited Java and Sumatra, and avidly collected information from others concerning the entire Malay-Indonesian area. His book *Suma Oriental* reveals a discriminating observer, whose descriptions are far superior to those of other Portuguese writers. It is full of invaluable material of many varieties, but in this chapter attention must be focused upon what Pires observed regarding Islam. His evidence cannot be presumed to be accurate in all details, of course, and the textual history of the *Suma Oriental* requires further research. But so much of what he wrote seems consistent with the other fragments of evidence described above, and his description is so free of obviously erroneous statements about the area, that it seems to stand as one of the most important documents on the spread of Islam in Indonesia.

According to Pires, most of the kings of Sumatra were Muslims by his time, but there were still non-Islamic states. From Aceh in the north down the east coast as far as Palembang, the rulers were Muslims. South of Palembang and around the tip of Sumatra up the west coast, most of them were not. At Pasai there was a thriving international trading community and Pires attributed the original establishment of Islam in Pasai to the ‘cunning’ of these Muslim merchants. The ruler of Pasai had not, however, been able to convert the people of the interior. Similarly, the Minangkabau king and a hundred of his men were reportedly Muslims, although the remaining Minangkabau people were not. But Pires said that Islam was winning new adherents daily in Sumatra.

The Sundanese-speaking region of West Java was not yet Muslim in Pires’s day, and indeed was hostile to Islam. Although Pires did not mention the name, this was the area ruled by the Hindu-Buddhist state of Pajajaran, concerning which there are hardly

any reliable records. The Islamisation of this area by conquest in the sixteenth century is discussed in [Chapter 4](#).

Central and East Java, the areas where the ethnic Javanese lived, was still claimed by the Hindu-Buddhist king living in the interior of East Java at Daha (Kediri). The coastal areas as far east as Surabaya were, however, Islamised, and were often at war with the interior, except for Tuban, which remained loyal to the Hindu-Buddhist king. Some of the coastal Muslim lords were Javanese who had adhered to Islam. Some were not originally Javanese, but rather Muslim Chinese, Indians, Arabs and Malays who had settled on the coast and established trading states. Pires described a process of Javanisation under way among these latter groups, who so admired the culture of the Hindu-Buddhist court that they attempted to emulate its style and were thereby becoming Javanese. The fourteenth-century gravestones of Trawulan and Tralaya discussed above, suggest that for its part the Hindu-Buddhist court was able, at least at times, to tolerate Muslims within its own circle. The warfare which Pires describes between coast and interior should not, therefore, be seen as necessarily a product of irreconcilable religious and cultural differences, for there was a process of cultural assimilation at work as Islam encountered the powerful high culture of Old Java. This process of assimilation and accommodation continued long after the vast majority of Javanese were at least nominally Muslim, and has made the Islam of Java rather different in style from that of Malaya or Sumatra. The warfare between coast and interior also continued long after both regions had adopted Islam, and its origins are probably to be sought more in the political and economic differences between the two areas which are discussed in following chapters. East of Surabaya, the Javanese coast was still pre-Islamic, and apparently Hindu, for widow-burning was practised. ‘Thus,’ said Pires, ‘they lose their bodies in this life and their souls burn in the next’ (Cortesão, *Suma Oriental*, p. 198).

In Kalimantan (Borneo), Pires reported that Brunei had a king who had recently become a Muslim. The rest of Kalimantan was non-Muslim, as were also the islands of Madura, Bali, Lombok, Sumbawa, Flores, Solor and Timor to the east of Java. The Bugis and Makassarese of South Sulawesi (Celebes) were also not yet Islamised.

Islam was, however, spreading in the ‘Spice Islands’ of Maluku in East Indonesia. Muslim Javanese and Malay merchants were established on the coast of Banda, but there was no king there and the interior still contained non-Muslims. Ternate, Tidore and Bacan had Muslim kings. The rulers of Tidore and Bacan used the Indian title raja, but that of Ternate had adopted the title of sultan, and the Raja of Tidore had taken the Arabic name al-Mansur.



*Mosque of Wapauwe, Hila, Ambon, locally said to have been constructed in 1414*

All the evidence taken together gives a general picture of the progress of Islam from the early thirteenth to the early sixteenth centuries. From a starting point in the north of Sumatra, it had spread as far as the spice-producing areas of East Indonesia. The areas where it was most firmly established were those that were most important in international trade: the Sumatran shores of the Straits of Malacca, the Malay Peninsula, the north coasts of Java, Brunei, Sulu and Maluku. Yet not all important trade areas had, on Tomé Pires's evidence, been Islamised. For example, Timor and Sumba, which produced sandalwood, were still non-Islamic. And the presence of international trade does little to explain why there should have been Muslim aristocrats at the court of Majapahit in the fourteenth century, or why Trëngganu is the earliest area of Malaya where Islamisation is documented. Some kind of link between trade and Islam is nonetheless apparent. The general timing of the beginnings of Islamisation can thus be established to some degree, but there remain important questions which have provoked considerable controversy. After several centuries during which foreign Muslims had been passing through or residing in Indonesia, why was it that significant Indonesian conversions began only in the thirteenth, and especially in the fourteenth and fifteenth centuries? Where did the Islam of Indonesia come from? And how did Islam succeed in becoming the majority religion of Indonesia?

To attempt an answer to such questions, some scholars have thought it appropriate to turn from the primary historical records discussed above to the Indonesian legends which record how Indonesians themselves told the story of their conversion. All these

legends are much later than the coming of Islam; although they may contain old stories, most of the texts are known only in eighteenth- and nineteenth-century versions. These are not reliable historical accounts, but in their shared emphasis upon the roles played by esoteric learning and magical powers, upon the foreign origins and trade connections of the first teachers, and upon a process of conversion which began with the elite and worked downwards, they may reveal something of the original events.

*Hikayat Raja-raja Pasai* ('Story of the kings of Pasai') is one such legendary source. The text is in Malay, but was copied at Děmak (North Java) in 1814. It tells how Islam came to Samudra; the gravestone of the first Sultan, Malik as-Salih, of 1297 was discussed above. In this story, the Caliph of Mecca hears of the existence of Samudra and decides to send a ship there in fulfilment of a prophecy of the Prophet Muhammad that there would one day be a great city in the East called Samudra, which would produce many saints. The ship's captain, Shaikh Ismail, stops en route in India to pick up a sultan who has stepped down from his throne to become a holy man. The ruler of Samudra, Merah Silau (or Silu), has a dream in which the Prophet appears to him, magically transfers knowledge of Islam to him by spitting in his mouth, and gives him the title Sultan Malik as-Salih. Upon awakening, the new Sultan discovers that he can read the *Qur'an*, although he has never been instructed, and that he has been magically circumcised. His followers are understandably mystified by the Sultan's recitations in Arabic. But then the ship arrives from Mecca. When Shaikh Ismail hears Malik as-Salih's Confession of Faith, he installs him as ruler with regalia and state robes from Mecca. Ismail goes on to teach the populace how to recite the Confession – that there is no God but God and Muhammad is His messenger. He then departs, but the Indian holy man stays behind to establish Islam more firmly in Samudra.

*Sějarah Mělayu* ('Malay history') is another Malay text known in several versions. One text carries the date AH 1021 (AD 1612), but this exists only in an early-nineteenth-century copy. As well as a story about the conversion of Samudra which is like that of *Hikayat Raja-raja Pasai*, this text contains a tale about the conversion of the king of Malacca. He, too, has a dream in which the Prophet appears, teaches him the Confession of Faith, gives him the new name Muhammad, and tells him that on the following day a ship will arrive from Arabia carrying a teacher whom he is to obey. On waking, the king discovers that he has been magically circumcised, and as he goes about continually repeating the Confession of Faith the rest of the court (who cannot understand the Arabic phrases) become convinced that he has gone mad. But then the ship arrives, and from it Sayyid Abdul Aziz steps down to pray upon the shore, much to the wonderment of the population who ask the meaning of his ritual movements. The king announces that this is all as it was in his dream, and the court officials thereupon join him in embracing Islam. The king now takes the title Sultan Muhammad Syah and commands all the populace to embrace Islam. Sayyid Abdul Aziz becomes the teacher of the king.

These two Malay texts are different from the Islamisation legends concerning Java which have so far been studied. Whereas the Malay texts see Islamisation as a great turning point, marked by the formal signs of conversion such as circumcision, the Confession of Faith and the adoption of an Arabic name, the Javanese legends do not present Islamisation as such a great watershed. This seems consistent with the evidence

discussed above, suggesting that a process of assimilation was at work in Java. But in Javanese stories, magical events still play a prominent role.

**Babad Tanah Jawi** ('History of the land of Java') is a generic title covering a large number of manuscripts in Javanese, which vary in their arrangement and detail, and none of which exists in copies older than the eighteenth century. These texts ascribe the first Javanese conversions to the work of the nine saints (*wali sanga*), but the names and relationships among these nine differ in various texts. It is impossible to reduce these variations to a list of nine persons upon which all texts would agree; indeed some manuscripts accept the convention that there were nine, but nonetheless proceed to list ten. The following names would, however, be fairly widely found in the manuscripts: Sunan Ngampel-Dēnta, Sunan Kudus, Sunan Murya, Sunan Bonang, Sunan Giri, Sunan Kalijaga, Sunan Sitijēnar, Sunan Gunungjati and Sunan Walilanang. A tenth *wali*, Sunan Bayat, is also often found.

The term *wali* which is applied to all these figures is Arabic (meaning 'saint'), but the title *sunan* which they all carry is Javanese. The origin of the latter is somewhat unclear, but it may derive from *suhun*, meaning 'to do honour to', here in a passive form meaning 'honoured'. Several, but not all, of the *walis* are said to have been of non-Javanese descent, and several are said to have studied in Malacca (notably Sunans Giri, Bonang and Walilanang). Several are also said to have had commercial connections, Giri as the foster child of a female trader, Bayat as the employee of a woman rice merchant, and Kalijaga as a grass salesman.

The **Babad Tanah Jawi** story of how Sunan Kalijaga was brought to the rightful path is instructive. It is notable that the formal signs of conversion (circumcision, Confession of Faith and so on) are so entirely absent that it is not in fact clear whether Kalijaga is already nominally Muslim at the time of his 'conversion'. In this story, Kalijaga is said to be the son of a Tumēnggung Wilatikta in the service of Majapahit, whose religious affiliation is unspecified. The young man, however, has the name Said, which is Arabic. Having lost at gambling, Said becomes a highway robber on the north coast. One day Sunan Bonang passes and is accosted by Said, but Bonang tells him that it would be much better to rob a person who will later pass by, dressed entirely in blue with a red hibiscus flower behind his ear. Said takes this advice, and three days later this other person appears. It is, of course, Bonang himself in disguise. When Said attacks him, however, Bonang turns himself into four persons. Said is so shaken by the experience that he gives up his bad ways and adopts the life of an ascetic. He takes the name Kalijaga, becomes a *wali* and marries a sister of Sunan Gunungjati.

**Sējarah Bantēn** ('History of Bantēn') is another Javanese text containing conversion stories. Most manuscripts of this chronicle are late nineteenth century, but two are copies of originals written in the 1730s and 1740s. As is the case with the **Babad Tanah Jawi** legends, there are many magical events here, but conversions are not very explicitly described and there is no emphasis on the Confession of Faith, circumcision and so on. The story of the origins of Sunan Giri is of interest. According to **Sējarah Bantēn**, a foreign holy man named Molana Usalam comes to Balambangan in the Eastern Salient (**Oosthoek**) of Java, an area where Islam was not in fact established until the late eighteenth century. The ruler of Balambangan has a daughter who is incurably ill, but she recovers when Molana Usalam gives her betel nut to chew.

She is then given in marriage to Molana Usalam, but when he also asks the ruler to adopt Islam the latter refuses. Molana Usalam therefore departs from Balambangan, leaving behind the princess who is already pregnant. When she bears a son, he is thrown into the sea in a chest, as in the story of Moses (which is found in *sura* XX of the *Qur'an* as well as in the Bible). The chest is fished out of the sea at Gr̄esik, where the boy is raised as a Muslim and later becomes the first Sunan of Giri. It is worth noting that, so far as is known at present, Malay legends are devoid of stories such as that of Balambangan, where the supernatural powers of a foreign holy man are insufficient to cause conversion.



*Caretakers at the grave of Sunan Giri, traditionally said to have died c.1506, Gr̄esik, East Java*

These kinds of legends cannot tell much about the actual events surrounding the coming of Islam, but they do at least reflect how later generations of Indonesian Muslims looked back upon Islamisation. There is a clear and significant difference between the Malay and Javanese legends, with Islamisation being a major turning point defined by clear outward signs of conversion in the former, but a much less clearly marked transition in the latter. There are also important consistencies between the two sets of traditions. Both reflect memories of the foreign origins of some of the early teachers, of magical events which attended Islamisation, and of the conversion process as something which began with the ruling elite of the area.

From the north coast of Java came two further documents which help to add substance to the story of Islamisation. These two manuscripts in Javanese contain Islamic teachings as they were being given in Java in the sixteenth century. Although neither manuscript is dated, both were brought back to the Netherlands by the first Dutch expedition to Java (1595–7) and therefore clearly pre-date 1597. Neither is a connected work of theology. One is a *primbon* (handbook) containing notes made by one or more students of some teacher. The other is attributed by G. W. J. Drewes to a teacher named Seh Bari, and contains considerations upon a series of disputed points. Both texts are orthodox, and both are mystical. That is to say, they do not reflect the austere legal interests associated with the four Orthodox schools of Islam, but rather the metaphysical considerations and ascetic ethos associated with the mystics of Islam, the Sufis, who by this time were accepted as part of the orthodox Islamic world.

The orthodoxy of these two manuscripts is significant. The Islam of Indonesia has

been full of heterodoxy and heresy, a fact which later encouraged major reformist movements in the nineteenth and twentieth centuries. These texts are therefore important for showing that entirely orthodox Islam was being taught, at least in some areas, from an early time. These texts do reveal some adaptation to Javanese surroundings. For instance, God is referred to with the Javanese term *pangeran*, and asceticism is described with the Javanese word *tapa*. Both texts use the Javanese script, which had originally developed from an Indian script, although in later centuries religious works in Javanese sometimes employed the Arabic script. These adjustments to the Javanese environment are, however, of little significance; the teachings of these texts could have been found in any orthodox mystical community in the Islamic world. The book ascribed to Seh Bari suggests that this orthodox viewpoint may not have been dominant throughout Java, for it has long passages attacking heretical doctrines. In particular, it denounces any identification of God and humankind, which is one of the worst heresies in Islam, although it is excellent Hinduism and a doctrine that has persisted in some Javanese Muslim circles into the present century.

G. W. J. Drewes proposes that a third Javanese manuscript, a 'code of Muslim ethics', is also to be dated to the early stages of Islamisation in Java. The antiquity of this text is, however, less certain than is true of the sixteenth-century *primbon* and Seh Bari works. The 'code' could be as late as the final wave of conversions in East Java in the eighteenth century. It is nonetheless valuable for depicting the strains in a society in the midst of Islamisation. Its author repeatedly denounces the practices of those who still cling to the traditional religion (called *agama Jawa*, 'Javanese religion'). This text, too, belongs within a generally mystical understanding of Islam, but there also survives an anonymous Malay-language manuscript dating from before 1620 which demonstrates that non-mystical Qur'anic exegesis was practised as well in the Indonesian region.

The evidence concerning the coming of Islam to Indonesia which has been discussed above does not easily lead to firm conclusions. It is for this reason that scholars have differed sharply in their views of Islamisation. One rather lengthy debate has concerned the area from which Islam came. Gujarat in northwest India has been one favoured candidate; Gujerati influence is suggested by the fact that the tombstone of Malik Ibrahim (d. 1419) at Gr̄esik and several stones at Pasai are believed to have been imported from Cambay in Gujerat. The Malabar coast of southwest India, Coromandel in southeast India, Bengal, South China and of course Arabia, Egypt and Persia have all been suggested as the source of Indonesian Islam. Too often this debate seems to presuppose an unjustifiably simplistic view of events. This was, after all, a process of religious change which occupied several centuries. In this chapter, only evidence for the initial stages has been examined, yet between the time of Sultan Sulaiman bin Abdullah's gravestone and Tomé Pires's account three centuries elapsed. The area concerned is the largest archipelago on the earth's surface, and at the time in question it was already involved in international trade. It seems highly improbable that the Islamisation of Indonesia can be explained with reference to only one source. Nor is it acceptable to consider only external sources, for it seems clear that Islam was introduced in many areas by Indonesians themselves, especially by Malay and Javanese Muslims travelling in East Indonesia and by Muslim rulers who conquered non-

Islamised areas. There is sufficient evidence to suggest that foreign Muslims from many areas and Indonesian Muslims themselves all played important roles in various areas at various times.

But the major question remains: why was Islam adopted by a significant number of Indonesians only in the thirteenth, fourteenth and fifteenth centuries? There was at one time a widely accepted stereotype which described Islamisation solely in terms of foreign traders who intermarried locally and formed Islamic communities in this way; these grew as Indonesians were attracted to the new faith, whose egalitarian ethos supposedly provided relief from the Hindu caste system. This idea is now, quite rightly, almost entirely rejected. There is no evidence whatsoever that there was anything egalitarian about Islam in practice; all the evidence in this chapter points to Islamisation from above, and none of the Islamic societies which will be discussed in subsequent chapters was in any sense egalitarian. Nor can the presence of traders alone explain Islamisation, for it seems certain that Muslim traders had been present in Indonesia long before significant Indonesian conversions began. On the other hand, conversion is inconceivable without trade, for it was the international network of commerce that brought Indonesians into contact with Islam.

The clear evidence of a mystical bias in much of Indonesian Islam has led to the suggestion that the Sufis were the primary agents of conversion. A. H. Johns is the main supporter of this argument, and he points out that the Islamisation of Indonesia coincided with the period when Sufism came to dominate the Islamic world, after the fall of Baghdad to the Mongols in 1258. He sees the Sufis, of all nationalities, as travelling to Indonesia aboard trading ships and there successfully propagating their more eclectic and less austere version of the faith. Although this view has much logical force, it does lack evidence, for no organised Sufi brotherhood is documented in Indonesia from this early period. On the other hand, there is of course little documentation to support any theory. Moreover, in India, where Islamisation also occurred within previously Hindu communities, some scholars have argued that Sufis were not normally the initial agents of conversion, but rather a second wave of Islam which deepened the orthodox commitment of already Islamised areas. This is similar to the role ascribed to the Indian holy man in the *Hikayat Raja-raja Pasai* story described above. And the Sufi theory seems irrelevant to those cases such as Tomé Pires described, where foreign Muslims settled and became Javanese, so that the question is more one of Javanisation than Islamisation. Nevertheless, the strong mystical strain in Indonesian Islam is perfectly clear in the two sixteenth-century Javanese religious texts and in later, better known, centuries. Mysticism is therefore clearly a part of Islamisation, but its precise role remains unclear.

Given the unsatisfactory nature of the evidence, great caution is essential in drawing conclusions. It seems clear that trade was an essential element in bringing Islam to Indonesia. It may also have been an incentive to conversion, for Indonesian rulers involved in trade may have thought it expedient to adopt the same religion as the majority of the traders. But traders are unlikely to have been intimates of the nobility of the Majapahit court, who would probably have regarded themselves as being far above merchants in social standing; they are more likely to have been influenced by learned Muslim mystics and holy men with claims to supernatural powers. And the problem

remains of explaining why conversions only began several centuries after Muslim traders had been known in the region.

Distinctions must probably be drawn between different areas of Indonesia. There were parts of Sumatra and the Javanese coast of which nothing is known before Islamisation; in some cases towns emerged here as a result of foreign Muslims settling, in other cases Indonesians living there may have been little influenced by Hindu-Buddhist ideas and were therefore attracted to Islam for the cultural paraphernalia it brought, such as literacy. But in the ancient centres of high culture this was not true: in Majapahit and Bali Islam met profound cultural barriers. Majapahit's cultural influence was such that even non-Javanese Muslims on the coast emulated its style. It is symptomatic of this difference that in North Sumatra there were sultans since the early thirteenth century, whereas no Javanese monarch is known definitely to have adopted that title until the seventeenth century. It would be wrong, however, to overemphasise the superficiality of Islamisation in Java. Although Islam had a very limited impact on Javanese philosophy, it altered some fundamental social customs: eventually all Javanese converts accepted circumcision and burial, for instance, in place of Hindu-Buddhist rituals such as cremation. Entrance into this new religious community was, thus, clearly marked. In Bali, for reasons which are not clear, the cultural barriers were insurmountable and Bali has remained overwhelmingly Hindu until the present day. In all areas of Indonesia, Islamisation was the beginning, not the end, of a major process of change. Eight centuries later, this process is still continuing.

One final point needs to be made. The debates about the relative importance of traders and Sufis, and about the foreign sources of Indonesian Islam, have obscured an important aspect of Islamisation. It is often thought of as a peaceful process, since there is no evidence of foreign military expeditions imposing Islam by conquest. But once an Indonesian Islamic state was founded, Islam was sometimes spread from there to other areas by warfare. Examples of this in sixteenth-century Sumatra and Java and in seventeenth-century Sulawesi will be seen in [Chapter 4](#). This does not necessarily mean that such wars were fought primarily in order to spread Islam; the roots of these struggles were perhaps more commonly dynastic, strategic and economic. But Islamisation often followed upon conquest. Islam was spread in Indonesia not only by persuasion and commercial pressures, but by the sword as well.

## ***Chapter 2***

---

# **General Aspects of Pre-colonial States and Major Empires, c. 1300–1500**

The political history of Indonesia in the fourteenth and fifteenth centuries is not well known, for the same reason that the process of Islamisation is so unclear – that is, the scarcity of evidence. But two major states clearly dominated this period: Majapahit in East Java and Malacca in Malaya. The former was the greatest of the pre-Islamic states of Indonesia; the latter was probably the greatest of the Muslim trading empires. Together they symbolise the transitional state of Indonesia in these centuries. Other states, such as the new Sultanate of Pasai, have left too little evidence to support historical reconstruction.

Before looking at Majapahit and Malacca, some of the general characteristics of pre-colonial Indonesian states must be considered. The evidence here derives from later centuries, but it is clear that certain general features of Indonesian states were constant for several centuries. In particular, the landforms and climate of the region had important implications not only for agriculture and trade, but for state formation as well.

Java has a chain of volcanic mountains forming an east–west spine along the island. Further mountains and highlands help to split the interior into a series of relatively isolated regions suitable for wet-rice cultivation. These rice lands of Java are among the richest in the world. The main avenues of communication in Java were the rivers, of which there are many relatively short ones. The only rivers suitable for long-distance communication were the Brantas and the Sala, and it is not surprising that the valleys of these two were the centres of major kingdoms. By the mid-seventeenth century, and probably before, there was also a system of roads in Java, with toll gates and permanent bridges. In the dry season (approximately March–September) the major roads were usable for heavy wheeled traffic. Roads, however, were more vulnerable to disruption than rivers. Brigands or local overlords could hamper the passage of traffic, during the wet season the roads could be impassable, and at all times considerable upkeep was needed.

Java thus consisted of pockets of population which were relatively isolated from one another. The population of Java in these early centuries is unknown. Reid has estimated that it might have been as high as 4 million in 1600, reaching 5 million by 1800, but this is highly debatable and, in any case, there is no reliable information to resolve the matter. Even if there was a population as high as this before the nineteenth century, Java

was still extremely underpopulated by twenty-first-century standards, and vast areas must have been uninhabited, thereby enhancing the isolation of the populated districts. Any major empire in the interior of Java required some form of central authority over several such isolated regions, a difficult task given the state of communications. Nonetheless, with the exceptions of Majapahit (see below) and Dēmak (see [Chapter 4](#)), the great empires of Java were primarily inland states. Difficulties of communication meant that overseas trade was not a major activity for such inland empires.

In the outer islands, states were formed in somewhat different physical circumstances. There, too, much of the land surface consisted of mountains, highlands and forest, and many coastal areas were swamps. The vast bulk of Sumatra as seen on a map does not reveal how little of its surface was populated. There exist no estimates of outer island population before the colonial period. Reid suggests that the population of the outer islands may have been as high as 5.8 million in 1600 and 7.9 million in 1800, but again there is no reliable information to support this. Whatever the case, by present-day standards this area, too, was underpopulated.

In most of the outer islands, states were formed in coastal areas suitable for rice agriculture. The attention of such states was directed to their hinterlands in so far as there was food or important trade products to be had, such as pepper, gold and so on. But the natural lines of communication for such states were outward, to the sea. The outer islands had few long-distance roads like those in Java to assist internal communication. Some rivers led into the hinterlands of these states, but navigation upstream was of course less attractive than sailing outwards to the sea. It will be seen in [Chapter 4](#), for instance, that as Aceh expanded its power down the east coast of Sumatra, its main competitor was not another Sumatran state but Johor, across the Straits of Malacca. Similarly, South Kalimantan states had less to do with the vast interior of that island than with the ports of North Java. And when the Bugis of South Sulawesi began their great emigrations in the seventeenth and eighteenth centuries, they did not march northward in Sulawesi but instead took to their ships. For the outer islands, the seas were their highways.

The states of the archipelago which are described in this and the following chapters were all involved in both international and domestic commerce, which produced much of their wealth. Throughout the archipelago traders dealt in bulk items such as rice, pepper and textiles. Java was Southeast Asia's largest producer of rice until the nineteenth century. Sumatra was the archipelago's main exporter of pepper, the great boom product from the fifteenth to the seventeenth centuries. Many high-quality textiles were imported into Indonesia from India and China, but there was also a substantial trade in textiles produced in the archipelago, particularly in South Sulawesi and Java (which was, again, the largest producer). Traders from outside Indonesia came particularly to acquire Indonesia's high-value forest products such as camphor and sandalwood and the gold of Sumatra and West Kalimantan. Above all, they sought the pepper of western Indonesia and the clove, nutmeg and mace of Maluku in eastern Indonesia – the crops which, as will be seen in the next chapter, did so much to attract the first Europeans to Indonesia.

Some observers have attempted to describe the clear distinction between the land-based states of Java and the seaborne states of the outer islands in terms of a differing

economic base. Java is seen as a ‘hydraulic’ society, where the base was wet-rice agriculture, and the outer island states as areas that depended primarily on external trade. This stereotype is not entirely satisfactory. The outer island states normally depended on wet-rice agriculture to feed their populations, although it is true that some of the largest trading states, such as Malacca, Aceh, Bantēn and Gowa, mainly fed their populations with rice imported from the north coast of Java. Indeed, the trading ports of northern Java were more a part of this seaborne trade system than of the interior Javanese empires, and they had vast rice-producing hinterlands and were major rice exporters. The major difference between these two types of state was the way in which physical circumstances directed their activities: outward in the outer islands, inward in Java.

Many similar conditions existed throughout Indonesia, and affected the economic and political life of pre-colonial states. In all areas there was limited population, and therefore a limited base for taxation and manpower for rice cultivation and armies. It was sometimes one of the aims of warfare, therefore, to deport the population of conquered territories to the area of the victor. The physical isolation of populated territories and poor communications meant that it was difficult to maintain centralised authority over several populated areas. In Java, the solution to this was a system of limited kingship, with considerable autonomy granted to regional overlords. Similarly, outer island empires were often obliged to give considerable autonomy to vassal lords. There was, therefore, constant tension within large states between regional and central interests, and all such states were fragile entities. There was also a limit upon the degree of oppression that was possible, for the existence of large uninhabited tracts made it possible for the population to move to a new area beyond their lord’s control if oppression reached intolerable limits. This is not to say that there was no oppression, for there was much, but certain limits were imposed upon it.

A central ruler had three major techniques available to maintain his authority. First, he could accord regional overlords and other potential opponents such as princes and regional leaders enough autonomy and direct benefits in the form of wealth, prestige and protection to make it worth their while to support him. Second, he could maintain a cult of glory about his person and court which appeared to reflect supernatural sanctions supporting him. Third, and most crucial of all, he must have the military strength to crush any opposition. All pre-colonial Indonesian states were founded ultimately on superior military power. Here the outer islands may have had some advantages. Although the pattern of monsoon winds made the open seas unusable in certain areas at certain times of the year, it was nevertheless probably easier to move a seaborne expeditionary force to a single target than to march a large Javanese army through difficult terrain over which other, potentially hostile, lords governed, and in which the troops could, if they wished, simply melt away. A successful ruler stayed on top of this precarious system by balancing and manipulating the interests of those below him, by demonstrating superior martial skills and by appearing to have the support of the supernatural. He created thereby a consensus of lesser notables in support of his authority. He also of course needed a network of spies to keep him informed and political marriages to tie the interests of others to his own future.

The two major states of the fourteenth and fifteenth centuries, Majapahit and

Malacca, will be considered rather briefly, for although both were extremely important neither belongs within the main themes of this book. Majapahit was a Hindu-Buddhist state, whereas the main concern of this book is the Islamic period of Indonesian history. And Malacca, although the most important state of the western archipelago, was located in what is now Malaysia.

The detailed history of Majapahit is not very clear. The main sources are inscriptions in Old Javanese, the Old Javanese text *Deśawarṇana* or *Nāgarakertāgama* written in 1365 (known only in later manuscripts), the Middle Javanese text *Pararaton* (known from later copies found in Bali) and some Chinese records. The reliability of all the Javanese sources was questioned by C. C. Berg, who argued that they were to be seen not as historical but rather as supernatural documents, to be understood within the context of politico-religious myths which the authors of these records were concerned to support. It was his view that these texts were not intended to record the past, but rather by supernatural means to determine future events. Professor Berg's ideas have, however, found little support from other scholars.

Berg's general scepticism towards all Javanese sources seems exaggerated, and some certainty is possible about the history of Majapahit. It is reasonably clear who were its rulers down to the later fifteenth century, and what sort of state it was in general. The rulers were as follows:

King Kērtarājasa Jayawardhana	AD	1294–1309
King Jayanagara		1309–28
Queen Tribhuwanā Wijayottunga Dewī		1328–50
King Rājasanagara (Hayam Wuruk)		1350–89
King Wikramawardhana		1389–1429
Queen Suhitā		1429–47
King Wijayaparākramawardhana		1447–51
King Rājasawardhana		1451–53

There was an interval of three kingless years, which may have resulted from a succession crisis. The Majapahit royal house now apparently split into two contending branches, and the tensions and conflicts between them may have lasted into the 1480s. The reign dates of two further kings are known:

King Girīsawardhana	1456–66
King Singhawikramawardhana	1466–78

Hayam Wuruk's reign was the golden age of Majapahit, and it was during his time that the *Deśawarṇana* was written. Thereafter, events become less clear. There was apparently a civil war in 1405–6, a disputed succession in the 1450s and a major princely rebellion in 1468. But the Majapahit royal line (or a branch of it) remained in power throughout. Later Javanese chronicles say that Majapahit fell to the Islamic state of Děmak in 1478. The rise of Děmak and the final collapse of the Hindu-Buddhist state in the interior of Java c.1527 will be discussed in Chapter 4. Here it need only be said that if Majapahit was conquered c.1478, it was not by an Islamic enemy.

The *Deśawarṇana* and the inscriptions make it possible to reconstruct something of

the style and influence of Majapahit in the fourteenth century. It claimed a form of authority over far-flung vassal states throughout Sumatra, the Malay Peninsula, Kalimantan and eastern Indonesia. Although this may have constituted something of an ‘empire’ in Indonesian terms, it is clear from the general physical constraints described earlier in this chapter that there was unlikely to have been any regular centralised exercise of authority by Majapahit over such areas. It appears to have been trade connections which mainly linked these regions, and at the Majapahit end this trade was probably a royal monopoly. Thus, Majapahit was both a land-based and a trading empire at once. It conquered Bali in 1343 and in 1377 sent a punitive expedition against Palembang in Sumatra. Majapahit also claimed relationships with Champa, Cambodia, Siam, southern Burma and Vietnam, and sent missions to China. The memory of Majapahit’s greatness has lived on in Indonesia, and it is sometimes seen as establishing a precedent for the present political boundaries of the Republic.

The capital was a grand affair, with great annual festivities. Both Buddhism and the worship of the Hindu gods Siwa (Śiva) and Wisnu (Visnu) were practised, and there was a union of these faiths in the person of the king, who was regarded as ‘Siwa-Buddha’ and ‘Nirguna’ to the Wisnuite. The *Deśawarṇana* makes no mention of Islam, although as was seen in [Chapter 1](#) there were apparently Muslim courtiers by this time. Although the detailed history of Majapahit requires further research, it was clearly one of the greatest of Indonesian states. Its Islamised successors looked back upon it with pride and attempted to depict themselves as its dynastic successors.

In the late fourteenth and early fifteenth centuries, the influence of Majapahit throughout the archipelago began to decline. At the same time, a new Malay trading state arose in the western archipelago. The precise origins of Malacca are disputed. It appears that a prince of Palembang named Parameswara fled after the Majapahit attack in 1377 and eventually found his way to Malacca c.1400. There he found a good port, accessible in all seasons and on the narrowest part of the Straits. With allies from the sea-people (*orang laut*), the wandering privateers of the Straits, he proceeded to establish Malacca as a major international port by compelling passing ships to call there, and establishing fair and reliable facilities for warehousing and trade. Malacca was probably the purest example of an Indonesian entrepôt state, for it had no significant products of its own; indeed, it had to import food to feed its populace. It quickly became an enormously successful port, for it had a stranglehold on the Straits, one of the most crucial stages of the international trade system which reached from China and Maluku in the east to East Africa and the Mediterranean in the west.

The main threat to Malacca from the beginning was Siam, but Malacca sought and received Chinese protection as early as 1405. Thereafter repeated Malacca missions to China, in which the first three kings themselves all joined, and visits to Malacca by enormous Chinese fleets commanded by the Ming dynasty’s Admiral Zheng He (Cheng Ho), continued until 1434. This obvious Chinese protection helped Malacca to become firmly established. In the mid-fifteenth century, Malacca moved to conquer areas on both sides of the Straits which produced food, tin, gold and pepper, thereby increasing both its wealth and its strategic position. By the 1470s and 1480s the empire controlled the main populated centres throughout the southern Malay Peninsula and the central east coast of Sumatra.

At the beginning, Parameswara was a Hindu-Buddhist king, but he naturally compelled and encouraged Muslim traders to use his port. There has been some debate about his conversion to Islam. It appears that very late in his reign (r. 1390–1413/14) he adopted Islam and the name Iskandar Syah. His two successors Mĕgat Iskandar Syah (r. 1414–23/4) and Muhammad Syah (r. 1424–44) were Muslims. But there may have been a Hindu-Buddhist reaction under the fourth king Parameswara Dewa Syah (r. 1445–6), who was apparently killed in a Muslim coup and replaced by his half-brother Sultan Muzaffar Syah (r. 1446–59). Thereafter the position of Islam was unchallenged.

The most interesting aspect of Malacca for this history of Indonesia is the vast trading network which reached out to the Indonesian islands, for this network has implications for how we understand the geographical integrity of Indonesia. The Portuguese writer Tomé Pires described the wealth of this system with an enthusiasm which may be exaggerated, but his general description is clearly reliable. The main stages and the most important products involved were as follows:

**Malacca – east coast of Sumatra:** gold, camphor, pepper, silk, benzoin and other wood resins, honey, wax, pitch, sulphur, iron, cotton, rattan, rice and other foodstuffs, slaves; exchanged primarily for Indian textiles; trading junks were also purchased in Malacca by the traders from some areas.

**Malacca – Sunda (West Java):** pepper, tamarind, slaves, gold, rice and other foodstuffs; exchanged for Indian textiles, areca, rosewater and so on.

**Malacca – Central and East Java:** rice and other foodstuffs, pepper, tamarind, semiprecious stones, gold, slaves and textiles to be used as trade goods further east; exchanged for good quality Indian textiles and Chinese goods.

**West Java – west coast of Sumatra:** products like those from the east coast of Sumatra, and horses, were shipped to West Java; there was also direct trade with Gujarati shippers, who brought textiles.

**Central and East Java – South Sumatra:** cotton, honey, wax, pitch, rattan, pepper and gold were shipped to Java.

**Java – Bali, Lombok, Sumbawa:** foodstuffs, coarse textiles, slaves, horses; exchanged for Javanese textiles.

**Bali, Lombok, Sumbawa – Timor, Sumba:** sandalwood from the latter areas; exchanged for coarse Indian and Javanese textiles.

**Timor, Sumba – Maluku:** nutmeg, clove and mace from Maluku (the ‘Spice Islands’); exchanged for coarse Sumbawan textiles, Javanese cash and Indian trinkets.

**Java and Malacca – South Kalimantan:** foodstuffs, diamonds, gold, camphor; exchanged for Indian textiles.

**South Sulawesi – Malacca, Java, Brunei, Siam, and Malay Peninsula:** slaves, rice

and gold from Makassar were traded directly by the Bugis for Indian textiles, benzoin and so on.

Thus it was not only the spread of Islam but also economic self-interest that provided connecting threads among the Malay Peninsula and Indonesian archipelago states in the pre-colonial period. As they exchanged goods on the basis of their individual comparative advantages and needs, they entered a web of relationships which made the region – not a nation – but in important senses a network of related economic as well as cultural communities. Part of the story of the much later colonial period would be how this network of related economic communities was disaggregated in the interest of colonial metropoles.

At Malacca, this Indonesian trading system was linked to routes reaching westward to India, Persia, Arabia, Syria, East Africa and the Mediterranean, northward to Siam and Pegu, and eastward to China and perhaps Japan. This was the greatest trading system in the world at this time, and the two crucial exchange points were Gujarat in northwest India and Malacca. The spices of Indonesia were one of the prize products of this system, but it needs to be remembered that the products which kept the system going were bulk items of a more mundane nature, especially Indian textiles and Javanese rice. Although there were undoubtedly more rats than rubies in Malacca, the wealth displayed there must have been impressive. The key to Malacca's success was less that it was a good port (for there were others) than that the ruler's policies had succeeded in creating an international community of traders who found its facilities advantageous. The Portuguese were soon to discover that conquering the port was easier than creating such a community.

## ***Chapter 3***

---

# **The Arrival of the Europeans in Indonesia, c.1509–1620**

The arrival of the first Europeans in Southeast Asia at the beginning of the sixteenth century has sometimes been regarded as the most important watershed in Indonesia's history. This view is untenable. Although Europeans – above all the Dutch – were to have a great impact upon Indonesia, this was largely a phenomenon of later times. As the colonial period recedes into the past, questions are being asked about how lasting even this later impact was. Whatever the case, in the early years of the Europeans' presence, their influence was sharply limited in both area and depth.

Europe was not the most advanced area of the world at the start of the fifteenth century. Nor was it the most dynamic. The major expanding force in the world was Islam; in 1453 the Ottoman Turks conquered Constantinople, and at the eastern end of the Islamic world the faith was spreading in Indonesia and the Philippines. But the Europeans, and especially the Portuguese, were making certain technological advances which would launch the Portuguese nation on one of the most daring overseas adventures of all time. Through improved geographical and astronomical knowledge – much of which derived from Arab learning, often transmitted to European Christians via Jewish scholarship – the Portuguese became better navigators. By combining lateen and square rigging and improving construction, they produced ships that were faster, more manoeuvrable and more seaworthy. They began to use artillery aboard ship: the man-of-war was becoming a seaborne gunnery platform rather than primarily a floating castle for bowmen or a ramming device.

The Portuguese had not only the technological advances that would enable them to expand overseas; they had also the will and the need to do so. With the encouragement of Prince Henry 'the Navigator' (d. 1460) and other patrons, Portuguese seamen and adventurers began the long search down the west coast of Africa for gold, for the glory of battle and for a way to outflank the Muslim enemy. They also sought spices, which meant somehow finding the way to Asia to cut out the Muslim merchants who, with their Venetian outlet in the Mediterranean, monopolised spice imports to Europe. Spices were as much a matter of necessity as taste. During the European winter there was no way to keep large livestock herds alive; many animals were therefore slaughtered and the meat had then to be preserved. For this, salt and spices were used, and among the imported spices the most valuable was the clove from East Indonesia. Indonesia also

produced pepper, nutmeg and mace (the latter two deriving from the same plant); it was therefore a major goal for the Portuguese, although at the time they had little idea where the ‘Spice Islands’ of Indonesia might be, or how to get there.

In 1487 Bartolomeu Dias rounded the Cape of Good Hope and entered the Indian Ocean. In 1497 Vasco da Gama reached India. The Portuguese soon discovered, however, that the trade products they had hoped to sell could not compete in the sophisticated Indian market with those that flowed through the Asian trade network. They realised that they must therefore employ naval warfare to establish themselves. The man who was primarily responsible for this daring attempt was Afonso de Albuquerque (?1459–1515), probably the greatest naval commander of the age. In 1503 Albuquerque went to India, and in 1510 he conquered Goa on the west coast as a permanent base for the Portuguese. By this time bases had already been established farther west, at Hormuz and Socotra. The plan was to dominate the seaborne trade of Asia by establishing permanent bases at crucial points, whence the superior military technology of the Portuguese could be directed. In 1510, after much fighting and hardship, as well as internal dissension and confusion, the Portuguese seemed near to achieving their aim. The most necessary task for them now was to assault the eastern terminus of Asian trade at Malacca.

Upon hearing the first reports of Malacca’s great wealth which came from Asian traders, the Portuguese king sent Diogo Lopes de Sequeira to find Malacca, to make a friendly compact with its ruler and to stay on there as Portugal’s representative east of India. All did not go well for Sequeira when he arrived in Malacca in 1509. At first he was well received by Sultan Mahmud Syah (r. 1488–1528), but then the international Muslim trading community of the city convinced Mahmud that the Portuguese posed a grave threat to him. He turned against Sequeira, captured several of his men and killed others, and attempted to assault the four Portuguese ships which, however, managed to sail away. As had been the case farther west, conquest was clearly the only means open to the Portuguese to establish themselves.

In April 1511, Albuquerque set sail from Portuguese Goa for Malacca with a force of some 1200 men and 17 or 18 ships. Hostilities commenced soon after his arrival and carried on sporadically throughout July and early August. The Malaccan side was hampered by a bitter dispute between Sultan Mahmud and his son Sultan Ahmad, who had just been given authority over the state and who was later killed upon his father’s orders. Although Malacca seems to have been well supplied with artillery, the Portuguese combination of fire power, determination and fanatical courage carried them to victory. Malacca was conquered. Albuquerque stayed in Malacca until November 1511, by which time he had prepared Malacca’s defences to resist any Malay counterattack and had ordered the first ships to set out in search of the ‘Spice Islands’. He then set sail for India aboard a capacious but rotting vessel from which he escaped when it sank off Sumatra, taking with it to the bottom all the booty plundered at Malacca.

The Portuguese now controlled Malacca, but it very soon became evident that they did not control the Asian trade which had been centred on it. The Portuguese had many problems. They were never self-supporting, and were as dependent upon Asian suppliers for food as had been their Malay predecessors in Malacca. They were short of

both money and manpower. Their organisation was typified by confused and overlapping commands, inefficiency and corruption. Even their own governors of Malacca traded for personal gain at the Malay port of Johor, where duties and prices were lower, in violation of the monopoly they were supposed to maintain. The Asian traders transferred much of their trade to other ports, and simply bypassed the Portuguese monopoly.

In the west of the archipelago the Portuguese soon ceased to be such a revolutionary force. Their technological superiority consisted of navigational and military techniques which were quickly learned by their Indonesian competitors; Portuguese cannon were soon captured by Indonesian opponents. Portuguese Malacca became part of a web of conflict in the Straits of Malacca, as Johor and Aceh competed to defeat each other and the Portuguese and to become the true successor of Malacca (see [Chapter 4](#)). By the second half of the sixteenth century, ships were seen in the Indonesian archipelago which had part Portuguese and part Indonesian crews, or which were owned by Indonesians and chartered by Portuguese.

The importance of the conquest of Malacca must not, however, be underestimated. The city began to die as a trading port under the Portuguese, they never monopolised Asian trade, they had little influence on the culture of Indonesians in the western archipelago, and they soon settled down as a rather odd part of their Indonesian surroundings. Nonetheless, the Portuguese had done one thing which had a lasting impact: they had fundamentally disrupted the organisation of the Asian trade system. There was no longer a central port where the wealth of Asia could be exchanged; there was no longer a Malay state to police the Straits of Malacca and make them safe for commercial traffic. Instead, there was a dispersal of the trading community to several ports, and bitter warfare in the Straits. After a century of success, Malacca was turned almost overnight into a name with a proud past but little future.

The most lasting cultural impact of the Portuguese was in Maluku (a name ultimately derived from the Arab traders' term for the region, *Jazirat al-Muluk*, the land of many kings). Here were located the 'Spice Islands' of East Indonesia. Immediately after the conquest of Malacca, the first exploratory mission was sent eastward under Francisco Serrão. In 1512 he was shipwrecked, but he struggled to Hitu (northern Ambon), where he demonstrated martial skills against an attacking force which endeared him to the local ruler. This also led the rulers of the two competing islands, Ternate and Tidore, both to enquire after the possibility of Portuguese assistance. There was a temporary decline in Javanese and Malay sailings to the eastern islands at this time, caused particularly by the destruction of the Javanese fleet at Malacca in 1511. Thus, the Portuguese were also welcomed in the area because they could bring food and buy spices. The Asian trade soon revived, however, and the Portuguese never exercised an effective monopoly over the spices.

Sultan Abu Lais (or Bayansirullah; d. 1522) of Ternate persuaded the Portuguese to support him, and in 1522 they began to build a fortress there. Sultan Mansur of Tidore took advantage of the arrival of the remnants of Magellan's global circumnavigation expedition in 1521 to form an alliance with the Spanish which, however, proved to be of little consequence in this period.

Relations between the Portuguese and the Ternatens were strained by rather feeble

Portuguese attempts at Christianisation, and by the generally poor behaviour of the Portuguese. This outpost at the other end of the earth rarely attracted any but the most desperate and avaricious. In 1535 the Portuguese in Ternate deposed King Tabariji (or Tabarija; r. 1523–35) and sent him to Portuguese Goa. There he converted to Christianity, took the name Dom Manuel, and upon being declared innocent of the charges which had been brought against him he was sent back to reoccupy his throne. He died suspiciously *en route*, at Malacca in 1545, but not before he had given his Portuguese godfather Jordão de Freitas the island of Amboin. Finally the Portuguese, who murdered Sultan Hairun of Ternate (r. 1535–70) in 1570, were expelled by the Ternatens after a five-year siege in 1575, following which they moved to Tidore and established a new fortress in 1578. The main centre of Portuguese activities in Maluku, however, now came to be Amboin. Ternate meanwhile became an expanding, fiercely Islamic and anti-Portuguese state under the rule of Sultan Baab Ullah (r. 1570–83) and his son Sultan Said ad-Din Bérgat Syah (r. 1584–1606).

The Portuguese were also involved and beleaguered in Solor. In 1562 Dominican priests built a palm-trunk fortress there which Javanese Muslim attackers burned down the following year. The Dominicans persisted, however, rebuilding the fortress in more durable materials and commencing the Christianisation of the local population. There were further Javanese attacks in later years. Nor was the populace of Solor uniformly in favour of the Portuguese or their religion, for there were repeated displays of resistance. In 1598–9 a major Solorese uprising required the Portuguese to send an armada of 90 ships to put down the insurgents. Nevertheless the Portuguese remained in occupation of their Solor fortress until expelled by the Dutch in 1613 and again, after a Portuguese reoccupation, in 1636.

Amongst the Portuguese adventurers and desperadoes, there was one European whose work initiated a permanent change in East Indonesia. This was the Spaniard Saint Francis Xavier (1506–52), a co-founder of the Jesuit Order with Saint Ignatius Loyola. In 1546–7 Xavier worked among the peoples of Amboin, Ternate and Morotai (Moro), and laid the foundations for a permanent mission there. He went on to carry his mission enterprise to Japan, but died before being able to enter China. After Xavier's departure from Maluku others continued his work. By the 1560s there were perhaps as many as 10,000 Catholics in the area, mostly on Amboin, and by the 1590s there were 50,000 to 60,000. The Dominicans, too, had some success in Christianising Solor; by the 1590s the Portuguese and local Christian population there probably numbered about 25,000 people. There continued to be Christian communities in eastern Indonesia through succeeding centuries, and this contributed to a sense of shared interests with Europeans, particularly among the Ambonese, which no other Indonesian people experienced to the same degree.

Banda, the source of nutmeg, was, however, rather an exception to the pattern of developments described here. There an oligarchic form of government led by *orang kaya* (powerful men) displayed no enthusiasm for Christianity or the Europeans who brought it. The Bandanese steadfastly refused the Portuguese permission to build a fortress and, probably because of the lack of such a base, the priests made no serious attempt to Christianise the Bandanese. Bandanese continued to play an active and independent role in archipelago trade until the early seventeenth century.

It is worth pointing out that this serious missionary endeavour took place in the latter half of the sixteenth century, after the pace of Portuguese conquest had stopped. The cross came seriously to East Indonesia rather a long time after the sword. By this time, the main Portuguese interest in the East was already shifting from Maluku. Trade with Japan began in 1543 and the formal cession of Macao in 1557 made more regular trade possible with China. Also the worldwide activities of the Portuguese were coming to be centred more on the sugar of Brazil and the slaves of Africa than on the eastern periphery of empire.

In Maluku the Portuguese left other signs of their cultural influence. The romantic *keroncong* ballads sung to the guitar are of hybrid Portuguese origin. A considerable number of Indonesian words are from Portuguese, such as *pesta* (party), *sabun* (soap), *sépatu* (shoe), *bendera* (flag), *meja* (table), *Minggu* (Sunday) and so on. This reflects the role which the Portuguese language played, alongside Malay, as a lingua franca throughout the archipelago into the early nineteenth century. Many family names still found in Ambon are Portuguese: da Costa, Dias, de Fretas, Gonsalves, Mendosa, Rodrigues, da Silva and so on.

Given the grandeur of their original design to dominate the trade of Asia, the legacy left by the Portuguese in Indonesia was small: vocabulary items, family names, *keroncong*. And all of these are things that Indonesians themselves decided to make their own; it was not Portuguese military power which made a party a *pesta*. The greatest and most lasting effects of the arrival of the Portuguese were two: the disruption and disorganisation of the trade network caused by their conquest of Malacca, and the planting of Christianity in some parts of eastern Indonesia. The second, however, was less the work of the Portuguese empire than of a few devoted priests.

After the Portuguese came the Dutch, who inherited the aspirations and strategy of the Portuguese. The Dutch brought better organisation, better guns, better ships, better financial backing, and the same combination of courage and brutality. They very nearly achieved what the Portuguese had hoped but failed to achieve, control of the spices of Indonesia. But the Dutch did one thing the Portuguese had not done: they established a permanent foothold in Java. This was to make their involvement fundamentally different from the Portuguese, and was to lead ultimately to the Dutch becoming a land-based colonial power in Java.

In the late sixteenth century the United Provinces of the Netherlands (the most important being Holland and Zeeland) were under considerable pressure to expand overseas. The Dutch war of independence against Spain, which broke out in the 1560s and was not finally settled until 1648, had already brought important changes. The Dutch had acted as middlemen in retailing spices from Portugal in northern Europe, but the war and the union of the Spanish and Portuguese crowns in 1580 disrupted their access to spices brought from Asia by the Portuguese. This naturally only increased their desire to ship spices directly from Asia themselves. More over, the movements of population which occurred during the Dutch–Spanish War left the Netherlands a more homogeneous Calvinist society, while the southern Spanish provinces (in present-day Belgium) and, of course, Spain and Portugal themselves, were Catholic. Commercial competition was now to be associated with the animosities of the Reformation.

The Portuguese tried to keep secret the navigational details of the route to Asia, but there were Dutchmen in their service, the most famous of whom was Jan Huygen van Linschoten. In 1595–6 he published his *Itinerario naer Oost ofte Portugaels Indien* ('Itinerary to the East, or Portuguese, Indies'), containing maps and detailed descriptions of the Portuguese discoveries. The Dutch were now aware not only of the vast wealth of Asia, but also of Portuguese problems there. As the Dutch had improved their ship construction and seaborne armament, they believed that the Portuguese in Asia would be no match for them.

In 1595 the first Dutch expedition set sail for the East Indies. Four ships with 249 men and 64 cannon set out under Cornelis de Houtman, who had spent many years in Lisbon and claimed vast knowledge of what the Portuguese were doing. His incompetent leadership caused much dissension on the expedition, however, and after undergoing great hardship and sickness, only three ships and 89 men were to return to the Netherlands over two years later. In June 1596, de Houtman's ships reached Bantēn, the main pepper port of West Java. There the Dutch soon became involved in conflict both with the Portuguese and with Indonesians. De Houtman left Bantēn and sailed eastward along the coast of Java, inflicting insult and injury at each port of call. At Sidayu he lost 12 dead in a Javanese attack. Off Madura the Dutch killed a local ruler as he was rowed out to talk to them. Finally, in 1597 the remnants of the expedition returned to the Netherlands, with enough spices on board to show a profit. It had been demonstrated that even an incompetent voyage could make money.

Now began a period known as the 'wild' or 'unregulated' voyages (*wilde vaart*), as competing Dutch shippers scrambled for a share of the Indonesian spices. In 1598, 22 ships of five different companies set sail; 14 eventually returned. The fleet under Jacob van Neck was the first to reach the 'Spice Islands' of Maluku in March 1599, where it was well received; his ships returned in 1599–1600 with enough spices to show a 400 per cent profit. Most of the 1598 fleets were profitable and in 1601 fourteen separate expeditions sailed from the Netherlands.

By now it was becoming clear that this competition among Dutch shippers was undesirable. There were now four competing Dutch trading agents in Bantēn; the competition throughout the spice-supplying areas of Indonesia was driving prices up and the increasing supply into Europe was driving profits down. In 1598 the States-General (Netherlands parliament) had proposed that the competing companies should merge in their own mutual interest. It was four years, however, before they could be brought to achieve such a merger.

In March 1602 the competing companies merged to form the United East India Company, the VOC (*Vereenigde Oost-Indische Compagnie*). The competing interests were represented by a system of Chambers (*kamer*) for each of six regions of the Netherlands. Each Chamber had an agreed number of Directors, who totalled 17 and were referred to as the *Heeren XVII* (Seventeen Gentlemen). Amsterdam's preponderant role gave it eight of the 17 Directors, and the VOC's headquarters was located there. The VOC was granted a charter by the States-General which gave it quasiregional powers to enlist personnel on an oath of allegiance, wage war, build fortresses and conclude treaties throughout Asia.

The personnel of the VOC in Asia were, as one would expect, not always of the

highest calibre, especially in its later years. Honourable men of vision who wished to undertake hazardous careers in Asia were hard to find. Although the VOC as an organisation was Dutch, many of its personnel were not. Adventurers, vagabonds, criminals and the unfortunate from throughout Europe took its oath of allegiance. Inefficiency, dishonesty, nepotism and alcoholism were widespread in the VOC. There was much brutality which modern minds find repellent, but it must be remembered that this was a brutal age, and Indonesians showed no greater gentleness.

In the first years the ***Heeren XVII*** were in sole charge of the affairs of the VOC, but it was soon discovered that it was impossible for them to control successfully the daily administration in Asia. The distances were so great that an exchange of messages between Amsterdam and Indonesia could require two or three years. It is not possible to say whether the VOC made a profit in these early years, for the States-General allowed the Company not to make the first ten-year financial report called for in its charter. Certainly the company won little military success against the Portuguese and Spanish (who, having arrived in the Philippines from across the Pacific in 1521, began to establish themselves on a permanent footing after 1565). The only major VOC victory was the occupation of Ambon in 1605.

The Portuguese in Ambon were hard-pressed by their local enemies in the late sixteenth century. In 1600 they won a major naval battle in the bay of Ambon, but only with great difficulty. The arrival of the Dutch sealed their fate. In 1600 the Dutch joined the Hituese in an anti-Portuguese alliance, in return for which the Dutch were to have the sole right to purchase the spices of Hitu. The Portuguese responded to their worsening situation in 1602 with a major (and last) expeditionary force from Malacca, which temporarily reimposed an appearance of Portuguese dominance in much of Maluku. But in February 1605 a VOC fleet renewed the alliance with Hitu and prepared to attack the Portuguese fort on Ambon. Now, however, the Portuguese simply surrendered. The VOC occupied the fort, renamed it ‘Victoria’, and shortly thereafter expelled the Catholic missionaries and began converting local Catholics to Calvinism. This occupation of Ambon was, however, an isolated success. In 1606, a Spanish fleet took both Ternate and Tidore. Sultan Said and other dignitaries ended their days in exile in Manila. The Spanish presence in Maluku was to remain until the 1660s.

Despite their success in Ambon, the Dutch were still far from achieving their goal of imposing a monopoly over all spices and, by excluding European competitors, preventing a glut on the European market. Stronger measures were obviously required. To take firmer charge of VOC affairs in Asia, in 1610 the post of Governor General was created. To restrain the Governor General’s potentially despotic powers, a Council of the Indies (***Raad van Indië***) was created to advise and check him. Although the ***Heeren XVII*** continued to have overall control and appointed, and in some cases dismissed, Governors General, it was nevertheless true that from 1610 VOC activities in Asia were largely determined by the Governor General.

Under the first three Governors General (1610–19) the VOC centre was Ambon, but this was not satisfactory as a headquarters. Although it was in the heart of the spice-producing areas, it was far from the main trade routes of Asia and therefore far from VOC activities elsewhere from Africa to Japan. The Dutch began to seek a better place for a ‘rendezvous’, a safe port where they could have offices, warehouses and facilities

for their navy. Their thoughts turned naturally to the western archipelago, somewhere near the crucial Straits of Malacca or the Straits of Sunda (which had become more important as a trade route, carrying ships up the west coast of Sumatra, since insecurity in the Straits of Malacca had followed the arrival of the Portuguese). The first permanent VOC trading post had been founded in Bantēn in 1603, but this was obviously unsuitable for a headquarters. There was strong competition there from Chinese and English traders, and it was under the control of a wealthy and powerful ruling house.

The need for a permanent headquarters in the western archipelago was emphasised by the increasing threat of English competition. Sir Francis Drake had made the first English contact with Indonesia in his westward circumnavigation of the world in 1577–80. He had stopped at Ternate and returned home with a cargo of cloves. The English, like the Dutch, were under pressure to become directly involved in the spice trade. The Dutch–Spanish War disrupted the flow of spices through Antwerp, and English trade with Syria was disrupted by Spanish and Portuguese harassment at the Straits of Gibraltar. In 1591, Elizabeth I authorised the first English attempt to become directly involved in the spice trade. Sir James Lancaster (who had some experience in Lisbon) and George Raymond set sail in that year. Their voyage was a catastrophe. There was great sickness and mortality on board and Raymond went down with his ship at sea. Lancaster did reach Aceh and Penang, but on his return home he was marooned in the West Indies and only reached England through the hospitality of a French privateer in 1594. Not surprisingly, the English were uncertain of the benefits to be had from such undertakings. But then news came of the first Dutch profits, and the doubts were abandoned.

In 1600, Elizabeth I granted a charter to the (English) East India Company, and the English advance in Asia began. The hapless Sir James Lancaster was given command of the Company's first voyage. He arrived in Aceh in June 1602 and went on to Bantēn, where he was allowed to build a trading post. This rich pepper port was to remain the centre of English activities until 1682. Lancaster returned to England with such an enormous load of pepper that some of it could not be sold, and investors had to be repaid partly in pepper. Lancaster's reputation had been restored.

In 1604 the second English East India Company voyage under Sir Henry Middleton reached Ternate, Tidore, Ambo and Banda. But here VOC hostility was encountered, and fierce Anglo–Dutch competition for access to the spices began. The VOC was attempting to force monopoly agreements upon the rulers of the spice-producing islands and bitterly resented what it saw as English 'smuggling' in Maluku. In the period 1611–17 the English were also setting up trading posts elsewhere in Indonesia, at Sukadana (southwest Kalimantan), Makassar, Jayakerta and Jepara (in Java), and Aceh, Pariaman and Jambi (in Sumatra). Anglo–Dutch conflict grew in intensity as the Dutch saw their goal of monopoly slipping through their fingers.

There was a brief episode of cooperation with the English, imposed upon an unwilling VOC by diplomatic considerations in Europe in 1620. The English were allowed to have a trading post in Ambo, but in 1623 there occurred the 'Amboyna (Ambo) Massacre', which put an end to any ideas of cooperation. The 12 English trading agents on Ambo were arrested and, under torture, confessed to a conspiracy

against the VOC. Ten Englishmen (as well as ten Japanese and one Portuguese) were executed, and a diplomatic fracas blew up in Europe as a result. But nothing came of it. By now English interest was in any case turning more to other areas of Asia, and in Indonesia they quietly withdrew from most of their activities except for their trade in Bantěn.

Although the English did not again challenge the predominant role of the Dutch until the late eighteenth century, and indeed in the early seventeenth century were less of a military threat to the VOC than the Portuguese and Spanish, their activities had none the less increased VOC anxiety to find a ‘rendezvous’. They also impressed upon the VOC the necessity for rigorous measures if its aim of monopoly of the spice trade was to be achieved. In 1619 Jan Pieterszoon Coen became Governor General (1619–23, 1627–9), and it was he who placed the VOC on a firm footing. If his predecessors had had any scruples about the use of force, Coen certainly had none. In 1614 he had told the *Heeren XVII* that they could have neither trade without war nor war without trade. From Coen’s time onwards, the VOC in Asia saw clearly that there was only one way to establish its power: by destroying everything that got in its way.

Whether the policies established by Coen and pursued by his immediate successors (culminating in the events described in [Chapter 6](#)) were any more wise than gentle is open to question. In Maluku, the VOC certainly made progress towards its goal of a spice monopoly. There the local populations could hardly challenge VOC naval supremacy. In the end, the only form of resistance available to them was smuggling in defiance of VOC regulations. As an attempt to control one source of this smuggling, virtually the whole population of Banda was deported, driven away, starved to death or massacred in the 1620s, and an attempt was made to replace it with Dutch colonists using slave labour. As Dutch supplies of spices into Europe grew in volume, the Asian spice network languished for want of a market. But whether such policies actually produced a profit for the VOC is not clear. VOC book-keeping methods do not allow reliable calculation of profit and loss in this period. But it is reasonable to guess that the financial costs of these policies in Maluku were at least equal to the benefits.

Coen also found the VOC’s ‘rendezvous’ and in doing so he may have laid the seeds of its ultimate bankruptcy. The VOC had been trading in Bantěn since 1603, and since 1611 had also had a post at Jayakerta (modern-day Jakarta). Coen preferred Jayakerta as the site for the VOC’s permanent headquarters. It had an excellent harbour, which Tomé Pires had praised a century earlier as one of the finest in Java, and Coen thought that the VOC could take full control there. Jayakerta was ruled by a Muslim prince named Pangeran Wijayakrama, who was a vassal of Bantěn. There were tensions between Jayakerta and Bantěn, in which both the Dutch and English now got involved.

In December 1618, Bantěn decided to deal with Jayakerta and the VOC. The English Admiral Thomas Dale was encouraged to go there to expel the Dutch. In the harbour he encountered Coen with a small fleet and compelled him to retire. Coen sailed to Maluku to collect a larger fleet while Dale and Wijayakrama jointly besieged the VOC fortress. When at the end of January 1619 the VOC personnel decided to surrender, Bantěnese forces suddenly appeared to prevent this. Bantěn apparently did not wish to replace a bothersome VOC post with a bothersome English one. Thomas Dale fled to his ships and shortly thereafter the Bantěn troops drove Pangeran

Wijayakrama into the hills. The VOC remained in their fortified post and Bantĕn troops now occupied the town. For two months nothing much happened, except that the VOC personnel, spending their time in a mixture of debauchery and prayer, decided on 12 March 1619 to rename the place ‘Batavia’ after an ancient Germanic tribe of the Netherlands.

In May 1619 Coen sailed back into the harbour with 17 ships. On 30 May he stormed the town, reduced it to ashes, and drove the Bantĕn forces out. The VOC trading post of Batavia, standing amidst the ashes of Jayakĕrta, was now to be the headquarters for the VOC’s vast trading empire. The conquest of Batavia was the most significant step taken by the Dutch since their first ship set sail for the East. The VOC could now develop a military and administrative centre in a relatively safe site for the warehousing and exchange of goods, located in the western archipelago with access to the trade routes to East Indonesia, the Far East and the West. This site was under the sole control of the VOC, with no major Indonesian state close enough to threaten it.

But there were less happy implications for the VOC as well. The permanent occupation of Batavia carried with it the costs of running such an establishment. Although the number of Europeans in its population was always small, the city grew rapidly as Indonesians and especially Chinese moved there to take advantage of the commercial prospects Batavia offered them. This population must be fed, which meant importing food supplies, the closest source of which was the north coast of Java. Timber had to be imported to build ships and houses. Although the city was never conquered by an Indonesian power, it had from time to time to be defended against Bantĕn in the west and Mataram in the east, both of which were hostile. All of these considerations meant heavy expenses. And they would also almost inevitably lead the VOC into its catastrophic involvement in the internal affairs of the kingdoms of Java. Batavia was a major cause of the VOC’s financial decline. It was also the foundation from which Dutch rule in Java would later grow, but only after much bloodshed and hardship.

## ***Chapter 4***

---

# **The Rise of New States, c.1500–1650**

New Islamic states were arising in Indonesia when the Europeans first arrived, but much of their history is poorly documented. There is, however, sufficient evidence to reconstruct with some confidence the histories of three areas: Aceh, Java and South Sulawesi. The first of these was deeply involved with the Malay Peninsula, for in the western archipelago three major powers confronted one another in the early sixteenth century: Aceh, Portuguese Malacca and Johor. In the early seventeenth century, Aceh was to emerge for a time as the most powerful, wealthy and cultivated state of the area.

Sultan Mahmud of Malacca left his defeated capital and after many moves of residence eventually re-established the Malacca dynastic line at Johor in 1518. The Portuguese attacked Johor in 1518, 1520, 1521, 1523, 1524, 1526, 1535, 1536 and 1587. Johor, Aceh and Jépara (in northern Java) also attempted to destroy the new European port: the years 1513, 1537, 1539, 1547, 1551, 1568, 1573, 1574, 1575, 1587, 1615 and 1629 all saw major assaults on Malacca, all of which the Portuguese withstood. The most crucial battle for the history of the Malay Peninsula was probably the Portuguese attack on Johor in 1536, when Sultan Alauddin Riayat Syah I (r. 1529–64) lost so many forces that he was obliged to come to terms with the Portuguese. There was thereafter an uneasy alliance between Johor and Portuguese Malacca, who shared Aceh as their greatest enemy. Conflicts in fact continued, and Asian ships were obliged to call at Johor and pay duties, thus reducing Malacca's income. In 1551 Johor again besieged Malacca, and in 1587 the Portuguese sacked Johor's capital. But after 1536 such hostilities were no longer the normal state of affairs. The Portuguese did not always discourage Johor's growth as a trade centre and the Governors of Malacca themselves found it profitable to trade there sometimes. In due course, the arrival of the VOC would lead to a VOC–Johor alliance against the Portuguese, which ultimately resulted in the VOC conquest of Malacca in 1641.

On the Indonesian side of the Straits of Malacca, Aceh was emerging as a major power just as the Portuguese arrived. Indeed, had the Portuguese not conquered Malacca in 1511 the Acehnese might have attempted to do so themselves, for Indonesians, too, were tempted by the wealth of Malacca. Before c.1500 Aceh was of little consequence. The first Sultan of the expanding empire was Ali Mughayat Syah (r. 1514–30). During his reign, a substantial part of the Asian trading community dispersed by the Portuguese conquest of Malacca settled in Aceh. In 1520 Ali Mughayat Syah began his campaigns. In that year he took Daya on the northern part of the west coast of

Sumatra, which according to Tomé Pires was not yet Islamised. Then Ali Mughayat Syah began his conquests down the east coast, taking control of pepper- and gold-producing areas. As he did so, he began to create an empire subject to internal tensions. The Aceh court was a military and imperial centre whose economic survival depended on its being able to function as a central port for the region; its interests naturally conflicted with those of producer ports who wished to conduct their own independent trade. Ali Mughayat Syah first conquered Děli; in 1524 he took Pědir and Pasai, where he expelled a Portuguese garrison. Then he attacked Aru. He also encountered and defeated a Portuguese fleet at sea in 1524. Two wars had now begun, with Aceh challenging Portuguese power at sea and Johor's claims to districts in Sumatra. From about 1540 Aru became a battleground between Acehnese and Johorese power, and it was only in 1613 that Sultan Iskandar Muda took the area finally for Aceh. But the greater contest which lay behind these wars, the contest for the mantle of Malacca as the sole entrepôt of the western archipelago and the dominant power in the Straits, was to be won by no one.

Ali Mughayat Syah's eldest son and successor Salahuddin (r. 1530–c.1537/9) is thought of as a weaker ruler. In 1537 an Acehnese assault on Malacca failed and about this time Salahuddin was deposed in a coup. The relationship between these two events is not clear. Djajadiningrat believed that Salahuddin was deposed by his brother Alauddin Riayat Syah al-Kahar before the attack on Malacca, while Lombard believed that it was Salahuddin who carried out this attack and that he was only deposed by his brother c.1539.

Sultan Alauddin Riayat Syah al-Kahar (r. c.1537/9–71) was one of Aceh's greatest warriors. He is believed to have attacked the Batak people to the south of Aceh in 1539 when the Batak ruler refused to embrace Islam. (The conversion of Batak groups to Islam and to Christianity in fact began only in the nineteenth century.) Then he attacked Aru but was expelled by a Johor force and Johor held Aru for 24 years thereafter. In 1547 he personally joined an attack on Malacca, which was repulsed. After a period of quiescence, in the 1560s Alauddin returned to the attack, this time with rather more success. In 1564 or 1565 he sacked Johor, brought Sultan Alauddin Riayat Syah I to Aceh where he was killed, and took power over Aru. In 1568 he again attacked Malacca, again without success. Aceh was never able to establish a permanent foothold across the Straits of Malacca in this period. When the Johor Sultan (a son of the murdered king) whom the Acehnese had placed on the throne in 1564/5 was deposed, Alauddin al-Kahar again sent a fleet to bring Johor to heel in 1570; Johor was, however, so well defended that the Acehnese quietly withdrew. Alauddin al-Kahar is remembered in Acehnese tradition not only as a warrior king, but also as the ruler who instituted the division of Acehnese society into administrative lineage groups (**kaum** or **sukeë**) but it is not clear whether this tradition is correct.

Throughout the later sixteenth century, Aceh remained a significant military force in the Straits. It was, however, often handicapped by internal dissension. Between 1571 and 1607 there were eight Sultans of Aceh, two of them, 1579–89, not of Acehnese descent but from the kidnapped royal house of Perak in the Malay Peninsula. One of these rulers had a reign of 15 years (Alauddin Riayat Syah al-Mukamil, 1589–1604), but several ruled for only a few months or years. This was a period of assassinations,

coups and failed military adventures. In Aceh, as in any other Indonesian state, the successful exercise of military power depended on a powerful central ruler who could keep alive a consensus among the elite; in the absence of such a ruler, internal conflicts quickly arose.

A word is required about the role of Islam in these battles in the western archipelago. Some writers have wished to see the wars against Portuguese Malacca as partly wars of religion. Some have found it strange that, in such wars, Indonesian Muslims did not stand united against the Christian enemy. Such interpretations seem to reflect much later perceptions of Islamic–Christian conflicts. In the sixteenth century the Christian Portuguese were only one of three major forces in the Straits of Malacca. The other two, Aceh and Johor, were both Islamic. In the various understandings which existed during this period of warfare, religious identity was not a determining factor. The consistent enemies were Johor and Aceh, the two Islamic states. Johor and the Portuguese were not prevented by religion from some degree of cooperation and tolerance, both in war and in trade. When the VOC arrived, Johor built up a friendly association with the Protestant Dutch, and the Portuguese attempted, albeit unsuccessfully, to forge an alliance with Aceh. Religion cannot explain the warfare in the Straits of Malacca, the true roots of which were to be found in the clash among three powerful states for commercial and imperial hegemony in the area. At the end of the sixteenth century, there was still no clear victor in this struggle. No state had emerged as a ‘new Malacca’, and the smooth flow of trade upon which any such emporium must be founded continued to be disrupted by the warfare and by the very absence of a single trading centre. The Asian trading community which had been the basis of Malacca’s success was still dispersed among several ports of the Malay–Indonesian area.

In the early seventeenth century, the greatest of Aceh’s rulers came to the throne. Sultan Iskandar Muda (r. 1607–36) established Aceh for a short time as the major power of the western archipelago. His successes were based upon impressive military power, including a navy dominated by heavy galleys which carried 600–800 men, a cavalry force which included Persian horses among its mounts, an elephant corps, substantial artillery and conscript infantry forces. In 1612 he took Děli, and in 1613 Aru. In 1613 he also attacked and defeated Johor, carrying away to Aceh Johor’s Sultan Alauddin Riayat Syah II (r. 1597–1613) and other members of the royal family, as well as a group of VOC traders. Iskandar Muda’s attempt to maintain permanent Acehnese control over the Johor Sultanate was, however, frustrated when the Johorese managed to reassert their independence and expel the Acehnese garrison shortly after 1613. Thereafter Johor constructed an alliance among Pahang, Palembang, Jambi, Inděragiri, Kampar and Siak against the Acehnese. But Iskandar Muda’s aggressive campaigns continued. In 1614 he defeated a Portuguese fleet at Bintan; in 1617 he took Pahang and carried off its Sultan Ahmad Syah; in 1620 Kědah was conquered; in 1623 he again sacked the Johor capital; in 1624/5 he took Nias.

But in 1629 the expansionist campaigns of Iskandar Muda were brought to a halt by the Portuguese. It will be seen below that Java’s greatest empire-builder, Sultan Agung, also received a setback at European hands in the same year. Iskandar Muda sent an expedition of several hundred ships against Malacca in 1629, but his fleet was entirely devastated. It was reported by the Portuguese that all his ships and 19,000 men were

lost. Thereafter Iskandar Muda launched only two more seaborne expeditions, in 1630/1 and 1635, both against revolts in Pahang. After 1629 Johor began to rebuild its influence in the Malay Peninsula and the southern Straits, free of the threat of Acehnese attack. Iskandar Muda had established Aceh as the paramount power over the major trading ports of northern Sumatra. He had not, however, attempted to conquer the pepper-producing Lampung district in the south of Sumatra, which was under Bantēn (see below), nor had he been able to establish Acehnese hegemony in the Straits of Malacca.

The state of Aceh under Iskandar Muda, in the period thought of as its ‘golden age’, rested on fragile foundations. It faced precisely the same fundamental problem as the Malacca Sultanate, Portuguese Malacca, VOC Batavia or any other state which aspired to be a major coastal trading power: how to feed the non-agricultural population which was essential to its success in war and commerce. Aceh’s hinterland was not easily or willingly controlled, nor could it easily produce a sufficient surplus of food to support the city of Aceh. Indeed the capital city was only tenuously linked to the Acehnese hinterland. Malay was the predominant language of the city and its population was international. It was to a large degree a Malay-governed cosmopolitan trading state which happened to be located on the coast of Aceh, but which was not greatly different from other Malay states. Because the capital was constantly at the mercy of its hinterland, the acquisition of prisoners of war who could be set to work as agricultural slaves near the capital was one of the aims of Iskandar Muda’s campaigns. Lombard described the decline of Aceh in the later seventeenth century as partly a function of its earlier success, for the city grew to a size that was greater than it could feed.

There were also political reasons for Aceh’s later decline. As was the case elsewhere, below the Sultan were elite groups whose support was essential to the Sultanate, but who often required rigorous persuasion to give that support, or rigorous suppression. The elite of Aceh, known as *orang kaya* (powerful men), were kept in check in Iskandar Muda’s reign. He watched them carefully, and through the imposition of a royal monopoly over trading rights the Sultan kept himself wealthy and others dependent upon his favour. He created a new nobility of ‘war leaders’ (in Malay *hulubalang* and in Acehnese *uleëbalang*); these were given districts (*mukim*) in feudal tenure. In Iskandar Muda’s reign, these members of the elite were successfully forced or persuaded to support the Sultan’s cause. But subsequent Sultans had less success. The elite of Aceh, both those in the capital and its immediate hinterland and the dignitaries of other subordinate ports, had been hard pressed by Iskandar Muda’s costly campaigning and draconian rule. To prevent a recurrence of such centralised tyranny, they sought an opportunity to restrict royal power.

Iskandar Muda had his own son killed and named as his successor Iskandar Thani Alauddin Mughayat Syah (r. 1636–41), a son of Sultan Ahmad of Pahang. He had been brought to Aceh with his father in 1617 and had thereafter become son-in-law to Iskandar Muda. In his reign the aggressive campaigns were no more and the court was most noted as a centre of Islamic learning (see [Chapter 5](#)). Iskandar Thani appears to have been a worthy ruler, but his reign was short. Upon his death the elite of Aceh asserted their influence and self-interest and prevented the emergence of another powerful ruler in Aceh until the nineteenth century. They placed Iskandar Thani’s

widow (Iskandar Muda's daughter) on the throne as Queen Taj ul-Alam (r. 1641–75) and came to an agreement with Johor that henceforth each would mind its own business. Johor now entered its period of greatest influence and prosperity, for in 1641 not only was the Acehnese threat definitively removed, but Johor and the VOC also expelled the Portuguese from Malacca.

Aceh entered a long period of internal disunity and ceased to be a significant force outside the northern tip of Sumatra. Four queens ruled between 1641 and 1699 and royal authority became restricted to the capital city itself. The *uleëbalang* developed into hereditary rulers of the outlying districts and the religious leaders (*imam* or *ulama*) emerged as the only source of challenge to their power. The Sultanate became a weak symbolic institution. From 1699 to 1838 there were 11 inconsequential sultans, including three Arabs (1699–1726), two Malays (both in 1726) and six Bugis (1727–1838).

While Aceh was rising to prominence in the western archipelago, new Islamic states were being created in Java. At first there were several influential states, but by the beginning of the seventeenth century three major political centres were consolidating their power: Bantēn in West Java, Mataram in the interior of Central Java, and Surabaya in East Java. For the sixteenth century, the evidence consists primarily of a few contemporaneous Portuguese records (among which Tomé Pires's *Suma Oriental* is the best informed) and later Javanese historical traditions which are a complex mixture of myth and history. Many important events in this period are therefore imperfectly known. It is only in the early seventeenth century that the historical record becomes clearer with the beginnings of VOC documents.

The most important Islamic state on Java's north coast in the early sixteenth century was Děmak. This was at the time a good seaport, although extensive silting of the coast in later centuries has now left Děmak some distance from the sea. Its origins are very uncertain. It was apparently founded in the last quarter of the fifteenth century by a foreign Muslim, probably a Chinese who was perhaps named Cek Ko-po. His son was perhaps the man whose name was given by the Portuguese as 'Rodim', probably meaning Badruddin or Kamaruddin; he seems to have died c.1504. Rodim's son, or perhaps younger brother, was the founder of Děmak's temporary hegemony in Java. He was known as Trěnggana, and later Javanese traditions say that he used the title sultan, although this may be anachronistic. Trěnggana appears to have ruled twice, c.1505–18 and c.1521–46; the period between these two reigns was filled by his brother-in-law, King Yunus of Jěpara. Trěnggana oversaw the expansion of Děmak's influence to the east and west, and it was during his second reign that the last Hindu-Buddhist state of East Java fell, c.1527.

What had happened in Majapahit since the later fifteenth century is also unclear, and unless new sources are discovered will probably never be known with certainty. It seems that some time prior to 1486 Majapahit had been conquered either by another non-Islamic power or by an opposing branch of the royal family of Majapahit. By 1486 the Majapahit royal line (or the branch of it which had previously ruled) had been re-established by a predecessor of a king named Girīndrawardhana Ranawijaya (who left inscriptions in 1486). Some time between 1486 and Tomé Pires's time (1512–15), the centre of the Hindu-Buddhist kingdom was for some reason moved to Kědiri; whether it

was still under the Majapahit dynasty is uncertain. Whatever the case, the Hindu-Buddhist state was by this time in an advanced state of collapse, rent by internal conflict and threatened by the new states arising on the coast.

During Děmak's military expansion, the Hindu-Buddhist state (at Kědiri) was conquered c.1527. Later Javanese court chronicles describe the conquest in various ways, but all show some concern to establish that Děmak now succeeded to the legitimacy of Majapahit (these chronicles ignore the possibility that at the end the dynasty of Majapahit no longer ruled). Děmak is pictured as Majapahit's direct successor and the first 'Sultan' of Děmak, Raden Patah, is depicted as the son of Majapahit's last king by a Chinese princess, Putri Cina, who had been sent away from the court before her son was born. The fall of Majapahit in such texts is conventionally placed at the end of the fourteenth Javanese century (c. 1400/AD 1478–9). The turn of the century was later regarded as a time when changes of dynasties or courts normally occurred. Such legends can tell little about the actual events, but they tell much about the concern of later courts to see dynastic continuity and legitimacy as elements which transcended Islamisation.

Děmak's conquests compelled the submission of other major ports and reached to many inland areas of East Java which were probably not yet Islamised. The sources do not allow certainty about these campaigns, but the following conquests seem to have occurred. Tuban was conquered in c.1527. This was a very old port of Majapahit mentioned by Chinese sources as early as the eleventh century; it was already Islamised before 1527, but even so had remained loyal to the Hindu-Buddhist ruler in the interior. Madiun was taken in c.1529–30; in the 1530s Surabaya (already an Islamic port) recognised Děmak's authority and Pasuruan was conquered or occupied; in 1543 Mount Pěnanggungan (a holy area for the Hindus of East Java) was conquered; in the 1540s or 1550s Kědiri was again raided; and in c.1545 Malang was taken. During an expedition against Panarukan in 1546, 'Sultan' Trěnggana was apparently murdered.

In the west of Java, Děmak sponsored the growth of Bantěn and Cirěbon. Cirěbon was apparently occupied by Muslims late in the fifteenth century, but its florescence is traditionally associated with one of the nine *walis*, Sunan Gunungjati (d. c.1570). He is said to have been born in Pasai in North Sumatra, but when the Portuguese occupied that port (1521–4) he travelled as a pilgrim to Mecca. On his return from Mecca he went to Děmak and married a sister of Trěnggana.

A Javanese Hindu state called Sunda appears to have existed in the area of Bantěn in West Java from the tenth century. Pepper was evidently a major export product of this area by the twelfth century and in the thirteenth and fourteenth centuries it seems to have produced major economic growth. Bantěn may have been politically dominated in the fourteenth and fifteenth centuries by the interior state of Pajajaran, but by around 1500 the accelerating pace of international trade in pepper gave it renewed wealth. The fall of Malacca to the Portuguese in 1511 and the consequent dispersal of Asian trade and traders to other ports of the archipelago appear to have been of further benefit to Bantěn. Its Hindu-Buddhist ruler may still have been nominally a vassal of Pajajaran, but the latter's decline gave him opportunities to act with greater independence. Bantěn resisted Islamisation and was threatened by the growth of Islamised Děmak, so its ruler decided to seek an anti-Děmak alliance with the Portuguese. In 1522 the Portuguese

agreed with Bantĕn to establish a post on its eastern border as a barrier to the Muslim forces from the east. When they returned five years later to implement the agreement, however, the Portuguese discovered that they were too late.

Around 1523–4, Sunan Gunungjati set off with an army from Dĕmak to establish a strategic and trading base in West Java. He took Bantĕn, drove off the local lord, and rejected the agreement with the Portuguese when they showed up to build their post in 1527. Pajajaran's second main port, Sunda Kalapa (now Jakarta), was also taken by the Muslims. They renamed it Jayakĕrta or Surakarta (synonymous Javanese names of Sanskrit origin meaning 'Victorious and Prosperous'). Bantĕn was ruled by Gunungjati as a vassal of Dĕmak, but his descendants were later to become independent of Dĕmak's overlordship. Some time after 1552, Gunungjati moved to Cirĕbon and established another royal line which was also to rule independently.

The identity and activities of Sunan Gunungjati are known largely from semi-legends, and much uncertainty remains. It is not impossible that the military conquests ascribed to him were more the efforts of another man known to the Portuguese as 'Tagaril' and 'Falatehan' (perhaps Fadhillah Khan or Fatahillah), who may be confused with Gunungjati in some legends. A chronicle called *Purwaka Caruban Nagari* distinguishes between Gunungjati and Fadhillah; it was supposedly written in 1720, but there is reason to doubt its authenticity. Even if the date 1720 is correct, this would still be two centuries after the events, and this text's ostensible solution of the problems concerning Gunungjati must be regarded with caution.

The second ruler of Bantĕn, Hasanuddin (r. c.1552–70), spread Bantĕn's authority to the pepper-producing district of Lampung in South Sumatra, which had long-standing connections with West Java. He thereby solidified the foundations of Bantĕn's prosperity as a pepper port. The third ruler, Molana Yusup (r. c.1570–80), was the conqueror of Pajajaran c.1579. With the fall of Pajajaran the last significant Hindu-Buddhist state disappeared in Java, although there was still a smaller pre-Islamic state in the Eastern Salient (*Oosthoek*) and small non-Islamised communities remained in several areas. Upon the conquest of Pajajaran, the Sundanese elite is said to have embraced Islam.

In the latter half of the sixteenth century Dĕmak's claims to overlordship in Java disintegrated. The fourth ruler of Dĕmak, traditionally called Sultan Prawata (r. c.1546–61), appears not to have attempted campaigns like those of his predecessor Trĕnggana. It is hard to know what the hegemony of Dĕmak had amounted to even in its 'golden age', during Trĕnggana's second reign (c.1521–46). This was apparently a period of confusion and fragmentation, and Dĕmak's 'empire' is unlikely to have been more than a loose federation of states. It is doubtful if there was ever any centralised administrative control, and Dĕmak's conquests may have been more in the nature of punitive (and population-gathering) raids. The geographical factors described in Chapter 2 would have limited Dĕmak's authority as much as that of any other state in Javanese history.

Several other states were important in the early sixteenth century, but none competed with Dĕmak's attempt at expansion throughout the island. Kudus was something of an Islamic holy city. It is the only place in Java that permanently acquired an Arabic name (*al-Quds*, Jerusalem). Its emergence as a centre of Islamic learning is

associated with Sunan Kudus, one of the nine *walis*, who is said to have been the fifth *imam* (head) of the mosque of Děmak and a major leader of the campaign of 1527 against ‘Majapahit’ before moving to Kudus. The mosque of Kudus, which is notable both for the perseverance of pre-Islamic architectural forms such as Old Javanese split doorways and for its name *al-Manar* or *al-Aqsa* (like the mosque of Jerusalem), has the date AH 956 (AD 1549) inscribed over the *mihrab* (niche indicating the direction of Mecca for prayer).

Jěpara was another important port. In early 1513 its king, Yunus, led an attacking force said to contain 100 ships and 5000 men from Jěpara and Palembang against Portuguese Malacca, but he was defeated. Between c.1518 and 1521, he apparently ruled as king over Děmak. Jěpara’s influence was, however, greatest in the latter part of the sixteenth century when it was ruled by a queen called Ratu Kalinyamat. In 1551 Jěpara aided Johor in its unsuccessful attack on Malacca, and in 1574 Jěpara again besieged Malacca for three months.

According to Chinese records the port of Grěsik was founded by Chinese in the fourteenth century. In 1411 the ruler of Grěsik, who was originally a native of Canton, sent a mission to the Chinese emperor. Grěsik became a major international trading centre in the fifteenth century. To Tomé Pires it was ‘the jewel of Java in trading ports’ (Cortesão, *Suma Oriental*, p. 193). It also became a major centre of Islam, as the nearby site of Giri became the headquarters of the first Sunan Giri, regarded as one of the greatest of the nine *walis*. He founded a line of spiritual lords of Giri which lasted until 1680, whereas the other *walis* had no successors to their authority. Sunan Giri is said in some traditions to have played a leading role in the conquest of ‘Majapahit’ and to have ruled Java for 40 days after its fall to purify Java of pre-Islamic remnants. Until 1680 Giri was to remain a major opponent of the inland empire-builders and the spiritual power associated with Giri would come to be feared and hated by the rulers of Mataram. The first Sunan and his successors are credited with a leading role in the spread of Islam to Lombok, Makassar, Kutai (East Kalimantan) and Pasir (Southeast Kalimantan), through conquest, marriages or the mission work of former students. There were clearly links between Giri and Maluku. Zainal Abidin, the ruler of Ternate in 1486–1500, is said to have been a student of Sunan Giri in his youth, as late as 1618 Ambonese continued to send tribute in cloves to Giri, and the Hituese leader Kakiali (d. 1643) studied there.



*Mosque at Kudus, north coast of Java, dated AH 956/AD 1549, reflecting Old Javanese architectural styles*

Surabaya was a major trading port by the early sixteenth century as well, but it was only in the early seventeenth century that it emerged as the leading coastal power. Madura was still being Islamised in the sixteenth century. In Tomé Pires's time (1512–15) it was not yet converted, but shortly after the fall of the Hindu-Buddhist state in Java c.1527, the Madurese (that is, probably the elite of Madura) are said to have adopted Islam; according to local traditions this occurred in 1528.

In the Eastern Salient of Java, Pasuruan was the only significant Islamic power in the sixteenth century. The other districts were under Hindu rule. There was apparently a wave of conquests by Pasuruan in the later sixteenth century, but the sources allow little confidence about the sequence of events. There may have been fighting against Hindu Balambangan in the 1540s, 1580s and 1590s. In c.1600–1 the capital of Balambangan was apparently conquered. Although the Balambangan area was not yet converted to Islam, successor Hinduised rulers were squeezed between expanding Javanese powers to the west and invading Balinese from the east, and never again had more than brief moments of power and influence.

In the second half of the sixteenth century, two new powers emerged in the interior of Central Java, which had not been the site of a major kingdom since the tenth century. The districts of Pajang and Mataram (where are located the present-day cities of Surakarta and Yogyakarta respectively) were extremely rich agricultural territories. From the late sixteenth to the early nineteenth centuries these two regions became the main political centres of Central and East Java, the land of the ethnic Javanese. With the

re-emergence of courts in the interior of Java, the dominant role of coastal states in Javanese politics was coming to an end. A period of bitter warfare between coast and interior would, however, be necessary before interior dominance was established. This dominance was to have important implications both for economic and for religious affairs, for the interior of Java was less involved in seaborne commerce and less accessible to external Islamic influences.

The kingdom of Pajang was apparently the first to emerge. In Javanese historical tradition it is seen as the next successor in the line of legitimacy which leads from Majapahit through Děmak to Pajang, and culminates in the dynasty of Mataram. In the fifteenth century a shadowy Hindu state called Pěngging, about which nothing reliable is known, was located in the area of Pajang; according to some traditions Sunan Kudus conquered the area for Islam, perhaps in the 1530s. Legends say that a son-in-law of ‘Sultan’ Trěnggana of Děmak named Jaka Tingkir, who was from the house of Pěngging and about whom several magical stories are told, was sent to rule Pajang as a vassal of Děmak. In the period following Trěnggana’s death (1546), Jaka Tingkir expanded his authority in Central Java. He is supposed to have been formally installed as king by Sunan Giri in Š 1503 (AD 1581–2) with the agreement of the other important Islamic states of Central and East Java. Jaka Tingkir now became ‘Sultan’ of Pajang, but the ascription of this title in the legends may be anachronistic. He is the only ruler of Pajang described in these texts, and may have died *c.*1587. These later chronicle stories are the sole sources for the history of Pajang; more reliable contemporaneous evidence is entirely lacking.

Mataram was the region which produced the most powerful and the longest of modern Javanese dynasties. Javanese legends say that one Kyai Gědhe Pamanahan did Jaka Tingkir of Pajang a great service by killing his main opponent, Arya Pěnangsang of Jipang, perhaps in the 1540s or 1550s. Pamanahan was promised the land of Mataram as his reward, but Jaka Tingkir failed to fulfil this promise until Sunan Kalijaga intervened and persuaded him to do so. Perhaps in the 1570s Pamanahan occupied the Mataram district, and he is thereafter called Kyai Gědhe (or Ki Agěng) Mataram in the legends. He may have died *c.*1584. Pamanahan is said in later Mataram chronicles to have been a descendant of the last king of Majapahit, but this probably reflects a greater concern to establish legitimacy than to record a correct genealogy. Mataram is said to have been deserted when Pamanahan occupied it. This may be an exaggeration, but it does seem probable that it was only in the later years of the sixteenth century that substantial population began to return to the rich rice lands of Mataram, which over six centuries before had supported the kingdom that built Barabudhur, Prambanan and the other great temples of Central Java.

Pamanahan’s son Paněmbahan Senapati Ingala (r. *c.*1584–1601) is described in Javanese chronicles as the founder of Mataram’s imperial expansion. In the middle of the seventeenth century, the VOC ambassador to Mataram, Rijklof van Goens, was told that it was Senapati who had actually conquered the Mataram district itself. He says that in *c.*1576, after the Mataram ruler had refused to embrace Islam, Senapati conquered the area, wiped out the local ruling house, imposed the new religion and established his own court. Many historiographical problems surround Senapati’s reign. Most of it is known only from later Mataram chronicles, and C. C. Berg has argued that these are

unreliable as historical records. In his view, the Mataram chroniclers attempted to create false antecedents for the man whom he sees as the real first ruler of Mataram, Sultan Agung (r. 1613–46), who is discussed below. Therefore, he argues, chroniclers created a mythical character called Senapati and ascribed to him activities which were really those later undertaken by Agung. His analysis is based upon a comparison of these two reigns as they are described in a Javanese chronicle; in these descriptions there is indeed evidence of some confusion between the two reigns.

The historiographical questions raised by Berg concerning Senapati cannot be answered with complete certainty. It is undeniably the case that chronicle accounts of the sixteenth century which were composed or recopied two or more centuries later contain inaccuracies and myths. In the absence of contemporaneous evidence, it is often impossible to assess the contents of these chronicles. It is, however, also the case that for the early seventeenth century, when contemporaneous VOC records become available, a few Javanese chronicles can be shown to have a considerable degree of historical accuracy. It is also clear that, whether or not Senapati's reign is accurately described in the chronicles, by the time the first Dutchmen reached Java at the end of the sixteenth century Mataram was already a major and expanding power. It is clear beyond reasonable doubt, therefore, that Sultan Agung was not the first ruler of the Mataram line. But it is also true that most of the chronicle accounts for Mataram history before c.1600 cannot be verified from other sources. These chronicles must therefore be regarded with caution.

According to the chronicle accounts, Senapati decided to renounce Mataram's vassalage to Pajang. He concentrated his spiritual powers through meditation and asceticism. A falling star descended above his head as he slept on the holy stone of Sela Gilang (at Lipura, still a dynastic holy site) and prophesied both Mataram's greatness and its future fall under Senapati's great-grandson (Amangkurat I; see [Chapter 8](#)). Then Senapati sought the support of the Goddess of the Southern Ocean (Kangjeng Ratu Kidul, or Nyai Lara Kidul), who was to become the special protectress of the House of Mataram. According to Mataram tradition, she was a princess of Pajajaran who had been driven from the court when she refused a marriage arranged by her father. He laid upon her a curse: she was made queen of the spirits with her palace beneath the waters of the Indian Ocean, and would only become a normal woman again on the Day of Judgement. She is supposed to have encountered Raden Susuruh, whom *Babad Tanah Jawi* texts inaccurately depict as the founder of Majapahit, and to have told him that she would serve him and all his descendants who ruled in the area of Mataram. After Senapati had spent three days with her in her underwater palace, the goddess promised him the support of her spirit army. On his return to land, he encountered Sunan Kalijaga, who told him to fortify his court: Pajang would take no action, for Sunan Giri had said that the rise of Mataram was the will of God. Senapati's reliance upon both Sunan Kalijaga and the Goddess of the Southern Ocean in the chronicle accounts nicely reflects the Mataram dynasty's ambivalence towards Islam and indigenous Javanese beliefs.

These stories obviously reveal little of the process by which a military base was created. The expansion of Mataram was nonetheless a matter of military power. In c.1587–8 Senapati apparently defeated Pajang, and Jaka Tingkir (Sultan Pajang) died.

Senapati took to himself the holy regalia (*pusaka*), the symbols and supernatural accessories of sovereignty. Then he began to expand his power northwards to the coast and eastwards down the Sala and Madiun river basins. There is some logic in the chronicle accounts of the conquest of Děmak in 1588, of Madiun in 1590 or 1591, and of Kědiri in 1591. In 1591 there may also have been raids on other Sala and Madiun river sites such as Jipang (a crucial site for access to the east coast), Jagaraga and Panaraga. In 1595 there seems to have been further fighting in the Madiun river valley, and in 1600 Mataram apparently put down a rebellion in Pati. Dutch voyagers reported an unsuccessful Mataram expedition against Bantěn in c.1597.

Now Senapati was approaching areas under the influence of Surabaya, which was emerging as the most powerful of the coastal cities. The bitter conflict between Surabaya and Mataram for hegemony in East and Central Java was not to be resolved until 1625. In 1598 and 1599 Senapati is supposed to have attacked Tuban, but without success. On Surabaya's southern flank, Senapati is said to have attacked Pasuruan in 1591 and 1600. The Pasuruan episodes seem unlikely, however, for it is unclear how Mataram could have marched an army or sent a seaborne expedition (via Děmak) to Pasuruan, passing through areas under Surabayan control. It may be that Pasuruan was anxious to salvage as much independence as possible from the emerging conflict between Surabaya and Mataram, and chose to declare allegiance to the more distant of the two powers. Pasuruan could reasonably suppose that the main battles would in any case be fought on the north coast and in the lower Sala and Brantas valleys.

About 1601 Senapati died and was buried at his court in Kuta Gěde. Although the documentation for his reign is not satisfactory, one can accept that the military expansion of Mataram had begun. Mataram had been established as the major power in the interior of Central Java. Senapati was far from being sovereign over Java: Surabaya and its allies on the eastern north coast were still powerful and independent, as were Cirěbon and Bantěn in West Java. The power base of Java's last great dynasty had, however, been created.

For the reign of Senapati's son, Paněmbahan Seda ing Krapyak (c.1601–13), some VOC documentation is available and the events are therefore rather clearer. In 1602 the king's half-brother Pangeran Pugěr, who had been sent to rule over Děmak, arose in rebellion. Eleven VOC sailors were captured by Děmak forces in 1602, and the reports of the five who escaped confirm the warfare between Mataram and Děmak. In 1602 Krapyak was forced to withdraw, but by about 1605 Pangeran Pugěr had been defeated; Mataram chronicles say that he was sent to live as a religious student (*santri*) in Kudus, suggesting that this holy city was now firmly under Mataram control. Another half-brother rebelled in c.1607–8 and was defeated in Panaraga, and in c.1608 Kědiri apparently rebelled and was again brought to heel.

Krapyak's most powerful enemy was Surabaya. A VOC description of 1620 pictures Surabaya as a rich and powerful state. It was some five Dutch *mijlen* in circumference (approximately 23 miles/37 kilometres (km)), surrounded by a canal and fortified with cannon. It was said in that year to have 30,000 men in the field against Mataram, yet there was no noticeable shortage of men in the city (this may, however, be an exaggeration). In 1622 Surabaya was overlord of Grěsik and Sidayu. It is also said in Javanese chronicles, and by the early-eighteenth-century writer François Valentyn, to

have been lord of Pasuruan and Balambangan, but these statements seem doubtful. Its influence may have extended down the Brantas valley to Japan and Wirasaba, into areas where Mataram power was being established. It was recognised as overlord by Sukadana (Southwest Kalimantan) and Surabayan trading ships were seen throughout the archipelago, from Malacca to Maluku. A VOC trading post existed at Gr̄esik from 1602 to 1615; its reports are the most reliable evidence for the early stages of the Mataram–Surabaya struggle. In 1610, Krapyak began direct assaults on Surabaya. Until 1613 annual Mataram campaigns brought terrible destruction to Surabaya's rice crops, thereby weakening its economic foundations. In August 1613 the VOC trading agents were obliged to flee when Gr̄esik and nearby Jortan were burned.

Krapyak also made the first contacts between Mataram and the VOC. In 1613 he sent an ambassador to Governor General (1610–14) Pieter Both in Maluku, asking for an alliance. Krapyak probably assumed that he and the VOC shared a common enemy in Surabaya. The VOC proceeded to set up a trading post in Jēpara, under Mataram's control, but it still retained its post at Gr̄esik, under the control of Surabaya.

Krapyak died in 1613 and was succeeded by his son, Sultan Agung (r. 1613–46), the greatest of Mataram's rulers. He did not in fact take the title of Sultan until 1641; at first he was apparently called Pangeran (prince) or Panēmbahan (honoured lord) and after 1624 Susuhunan (honoured lord; often abbreviated to Sunan, the title also given to the nine *walis*). He is nevertheless called Sultan Agung (the Great Sultan) throughout his reign in Javanese chronicles, and this convention is usually accepted by historians. He was the greatest of Java's warrior kings. Not all the battles described in Javanese chronicles can be confirmed in VOC sources, but the general picture of Mataram's conquests seems accurate.

In 1614 Agung assaulted Surabaya's southern flank: the Eastern Salient, Malang and perhaps Pasuruan. Surabayan forces apparently attempted to attack the Mataram army on its homeward march, but were defeated. In 1615 Agung took Wirasaba (near the present-day town of Maja Agung); this was of great importance strategically, for it dominated the entrance to the lower Brantas, and perhaps also psychologically, for Agung now held the area where Majapahit had been located. The victory at Wirasaba was of such importance that Agung personally led his forces there. The chronicles say that the Surabayan alliance was weakened in this crucial battle by mutual suspicions between Surabaya and Tuban. But the clear threat posed by Agung's advance pushed the Surabayan allies together again. They now attempted a long march from the north coast to Pajang, where they expected the local lord to join them. Agung secured the temporary loyalty of Pajang, a Mataram spy in Tuban apparently managed to mislead the coastal forces about the best route to follow, and at Siwalan in Pajang the Surabayan army found itself surrounded and without local support. In January 1616 Agung defeated the Surabayan expedition.

Agung now swept on to victories at Lasēm in 1616 and Pasuruan in 1616 or 1617. Pajang finally attempted a rebellion in 1617, but it was now too late. Agung destroyed the city and moved its population to Mataram; the lord of Pajang escaped to Surabaya. In 1619 Agung took Tuban, one of the leading components of the Surabayan alliance. This also gave him unchallenged control of the main coastal areas producing timber for shipbuilding. Now a Mataram navy appeared, threatening Surabaya's supremacy at sea.

By 1620, Surabaya alone stood in the way of Agung's aims in East Java.

From 1620 to 1625, Agung periodically besieged Surabaya and destroyed its crops. Finally the River Brantas was dammed and the city's water supply cut off. During this period, Agung's forces were engaged in other related conquests. In 1622 Surabaya's ally across the Java Sea, Sukadana, was subdued, thereby cutting off one source of supplies to the city. In 1624, after a difficult campaign and heavy losses, Agung's forces conquered Madura, severing Surabaya's other main source of supply. Madura had previously been divided among several local rulers, but now Agung ordered the island's government to be unified under one Madurese princely line, with its capital at Sampang. After 1678 these princes were to have the name Cakraningrat, and they would play a crucial role in Javanese dynastic politics until the 1740s. Finally, in 1625 Surabaya itself was conquered, not by assault but by starvation. Its ruler, known in Javanese tradition as Jayalēngkara, is said to have been allowed to stay on as Agung's vassal in Surabaya, while his son Pangeran Pēkik was ordered to take up an ascetic life at the holy grave of Sunan Ngampel-Dēnta near Surabaya. Jayalēngkara is said to have died shortly thereafter.

Coastal and East Javanese resistance to Agung was now effectively at an end. Balambangan was not under his control, and although Cirēbon had apparently declared allegiance to Agung, Bantēn remained independent in West Java. Agung had, however, successfully established his sovereignty over all the Javanese-speaking heartland of Central and East Java, as well as Madura. But his devastation of coastal military power could not end the very deep animosities between coast and interior, which would arise again in the reign of his successor. These animosities arose from conflicting dynastic loyalties and from the differing economic interests of the two areas. The coastal ports were never to be wholly convinced that their prosperity, which rested primarily on seaborne trade, could be served by paying taxes and obedience to an inland dynasty. By 1625 there was a new force on Java as well, the VOC at Batavia. Agung clearly gave his Javanese enemies priority over the VOC, but he would soon turn to deal with the Europeans as well.

Agung's authority in Central and East Java rested primarily, but not exclusively, on military power. The factors analysed in [Chapter 2](#) had to be lived with: permanent garrisons and direct rule from the centre were extremely difficult to maintain. Agung naturally turned to the methods all other Javanese rulers had available to deal with this. He brutally crushed opposition when it existed, but also relied upon a cult of glory and wealth about himself to attract the loyalty of other powerful men. Agung appears to have differed from most of his successors in maintaining a balance between centralised legitimisation and dispersed administration, resting on a foundation of military power, rather better than most other kings. During c.1614–22 he built a new court complex, a visible expression of his legitimacy, at Karta (about three miles/five km southwest of Kuta Gēde). After his conquest of Madura in 1624 he adopted the imperial title of Susuhunan. Javanese traditions say that, like Senapati, he established a liaison with the Goddess of the Southern Ocean. The series of conquests which had begun in Senapati's reign had brought into Mataram hands courtiers and literati of much older centres, who probably exercised a civilising influence on the parvenu dynasty. The Mataram rulers had by now learned how to rule like emperors in the Javanese tradition.

In the years 1625–7 Agung was at the height of his power. But the damage caused by his rise to eminence must have been great. Much of the coast had been devastated; populations had been deported. How many people had died in the fighting and as a result of the sickness and starvation caused by the disruption of agriculture cannot be guessed. Natural disaster appears to have exacerbated political damage, as the El Niño phenomenon brought drought to Java. In 1625–7 there were serious epidemics, and VOC documents claim that two-thirds of the population died in some areas. But Agung did not rest. Indeed, he could not. His empire ultimately rested upon his military superiority. Agung's invincibility had to be demonstrated over and over again, lest regional interests and powerful men should attempt to behave too independently. In 1627 Pati attempted a rebellion and Agung crushed it with heavy losses. The one thing that could shake his fragile empire was a defeat; this he had to avoid at any cost. But Agung was soon to suffer a devastating defeat at the hands of the VOC.

Agung's relations with the VOC had been delicate from the start. In 1614 the Dutch sent an ambassador to greet him upon his accession, and Agung warned him that the friendship which they both desired would be impossible if the VOC made any attempt to conquer the land of Java. The VOC had great need of Javanese rice, and therefore hoped that trade with the coastal rice exporters would be possible. But Agung's wars disrupted rice cultivation and in 1618 when rice was short he forbade its sale to the VOC altogether. VOC–Javanese personal relations were poor. Dutchmen are said to have compared Sultan Agung to a dog, and to have relieved themselves against the Jépara mosque; there were accusations of VOC piracy upon Javanese ships. Finally, hostilities erupted. In August 1618 the Gujarati who governed Jépara for Agung attacked the VOC trading post there. Three Dutchmen were killed and others were taken prisoner. In November 1618 the VOC retaliated by burning all the Javanese ships in the harbour and much of the town. In May 1619, Jan Pieterszoon Coen paused on his way to the conquest of Batavia to burn Jépara again (and with it the English East India Company's post).

Coen's conquest of Batavia in 1619 was the final turning point. The Dutch had now done precisely what Agung had warned them not to do: they had conquered a part of the island which he intended to govern himself as sole ruler. For ten years Agung gave priority to subduing his Javanese opponents closer to home. For his part, Coen briefly considered an alliance with Surabaya in 1619–20, but abandoned the idea. While concentrating on Surabaya, Agung made some overtures towards the VOC. In 1621 captured VOC personnel were returned to Batavia and some rice was supplied. The VOC sent embassies to Agung in 1622, 1623 and 1624, but his requests for VOC naval assistance against Surabaya, Bantén or Banjarmasin were refused. Since the VOC would not give him naval support, there was no reason whatsoever for Agung to tolerate its presence in Java.

After the fall of Surabaya in 1625, Agung prepared to deal with the Dutch. His army finally set off in 1628. A march of some 300 miles (500 km) from the court brought the first Javanese contingents to Batavia in August; in October a second Javanese force arrived. In various clashes the Javanese suffered heavy losses, but on more than one occasion the VOC fortress was in real danger of falling. Agung's army attempted to dam the River Ciliwung, but without success. Finally, in December the Javanese

withdrew after executing their failed commanders. The VOC found 744 unburied Javanese bodies, some of them beheaded. In 1629 Agung tried again, but this second siege was a debacle. His forces (including artillery) began marching at the end of May, but in July VOC ships found and destroyed stockpiles of rice and boats at Těgal and Cirěbon, thereby probably sealing the fate of Agung's army before it reached Batavia. The siege of 1629 lasted just over one month (21 August–2 October); the Javanese suffered greatly from disease and starvation, and the army disintegrated on its homeward march. VOC losses were few, although on 20 September Jan Pieterszoon Coen died of illness within the fortress.

Agung's ambition had exceeded his military and logistical capacities and had led him to a devastating defeat. Never again did a Mataram army attack Batavia, and Bantěn was now substantially freed of the threat of Mataram, being protected by the intervening VOC position. Mataram chroniclers, or perhaps Agung himself, tried to disguise the extent of the failure of 1628–9 by announcing a prophecy that an age would now come in which the VOC and Mataram would become allies. For several years hostilities between Agung and the VOC along the coast continued on a smaller scale, and Agung tried to maintain trade and diplomatic relations with the Portuguese in Malacca and India. In 1635–6, however, he apparently concluded that the Portuguese would not be strong enough to defeat the Dutch, and moved to establish more amicable relations with the VOC. Mataram warships stopped harassing VOC shipping but a formal restoration of peace was made impossible by Agung's refusal to release the 80 or so Dutchmen whom he held captive at the court. Yet VOC–Mataram hostilities now ceased. The reasons for this are to be found in Agung's analysis of the forces surrounding him: the VOC could not be ejected from Batavia, the Portuguese were too weak to help, and, above all, indigenous enemies had again arisen and must be given priority.

Agung's defeat at Batavia shattered the myth of his invincibility, and his fragile empire had to be patched together again with military force. In 1631–6 he crushed centres of opposition at Sumědang and Ukar in West Java, but the greatest threats came from Central and East Java. In 1630 a rebellion broke out which seems to have been led by religious teachers from the area of Těmbayat (the grave site of the *wali* Sunan Bayat); Agung defeated the rebels. In 1633 he undertook some form of pilgrimage to the holy site at Těmbayat, perhaps in an attempt to subdue the spiritual as well as the military power of the opposition.

Agung's pilgrimage of 1633 appears to have been a turning point in the Islamisation of Java. Until this time, as the new religion had spread throughout the island, it seems that the Mataram dynasty had still not embraced the new faith with full enthusiasm. It is at least noteworthy that the court still used the solar Hindu Šaka calendar for court purposes rather than the lunar Islamic calendar and that among its principal enemies was the line of Sunan Giri, regarded as one of the most senior Islamic saints (*walis*) of Java. Sultan Agung's pilgrimage to Těmbayat left evidence suggesting that Agung now sought to place the dynasty at the centre of, rather than at some distance from, the Islamisation process. Legends say that he received mystical instruction from the spirit of Sunan Bayat himself. He erected a gateway at Těmbayat which still stands and which commemorates his pilgrimage with an inscription dated equivalent to 1633, apparently

around October–November of that year. In November 1633 it seems that a courtly version of the Qur’anic story of Joseph in Egypt, the *Sĕrat Yusup*, was written in a village next to Tĕmbayat. Attached to the end of that 1633 version of *Yusup* is a fragment of another Islamically inspired courtly work called *Kitab Usulbiyah*, the creation of which was also evidently associated with the pilgrimage to Tĕmbayat. Agung also reconciled himself with the defeated line of Surabaya at this time by bringing the senior surviving prince, Pangeran Pĕkik, to court, where Agung gave him one of his own sisters as a wife and Agung’s son (later Amangkurat I, r. 1646–77) was married to Pĕkik’s daughter. The latter union meant that all subsequent rulers of the Mataram dynasty down to the present century were descended from both the Mataram and the Surabaya royal lines. While the date of these events is not certain, it seems likely that Pĕkik was brought to court in 1633. He evidently brought with him a third important literary work of Islamic inspiration, *Carita Sultan Iskandar*, based on Qur’anic tales relating to Alexander the Great. It is evident that *Yusup*, *Usulbiyah* and *Iskandar* were all regarded as supernaturally powerful, at least in later times. Their composition in Sultan Agung’s court at the time of his pilgrimage to Tĕmbayat suggests that these were powerful ritual and supernatural steps. Such, certainly, was Agung’s changing of the Javanese calendrical system in 1633 by decreeing the abandonment of the Šaka calendar for a hybrid Javano-Islamic lunar calendar (*Anno Javanico*), thereby literally changing the times in Java. By the time of his death in 1646, Agung had won the reputation of being a holy man. Javanese historical tradition regards him as the model of both the great king and the pious monarch. The Tĕmbayat pilgrimage seems to have been a central episode in establishing this greatness and piety.



*Grave site of Sunan Bayat, Tĕmbayat, Central Java; the gateway erected by Sultan Agung in 1633 is in the centre of the photograph*

The holy site of Giri, near Surabaya, was the primary source of opposition based upon religious legitimacy. About 1636 Agung crushed this centre. In c.1633 Agung had reconciled himself through Pangeran Pĕkik with the house of Surabaya, which was related to the line of Sunan Ngampel-Dĕnta, an even more senior *wali* than Sunan Giri. Pĕkik was then given command of a Mataram army to attack Giri. Pĕkik’s spiritual ancestry may have given legitimacy to Agung’s campaign; it would have had real military implications as well, for there are several cases known in which Javanese

soldiers were reluctant to attack or kill holy men or princes unless led by men of greater holiness or princely standing. The date of the conquest of Giri is uncertain, but it was probably in 1636. The captured ruler was allowed to return as a vassal after paying obeisance to Agung.

The frenzy of campaigning did not stop with the conquest of Giri. By 1633 Agung was already raiding in the east, in Balambangan, Panarukan and Blitar. In the 1620s and 1630s the Hindu lord of Balambangan appealed to the VOC for aid but was refused; his only remaining support was his suzerain the Dewa Agung (king) of Gelgel in South Bali. Gelgel was expanding overseas in this period into Lombok and Sumbawa as well, but in the end it was to prove no match for Mataram's forces in Balambangan. In 1635 the first major Mataram campaign was launched to conquer Balambangan. After devastating the area, Agung's forces were driven out by the Balinese, but they returned to the attack and in 1636–40 Agung at last conquered the Eastern Salient. His hold on the area was probably tenuous, however, and its inhabitants still did not adopt Islam.

Now Agung took his final symbolic step. In 1638 the ruler of Bantĕn, Pangeran Ratu (r. 1596–1651), had been the first king in Java definitely known to have taken the title sultan, with the Arabic name Abulmafakhir Mahmud Abdulkadir. Agung probably did not wish to be outdone by Bantĕn, and in any case his impending conquest of Balambangan may have seemed to call for a new title. In 1639 he sent an ambassador to Mecca who returned in 1641 with authorisation for a new title, Sultan Abdullah Muhammad Maulana Matarani. At last Agung rested, and enjoyed the only significant period of peace in his reign.

Now Agung prepared for his end. Around 1645 he began the construction of a new grave site on the top of a tall hill at Imagiri, some three miles (five km) to the south of his court. This was to become the burial ground for almost all his successors and for prominent members of the royal family. It is still a holy place today. The chronicles say that two years before his death the Goddess of the Southern Ocean came to Agung and prophesied the hour of his dying. Epidemic diseases were prevalent in the 1640s and one of these may have caused Agung's end. In early 1646, apparently some time between early February and early April, Sultan Agung died. The entrances to the court were sealed to prevent a coup, and his son was declared his successor as Susuhunan Amangkurat I.

At the time of his death Sultan Agung was the greatest conqueror in Indonesia since the time of Majapahit. He was overlord of all of Central and East Java, including the Eastern Salient, and of Madura. The only permanent defeat of his career was his failure to take Batavia, and the only kingdom on the island of Java which had remained independent was Bantĕn in the far west. Nor was his influence limited to Java and Madura. In 1622 he had conquered Sukadana; until c.1636 Palembang regarded him as overlord, after which relations were more uncertain; Banjarmasin was an ally in the period after 1637; embassies were exchanged with Makassar in 1630 and 1632. Agung's navy was not a major overseas conquering force except at Sukadana, but its existence gave Mataram something of the influence in the archipelago of the Majapahit 'empire'. This was, however, only a shadow of what Majapahit's influence appears to have been. The VOC was rapidly becoming the strongest naval force in the Indonesian archipelago, even though Agung's navy could still make the entrances to the harbour of

## Batavia unsafe.

The inward-looking tendency of Agung's empire was in any case clear. He did not move his court to the north coast, where trade could be encouraged and supervised, but stayed in Mataram, which has neither access by river to the north coast nor any ports of its own, and where the sea offers access only to the Goddess of the Southern Ocean's domain. His wars had devastated the coastal areas to such an extent that the export of Javanese rice was affected, at least in some years. For trade and traders he had only contempt, as he explained to the first VOC ambassador in 1614. The dynasty of Mataram had conquered the coast at enormous cost; the crucial question for the future of this fragile empire was whether the coastal districts could be governed from the interior in such a way as to encourage the prosperity of all. If this could be done, Java would become a unified economic and military force of enormous potential. But events were to show that this was not to be.

Outside Java and Sumatra there were no conquerors to be compared with the kings of Aceh and Mataram who have been described in this chapter. There were important things happening in many areas, of course, but much of the history of this period in other areas has not been studied or is inadequately documented. The internal history of the Balinese kingdom of Gelgel during its golden age of the sixteenth century cannot be reconstructed with confidence. Legends tell of the greatness of King Dalém Baturenggong and his priest Nirartha. Gelgel apparently dominated all of Bali and districts elsewhere from the Eastern Salient of Java to Lombok and Sumbawa, but with the present state of knowledge little more can be said with confidence.

Balinese, Sumbawan and Makassarese forces contested control over Lombok in the late seventeenth century and the first four decades of the eighteenth. This contest ended in Hindu-Balinese control over the Muslim Sasak people of Lombok. This led to considerable development of wetrice agriculture in western Lombok, where Sasak-Balinese relations were reasonably amicable. In central and eastern Lombok, however, where a Sasak elite still played a role and Islamic sentiments were later heightened in the course of the nineteenth century, Balinese-Sasak relations were strained and indeed violent from time to time. This would eventually provide part of the background to the Sasak uprising and consequent Dutch intervention of the 1890s.

South Sulawesi was the site of several small states, divided between two related ethnic groups, the Makassarese and Bugis. These two groups gained a reputation for being among the most fearsome warriors of the archipelago. They were also among the most professional. There exist manuscripts containing Bugis and Makassarese translations of Spanish and Portuguese treatises on gunnery; there are no such translations in other Indonesian languages. In the sixteenth century Sulawesi had not yet been converted to Islam. It was the source of valuable trade products, notably gold, spices, rice and other foodstuffs and, from the sixteenth century, slaves. The last were mainly local prisoners of war who were sold by aristocrats and war leaders into markets outside Sulawesi. Well into the nineteenth century, Bugis slavers were selling their human wares elsewhere in the Indonesian archipelago and farther afield.

Around 1500 the leading Bugis state was Luwu, but its hegemony was disintegrating in the face of challenges by other local powers. In 1509 it suffered a devastating defeat at the hands of the rival Bugis state of Bone. About 1530 the

Makassarese state of Gowa began to expand its power over its neighbours by conquest. By the mid-sixteenth century Gowa had established itself at the head of a loosely united empire and had emerged as a major trading power in eastern Indonesia. The Portuguese arrived there in the 1540s and after brief attempts at Christianisation soon settled down to participate in the trade in spices and slaves. Christianisation ceased to be of interest to the Portuguese and Indonesians alike, and the Portuguese presented no barrier to the adoption of Islam by South Sulawesi rulers in the first decade of the seventeenth century.

In 1605 the king of Gowa adopted Islam. Apparently his invitation to the Bugis state of Bone and other states to adopt the new faith was rejected. Gowa responded with a series of campaigns in 1608–11, as a result of which Islam was imposed throughout the Bugis–Makassarese area. At the end of these wars Gowa was the predominant state of South Sulawesi. Its ‘empire’, like other Indonesian states, was founded on military supremacy but was not a tightly centralised system of domination. The constituent states retained their identities and considerable autonomy. Gowa’s victory also did not mean the end of opposition. Its main rival was Bone, which would reverse the power relationship between itself and Gowa in the later seventeenth century by allying with the VOC.

The VOC set up its first trading post in South Sulawesi in 1609, but soon found Gowa to be a considerable challenge. Its importance as a trading centre for eastern Indonesia attracted European merchants whom the VOC was increasingly successful in excluding from Maluku. Sultan Alauddin Tumenanga ri Gaukanna (r. 1593–1639) cooperated with the English, French, Danish, Spanish, Portuguese and Asian traders in evading the VOC’s attempts at a spice monopoly. The VOC concluded that stern measures were needed to stop this ‘smuggling’ and to end the support being given by Gowa to the VOC’s enemies in South Maluku. In 1615 the VOC post was withdrawn and limited warfare between Gowa and the VOC began. Treaties of peace were concluded in June 1637, December 1655 and August–December 1660, but these did not end Gowa’s importance as a centre of international trade and opponent to the VOC. By 1660, however, the Dutch and Bugis had decided to ally against their common Makassarese enemy, which would lead to the fall of Gowa (see [Chapter 6](#)).

## **Chapter 5**

---

# Literary, Religious and Cultural Legacies

The early Islamised states of Indonesia produced not only new dynasties and empires, but also a rich cultural heritage. Some of this heritage was truly new, in so far as it was inspired by Islam, but much of it had roots in pre-Islamic culture as well. It is appropriate to regard this heritage as classical, in the sense that it provided authoritative cultural standards and frames of reference for the pre-twentieth-century civilisations of Indonesia. Because much of the documentary evidence for these classical cultures derives from the eighteenth century or later, one cannot always be certain that one's picture of pre-eighteenth-century cultural activities is either complete or precisely accurate. Nonetheless, a general description of these classical cultures is possible.

In this period, there was not a unified 'Indonesian' culture. There was instead a series of related regional cultural traditions belonging to specific linguistic and ethnic groups which were to become part of the modern Indonesian nation. There were many shared features among these regional cultures, but only the seafaring commercial groups, speaking Malay and Portuguese as lingua francas, transcended linguistic boundaries to a significant degree. The major cultural traditions are therefore to be seen in terms of the linguistic and ethnic groups to which they belonged. These were many, but in this chapter it will be possible only to look at the best-known written traditions, those of the Malay-speaking areas in the western archipelago, of Java, Bali and South Sulawesi. In all these cases, one is dealing with court rather than folk traditions, although these were not entirely exclusive categories. Many other cultural traditions still await scholarly investigation. In all areas there were communities with distinctive traditions but without written literatures, which of course imposes a considerable handicap upon historical studies.

In the western archipelago, a classically Malay culture with strong Islamic influences embraced most of the coastal states of Sumatra and the Malay Peninsula. Malacca in many ways set the cultural standards for these states. Works such as *Séjarah Melayu* ('Malay history') established literary norms and provided images of the ideal courtly life and of the proper relationship between subject and master. The Malay-speaking courts of western Indonesia consequently looked back to Malacca as their model not only in political affairs, but in cultural affairs as well. From northern Sumatra came particularly important works of Malay literature, especially religious literature. Hamzah Pansuri (d. 1527), whose gravestone seems to have been found in Mecca, was the first of the major authors known from this area. From the court of Aceh in the

seventeenth century came further classics, notably works of two Sumatrans, Syamsuddin of Pasai (d. 1630) and Abdurrauf of Singkil (c. 1615–93), and the most prolific of the four, the Indian Nuruddin ar-Raniri (d. 1658) from Gujarat.

Hamzah and Syamsuddin wrote works of Islamic mysticism which ar-Raniri later denounced as heresy. The boundary between orthodoxy and heresy in Islamic mysticism is not easily defined, and is a source of argument among modern scholars just as it was among the mystics of seventeenth-century Aceh. All these major Malay authors shared many fundamental ideas. In particular, Syamsuddin, Abdurrauf and ar-Raniri all employed the mystical doctrine of seven stages of emanation (*martabat*) by which God manifests Himself in the phenomenal world, culminating in the Perfect Man. This doctrine was taught widely throughout Indonesia. The theological complexities need not be considered here, but the central issue was this: if this doctrine was understood to imply that God partook of the plurality of the visible world and that the soul of humans was in some sense a part of God, then it offended the fundamental Islamic belief that although God created the world, He did not enter into His creation and was unchanged and untouched by it.

Hamzah's *Sharab al-'ashiqin* ('The lovers' beverage') and *Asrar al-'arifin* ('The secrets of the gnostics') and Syamsuddin's *Nur ad-daqa'iq* ('Light on the subtleties') are among the major works of Malay Islamic tradition. These writers' influence extended to other Indonesian cultures, and some of their works were translated into other Indonesian languages. In the reign of Iskandar Muda (1607–36) Syamsuddin enjoyed the favour of the Acehnese king.

In 1637 Nuruddin ar-Raniri arrived in Aceh, and with the patronage of Sultan Iskandar Thani (r. 1636–41) he persecuted the mystics whom Iskandar Muda had favoured. The books of Hamzah and Syamsuddin were ordered to be burned, and from ar-Raniri's prolific pen poured works which established literary as well as what he insisted were orthodox religious standards. The greatest of his works, and one of the greatest books in Malay literature, is his *Bustan as-Salatin* ('The garden of kings') which he began writing in 1638, and which was based upon Arabic sources. This encyclopaedic work consists of seven books, covering the creation, the prophets of Islam and the early Muslim kings of the Middle East and the Malay area, just kings and counsellors, pious kings and the saints of Islam, unjust kings and incompetent counsellors who deceive them, noble men and the heroes of the campaigns of the Prophet Muhammad, and intelligence and various sciences such as physiognomy and medicine. Ar-Raniri's works were also translated into other Indonesian languages. In 1644 he left Aceh after he lost the favour of Iskandar Thani's successor and died in India 14 years later.

Under Queen Taj ul-Alam (r. 1641–75), Abdurrauf was the major writer in the court of Aceh. He wrote works of Shafi'i jurisprudence as well as mysticism. After this time, as Aceh entered the political decline described in Chapter 4, it also appears to have lost its role as a religious and literary centre of Malay culture.

A considerable number of other Malay works in addition to *Bustan as-Salatin* were inspired by, or translated from, texts in other Islamic languages. One of these was the *Mahkota Ségala Raja-raja* or *Taj as-Salatin* ('The crown of kings'), adapted from Persian sources in 1602–3. It is probable, although not certain, that this version was

done in the court of Aceh. The text consists of orthodox teachings on man and God, and extensive advice upon various aspects of statecraft; *Taj as-Salatin* was also translated into Javanese. Many specifically religious texts were produced in Malay versions, including Qur'anic commentaries and works of jurisprudence. Legendary tales from the Islamic world are also found. *Hikayat Iskandar Dhulkarnain* ('The story of Alexander the Two-horned') concerns the legends of Alexander the Great, and *Hikayat Amir Hamzah* ('The story of Amir Hamzah') is a romantic tale based upon Persian legends concerning the uncle of the Prophet Muhammad.

Malay literature was not, however, wholly dominated by works of Islamic inspiration. Hindu stories survived Islamisation and were preserved in such classics as the *Hikayat Sri Rama* ('The story of the Lord Rama', based upon the *Rāmāyana*) and the *Hikayat Pandawa Jaya* ('The story of the victorious Pandawas', based ultimately on the Sanskrit *Mahabharata*, but apparently taken directly from the Old Javanese *Bhāratayuddha*). Hindu stories also form the basis for the plots of the shadow-play (*wayang*), in which flat parchment puppets are moved against an upright screen with illumination from behind. There are also Malay shadow-plays based upon Javanese stories concerning the legendary pre-Islamic heroes Panji and Damar Wulan (in Malay called Damar Bulan).

Chronicles were a major genre of Malay literature. *Hikayat Aceh* ('The story of Aceh') appears to have been written in the reign of Iskandar Muda (1607–36). It describes his predecessors and praises Iskandar Muda in his youth, and was apparently inspired by Persian royal panegyrics. There are many other Malay chronicles which concern the histories of other states in Indonesia and the Malay Peninsula.

Most of the Malay works described above are in prose, although verse passages are found within them. There was also a tradition of writing in verse. There were two main poetic forms in Malay, the *syair* and *pantun*. The antiquity of these two forms is not known because of the scarcity of early manuscripts. The name *pantun* is of Indonesian (perhaps Javanese) origin, while the term *syair* derives from Arabic (*shi'r*, poetry; *sha'ir*, poet). Both forms use four-line stanzas usually consisting of four words each, but their rhyme schemes differ (a-b-a-b in *pantun*, a-a-a-a in *syair*). The main difference between them is that the *pantun* also uses extensive internal rhyming and a quatrain is usually complete in itself, having two initial lines that allude to the second couplet in which the poet's meaning is made clear. *Syair* quatrains, on the other hand, normally form part of much longer verse works. *Syairs* cover many subjects, including historical epics. Several are Malay versions of Javanese epics, including *syair* versions of the Damar Wulan (Damar Bulan) and Panji stories mentioned above. The earliest known examples of Malay *syair* are in the works of Hamzah Pansuri, the Sumatran author described above. Both *syair* and *pantun* were sung aloud.

Javanese classical literature is clearly distinguished from Malay, although they exerted mutual influences upon each other. As well as indigenous Indonesian traditions, two general strands of external influence are discernible in Javanese literature: Old Javanese Indianised traditions and Islamic traditions. The most striking distinction between Malay and Javanese is the lesser influence of Islam in much of Javanese literature. On a superficial level, this is reflected in the choice of scripts. Malay literature was written in the Arabic script (except for a few examples from South

Sumatra), whereas in Javanese the Arabic script was used much less frequently than the Javanese, which was ultimately derived from an Indian syllabary. Another important distinction is the dominance of verse over prose in classical Javanese literature. Javanese authors wrote their major works in *macapat* verse, which consists of about twenty different metres defining the number of syllables per line, the final vowel of each line and the number of lines per stanza (varying from three to ten). About seven of these metres were commonly used, the others more rarely. This verse was then chanted aloud. These verse forms are apparently of indigenous Javanese origin, although probably inspired by the Indian metres found in Old Javanese literature.

The history of Old Javanese literature in Java after the end of the last Hindu-Buddhist state c. 1527 is obscure. What is clear is that the Old Javanese heritage was transmitted into the Islamic period. Some of the greatest works in Javanese (or ‘Modern Javanese’) are adaptations of Old Javanese works, especially *Sērat Rama* (from the Old Javanese *Rāmāyana*), *Sērat Bratayuda* (from the Old Javanese *Bhāratayuddha*), *Sērat Mintaraga* (from the Old Javanese *Arjunawiwāha*), and *Sērat Arjuna Sasrabau* or *Lokapala* (from the Old Javanese *Arjunawijaya*). When the Old Javanese versions ceased to be copied and read in Java is difficult to ascertain. It is reasonably clear, however, that Old Javanese was still studied in the Javanese courts into the eighteenth century. Among the more important pieces of evidence in support of this view is an extant Old Javanese manuscript (*Dharmaśūnya kakawin*) which was copied by a prince of Kartasura in 1716. It is therefore not surprising that a substantial part of Javanese literature can be seen to be directly influenced by pre-Islamic ideas. Not only those works, which were directly adapted from Old Javanese, but also many others, abound in Hindu-Buddhist influences and in allusions to pre-Islamic stories.

The Javanese shadow-puppet (*wayang*) theatre was a major means of preserving the Hindu-Buddhist heritage in Islamised Java. The main *wayang* form is the *wayang kulit*, in which flat parchment puppets are used. The stories of the *wayang kulit* are based upon the Hindu epics *Rāmāyana* and *Bhāratayuddha*. Panji and Damar Wulan stories, concerning legendary pre-Islamic heroes, are also performed in the *wayang*. *Wayang golek* (round wooden puppets with moveable heads and arms) are usually used for Menak stories, which are highly elaborate romances inspired by Islamic legends concerning the Prophet Muhammad’s uncle Amir Hamzah. It is only in this last case that an Islamic inspiration of a sort can be seen. There is reason to think that in court circles at least, the Menak stories were less popular than the Hindu classics. This does not mean, however, that Javanese were necessarily very conscious of the pre-Islamic origins of their cultural heritage. Strange as it may seem, although the survival of pre-Islamic culture is clearly demonstrated in the *wayang*, Javanese tradition usually ascribes the creation of the *wayang* to the nine *walis*, the semi-legendary apostles of Islam in Java.



*From a wayang kulit set made by Yogyakarta Sultan Haméngkubuwana VIII (1921–39): the character Gathotkaca from the Javanese version of the Bhāratayuddha*

Direct Islamic inspiration is seen in Javanese translations of Arabic or Malay religious works. In this genre the Arabic script and prose were sometimes employed, but the Javanese script and verse were also common. An exclusive commitment to Islamic sources of inspiration appears to have applied only to a minority of literate Javanese. Even devout writers of religious texts often turned to Hindu-Buddhist ideas for illumination or illustrative examples. There exists a vast body of mystical poems known as *suluk* (songs). Among them one finds wholly orthodox Sufi doctrines of a kind that might be found in any Islamic society, but also radically monistic and pantheistic ideas with Hindu-Buddhist resonances. Islamic culture also inspired numerous Javanese romances, including *Menak Amir Hamsa*, *Yusup*, *Ahmad Hanapi* and other texts. But the non-Islamic Panji and Damar Wulan romances were also an important part of Javanese literature.

A conflict within religious circles like that which occurred in seventeenth-century Aceh seems never to have taken place in pre-nineteenth-century Java. Although many Javanese religious texts have not yet been studied, it appears that a common form of Islam among literate Javanese was a mysticism in which Man and God were identified. Given the apparent absence of any conflict on orthodox-heterodox lines, it seems probable that even learned and devout Javanese Muslims believed that this was a true understanding of the message of Islam. There are signs of tension concerning the observation of the *sarengat* (Arabic *shari‘ah*: Indonesian *syariat*), the holy law of

Islam. Javanese texts describe the martyrdom or condemnation of five teachers of heretical mysticism: the *wali* Sitijénar and Sunan Panggung in the time of Děmak, Ki Běběluk of Pajang, Seh Amongraga in the reign of Sultan Agung and Ki Cabolek in the early eighteenth century. It is significant, however, that in these stories the teachers are not denounced for the content of their teachings (that Man and God are one), but rather because they reveal this secret doctrine to the uninitiated and/or tell the masses that daily prayer, attendance at the mosque and so on are not necessary, thereby threatening the observance of Islamic law. The truth of their doctrines is not disputed.

By the late eighteenth and early nineteenth centuries, Javanese Islam seems to have settled into a pattern which may be called a ‘mystic synthesis’. It seems that this synthesis was found among ordinary villagers as well as aristocrats, although evidence for it mostly comes from elite, literate circles. It had three distinctive features, all within the general context of mysticism: (1) a strong sense of Islamic identity, that is, to be Javanese was to be a Muslim; (2) faithful observation of the five ritual pillars of Islam – the Confession of Faith, five daily prayers, giving of alms, fasting in the month of Ramadan and, for those who are able, the pilgrimage to Mecca; but also (3) acceptance of the reality of local Javanese spirit forces. On this spiritual compromise – which could find parallels across the Islamic world in the age before modern reform movements – Javanese religious identity and practice rested. It was to be greatly challenged from the mid-nineteenth century onwards.

Chronicles (*babad*) were an important part of classical Javanese literature. The origin of this genre is not known, for chronicles of the voluminous length and detail found in Modern Javanese are not known in Old Javanese. One cannot rule out the possibility that Arabic chronicles inspired Javanese to begin composing *babads*, but there is no evidence that this was so. Indeed, Islamic religious concerns receive little attention in Javanese chronicles, which concentrate on kings, heroes, battles and romantic interludes. Some are encyclopaedic works which begin with both Adam and the Hindu gods, describe the legendary pre-Islamic period of Javanese history, and culminate in the seventeenth or eighteenth century; these are usually called by the generic name *Babad Tanah Jawi* ('History of the land of Java'). These texts are rarely less than several hundred pages in length; a Surakarta version of 1836 is 18 volumes in manuscript. Other chronicles concern the history of specific kingdoms, heroes or incidents. Javanese chronicles vary with regard to their historical accuracy, but some at least are considered to be quite accurate and important historical sources.

It is a curious fact of Javanese cultural history that although many major literary works survive in thousands of manuscripts, only a few pre-nineteenth century authors are known by name. It is often difficult to be certain whether the works traditionally ascribed even to these few writers were actually written by them. One of the few authors whose identity can be established from VOC records as well as Javanese traditions is Carik Bajra (also known as Tirtawiguna), who was active at the court of Kartasura from about 1718, became a major adviser to the king in the 1730s and 1740s, then *patih* until his death in 1751. He is credited with a chronicle (*Babad Kartasura*), Panji stories, a version of the didactic text *Yudanagara Wulang* ('The teachings of Yudanagara', on statecraft) and other works. The wife of King Pakubuwana I (r. 1704–19), Ratu Pakubuwana (b. c. 1657; d. 1732), was also a major religious and literary

figure of the first half of the eighteenth century. She instigated vast works of Islamic inspiration including a Javanese version of the Amir Hamzah tales entitled *Sērat Menak*, composed in 1715. In 1729–30 she patronised the production of new versions of the books associated with Sultan Agung's 1633 pilgrimage to Tēmbayat, as will be seen in Chapter 9.

In the latter half of the eighteenth century Yasadipura I (1729–1803) was active at the court of Surakarta. If all the works attributed to his pen are correctly ascribed, he was the greatest of the pre-nineteenth-century authors. He is credited with having produced the four major classics adapted from Old Javanese which were described above: *Sērat Rama*, *Sērat Brata-yuda*, *Sērat Mintaraga* and *Sērat Arjuna Sasrabau* or *Lokapala*. He is also said to have produced a version of *Sērat Menak*, although it is clear that Ratu Pakubuwana's version of the text existed before his time. To Yasadipura I are also ascribed a version of *Dewa Ruci* (a story based upon the *Bhāratayuddha*, teaching Hindu mystical doctrines), *Sērat Panitisastra* (a text on ethics based on the Old Javanese *Nītiśāstra kakawin*), the Javanese version of the *Taj as-Salatin* called *Sērat Tajusalatin*, and *Anbiya* or *Tapel Adam* (the lives of the prophets of Islam). Finally, he is credited with having written two books of a historical nature, *Sērat Cabolek* ('The book of Cabolek', concerning a religious dispute), and one of the finest of Javanese chronicles, *Babad Giyanti* ('The history of Giyanti', covering the period 1746–60). This last text is not only an accurate historical record so far as can be judged, but an excellent example of a major work of Javanese *macapat* verse. There are, however, problems surrounding the ascription of several works to Yasadipura I. It seems unlikely that he can have been the author of the original version of *Cabolek*, but if he did indeed compose *Babad Giyanti*, then he deserves his fame as one of Java's greatest pre-nineteenth-century writers.

The literature of Bali can be divided into three groups on linguistic grounds: Old Javanese, Middle Javanese (or 'Javanese-Balinese', 'Javano-Balinese' or 'Balino-Javanese') and Balinese. The first of these reflects the crucial role played by Bali in preserving the literary heritage of pre-Islamic Java after Java became Islamised. Although some manuscripts of Old Javanese texts survived in Java, the vast majority are known only in copies from Bali or the adjacent island of Lombok. The Balinese resisted Islam and kept alive the literary and religious heritage which in Java was altered (but never entirely abolished) by Islamisation.

Middle Javanese literature is a problematical subject. Most of these texts are called *kidung* (song). They consist primarily of romanticised legends concerning the age of Majapahit in Java (*Harsawijaya*, *Rangga Lawe*, *Sorāndaka*, *Sunda*), the Prince Panji of a preceding period (concerning whom there are many *kidungs*), or more popular, less courtly, heroes (*Sudamala*, *Sri Tanjung*, *Calon Arang*). A few *kidungs* are adaptations of Old Javanese works with an Indian theme, but the vast majority are set in Java. There are also Middle Javanese works on religion, and the chronicle *Pararaton* (which also concerns Java). These texts are known only in manuscripts from Bali, and a question therefore arises whether they should be seen as a part of the heritage of pre-Islamic Java which, like Old Javanese, was preserved in Bali, or on the other hand as indigenous products of the Javanised literati of Bali. Scholarly opinion has, in recent years, inclined somewhat towards the view that Middle Javanese literature is properly seen as an

indigenous part of Balinese culture, but the evidence on this is insufficient to support any certain conclusions.

The Balinese also wrote in their own tongue, especially for the history of their own kingdoms. Although there are verse texts, the most common chronicle form is written in prose, and is called ***babad***, as in Java. Balinese chronicles have so far received limited study. While some appear to be so mythological and devoid of chronological order that they are of little value as sources of political history, despite their literary interest, others have proved to be valuable historical sources. The main purpose of many texts was apparently to establish the ancestry of noble families, thereby facilitating ancestor-worship, and to verify the legitimacy of kingdoms. Other types of literary works were written in Balinese as well, often strongly influenced by Old or Middle Javanese stories and literary norms.

Balinese ***wayang*** (shadow-theatre) has much in common with that of Java, especially in its dependence upon ***Rāmāyana*** and ***Bhāratayuddha*** stories for many of its plots. Calon Arang and Panji plays are also performed. The general principles of performance are the same, in that normally flat parchment puppets are played against an upright screen illuminated from behind. There are, however, various differences in the artistic conventions of the two traditions, and the Balinese puppets lack the intricate artistry of the Javanese. The coarser appearance of the Balinese puppets may reflect an older form once found also in Java, for East Javanese Hindu temples from the thirteenth and fourteenth centuries have bas-reliefs in a similar style.

The Bugis and Makassarese of South Sulawesi had closely related literatures in both prose and verse. An indigenous script was used which differs markedly from both the Arabic and Javanese scripts, although it has similarities with some Sumatran scripts and ultimately derived from an Indian prototype. These two groups only adopted Islam in the early years of the seventeenth century, but were soon noted for a self-conscious and firm commitment to their new faith. Their literature has many examples of translations from Arabic and Malay religious works, including the writings of Nuruddin ar-Raniri. A lengthy indigenous epic ***La Galigo*** contains mythological material about a legendary king of Sulawesi which is still regarded as sacred by many contemporary Bugis and Makassarese.

For historians, Bugis and Makassarese literature had two genres which are particularly important. Chronicles exist in both languages, called ***patturioloang*** in Makassarese and ***attoriolong*** in Bugis (both meaning ‘histories of the people of olden times’). What most distinguishes these chronicles from those in Malay, Javanese and Balinese is their avoidance of mythological or legendary elements except for introductory foundation myths. They appear therefore to be potentially more valuable as historical sources, but their use is often made difficult by the great rarity with which dates are given. This omission, however, is more than compensated for by the existence of detailed diaries in both languages kept by kings and high officials, beginning in the early seventeenth century. This tradition of diary-writing was unknown among other Indonesian peoples. The detailed entries and numerous marginal annotations in Bugis and Makassarese diaries are rich (although as yet largely untapped) sources of historical knowledge.

There were, of course, other literary traditions than those described above. Many of

these were influenced to some extent by the major traditions already mentioned, and especially by Malay and Javanese literature, the two most influential literary cultures of the archipelago. Malay literature influenced that of the Minangkabau people of Sumatra, those of many Malay-speaking coastal groups throughout the Malay-Indonesian area, and Bugis and Makassarese. Javanese influence can be seen in Madurese literary traditions and in Sundanese. Influences from both Javanese and Malay can be seen in each other. Balinese, Bugis and Makassarese literatures were much less influential outside their own linguistic groups.

The visual and performing arts were also highly developed in classical Indonesian cultures and have remained popular down to the present. The *wayang*, perhaps the most typical art form of Indonesia, has been mentioned above. Weapons, especially the ornately patterned *kris* (dagger), book- illumination, architecture, *batik* (an intricately dyed fabric) and many other objects reveal a refined artistic tradition. Dance had long been performed in the courts of Indonesia, and is depicted on the bas-reliefs of the ancient Hindu temples of Java. In the Islamic period the continuance of dance performances is documented, but it is not possible to describe precisely the form of these dances before the twentieth century, when detailed descriptions and photographs were made. It is clear, however, that the visual and performing arts of Indonesia were often predominantly sacral in nature. *Wayang* puppets, *krises*, *batik* and specific dances had spiritual personalities and released supernatural energies; they could only be employed with due regard to supernatural forces. Elaborate rituals and rules therefore surrounded the arts of Indonesia.

Closely connected with dramatic performances was the classical music of Indonesia. Musical traditions are of course found throughout the archipelago, but particular significance attaches to those of Java. Because of the survival of some quite old instrumental ensembles (some reputedly from the seventeenth century or even earlier) it is possible to learn something of Java's musical traditions before the twentieth century. It seems possible that in prehistoric times Java was the centre of the gong-chime musical culture found throughout Southeast Asia. Indeed, the word *gong* is one of the very few Javanese words to have found its way into even the major languages of Europe. Two basic types of gong are found in the Javanese *gamelan* orchestra. The *bonang* is a bronze kettledrum with a raised knob for striking, of which several are suspended horizontally in a wooden frame. The other basic type is the vertically suspended gong which varies in size; the *gong ageng* (great gong) is a large, thick gong with a deep flange, three feet (one metre) or more in diameter, which produces the deep sonorous tone typical of the Javanese orchestra.

The Javanese *gamelan* orchestra consists largely of percussion instruments, including primarily *bonang*, *gong*, other gong-chimes, and instruments similar to xylophones; a complete orchestra has a total range of seven octaves. The *gamelan* also normally includes one or more spike fiddles (*rēbab*), zithers (*cēlēmpung*), end-blown flutes (*suling*) and vocalists, and is led by a drummer with a double-headed horizontal drum. A modern *gamelan* orchestra may have up to 80 instruments and require some 25 instrumentalists and several singers. The instruments of the *gamelan* are tuned to two different scales – *pelog* (seven unequal intervals per octave) and *slendro* (five nearly equal intervals per octave) – and each instrument is duplicated in both scales, although

there are some *gamelan* that use only one or other of the two. The combination of *pelog* and *slendro* in one orchestra may be an innovation of the late nineteenth century. The music produced by the *gamelan* orchestra defies description. The sound of gong-chimes of varying pitches producing nuclear melodies, variations upon these melodies at double tempo, elaborations on the theme, all within controlled phrases, makes it possible even for foreigners to understand why Javanese felt that supernatural forces were moving in the sound. *Gamelan* orchestras have spiritual identities and personal names, are given offerings, and some may only be played on particular occasions. The melodies of the *gamelan*, too, were bound by rules and regulations of a sacral nature.

The *gamelan* traditions of Sunda (West Java), Bali and Madura are readily distinguished from those of Java, but the general principles and the basic percussion instrumentation are similar. Gongs are also found in the music of other areas of Indonesia and the rest of Southeast Asia. In addition, there were of course folk traditions in music as in all the arts throughout Indonesia. There was presumably mutual influence between court and folk traditions, but little is known of the older folk traditions because the surviving evidence is so overwhelmingly of courtly origin.

This chapter can only give a superficial survey of the cultural traditions of pre-colonial Indonesian states. It is, however, important to understand from even such a survey that behind the war, intrigue and hardship dominating so much of the history of these states, there thrived a rich cultural tradition. At its base was a profound sense of the spiritual, a deep religiosity which was often significantly influenced by Islam but sometimes by other ideas. This spiritual sense influenced the perceptions and responses of Indonesians. There was, therefore, a cultural dimension to the conflict which resulted from the first major phase of Dutch intervention, which is described in [Part II](#). This cultural dimension is as yet little understood, but it may be that some Indonesians felt that they were facing a spiritual as well as a military, political and economic confrontation.

It is important to emphasise that the cultural parallels and continuities seen in this chapter helped to give a shared identity to the Indonesian region – meaning in this period the archipelago itself along with the Malay peninsula. We may think of three aspects that might, in principle, unify a region as vast and complex as the Indonesian archipelago: (1) administration and politics, (2) trade and (3) culture. Regarding (1), in the period discussed here the archipelago was not united in any political or administrative sense. There were, however, political contacts and interactions that inclined the various states of the region to think of themselves as part of a shared community, even where the interactions were warlike. Aspect (2) is touched upon at the end of [Chapter 2](#) above, with regard to the network of trade linking the archipelago together in ways that reflected the comparative advantage of various areas. Thus, the camphor of Sumatra, diamonds of South Kalimantan, rice and textiles of Java, slaves of Bali or sandal-wood of Timor were traded across an archipelagic network that had its primary centre at Malacca. It made sense for the various parts of the archipelago to trade with each other and that trade helped to bind the region together in self-interest. Regarding aspect (3), in this chapter we have seen cultural continuities across the archipelago.

In future centuries, these various elements would be changed and distorted by the

impact of European colonial rule. The archipelago would, in the end, be more unified politically and administratively than ever before by colonial military conquest, but Malaya and Indonesia would be separated from each other (aspect 1). The Dutch colonial state would so redirect archipelago economics that the prior trade interactions and continuities would be greatly weakened (aspect 2). Meanwhile, ongoing Islamisation and eventually other twentieth-century developments would strengthen the cultural continuities across Indonesia (aspect 3). So when the Dutch colonial state was finally dismantled in the mid-twentieth century, re-establishing the archipelagic identity visible in the fifteenth to seventeenth centuries would be no easy task. The Indonesian state would find it difficult to maintain the administrative and political unity of the archipelago that the Dutch achieved by military domination and at least as difficult to keep together a nation whose constituent elements no longer had strong economic ties holding them together. Much would therefore come to depend on the strength of cultural identity.

## *II*

---

### Struggles for Hegemony, c. 1630–1800

## ***Chapter 6***

---

# **Eastern Indonesia, c.1630–1800**

By about 1630 the Dutch had made much progress towards laying the military foundations for commercial hegemony over the seaborne trade of Indonesia. They were established on Ambon, in the heart of the spice-producing islands, and had their headquarters at Batavia in the west of the archipelago. In 1641 Portuguese Malacca fell into VOC hands and in 1648 the Eighty Years' War ended in Europe, bringing to a close the state of hostility between the Netherlands and Spain. It became clear in the middle years of the seventeenth century, however, that VOC hegemony could not be established merely by peace treaties, the erection of fortresses and the maintenance of naval supremacy. Both major and minor Indonesian powers were still able to frustrate the VOC's plans. The VOC was therefore obliged to adopt an even more aggressive military policy, with direct intervention into the internal affairs of several Indonesian states. Thus were laid the foundations for what may be called the first Dutch empire in Indonesia. Among the Governors General who presided over this more expansionist phase Antonio van Diemen (1636–45), Joan Maetsuycker (1653–78), Rijklof van Goens (1678–81) and Cornelis Janszoon Speelman (1681–4) stand out, not usually as paragons of virtue, but as architects of the VOC's military expansion.

The first phase of this more aggressive period began in the east of Indonesia, in the spice-growing islands of Maluku. The Dutch had been established there for some time, but their efforts to impose a monopoly over the production of nutmeg, mace, and above all of cloves, had only had limited success. Now a local alliance was emerging against them, consisting primarily of the Muslims of Hitu (the northern portion of Ambon) and the Ternaten forces in Hoamoal (the western peninsula of Seram), with the support of the Makassarese state of Gowa.

The anti-VOC alliance was led by the Hituese Muslim Kakiali (d. 1643), who as a youth had been a student of Sunan Giri in Java. In 1633 he had succeeded his father as 'Kapitein Hitoe', the leader of the Hituese community under the VOC's auspices. While feigning friendship with the Dutch, he immediately supported anti-VOC plots. The Hituese began to build fortresses in the interior, and marauding Muslim warriors were soon plundering Christian villages. The smuggling of cloves in defiance of VOC regulations grew. The VOC on Ambon had the military means neither to wipe out the widespread resistance nor to control the clove trade. In 1634 the VOC tricked Kakiali on board a VOC ship and arrested him, which led the Hituese to flee to their fortresses and prepare for war. Resistance to the VOC grew and even began to be suspected

among Christian communities.

In 1637 van Diemen personally attacked the Ternaten forces based in Hoamoal with a large force and drove them from their fortress. Then, in an attempt to regain the support of the Hituese, van Diemen released Kakiali and restored him to the position of 'Kapitein Hitoe'. Peace was ostensibly restored and Kakiali swore to uphold the VOC's monopoly. But hatred of the VOC was by now too deeply rooted to be so easily removed. Upon van Diemen's departure, Kakiali took steps to forge an alliance among Hitu, the Ternatens of Hoamoal, and Gowa, and he encouraged the 'illegal' spice trade. Sultan Alauddin Tumenanga ri Gaukanna of Gowa remained cautious, however, for fear of the VOC's naval power.

In 1638 van Diemen returned and attempted to reach an understanding with the king of Ternate. The VOC would recognise Ternaten sovereignty over Seram and Hitu, and pay the king 4000 *reals* annually, but at the price of an agreement to end the clove 'smuggling' and to allow the VOC de facto authority in South Maluku. Kakiali and the Ternaten governor of Hoamoal both refused to take part in these negotiations and they came to nothing. The king of Ternate clearly did not have it in his power to give what the VOC required. Minor hostilities meanwhile continued and Kakiali, as 'Kapitein Hitoe', continued both to deal with the Dutch and to lay plans for their destruction.

In 1641 Kakiali abandoned his guise of friendship. He attacked a village which was friendly to the VOC and then a VOC fortress. Makassarese warriors were now joining Kakiali, a factor which would ultimately contribute to the Dutch conviction that Makassar must also be dealt with. Kakiali and his allies had timed their bid for power very badly, for with the fall of Malacca to the VOC in 1641 the Dutch could now spare more forces to deal with their problems in the east.

A VOC force drove the Makassarese from their fortifications in Hitu in 1643 but was unable to take Kakiali's fortress. Then, in August, the Dutch paid a Spaniard who had defected from Kakiali to return and murder him. Thereafter Kakiali's fortress was conquered, but many Hituese continued their war against the VOC from a new location, Kapaha in the north of Hitu. By 1645 three VOC expeditions had failed to wipe out Hituese resistance. But in July 1646 Kapaha was finally taken. The leader of this final stage of Hituese resistance, Telukabesi, surrendered and offered to become a Christian. The VOC, however, executed him in Ambon in September 1646.

This was the end of effective resistance to the VOC in Hitu. There were attempts at anti-VOC plots in later years, but none of them offered the real threat to the VOC which the Hituese had offered before 1646. The VOC position in South Maluku was not yet secured, however, for the Makassarese and Ternatens were still trading actively in spices in defiance of VOC pretensions to monopoly. Largely under the leadership of Arnold de Vlaming van Outshoorn, who was Governor of Ambon from 1647 to 1650 and Superintendent over Ambon, Banda and Ternate from 1652 to 1656, a solution to the Ternaten problem was soon to be found. De Vlaming was a controversial figure throughout his career, partly because his parents were Catholics and he was suspected of never truly making the conversion to Calvinism which he professed. During his Governorship of Ambon, he acted against pervasive corruption among VOC merchants and promoted Christianity among the Indonesian population. It was his second period in Maluku which saw the strenuous military measures that earned him both fame and

notoriety.

In 1650 King Mandar Syah of Ternate (r. 1648–75) was deposed in a palace coup. He fled to the VOC fortress on Ternate and begged for VOC support. De Vlaming was sent to deal with this situation, and upon his arrival the usurper surrendered and Mandar Syah was restored to his throne. A small group who resisted this restoration sailed to the Ternaten outpost on Hoamoal, and there began full-scale war on the VOC. Within a week they murdered 131 Dutch men, women, children and slaves. The VOC was caught entirely unprepared.

In this situation de Vlaming saw an opportunity to deal finally with the problem of overproduction of cloves. First he took the Ternaten king, Mandar Syah, to Batavia, where in January 1652 a contract was signed which prohibited the cultivation of cloves in any areas except Ambon or other districts controlled by the VOC. Ambon could by this time produce more cloves than the entire world consumption and the VOC's aim was not to monopolise but to destroy clove cultivation elsewhere. Nutmeg was only to be grown on Banda.

Then de Vlaming moved against the Ternaten opponents based on Hoamoal and their Makassarese and Malay allies, in one of the bloodiest series of campaigns in VOC history. With the VOC sailed the Ambonese Christians in their war-prauws. From 1652 to 1658 the battles continued around Hoamoal. In the end the VOC was victorious. De Vlaming wanted to carry on to chastise Gowa for supporting the Hoamoal enemy, but Batavia overruled him. Hoamoal and its spice trees were now dealt with finally. In 1656 the population that remained was deported to Ambon. All spice trees on Hoamoal were destroyed, and thereafter it was devoid of human habitation except for passing *hongi* (war-fleet) expeditions looking for any wild cloves requiring destruction.

Sultan Saifuddin of Tidore (r. 1657–89) sought VOC help to expel the Spanish from his domain in 1662. There were already rumours of an imminent Spanish withdrawal, for the Ming partisan Koxinga (Cheng Ch'eng-kung; Zheng Chenggong) was threatening the Spanish headquarters in Manila from his base on Taiwan. In 1663 the Spanish indeed pulled out of Maluku, leaving the VOC as the principal European power in the region.

Saifuddin was regarded by the Tidorese as a model king. He was an authority on Maluku traditional customs and generous to his people. He suffered from leprosy and, rather than appearing in public, gave his royal commands through the wall of an incense-filled room. In 1657 he accepted a treaty with the VOC which included the policy of eradicating unauthorised spice cultivation in return for monetary compensation from the Company.

The VOC policy of paying Maluku rulers in cash to compensate them and win their support for spice eradication led to a strengthening of the rulers. In the past, they had greater need to bargain with and to recognise the autonomous sources of wealth and support in the hands of subordinate lords. Now VOC financial and military support directed to the kings alone gave them greater independence from their underlings. Sultan Mandar Syah of Ternate (r. 1648–75) was unpopular and regarded as a person of poor character, but was able to remain on the throne through VOC support. In recognition of this reality, he named his son and successor Sultan Amsterdam (r. 1675–90); another son he named Rotterdam. The results of this approach for the Dutch

Company were mixed. It had more centralised local states to deal with and the extirpation policy could be pursued more effectively, but eradication was never a complete success. Local people still found means to cultivate spices in remote areas unknown to the VOC. Sometimes VOC officers reported that they had eradicated spice trees in places which in fact they had bypassed because the eradication task was too difficult or too dangerous. Small-scale ‘smuggling’ in defiance of the VOC monopoly continued.

One should not, however, see Malukan history in this period as a simple matter of who did or did not ally with the Europeans. Local rivalries were more enduring. VOC support of Christianisation alienated Ternatens, leading to VOC–Ternate hostilities in 1680. But the long-standing tradition of rivalry between Ternate and Tidore proved stronger than religious or ethnic identities, for Sultan Saifuddin of Tidore supported the VOC against Ternate. This alliance proved victorious and Sultan Amsterdam was obliged to surrender to the VOC in 1681. He was pardoned and restored to the throne as a VOC vassal, but his principal followers were put to death.

In general, Tidore was less involved with the Europeans than Ternate, but VOC influence over its affairs nevertheless progressed in the late seventeenth and early eighteenth centuries. In the 1720s it faced a prolonged crisis. From 1716 to 1728, Tidore dependencies in south-eastern Halmahera and the Papuans of the Raja Ampat Islands rebelled against the authority of Sultan Hasanuddin Kaicili Gasea (r. 1708–28). This political crisis was compounded by drought and smallpox epidemics. The VOC backed the Sultan’s authority and sent soldiers to assist him. Although the Company was entering the period of decline which characterised the later eighteenth century, it could still play a decisive role in the politics of Maluku.

In the later eighteenth century, the threat to the Dutch of interference by other European powers resurfaced in eastern Indonesia in the form of the English East India Company and private British ‘country traders’. The British discovery of a superior sailing route to China via the Dampier or Pitt Straits, off the Birdshead area of what is now Papua, led to increased British sailings in the area from the 1760s and with them the threat of political interference. In the same period, Ilanun warriors from Mindanao in the southern Philippines were raiding throughout Maluku and the VOC suspected that Tidore was involved. In 1779 the Dutch Company deposed the Sultan of Tidore and appointed no successor until 1781. In these circumstances, Kaicili Nuku (d. 1805), a respected member of the Tidore royal house who was regarded as a messianic figure, arose in rebellion. He gained the support of south-eastern Halmahera and the Papuans of the Raja Ampat Islands. Many Tidorese joined him and there were persistent rumours that he had British support. In 1781 he proclaimed that he bore the royal titles Sri Maha Tuan Sultan Amir Muhammad Saifuddin Syah. The VOC launched expeditions against him which imposed defeats, but could not capture him. A Dutch campaign of 1783 was a disaster for the Europeans, with the Dutch commander and his men killed and the rest of the fleet brought as a prize to Nuku.

In October 1783 the Sultan of Tidore recognised the superior authority of Nuku. He attacked the VOC posts on Tidore and all the Europeans there were murdered. This precipitated a response in the mode of the longstanding Ternate–Tidore rivalry. Now Ternate joined the VOC in an expedition against Tidore in November 1783 which

brought heavy casualties and destruction. The VOC imposed a treaty on Tidore in December and returned an exiled prince from Ceylon to rule as its vassal Sultan Hairul Alam Kamaluddin Kaicili Asgar. But this new ruler was kept under VOC watch on Ternate. The VOC also kept its military strength there, out of fear of Ilanun raids. So Nuku continued to dominate the eastern periphery of the area, amidst reports that English aid was about to arrive.

As will be seen in [Chapter 11](#), in 1795 William V of the Netherlands, fleeing Napoleon's armies, instructed Dutch governors of overseas territories to turn them over to the British. On the basis of this authority, the British took Ambon and Banda in 1796. Nuku saw an opportunity to move. He took Jailolo and installed an ally as sultan. The following year he took Bacan with the help of the British and occupied Tidore itself. Nuku and the British then attempted several attacks on Ternate, which finally succeeded in defeating the Dutch in 1801. Nuku, now 66 years of age, was at last recognised as Sultan of Tidore by the dominant European power. He undertook to provide spices to the British in return for 6000 Spanish dollars annually. But British tenure in Maluku was temporary. As a consequence of the Peace of Amiens of 1802, they returned Maluku to the Dutch in 1803. A state of hostility between Nuku and the Dutch resumed and persisted until Nuku's death in 1805.

In the later seventeenth century, the most significant opponent of VOC attempts at commercial and military hegemony in the east of Indonesia was the Sultanate of Gowa in South Sulawesi. Here was a major military force which the VOC was obliged to regard even more seriously than its enemies in South Maluku, who had indeed been made harder to defeat by Makassarese support. Gowa was blessed with a series of particularly able rulers. It had a system of dual authority which arose from a political alliance between the states of Gowa and Tallo in the mid-sixteenth century. Sultans came from the Gowa line while chief ministers of the state were from the Tallo line. Particularly notable among these distinguished leaders was the chief minister Karaeng Pattinngalloang (r. 1639–54), who had a library of Spanish and Portuguese works and was said to be fluent in both languages. He also read Latin, was knowledgeable about Catholic theology and asked Europeans whom he encountered to provide him with Western publications and scientific instruments. In the mid-seventeenth century, Gowa was still a major centre of what the Dutch regarded as 'illegal' trade in spices. The Portuguese had been particularly active there since their loss of Malacca in 1641. Events were occurring within South Sulawesi, however, that would make it possible for Gowa to be subdued. As was always the case in the VOC's wars, if the object was a major state the VOC could act successfully only when a significant party within that state was allied to it. In this case, the Dutch found an ally in the Bugis prince La Ténritatta to Unru' (1634–96), more commonly known as Arung Palakka, one of the most famous Indonesian warriors of the seventeenth century.

Gowa's overlordship of other South Sulawesi states had left them much autonomy, but was nonetheless resented. There had been considerable fighting between Gowa and the Bugis state of Bone. In 1660 Arung Palakka was among a group of perhaps 10,000 Bugis from Bone who rebelled and were crushed by the Makassarese. Thereupon he and a small band took refuge on the island of Butung. In 1663 the VOC granted their request to settle instead at Batavia. There they took service as soldiers for the VOC and

impressed the Dutch with their martial skills. Arung Palakka and his Bugis warriors now became an essential part of the VOC's plan to subdue Gowa.

Conflict between the VOC and Gowa had continued almost unbroken since 1615. A large VOC fleet of 31 ships attacked Gowa in 1660, destroyed Portuguese ships in the harbour and forced Sultan Hasanuddin Tumenanga ri Balla'pangkana (r. 1653–69) to accept the peace of August–December 1660. But this agreement brought no end to the disputes. The fact that Arung Palakka and his followers were being protected by the VOC further exacerbated the tensions. In 1665 a VOC ship ran aground and was plundered; when a VOC official went to inspect the wreck he and his crew were attacked and killed. After a last abortive attempt at negotiation, in 1666 Governor General Maetsuycker and the Council of the Indies decided to deal finally with Gowa. An expeditionary force of 21 ships was put together, carrying 600 European troops, Ambonese soldiers and Arung Palakka and his Bugis. The commander of the fleet was Cornelis Speelman, later to become Governor General himself. The VOC hoped that the Bugis of South Sulawesi would rally to Arung Palakka and help to destroy the Makassarese state of Gowa.

In December 1666 the VOC fleet reached Makassar. As the Dutch had hoped, the return of Arung Palakka to his homeland after six years of exile encouraged the Bugis of Bone and Soppeng to arise in rebellion against Makassarese overlordship. The war against Gowa involved nearly a year of hard fighting both on land and at sea. Speelman devastated the Makassarese fleet off Butung, while Arung Palakka commanded a difficult overland campaign. In the end, the VOC and its Bugis allies were victorious and Sultan Hasanuddin was forced to sign the Treaty of Bungaya (18 November 1667). But this treaty, too, proved at first to be meaningless. Hasanuddin resumed fighting and a second major campaign against him was necessary from April 1668 to June 1669. This time the defeat of the Makassarese Sultan and his nobility was final.

The Treaty of Bungaya was now implemented, bringing about a major reversal of South Sulawesi politics. The state of Bone and other Bugis states were relieved of their allegiance to Gowa. The Makassarese fort of Ujung Pandang was turned over to the VOC and Speelman renamed it 'Rotterdam' after his own birthplace. Gowa's power was now broken and in its place Bone arose as the supreme state of South Sulawesi. Makassarese claims to the surrounding areas of Minahasa, Butung and Sumbawa were abandoned and European traders other than the VOC were expelled. The VOC had already established a fortress at Měnado (the north-eastern extremity of Sulawesi) in 1658 to counteract Spanish and Tērnaten influence there. After 1677 the VOC also established itself in Gorontalo, Limboto and other small Minahasan states, and in the Talaud and Sangihe islands.

Arung Palakka was now the most powerful man in South Sulawesi, and remained so until his death in 1696. He was given special consideration by his ally the VOC, but at first he was merely commander in chief of Bone. Not until 1672 did he formally become king (*arumpone*, that is, the *arung* of Bone). He was a man of extraordinary courage, tenacity and ambition, who created for himself a position which no previous ruler in this area had had. He ignored the consultative system of government which had previously existed and ruled without the customary advice of a council of notables. Instead he relied upon the martial skills of the band of refugees who had accompanied

him throughout his years of exile. He appointed men of his own choice to the thrones of subordinate states, including Gowa. Although the Dutch themselves found Arung Palakka to be a troublesome ruler at times, his value to them as a military ally and his personal ties with Speelman always outweighed their objections. Thus a more authoritarian form of government than had been known before was made possible by the events which surrounded the VOC intervention in Sulawesi. This situation did not long survive Arung Palakka's death, however, for it depended ultimately upon his unique personal position.

Arung Palakka's campaigning did not end with the victory over Gowa. He waged a series of campaigns against recalcitrant states, which brought much hardship to the people and damage to the lands of Sulawesi. The animist Torajans of the central Sulawesi highlands, however, successfully resisted conquest by Arung Palakka's forces. Arung Palakka also took an army to Java to aid the VOC during the Trunajaya War (see [Chapter 8](#)). It was largely because of these devastating campaigns and Arung Palakka's authoritarian rule that large numbers of Makassarese and Bugis fled from South Sulawesi in his reign. They took to their ships like marauding Vikings in search of honour, wealth and new homes. They intervened in the affairs of Lombok, Sumbawa, Kalimantan, Java, Sumatra, the Malay Peninsula and even Siam. Well into the eighteenth century these fierce warriors were the scourge of the archipelago.

By the late seventeenth century, then, the VOC position in East Indonesia had been largely consolidated. The Dutch still faced intrigues and resistance, but there was no longer any major Indonesian power opposing them in this area. Ternate, Tidore and Gowa were all finished as major military powers. Spice trees which the VOC could not control had been mostly cut down; Hoamoal had been depopulated; large numbers of Bugis and Makassarese had abandoned their homelands; unknown numbers had died among the Europeans, their allies and their enemies. This had all happened ostensibly because of the VOC's aim of monopolising the spices of Maluku. Ironically, however, just when control of these spices was becoming more certain, they were becoming less and less central to the VOC's profits. In the first place, it was not easy to ensure profits from the spices, for the Dutch naturally found it difficult to forecast supply, demand and prices accurately. There were therefore major changes of policy as trees were planted, then cut down, then more planted, in an effort to produce the right volume. And secondly, these spices were declining in their relative importance in VOC trade. Pepper was a larger element in the seventeenth century, by 1700 textiles were the most important item, and coffee and tea became major trade items in the eighteenth century.

In fact the wars in East Indonesia had not been fought solely in the cause of commerce. The VOC was well on its way to becoming an imperial power. The actual profits and losses involved in this process were both unclear, because of the VOC's accounting system, and of only secondary interest to the empire-builders and adventurers who determined VOC policy in Indonesia, whose personal profits seemed to them to be more important.

The VOC in the seventeenth century had two main focuses of interest. In the first, Maluku, its predominance was now relatively firm. In the second, Java, events were occurring which would also lead to a Dutch interventionist policy. This is the subject of the following chapters.

What followed the establishment of Dutch power in East Indonesia down to the nineteenth century has yet to receive serious study, except for Maluku (already discussed above), Bali (to a limited extent), South Sulawesi and the peripheral area of Nusa Tēnggara. The VOC was active in Nusa Tēnggara in the seventeenth century, but on a less flamboyant scale. The island of Timor was still a source of sandalwood, but Flores, Sumba, Savu and Roti were of little commercial interest. The Portuguese established a fortress at Kupang (Timor) but abandoned it. The VOC arrived in Timor in 1613 and occupied Kupang in 1653. But the VOC faced serious competition for control of the sandalwood from the ‘black Portuguese’ or ‘Topasses’, a Portuguese-speaking Christian mestizo group based on Flores. There was a virtual stalemate between them until 1749 when a ‘black Portuguese’ attack on Kupang was decisively defeated. The Portuguese themselves had by now withdrawn to insignificance in East Timor, so the handful of VOC officers in Kupang and their local allies were left as the main force in West Timor. But by the end of the century there was little sandalwood to be had and the VOC was in the general state of decline described in [Chapter 10](#).

The most surprising developments that are known to have arisen from Dutch intervention in Nusa Tēnggara took place in Roti, which held little commercial interest for anyone. There the Dutch allied themselves with local factions. In 1681 a bloody VOC campaign established the dominance of its local allies and Roti became mainly a supply base for Kupang and a source of slaves. There was, however, no substantial VOC fortification on Roti.

In the eighteenth century the Rotinese themselves began to take advantage of the circumstances of the VOC presence. They slowly began adopting Christianity, which offered higher social status, freedom from slavery and potential VOC favour. When a lengthy legal case of 1724–9 established the precedent that a Rotinese Christian was not subject to the authority of his pagan ruler, conversion accelerated. In 1729 the first Rotinese ruler converted. Then began a remarkable development. Rotinese Christian rulers asked the VOC to provide them with schoolmasters. By 1765 local Rotinese themselves were able to take over the running of these Malay-language schools. The Rotinese produced a local form of Christianity buttressed by their own school system, both of which they successfully defended from the reforming instincts of nineteenth-century European missionaries. The Rotinese thus became an educated elite in the region, which was to give them a leading regional role in the twentieth century.

Events in eighteenth-century South Sulawesi were dominated by the continuing military rivalry among the Bugis and Makassarese states. The VOC could do little more than defend its own position in Makassar and that of its ally Bone. The most dramatic figure of the period was Arung Singkang (La Ma’dukellēng, 1700–65), a descendant of the Bugis royal family of Wajo. He began his career as a pirate. In 1726 he conquered Pasir and then Kutai in East Kalimantan, both areas of Bugis settlement. In 1733 his chief commander failed to take Banjarmasin. Arung Singkang then returned to Sulawesi in 1735 and began his effort to wrest power over the Bugis and Makassarese states from Bone.

Arung Singkang was no welcome guest in Sulawesi and immediately upon his arrival warfare began which was to last intermittently until his death. He succeeded in winning control of Wajo itself in 1737 and in building a shaky alliance of several states

against Bone and the VOC. Early in 1739 he and his allies marched against Makassar. Although the court of Bone was burned, the VOC withstood a series of attacks and then went over to an offensive which drove Arung Singkang into retreat to Wajo.

The VOC then launched a punitive expedition against Wajo at the end of 1740. When its troops returned to Makassar three months later after experiencing heavy fighting, bad weather and much illness, Wajo had been punished but not broken. Arung Singkang soon taught those of his allies who had failed to support him against the VOC that they had made a serious mistake. Wajo's power was vigorously reimposed in the area. But Arung Singkang faced competitors for power in Wajo, which consequently became embroiled in a civil war that seems to have lasted from 1747 to 1751. By 1754 the people of Wajo had had enough of campaigning and refused to support Arung Singkang in war against Sidenreng. In that year he stepped down as ruler of Wajo but continued his private war against Bone until his death in 1765. The Dutch continued to govern Makassar in alliance with Bone, but exercised no significant influence over the Wajo area until the later nineteenth century.

Seventeenth- and eighteenth-century Bali was free of direct VOC interference, but was nevertheless influenced by the VOC presence. This period is not well documented and only the kingdom of Mengwi has so far received serious historical research. The general pattern of events and their causation is, however, becoming clearer. Before c.1650 Bali was still subject to the overlordship of the king of Gelgel. It was less involved in maritime commerce than some other parts of Indonesia, but exported significant quantities of cotton, rice, pigs, cattle and poultry. Then, however, the authority of Gelgel collapsed and Bali became a collection of fluid and warring kingdoms. At the same time, the VOC presence at Batavia after 1619 created a major new market for slaves. This new human export enabled rival Balinese lords to grow rich by selling off their criminals, their debtors and, above all, their prisoners of war. The slave trade thus facilitated the political disintegration of Bali by providing the economic resources for war and consuming its human spoils. It should be remembered, however, that the economic foundations of all Balinese kingdoms still primarily rested upon wet-rice agriculture. The royal families took an active interest in the construction and maintenance of irrigation works, and political alliances among them often flowed in the same directions as the irrigation water.

In the 1660s Ki Gusti Ngrurah Panji Sakti (d. c.1704) established Buleleng in North Bali as a leading kingdom of the island. In 1697 he conquered Balambangan in Java's Eastern Salient, perhaps in alliance with the Balinese adventurer Surapati (see [Chapter 9](#)). The line of Gelgel meanwhile carried on in the kingdom of Klungkung, whose lords adopted the title Dewa Agung and were recognised by the other kings of Bali as the senior royal line. In the east of Bali, Karangasem expanded overseas from the 1680s, battling Sumbawa and Sulawesi forces for control of Lombok. Not until 1740 was Karangasem's control of Lombok secure. It thereupon established six Balinese kingdoms in western Lombok which became major patrons of Balino-Javanese culture. In the last quarter of the eighteenth century Karangasem totally defeated Buleleng and replaced it as the principal kingdom of North Bali.

Mengwi emerged as a major power in South Bali c.1700 under its king, Gusti Agung Anom (d. 1722). He took advantage of succession disputes in Buleleng

following the death of Gusti Panji Sakti to win Balambangan to his side and to play the Buleleng competitors off against each other, emerging as Bali's most powerful lord. His authority was, however, under constant challenge. He had to make repeated forays to Java's Eastern Salient to maintain his suzerainty over Balambangan. Local Balinese lords also tested him. In particular, from 1713 to 1717 Mĕngwi was at war against Sukawati (Gianyar), from which conflict Mĕngwi emerged victorious. At his death Gusti Agung Anom was precariously lord over much of central and southern Bali, a status reflected in the new royal title he took in 1717, Cokorda Gusti Agung.

As was normal in kingdoms such as these, when Gusti Agung Anom's son Gusti Agung Made Alĕngkajĕng (d. c. 1740) succeeded, he faced repeated challenges to his authority, to which the main response was war. He spent much of his time in Balambangan attempting to maintain Mĕngwi's overlordship there. In 1733 he and his allies won a great battle in Buleleng against Dewa Anom of Sukawati, in which as many as 12,000 men may have been involved. Intrigues within the Mĕngwi royal family, however, threatened Gusti Agung Made Alĕngkajĕng's power. He had to return from one of his expeditions to Balambangan in 1739 to put down a coup by a brother. When he died shortly after 1740, further conflicts followed. By the 1770s Gusti Agung Made Munggu (d. c. 1770–80; also known as Cokorda Munggu) of Mĕngwi was again one of Bali's most powerful kings. He had, however, lost control of Balambangan to the VOC (see [Chapter 10](#)) while parts of Buleleng were lost to Karangasĕm. The loss of Balambangan was particularly significant culturally, for it severed Balinese kings' foothold in Java, whence they believed their families to have come after Islamic powers succeeded Majapahit. During the repeated campaigns in Balambangan there were three attempted Balinese expeditions (1714, 1726, 1729–30) to the old site of Majapahit in East Java. On the third occasion, Gusti Agung Made Alĕngkajĕng of Mĕngwi was accompanied by the Dewa Agung of Klungkung, the king of Tabanan and an entourage of 4000. All of these pilgrimages were, however, aborted because of the threat or actual outbreak of war at home.

At the end of the eighteenth century there was no prospect of any single Balinese lord reimposing the central authority exercised by Gelgel in the sixteenth and early seventeenth centuries. Bali was poised for further violent upheavals which would eventually culminate in the bloody Dutch conquest described in [Chapter 13](#).

## ***Chapter 7***

---

# **Western Indonesia, c. 1640–1800**

In the western archipelago, from the seventeenth century to the end of the eighteenth one can observe a general development – or perhaps better, a disintegration – from the kinds of contests for power which were long familiar in the region to more general and incoherent disorder. This resulted from the progressively more thorough integration of western Indonesia into a globalising political economy. That process was marked by the emergence of new markets and products, new technologies, the intervention of new actors – both from elsewhere in the archipelago and from farther afield – and strains upon pre-existing state structures which they were ill-prepared to withstand.

As noted in [Chapter 2](#), these archipelago states had few institution-alised means of controlling their own territories. Whenever the central authority of a monarch was challenged, he (or, rarely, she) had few means of demanding or imposing loyalty. Whenever a lucrative trade product was produced in areas not immediately under the control of the king (as was often the case with gold, tin, pepper and other products) the growth of external markets brought wealth into the hands of local lords who might choose to challenge the authority of the centre. Trade growth was thus often the cause of state disintegration.

In the middle years of the seventeenth century, the major western archipelago states were Johor – the Malay successor state to Malacca – in what is now southern Malaysia, Palembang and Jambi in South Sumatra, and the VOC based in Batavia in the west of Java. In 1641 the VOC took Malacca from the Portuguese and thereby both expelled a significant European competitor and gained a strategic base on the east side of the Straits of Malacca. As was noted in [Chapter 4](#), Aceh was not a force outside its home territories in this period.

Palembang and Jambi were both exporters of pepper. The Chinese market for pepper was seemingly insatiable and from the seventeenth century European demand also grew rapidly. As cultivation spread from the 1640s onward, the demand for labour led to the growth of a market for slaves in the western archipelago, a large proportion of whom were supplied by Bugis and Makassarese traders from South Sulawesi. But this growth in production also led to excess pepper production in Sumatra and to a fall in prices in Europe, so that over the seventeenth and eighteenth centuries pepper began to decline in economic significance.

In 1642 a VOC–Palembang treaty theoretically gave the Company a monopoly over Palembang's pepper exports, but this was just one in a chain of treaties which were

worth little more than the paper they were written on. VOC policy in this region, as elsewhere, was to offer political and military protection to local kings such as the Sultan of Palembang in return for advantageous access to local products. Vos points out that this was not a case of the VOC confusing its commercial objectives with territorial ambition. Rather, the Company had virtually no products to offer with which it could strike a mutually beneficial commercial deal, so it offered what it had – military force – in exchange for what it wanted – pepper and other products. Thus it was not a case of confusing trade and politics, but rather of exchanging Indonesian trade in return for VOC politics. But local circumstances determined whether this approach could succeed. Often it did not and the cost of this approach was a significant factor in the eventual bankruptcy of the VOC at the end of the eighteenth century.

In the case of the VOC's 1642 treaty with Palembang, in the following year the Sultan signed another with the Portuguese which allowed them to continue to trade there. The Portuguese trade was, however, declining in significance. Chinese merchants, who were essential to the archipelago trade networks and who had no interest in treaties to confirm their position, continued to handle Palembang pepper along with other products. Similarly, in Jambi the Chinese played the role of middlemen in obtaining local pepper for the VOC and English traders.

In 1655 the VOC attempted to enforce its 1642 treaty rights in Palembang. The Company stopped the ships of other traders and confiscated their pepper cargoes. When the VOC tried to follow this with negotiations, its party was attacked. Over 40 were killed and 28 Dutch survivors were forcibly converted to Islam through circumcision. In 1658–9 the Company blockaded and then attacked Palembang in retaliation, taking the capital by force. Thereupon it was discovered that most of the remaining Dutch prisoners had been killed. The attackers looted and burned the town. Jambi had assisted the VOC with information and was rewarded with gifts of artillery and the chance to place a Jambi nominee on the throne of Palembang.

In the local rivalry between Jambi and Palembang for ascendancy in South Sumatra, it looked as if Jambi were now ahead, with VOC support. Both states had been vassals of the Javanese kingdom of Mataram. In the 1650s both rulers had travelled to the Mataram court in person. But now both moved to sever their links with Mataram, which, as will be seen in [Chapter 8](#), was now in the hands of the tyrannical Amangkurat I. Jambi in particular felt that it had found a better patron in the Dutch East India Company. As pepper cultivation expanded in the upriver (*ulu*) districts, Palembang and Jambi found themselves in conflict over their control. In the later seventeenth century, Makassarese warriors became involved in these interior struggles, which produced a confused and violent pattern of conflicting loyalties.

On the Malay side of the Straits of Malacca, the VOC's efforts to monopolise tin led to as much difficulty and confusion as the Company experienced on the Sumatran side. The VOC post at Malacca was unable to prosper, largely because the VOC adopted trade policies which favoured Batavia as a port rather than Malacca. Both Chinese and Indian traders were discouraged from trading at Malacca and were directed instead to Batavia. At the southern end of the Straits, the kingdom of Johor took advantage of its strategic value to the Dutch to build a prosperous trading state based upon its port (and sometimes capital city) at Riau. In 1687 it was reported that there were 500–600 trading

ships to be seen there, including Siamese, Chinese, Acehnese, Perak, Kedah, Portuguese, English (who had a post at Béngkulu/Bencoolen) and others. The VOC was not in a position to stand in Johor's way. In 1673, however, Jambi struck from across the Straits and looted Riau, taking 3500 prisoners. In the last decade of the seventeenth century, Johor was beset by murderous dynastic intrigues which weakened it politically and commercially. Yet at the start of the eighteenth century Johor was undoubtedly the major Malay power, which the Company was obliged to accommodate. By this time the VOC was on the verge of renewed and expensive entanglements in Java which would necessarily restrict it to the status of a neutral observer of the conflicts in the Straits of Malacca. Company efforts to control Malayan tin production directly in its source areas were a failure. Sometimes they were costly failures, as in Perak in 1651 when the local ruler killed 27 Dutchmen at the local VOC post.

In Jambi, the expansion of the pepper trade put strains on the state in the later years of the seventeenth century, as wealth flowed into the hands of leaders other than the ruler. But this was less the case in Palembang. That was partly a result of geography, for Palembang's more southerly position meant that Minangkabaus, who played a significant role in challenges to the authority of the Sultan of Jambi, were less involved in pepper production in the interior of Palembang. In the later seventeenth century, Palembang saw a period of general prosperity which was later looked back on as a golden age.

Sultan Abdul Rahman of Palembang (r. 1662–1706) was remembered in local tradition as an ideal ruler. The same is true of a queen called Ratu Sinuhun, but in her case it is not possible to identify her confidently as a historical figure. The VOC's presence and its practices in Palembang were often resented there, particularly when the Company sought to control cloth imports and to stop the sale of pepper outside its supposed monopoly arrangements. Nevertheless, Abdul Rahman maintained positive relations with the Company, which reciprocated. The growing market for pepper gave many opportunities for trade in violation of the VOC's theoretical monopoly, which probably brought the Company no more than one-half of Palembang's production at best. Abdul Rahman himself participated in this 'illegal' trade, which was the principal source of his wealth. The spread of pepper production was largely made possible by the use of slave labour. So western archipelago slave markets continued to grow, as did the cost to those societies, mainly in the east of Indonesia and the southern Philippines, which supplied many of the slaves.

Jambi's experience in this period provides an instructive contrast. Palembang raids led to the abandonment of pepper gardens in Jambi's upriver districts, which caused a decline in the Sultan's revenues and the departure of many Chinese merchants. The Sultan's nomadic *orang laut* (sea people, sometimes called 'sea gypsies'), who acted as his police force in the Straits, were now more inclined to seek their incomes through piracy. Open hostilities broke out with the VOC in 1687, ending with the Company deposing the Jambi ruler. There followed a troubled period of about 30 years when two brothers contested power over Jambi and the VOC tried to find a policy which might give it both security and access to pepper there. Many local people decamped for Palembang and elsewhere. The upriver (*ulu*) districts resisted royal authority and were increasingly influenced by Minangkabau migrants who entered these areas seeking new

gold sources. In 1712 the Sultan of Jambi known as Kiai Gede (r. 1687– 1719) militarily subdued the *ulu* with some VOC assistance, but this still produced no great prosperity. Johor was able to raid Jambi in this period and in 1719 the *ulu* rebelled again. After Kiai Gede's death, more aristocratic conflict and civil war ensued. His successor, Sultan Astra Ingala (r. 1719–25, 1727–43), was a man of little popularity and an opium addict, who reportedly rarely rose before noon. In 1743 he abdicated in favour of his brother. Still the downriver (*ilir*) sovereigns could not control the *ulu*.

In Jambi's troubled circumstances, it often fell to local VOC officers to exercise the functions of government, which they did in ways that gave frequent offence and achieved little except their personal enrichment. Local lords seemed to their people to be puppets or agents of this burdensome Company and their authority declined proportionately. Hostility to the VOC became so great that in 1754 the Company's garrison fled Jambi for Palembang in fear of their lives. The VOC responded with a retaliatory blockade of Jambi which led to a new VOC–Jambi contract in 1756. But hostile relations continued, which by now were reinforced by the arrival of Bugis adventurers. In 1768 the VOC post was attacked and this time the VOC decided to give up altogether. It abandoned its post and did not return to Jambi until the nineteenth century. For several decades Jambi was best known as a pirates' den.

Riau, by contrast, was prospering as a trading port. In reality the VOC needed Riau to prosper, and in any case had no means of preventing it doing so, because of the need for a state which could enforce peaceful trade conditions in the southern end of the Straits of Malacca. From 1708 the Sultan's younger brother Raja Muda Mahmud challenged VOC trade. He pressured subordinates to deliver their goods to Riau. Chinese and Javanese ships bound for Malacca were forced to call instead at Riau, echoing the forceful policies which had been the key to the establishment of Malacca itself as the great Malay trading port by Parameswara 300 years before. In 1713 Riau at first refused VOC overtures for a new contract which would restore the Company's trading privileges until Batavia insisted, at which point a new treaty was signed and then promptly ignored in practice. Riau's exports of tin and pepper continued to grow rapidly. For the remainder of the eighteenth century, as the Company entered its long twilight decline, it was only Indonesian powers which could threaten Johor–Riau.

In 1718 a combined force of *orang laut*, Minangkabaus and Malays from Siak attacked Johor. They were led by Raja Kecik (d. 1746), who claimed to be a descendant of the royal line of Malacca–Johor. In March they captured Johor, Raja Muda Mahmud being killed in action. The Sultan of Johor, Abdul Jalil, abdicated and fled for his life to Pahang, where Raja Kecik's assassins killed him in 1721. Johor was now the scene of a contest for power amongst the Minangkabaus, the Bugis and the Johorese Malays. The outcome was an agreement in 1721 which established a Malay–Bugis condominium over Johor and Riau, an arrangement which was to persist until the early twentieth century.

The Bugis regained Riau for Johor in 1722. By now Bugis adventurers were actively engaged throughout much of the western archipelago and were a major power in the Straits. With Riau in their hands, once again the Straits of Malacca had a force able to provide reasonably safe and stable trading conditions. Despite a Bugis victory over Raja Kecik in 1728, however, violent confrontations between Johor and Siak

occurred periodically for another fifty years, as they contested control of trade and legitimacy in the Straits.

Palembang suffered a period of succession disputes after the death of Sultan Abdul Rahman in 1706, which ended with the accession of Sultan Mahmud Badaruddin (r. 1724–57). Palembang's economic fortunes were coming to rest on a new product. Its pepper production was in decline by the start of his reign and was significantly so by the end. But by now tin had been discovered and was being mined on Bangka, a subsidiary of Palembang. Initially the miners were mainly Bugis. Controlling Bangka and nearby Bēlitung was naturally a major objective for Mahmud Badaruddin. In 1731 a VOC force aided him in putting down Bugis resistance on Bangka. Thereafter Chinese miners began to arrive in large numbers. By the end of the Sultan's reign, there were said to be 25,000–30,000 Chinese on Bangka. Just as was the case with Palembang pepper, so with Palem-bang tin the VOC theoretically had been given a monopoly by treaty. But again, it probably got no more than half of the output. The rest went into 'illegal' trade in which prices were much higher than those paid by the Company. The Sultan participated in this trade and grew rich thereby.

Sultan Mahmud Badaruddin's wealth and style of government won him a high reputation in Palembang. He consulted his notables and governed by consensus, the way in which wise Indonesian kings usually ruled. He had the advantage of ruling in a period when VOC influence was already declining, as the Company's finances worsened and it became progressively more involved in the internal affairs of Java. For the Company, Palembang was an expensive post, the costs of which could hardly be justified by the revenues from tin. Its officers there, as was true in many places, were often of dubious competence and honesty, and frequently lacked a command of the Malay language, the lingua franca of the archipelago. Relations with the elite and commoners of Palembang were often strained and were, indeed, to lead to bloody violence in the early nineteenth century.

As noted above, by Mahmud Badaruddin's time the Bugis were a major force in the western archipelago. The English presence was also growing, and by the later years of the eighteenth century they would be a more formidable force in many areas than the Dutch. The Bugis and English were both sellers of more modern muskets, which flowed into the region in large numbers. This had the effect of rendering local conflicts more costly in both human and financial terms, exacerbating the village wars which had long been common in the *ulu* and which contributed to an air of instability and lawlessness in upland districts. The discovery of gold in the 1730s in the old pepper-producing area of Lampung, the overlord-ship of which was contested by Palembang and Bantēn, brought in Bugis, Minangkabau and other adventurers to create yet further unruliness there.

Among the new actors in the Straits were Arabs of Hadhramaut, men who bore the title *sayyid* to indicate their descent from the Prophet Muhammad. They were able traders with international networks reaching across the Indian Ocean. In some places, such as Siak, they came to be as influential and powerful as were the Bugis in Johor. The tin trade of Palembang naturally attracted their attention. One of the consequences of their presence was that Palembang began to develop as a centre of Islamic learning in the course of the eighteenth century.

Chinese miners in Bangka were difficult to keep under royal control, so Sultan Ahmad Tajuddin (r. 1757–74) put Palembang court notables in charge of most districts there. The Chinese responded by drifting off to mines elsewhere, particularly in Kalimantan and Perak. By the 1780s it was estimated that Chinese numbers in Bangka had fallen from the peak of 25,000–30,000 thirty years before to between 6000 and 13,000. Production of course fell as a result. And a considerable part of the tin trade continued to be conducted beyond the control of either the Sultan or the VOC, mainly through Riau.

Under the Bugis leaders, Riau continued to be a centre for private traders which the VOC had no means of controlling. In 1782 Raja Haji of Johor (d. 1784) learned of the outbreak of war between the Dutch and the British and offered himself as an ally to the VOC. But they fell out over the division of spoils from a captured British ship and themselves went to war in 1783–4. In January 1784 the VOC flagship was blown up in action at Riau, at the cost of hundreds of lives. But in May 1784 a Netherlands government fleet of four men-of-war, two frigates and 1400 men, commanded by J. P. van Braam, arrived in Indonesia with orders to impress local lords with the power of the Netherlands, which the VOC itself was conspicuously unable any longer to do. Van Braam attacked Riau in June and Raja Haji was killed in the fighting.

The expanding slave trade in the western archipelago in the late eighteenth century provided opportunities for yet another group of newcomers to become powerful: the Ilanun slavers and raiders from the Sulu archipelago. They attacked VOC positions, raided Palembang ships and in 1788–9 raided Bangka. When Riau rebelled against VOC control in 1787, a force of 7000 Ilanun fighters supported the Riau side. The Company retook Riau but this military success did not mean control of the tin trade. Throughout the 1790s extensive pirate raids caused a dramatic fall in tin production. Southern Sumatra was also plagued by smallpox epidemics from the 1750s, which contributed to the sense of disorder.

By the closing years of the eighteenth century, Sumatra and the Straits of Malacca more generally were in a state of considerable confusion and disorder. The Malay coastal states which had once been the dominant powers were now at least challenged, in some cases taken over, and in others disrupted by the newcomers to the region: notably the Dutch, British, Bugis, Makassarese, Minangkabau, Chinese, Hadhrami Arabs and Ilanun. New products had sometimes brought wealth to rulers but had just as often undermined their positions. There was no single power strong enough to take advantage of this disorder to impose its hegemony. Certainly the Dutch, the future colonial overlords of Sumatra, were far too weak to do that. Not until the nineteenth century would the Netherlands be in a position to attempt to take control in much of Sumatra, and not until the early twentieth century would they finally succeed in doing so throughout the island.

## ***Chapter 8***

---

### **Java, c.1640–82**

The creation of the states of Mataram and Bantěn was described in [Chapter 4](#). In the middle and later years of the seventeenth century both experienced serious internal conflicts, which the VOC at Batavia could not ignore. In terms of VOC interests, Bantěn was in some ways similar to Maluku. It was a major source of pepper, which was becoming of even greater commercial importance than the spices of Maluku; it harboured foreign European competitors; it was accessible by sea; and resistance there could disturb Batavia just as Amboin had been threatened in the east. Mataram, however, was a very different affair. It was a far larger state than any the VOC had yet invaded and it had a vast interior where VOC naval power was meaningless. Its importance arose not because any of the VOC's major exports came from there or because it was a centre of 'smuggling', but rather because it supplied rice, without which the Dutch and their allies could not live, and timber, without which they could not build their ships or buildings. It also posed a potential threat to the security of Batavia. VOC commercial interest was limited almost entirely to the north coast of Java, but events there were so inextricably involved with the interior that the Dutch were obliged in the end to march into the heart of Java.

Sultan Agung's son and successor as ruler over the Mataram empire was Susuhunan Amangkurat I (r. 1646–77). The main theme of his reign was his attempt to consolidate the Mataram empire, to centralise its administration and finances and to destroy all opposition. He hoped to turn the empire which Agung had based upon military might and the ability to win or compel a consensus into a unified kingdom whose resources were monopolised for the benefit of the king. Had he succeeded, he would have revolutionised Javanese politics, but his efforts were doomed to failure; the facts of geography, communications and population, which determined that administrative authority in Java must be decentralised, could not be changed by royal fiat. As a result of his policies, Amangkurat I alienated powerful people and important regions and in the end produced the greatest rebellion of the seventeenth century; this brought about the collapse of the dynasty and the intervention of the VOC.

Amangkurat I revealed his nature at the very beginning of his reign. In 1637, while still crown prince, he had been involved in a scandal involving the wife of a senior official, Tuměnggung Wiraguna. In 1647 the new king sent Wiraguna to the Eastern Salient, ostensibly to expel Balinese forces, and there, away from his family and supporters, he was murdered. Then Wiraguna's family in Mataram and others involved

in the scandal of 1637 were killed. The king's brother Pangeran Alit had sided with Wiraguna in 1637 and, seeing his associates being killed, he seems to have sought support among Islamic leaders. Apparently they actually attacked the court but were repulsed and Pangeran Alit was killed in the fighting. Now Amangkurat I turned against this Islamic leadership. A list of prominent religious leaders was compiled and they were all assembled together at court. Then, according to the VOC ambassador Rijklof van Goens, between 5000 and 6000 men, women and children were slaughtered.

In 1647 Amangkurat I moved to a new court at Plered, just northeast of Karta. This was constructed of brick, rather than of wood like the old court, a token perhaps of the greater permanence and solidity which Amangkurat I hoped to see throughout his empire. Work at Plered continued at least until 1666. While the new court complex grew, so did the Susuhunan's tyranny. His father's old associates steadily disappeared, some probably because of old age, but many because they were murdered upon the king's orders. In 1648 van Goens remarked upon this 'strange manner of government ... whereby the old are murdered in order to make place for the young' (de Graaf, *Gezantschapsreizen*, p. 67). Among the most distinguished of the king's victims was his own father-in-law, Pangeran Pěkik of Surabaya, who was murdered along with most of his family in 1659. Even the life of the king's uncle Pangeran Purbaya, the only surviving brother of Sultan Agung, was threatened but saved by the intervention of the king's mother.

Amangkurat I was hard at work destroying the consensus of notables which was essential to Javanese kingship. At court and throughout his empire, he murdered those whom he suspected of opposing him, and naturally caused anxiety and alienation among those who managed to survive. On the outer fringes of the state, disintegration was becoming evident. By demanding a subservience he could not in fact enforce, Amangkurat I encouraged allies and vassals to desert him. In 1650 he ordered Cirébon forces to attack Bantěn and in late 1657 another Mataram force marched for Bantěn. Both campaigns were failures, and not only confirmed Bantěn's hatred of Mataram but very possibly led Cirébon to question the wisdom of vassalage to Amangkurat I. His single attempt to control the Eastern Salient in 1647 failed and this area remained free of Mataram influence thereafter. Balinese raided the east coast and Mataram could do nothing. Outside of Java, only Palembang continued to profess loyalty, in a forlorn hope that Mataram would support it first against their mutual enemy Bantěn and then in its war with the VOC (1658–9). Jambi definitively rejected Mataram suzerainty after 1663 and chose to cooperate with the VOC. Kalimantan was also completely free of Mataram influence after about 1659. During his struggles with the VOC, Sultan Hasanuddin of Gowa sent embassies to Mataram in 1657 and 1658–9. But Amangkurat I demanded that Hasanuddin come to his court in person to submit, which he would not of course do. Mataram–Gowa relations consequently became decidedly cool.

The reasons for this disintegration on the fringes of the empire were fundamentally military. Amangkurat I was unable to launch the kind of expeditions which Sultan Agung had mounted. And this was a direct result of his tyrannical rule. He dared not leave his guarded court and place himself in the midst of commanders whom he could not trust with his life. Equally, he dared not entrust the command of a major army to anyone else. His tyranny had thus led to a collapse of the consensus of notables, which

isolated the monarchy and made it impossible to construct a large army, to command it or to entrust its command to another dignitary. A favourable environment therefore arose for outlying allies and vassals to renounce their allegiance. Amangkurat I was meanwhile providing ample reasons for powerful men to conclude that their self-interest could best be served by independence.

The king's relations with the VOC at first seemed amicable. In 1646 he accepted a treaty of friendship by which captives were exchanged and the VOC returned a substantial sum of money which it had captured from an emissary of Agung en route to Mecca in 1642. Amangkurat I seems to have viewed this treaty as a token of Batavia's submission to his authority and the VOC was not troubled to point out any different interpretation. Between 1646 and 1654 a series of VOC missions visited the court and in 1651 the VOC trading post at Jépara was reopened. VOC trade with the coast began to flourish anew.

The revival of Javanese–VOC trade on the coast produced a new internal crisis in Java. The products that the Dutch required – primarily rice and timber – were coastal products. The producers, traders and officials of the north coast probably gained most of the profits from this revival of trade, while the king received less than he desired. Amangkurat I therefore moved to take firmer control of the coast, thereby reviving the deep-seated antagonism between coast and interior.

In 1651 Amangkurat I ordered a census, probably to facilitate the collection of taxes. He also decreed that none of his subjects could travel outside Java, thereby attacking directly the interests of coastal traders, and appointed two coastal governors, one to control the western segment and one for the eastern. In 1652 he forbade the export of rice and timber altogether. He informed the Dutch that this was a measure directed not against them but against Bantén, and that they might acquire rice by sending an ambassador to him to negotiate the amount and price. In other words, he was attempting to ensure that the profits from VOC trade were channelled directly into the royal treasury. The Dutch objected to the restrictions, but Amangkurat I was adamant. His coastal subjects meanwhile suffered from royal demands for their cash and royal disruption of their trade.

In 1655 Amangkurat I ordered the ports closed entirely. In theory, not even fishermen were to put to sea. Officials were sent to requisition all large craft and to destroy all small ones. It seems that these measures were designed to facilitate the collection of a major tax, but behind them lay the king's obvious willingness to destroy the coast if he could not control it. In 1657 the ports were suddenly reopened, but in 1660 they were again closed to all traders and this time the VOC trading post at Jépara was also broken up. This second closure was said to be, at least in part, a retaliation for the VOC destruction of Palembang in 1659. Amangkurat I was said to be shaken by this destruction of his only remaining ally outside of Java. But there was clearly more to the closure than this, for all traders, not just the VOC, were forbidden to trade at the ports. In 1661, however, they were again reopened.

Amangkurat I's attempts to control the coast and his desire to monopolise trade with the VOC were of course intimately connected. He seems to have had four primary objectives: (1) to ensure that the revenue of coastal trade was channelled directly to the court; (2) to re-establish the 'vassal' relationship of the VOC which he believed the

1646 treaty had established; (3) to acquire VOC gifts which could enhance the pomp and glory of his court, such as Persian horses and so on; and (4) to acquire VOC money to alleviate the chronic shortage of cash in his kingdom. These goals could be achieved by destroying the autonomy of the coast and compelling the VOC to arrange all its purchases directly with the court. Amangkurat I continued to press the VOC to send ambassadors to him, threatening that otherwise the ports would be closed again. VOC missions were sent to Plered in 1667, 1668 and 1669, but little progress was made towards creating stable and amicable trading arrangements, and the last of these missions was in fact refused permission to complete its journey to Plered. As will be seen below, the court was by this time near to collapse.

Meanwhile the VOC was advancing in East Indonesia. Just as the destruction of Palembang in 1659 had shocked Amangkurat I, so the conquest of Gowa shook him ten years later. He now began to see the VOC not only as a source of cash, but of danger as well. This only increased his frenetic determination to control the coast. The two coastal governors appointed in 1651 had been replaced by four such governors in 1657. In 1669 their powers were reduced and direct representatives of the court called *umbuls* were sent out to oversee the administration. The economic and administrative life of the coast descended further into chaos and storm clouds began to gather.

It is difficult to know how much active opposition to the king existed before the late 1660s. There must have been widespread, perhaps nearly universal, latent opposition, but few men of sufficient influence to lead a coup or rebellion can have escaped the constant killing. But the 1660s saw the rise of one man whose own position and control of troops would have been sufficient to ensure him some prospects of both survival and success. This was the king's own son, the crown prince, later Susuhunan Amangkurat II (r. 1677–1703).

The crown prince was Amangkurat I's son by a Surabayan princess, the daughter of Pangeran Pěkik. It seems likely that he was actually raised by his mother's family and that he was therefore deeply alienated by his father's murder of that family and of Pěkik in 1659. Little is known of his character as a young man, except that he had a weakness for beautiful women which produced conflict with his father, who had similar tastes. In 1660 the Dutch heard rumours that Amangkurat I intended to kill his son and in 1661 that he had done so. This soon proved to be untrue, but in 1663 further rumours were heard of a failed attempt by the king to poison the crown prince. There is some evidence suggesting that the crown prince's party failed in a coup attempt in 1661, which resulted in the murder of many of his supporters. If this is true, the crown prince himself clearly escaped his father's revenge, perhaps because his personal entourage was too strong.

In 1668–70 another conflict broke out between the crown prince and his father over a woman. The estrangement between father and son seems by now to have been complete, if it had not in fact already been so for a decade. As early as 1660 the crown prince had begun trying to make independent contacts with the VOC. Between 1667 and 1675 he sent nine missions to Batavia, asking for everything from Dutch chickens to Persian horses and Makassarese maidens. His real aim was probably to discover whether he could count on VOC support. The six other princes at the court also had their own armed entourages and defended residences, among them Pangeran Pugér, who was later to become Susuhunan Pakubuwana I (r. 1704–19). Plered had now

become a collection of armed camps, the princes divided by their jealousies and ambitions within a political environment in which the price of a false step was murder.

The crown prince had for some time been in contact with a man who was to play a crucial role in the impending chaos. This was Raden Kajoran, also called Panémbahan Rama, a holy man reputed to have magical powers. Kajoran was a place some 26 km (16 miles) north-east of the court, in the area of the holy site Témbayat. In the 1630s this region had apparently been the centre of resistance to Sultan Agung and in 1633 Agung had undertaken some form of pilgrimage to the grave of Sunan Bayat there. Raden Kajoran was descended from the family of Sunan Bayat and had marriage connections with the house of Mataram. Even more significantly, his eldest daughter was married to a disaffected prince of Madura named Raden Trunajaya (?1649– 80). Had it not been for the intervention of the VOC, Trunajaya would almost certainly have become the founder of a new dynasty in Java. He had ample reason for hating Amangkurat I, for his father had been murdered at court in 1656 and his own life had been threatened by a court intrigue some time thereafter. He had then fled to Kajoran and become Raden Kajoran's son-in-law.

Raden Kajoran introduced Trunajaya and the crown prince to each other in about 1670, and the outcome was a fateful conspiracy against Amangkurat I. Trunajaya was to launch a rebellion and when the king was defeated the crown prince would become the new Susuhunan. Trunajaya would receive control of Madura and, apparently, a part of East Java, and was perhaps also to be the chief administrative official (*patih*) for the entire kingdom. Raden Kajoran prophesied that Trunajaya would be a great hero and that Mataram would fall. The crown prince returned to court to await events and Trunajaya went to Madura to create a base for the rebellion. There he gathered troops and took control of Pamékanan in southern central Madura. From this base he succeeded in taking control over the whole of Madura in the course of 1671.

The vanguard of this rebellion was to be non-Javanese. First the Madurese forces were assembled, then those fierce warriors of East Indonesia, the Makassarese. Having fled their homeland after the defeat of Gowa in 1669 and because of the oppressive rule of Arung Palakka, bands of Makassarese sailed to Java, living largely by piracy and plunder. A group had gone to Bantén, but when relations there became strained they left and in 1674 came to Jépara with the intention of asking Amangkurat I for land on which to settle. They were refused permission to go to court, but it seems that the crown prince authorised them to settle on the coast of East Java at a place called Démung (now Bésuki). More Makassarese joined them and in 1675 they entered into a pact with Trunajaya and began raiding Javanese ports. The prospect of sharing the spoils of a major war in Java must have greatly lifted the spirits of these exiles.

Now the Mataram empire began to disintegrate. The king was old and ill, but his tyranny and murders continued. There was a famine in 1674–6 and much sickness. Inauspicious omens were seen: Mount Mérapi erupted in 1672, there were earthquakes and lunar eclipses and the rains fell out of season. Moreover, the end of the century was approaching. Javanese court tradition posited a cycle of centuries which saw the fall of courts at the end of each. As the Javanese year AJ 1600 (beginning in March 1677) approached, prophecies spread that the end of Mataram was imminent. Such ideas, in a state as fragile as that of Amangkurat I, could only increase the likelihood that when the

challenge to the king finally arose, resistance would seem futile.

In 1675 the rebellion broke out in earnest. The Makassarese attacked and burned the ports of East Java as far west as Tuban. These ports had had their fortifications broken up by Sultan Agung after he had conquered them, and were hardly able to defend themselves. VOC naval forces also encountered the Makassarese and had only limited success against them. Trunajaya's Madurese army now landed in Java and took Surabaya. Coastal loyalties were divided. The ports from Juwana to the east appeared to favour the rebellion, while the ports farther west (especially Cirébon) seemed still loyal to Amangkurat I, although there were suspicions aroused about the attitudes of all the coastal lords. The court, too, was split. One party favoured asking the VOC for aid. Another, influenced apparently by the Panémbahan of Giri, argued on religious grounds that there should be no cooperation with Christians. The crown prince's position was extremely delicate. He remained at court, trying to promote the rebellion which he believed to be in his favour without revealing the extent of his involvement. The rebellion meanwhile spread as Trunajaya's forces and the Makassarese gained further victories on the coast. The rebels called upon the Javanese to support them in the name of Islam and found a favourable response. The Panémbahan of Giri now gave them his blessing, saying that Mataram would never prosper so long as the VOC was present in Java. This portended a growing anti-VOC as well as anti-Amangkurat I element in the rebellion, which was a problem for the crown prince who seems to have been favourably disposed towards the VOC.

The crucial military turning point came in 1676. The crown prince's role in the rebellion was suspected at court, but it is unclear whether Amangkurat I believed the accusations or thought he was in a position to do anything about them. Whatever the case, he put the crown prince at the head of an army which was sent to destroy Trunajaya's forces. Other princes were sent along, including the crown prince's brother and archenemy Pangeran Singasari. It may be that the king intended to have the crown prince murdered during the campaign. It may also be that the crown prince hoped to stage a fake battle against Trunajaya, but was prevented from doing so by the presence of the other princes. Instead, the royal army eventually encountered Trunajaya at Gogodog on the northeast coast in October 1676. There the Mataram army disintegrated before the rebels. Among the Mataram dead was the aged Pangeran Purbaya, the only brother of Sultan Agung to have lived long enough to see the collapse of Agung's empire.

After Gogodog the rebellion spread even faster. Many Javanese dignitaries ceased to recognise Amangkurat I as their king and joined the rebels. By the beginning of 1677 rebel forces controlled all the ports. Even Cirébon submitted to the rebels, but Bantén warships soon appeared there to impose Banténese influence instead.

Trunajaya's aspirations were now increasing. In 1676 he had taken the titles Panémbahan (honoured lord) and *raja* (king). He began to claim descent from Majapahit and a right to the throne of Mataram. In other words, the crown prince had lost control of the rebellion he had encouraged. But Trunajaya was equally losing control of his unruly allies the Makassarese, whose immediate interests had little to do with the question of who governed Java.

The Dutch were, of course, intimately interested in the course of events, and had

already been engaged in hostilities against the Makassarese. Both the crown prince and Trunajaya asked the VOC for cannon, gunpowder and other equipment. The VOC needed stability on the coast so that trade was possible and had now to decide what, if anything, it could do to promote such stability. At the end of 1676, Batavia decided upon a limited intervention designed to mediate some sort of settlement. The man who was given this task was Admiral Speelman, the victor of Makassar. He was provided with some 1500 troops but was ordered not to march into the interior. Batavia did not wish to be involved in a major campaign in Java, for its troops might be needed elsewhere: Malacca was being harassed by the Malays of Johor and it was clear that Bantěn and other states were also plotting against the VOC. There were also general doubts about the wisdom of fighting a war in Java, for some believed that the VOC could only subdue Java at the cost of ruining the island and involving the VOC in heavy expenditure. The logic of intervention would, nevertheless, shortly lead the VOC deep into the interior.

In February 1677 Amangkurat I and the VOC renewed the treaty of 1646, which had long since become a dead letter. The Dutch promised to aid the king against his enemies, but the king was to pay all the costs of such aid and to give the VOC economic concessions such as freedom from tolls. After this alliance was created, the rebellion only accelerated. Islamic self-consciousness seems to have been strong among the rebels and prophecies were spread that God would not bless Java so long as the Christians were present. In May 1677 the VOC intervened on the coast. They drove Trunajaya from Surabaya, thereby forcing his army farther inland and inducing even more Javanese to join him.

Now the rebellion reached its high point. The court of Plered was attacked and fell to Trunajaya's forces. The date of its fall is not certain, but it must have been between late May and late June 1677. Javanese chronicles say that, as the enemy approached, the king's forces assembled before the court, but he told them not to resist the will of God: the end of the century had come, and with it the time for Mataram to fall. Javanese tradition also says that, nearly a century before, the falling star of Sela Gilang had prophesied to Senapati that Mataram would fall in the time of his great-grandson, who was Amangkurat I. The king fled the court before his enemies reached it. He turned it over to his son Pangeran Pugér and took the crown prince with him north-westwards towards the coast. The crown prince, who had survived so many years amidst his enemies within the royal family, would have had little prospect of survival in the hands of his former protégé Trunajaya. Pugér was unable to resist the rebels, and was himself forced to flee and abandon the court to them. Trunajaya looted Plered and then withdrew eastwards to Kědiri, taking the Mataram treasury with him. Pugér then reoccupied the court and took the royal title Susuhunan Ingala, thereby beginning a long period of tension between himself and his brother the crown prince.

Amangkurat I did not survive the hardships of his flight. In July 1677 he died; on 13 July his son buried him at Těgal-Wangi (Těgal) on the north coast. The king had had to leave behind his treasury and the heavier regalia (*pusaka*), but the regalia he had managed to carry off were now the property of the crown prince. Thus, with holy regalia but without a treasury, an army, a court or a kingdom, Susuhunan Amangkurat II (r. 1677–1703) began his reign. He had only one possible means of establishing himself

as ruler of Java: he must get the VOC to fight his war for him.

The VOC–Amangkurat II alliance was confirmed in July 1677, on the basis of the February 1677 treaty. But from the beginning the king seemed reluctant to trust his allies entirely. Not until September did he agree to go from Tégal to Jépara, where Speelman had established his headquarters after expelling rebel forces from the central part of the coast. By this time the royal debt to the VOC for its military costs was already considerable and the king had no treasury from which payments could be made. In October 1677 and January 1678 he therefore entered into new agreements. Now the VOC was promised the incomes of the coastal ports until its costs were repaid, monopolies over the purchase of rice and sugar, monopolies over the import of textiles and opium, freedom from tolls, a direct cession of Sěmarang and a recognition of Batavia's boundaries which were now to reach southward to the Indian Ocean, so that the whole of the Priangan highlands became VOC territory. Only later would the VOC learn that most of these promises were meaningless (see [Chapter 9](#)).

Speelman was anxious now to march into the interior, but Batavia was reluctant. Personnel changes in Batavia, however, soon made a more active policy possible. Governor General Maetsuycker died in January 1678 and was replaced by the former Director-General Rijklof van Goens, who was replaced as Director-General by Speelman himself. Speelman's command at Jépara was eventually turned over in June to Anthonio Hurdt, who had little military experience and knew nothing of Java, but who was to be the agent of Batavia's new aggressiveness.

In September 1678 Hurdt marched into the interior of Java with Amangkurat II to destroy Trunajaya's stronghold at Kědiri. The force endured many hardships. Its European officers knew nothing of the interior and were sometimes misled by their guides. The troops suffered from disease and food shortages. Eventually, however, Kědiri was reached, and on 25 November it was taken. Trunajaya fled as the Javanese and European troops plundered the city, in the course of which the Mataram treasury was looted by the victors. Captain François Tack discovered an object described as the 'golden crown of Majapahit', a piece of regalia which is no longer known in Java. He was presumptuous enough to sell it to Amangkurat II for 1000 *reals*; the king was later unwilling to pay up and eventually repaid Tack for his effrontery by having him killed at court in 1686.

The rebellion now rapidly disintegrated. At the end of 1679 Trunajaya was captured in East Java and taken to the king. In January 1680 Amangkurat II personally stabbed him to death. In November 1679 the Makassarese were expelled from their main stronghold at Kěpér in East Java. Here the VOC had the assistance of a force which knew better than any other how to fight the Makassarese: Arung Palakka of Bone and his Bugis troops. A VOC force under Captain Jan Albert Sloot marched to Pajang and in September 1679 this force killed Raden Kajoran. In April 1680, in what the Dutch described as the most furious battle of the war, the Paněmbahan of Giri was killed and most of his family were executed. As the victories of Amangkurat II and the VOC multiplied, more and more Javanese declared allegiance to the king.

There remained, however, the unresolved issue of the central districts of Java. The king's brother Pangeran Pugér held the court of Mataram and was clearly unwilling to recognise Amangkurat II as king. Other princes had also opposed him, but the two

principal ones had died in 1678 and Pugér therefore remained as the main obstacle between Amangkurat II and his throne. In September 1680 Amangkurat II went to Pajang and established a new court which he called Kartasura. He was unable, however, to convince his brother to submit. In November his and the VOC's forces attacked and drove Pugér from the old court at Plered. But by August 1681 Pugér had rebuilt his forces to about 10,000 men and reconquered the Mataram district. He then launched an attack on Kartasura and nearly took the new court before being repulsed by the VOC. In November 1681 the VOC again defeated him and finally Pugér submitted. He went to Kartasura and recognised his brother's sovereignty; his personal safety was to be guaranteed by the VOC. Other lesser rebels were meanwhile being defeated and killed; some simply melted away into the hills. The king was restored to his throne at last.

The rebellion which was now over had roots deep in the past, and several themes which arose in the years of fighting would remain of importance well into the eighteenth century. The conflict had been in part regional, with Madura and the north-east coast opposed to Central Javanese authority. This opposition reached back to the late sixteenth century when the Mataram empire began to be created, and had been exacerbated by Amangkurat I's tyrannical rule. The war had also been a dynastic struggle involving the king and princes, and their conflicting ambitions. Perhaps it was partly religious as well, for the leaders and areas which supported the rebellion, and the Makassarese as well, were known as self-consciously Muslim. Islamic appeals appeared frequently on the rebel side. This may also have been expressed in the anti-Dutch attitude of the rebels, although religion is not necessary to explain why those who were trying to topple the dynasty disliked the VOC's intervention. Perhaps even more fundamentally, this had been a conflict concerning the legitimacy of the dynasty, for by his tyrannical rule, his murders, his attempts to destroy regional autonomy and his inability to exercise military power, Amangkurat I had destroyed the consensus of notables which was essential to legitimacy and effective rule.

The role which the VOC had now adopted was also to remain relatively constant for many decades. Here was a powerful military force, better trained, better armed, more disciplined than most of its enemies. But its difficulties were many. It was often isolated in the midst of much larger enemy forces, ignorant of the terrain, poorly supplied, beset by illness, misled or deserted by its Indonesian allies, and weakened by incompetence and incessant internal conflicts among its commanders and the VOC's top officials. Its campaigns entailed heavy losses and enormous expense. Victories against large enemy forces were possible only because there were substantial Indonesian forces on the same side as the VOC. Basically, the VOC's military capacity was limited to winning and holding selected lowland areas. Mountainous regions were often beyond the VOC's reach, except for occasional raiding columns, and they harboured rebellious groups sometimes for generations. The VOC's strategy was therefore essentially defensive. It could defend a ruler in return for payment and concessions; it could destroy major rebel parties and hold strategic points, but it could not police all of Java.

VOC intervention had now made it possible even for a king who lacked sufficient Javanese support to rule effectively and to claim legitimacy, to stay on his throne. The VOC could defend him but could not make him legitimate or give him the means to rule. The VOC always believed that legitimacy consisted of little more than being the

son of a previous king. It further believed a king's authority to be more absolute than Javanese traditions and circumstances allowed. Therefore, in the VOC's search for stability, it supported rulers whom Javanese notables frequently believed to have no legitimate right or ability to rule. The Dutch thereby exacerbated rather than resolved this source of instability. The VOC in 1680 wanted nothing more than to withdraw its military forces from Central and East Java, but it was to find that the results of its own policies would require a constant state of military preparedness. They would also require high levels of expenditure on the military and in this lay part of the cause of the financial decline of the VOC through the eighteenth century.

In the west of Java, the state of Bantēn also underwent a crisis which ended in VOC intervention. The reign of Sultan Agēng (also known as Sultan Tirtayasa) of Bantēn (r. 1651–82) was that kingdom's golden age. He had an impressive fleet constructed on European models. Ships sailing with his passes carried on an active trade within the Indonesian archipelago. With the help of the English, Danes and Chinese, the Bantēnese traded with Persia, India, Siam, Vietnam, China, the Philippines and Japan. Here, indeed, were the last remnants of the long-distance traders of Java.

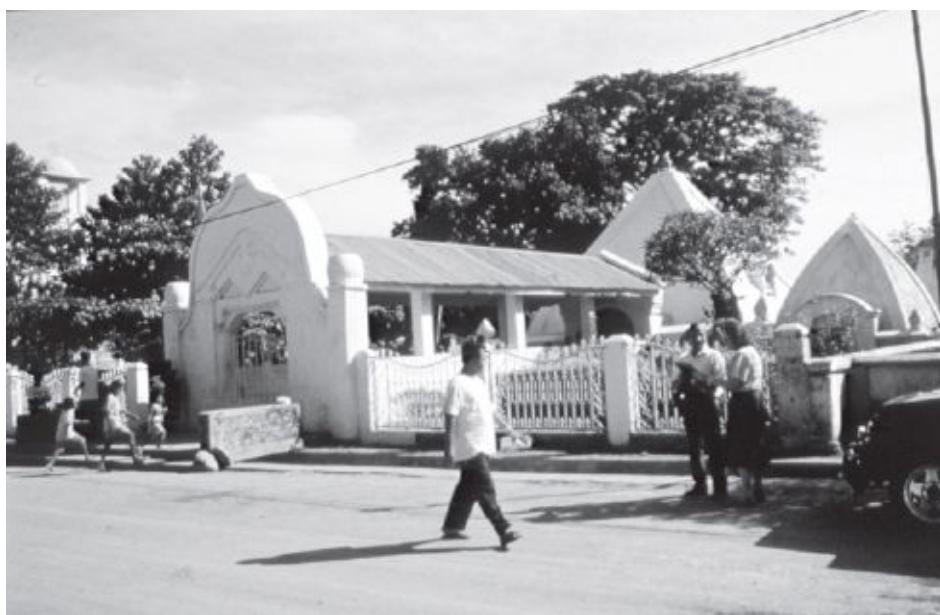
Sultan Agēng was also concerned to develop his state's agricultural resources. From 1663 to 1677 he ordered major hydraulic works to be carried out. Some 30–40 km (18–24 miles) of new canals were constructed, in one case employing 16,000 people in the construction work. Along these canals, around 30,000–40,000 hectares (115–155 square miles) of new rice lands and thousands of hectares of coconut palm plantations were established. Something like 30,000 agriculturalists were settled on these lands, often including people whom the Sultan found to be undesirable in one way or another, such as Bugis and Makassarese immigrants and opium addicts. From Batavia the king ordered windmills of the latest design for use in irrigation. These projects served not only to enhance the kingdom's agricultural wealth but also to bring interior districts, particularly those along the volatile border with Batavia, under more effective central control. A new product also emerged, with Chinese traders introducing sugar cane for the first time from the 1620s. The kingdom prospered. The capital city of Bantēn itself is estimated to have grown from a population of about 150,000 early in Sultan Agēng's reign to around 200,000 by its end. Bantēn was not without crises: an epidemic in 1625 was reported to have carried away one-third of its population, and a drought caused a rice crisis in the 1670s, but on the whole the royal policy of promoting both external trade and interior agriculture was a success.

Sultan Agēng was a firm opponent of the VOC. For their part, the Dutch were desirous of monopoly over this port's rich supply of pepper and worried about a wealthy and powerful state so close to their own headquarters at Batavia, some 75 km (45 miles) to the east. The Bantēn–VOC hostilities which attended the conquest of Batavia in 1619 are described in [Chapter 3](#). In 1633–9 another war was fought, ending in a vague agreement to cease hostilities. In 1645 a treaty was signed to regulate VOC–Bantēn relations. But with the accession of Sultan Agēng in 1651, conflict quickly resumed. In 1656 war broke out, with the Bantēnese raiding Batavian districts and VOC ships, while the VOC blockaded the port. In 1659 a new peace settlement was reached. The necessity for some more final solution of the Bantēn problem was, however, becoming clear to Batavia. The occasion for such a solution came in a form common

throughout the archipelago: an internal conflict within the royal house of Bantēn.

The crown prince of Bantēn, later Sultan Haji (r. 1682–7), exercised considerable power in Bantēn, and was indeed referred to by the VOC as the ‘young Sultan’, while his father was called the ‘old Sultan’. The ambitions of father and son led to conflict, and relations with the VOC naturally became involved in their disagreements. The court split into two factions, with the crown prince’s party being willing to seek the support of the Dutch. Sultan Agēng’s party opposed the VOC and the more militant Muslim elite took this side. In 1671 bands of Makassarese, with ample reason for hating the VOC, arrived in Bantēn. Sultan Agēng and the Makassarese soon clashed over his treatment of Makassarese women and their own unruly behaviour, and these warrior bands who might have won the day for Agēng left Bantēn for East Java in 1673–4.

Among the Makassarese who came to Bantēn was one of the most famous Islamic teachers of Indonesian history, Shaikh Yusuf Makassar (1626–99). In 1644 he left his homeland in South Sulawesi and travelled westward in search of religious knowledge. In Aceh he joined the Qadiriyya Sufi order (**tarekat**). He went on to Yemen where he was initiated into the Naqshabandiyya order. He studied for years in Mecca and Medina. Among his teachers there were two of the most famous of all Naqshabandis, Muhammad ‘Abd al-Baqi and Ibrahim al-Kurani, the latter teaching him the Shattariyya **tarekat**. In Arabia Shaikh Yusuf also joined the Khalwatiyya order. When he returned to Indonesia after his many years of study in 1672, Yusuf went to Sultan Agēng’s Bantēn rather than to South Sulawesi, which had by then fallen to the VOC and Arung Palakka. In Bantēn, Yusuf introduced his own Khalwatiyya-Yusuf **tarekat**. When his Makassarese compatriots decamped from Bantēn in 1673–4, Yusuf stayed on and gave influential support to Sultan Agēng’s faction. By 1671 Agēng had already withdrawn to a residence outside the town itself, accusing his son of an intention to usurp all power.



*Grave of Shaikh Yusuf Makassar (1626–99), Makassar, Sulawesi*

During Trunajaya’s rebellion, Sultan Agēng declared himself for the rebels, sent them ammunition and harassed VOC ships and Batavian districts. In 1678 he wrote to Amangkurat II and accused him of being neither a Muslim nor a Christian but something in between, and no longer a king but a common subject of the VOC. When

Mataram collapsed in 1677, Agéng's forces moved into Mataram's westerly dependencies of Cirébon and the Priangan highlands. They seemed ready to attack Batavia itself as soon as Trunajaya's victory was certain. With Batavia surrounded by Bantén's forces to the west, south and east as well as at sea, the VOC naturally informed Bantén as quickly as possible of its victory at Kédiri in 1678. Sultan Agéng did not make his move.

In 1680, with the fighting in Central and East Java nearing its end, Sultan Agéng finally declared war when Bantén merchants were mistreated by the VOC. What might have happened had he done so two or three years earlier cannot be guessed, but certainly by 1680 the moment for such a move had passed. But before hostilities could begin, in May 1680 the crown prince took over the government and confined Agéng to his residence. The prince's position was, however, weak: he had carried out a palace coup, but had offended the strong Islamic sentiments in Bantén by doing so. The more he appeared to turn to the VOC for help, the more he lost Muslim support. The VOC, meanwhile, would come to his aid only on certain conditions: that runaway slaves and deserters from Batavia be turned over even if they had converted to Islam, that 'pirates' be punished and the VOC indemnified, that claims to Cirébon be abandoned, that involvement in Mataram's affairs be renounced, and, most important of all, that the VOC's European competitors be excluded from the port. Thus, the VOC was promising to rescue the crown prince if he abandoned Bantén's independent foreign policy and the basis of its prosperity. As his position grew more desperate, the prince was finally obliged to accept all of this.

In March 1682 a VOC force commanded by François Tack and Isaac de Saint-Martin sailed to Bantén. By this time the crown prince was besieged in his palace, Sultan Agéng's supporters having retaken the town and set it ablaze. The prince's submission to the VOC was complete and it therefore recognised him as sultan. The Dutch now went to war on his behalf. The Europeans trading in Bantén were expelled; the English withdrew to Béngkulu (Bencoolen) in South Sumatra, which was their only remaining permanent post in Indonesia. Dutch artillery drove Sultan Agéng from his residence and, after being pursued into the highlands, in March 1683 he surrendered. For a time he was kept in Bantén, but he was then transferred to Batavia where he died in 1695. Shaikh Yusuf was captured in 1683 and exiled to the Cape of Good Hope, where he died 16 years later.

Cirébon and the Priangan highlands now also came under VOC influence. Mataram did not have the means to govern Priangan and, in any case, Amangkurat II had signed this area over to the VOC in October 1677. With Bantén's power broken as well, VOC domination of this area was possible. Amangkurat II still desired Cirébon's vassalage, but the princes there were unenthusiastic about loyalty to Mataram. In 1680–1 they were taken under VOC protection. Cirébon was supposed to remain friendly to Mataram, but the VOC was now the dominant external power in Cirébon. It had monopolies on the import of textiles and opium, freedom from tolls and a monopoly over the purchase of pepper there. Amangkurat II was not happy but could do nothing about the detachment of Cirébon from his domains.

By about 1682, the VOC's main opponents in Java thus seemed to be crushed. But, as will be seen in the following chapter, it soon became clear that in the vast empire of

Mataram, VOC intervention had exacerbated more problems than it had solved.

## **Chapter 9**

---

# **Java, Madura and the VOC, c. 1680–1745**

The fates of the VOC and the Javanese were now entwined. For the VOC, events in Java were a primary concern, for it had invested men and money in the restoration of the Mataram dynasty and hoped now to win profit from this investment. For the Javanese there were other priorities to be considered, but no longer could any major change take place without the possibility of the VOC becoming involved. The Madurese involvement in Javanese affairs which had brought about VOC intervention was also far from being over. Until the middle of the eighteenth century this intermingling of Dutch, Madurese and Javanese affairs caused much misfortune.

At the start of his reign, Susuhunan Amangkurat II (r. 1677–1703) seemed wholly a creation of the VOC. In 1680 there were even rumours among the Javanese that he was not the former crown prince at all, but rather a son of Speelman in disguise. Under the treaties of 1677–8 the VOC indeed seemed to be in a very strong position. But these agreements were only as good as the king's willingness to fulfil them. As various minor rebels were eliminated in the early 1680s and relative tranquillity returned to Central Java, Amangkurat II began to feel more secure. As his need for VOC arms decreased, his deference to the VOC vanished.

The king's relations with the VOC rapidly deteriorated. The payments due for VOC military expenses were not made; the supply of rice, timber and sugar was frustrated; the costs of the VOC garrison at court were not met; jurisdictional and boundary disputes arose concerning the cession of Sěmarang to the VOC, which continued to employ Jěpara as its coastal headquarters. The VOC stopped adding interest charges to the king's debt in 1682, in the hope that this would encourage him to pay some of it. But the debt had already reached 1,540,000 *reals*, five times the sum thought to have been in the Mataram treasury when Trunajaya took it in 1677. VOC monopolies over the import of opium and textiles also proved to be virtually without value, for the Javanese were so impoverished after the years of tyranny and war that they could not pay the VOC's prices. Indeed, while VOC warehouses swelled with these unsaleable goods, the indigenous Javanese textile industry underwent something of a revival. The coast of Java was meanwhile made unsafe by the activities of pirates, with whom some Javanese officials seem to have been involved. The king himself was harbouring Makassarese and Balinese fugitives who had escaped VOC service or slavery.

The VOC itself was now entering a long period of troubles. When Governor General Speelman died in 1684 the extent of his corruption and abuse of power was

revealed. It was alleged that he had governed virtually without the advice of the Council of the Indies; had arrested over a hundred men, of whom all but one were now declared innocent; had sold free men as slaves; had authorised payments for non-existent soldiers and for work not done; and had underpaid Indonesian pepper suppliers. During his time (1681–4) textile sales had dropped by 90 per cent, the opium monopoly was ineffective and private traders had been allowed to infringe VOC monopolies. He had also embezzled large sums. In 1685 his entire estate was confiscated by the VOC, but it was believed that an even larger amount had been smuggled to the Netherlands in the form of jewels. He had, in addition, been well known for his general debauchery.

VOC personnel in general did not have the opportunities that Speelman had enjoyed, but most took such chances as they had to emulate his style. This frequently resulted in inefficiency, debauchery, corruption and a vulgarity and brutality towards Indonesians which contributed to their dislike of the VOC. For instance, the commandant of the VOC garrison at Kartasura in 1682 reported that VOC soldiers were assaulting Javanese women in their houses, and that both his Indonesian and his European troops were smoking opium and drinking ‘unwholesome’ rice wine. In an agreement regulating VOC–Bantēn relations in February 1686, it was necessary for Batavia to undertake that VOC servants in Bantēn would not take goods by violence from market traders before the price was agreed and paid, would not enter mosques without permission or act in an ‘unseemly’ fashion in them, would not make indecent approaches to Bantēnese women in their houses or on the streets, and would not stare at the Sultan or his women when they were bathing in the river. Such behaviour was in fact hardly amenable to control from Batavia. Behind the large-scale problems which are discussed in this chapter, there were therefore endless small-scale, personal causes for animosity towards the VOC. VOC personnel also had little reason to think that they found themselves in a tropical paradise. If they were not killed in a brutal war or a local quarrel, they faced the near-certainty of an early death from disease or alcoholism. In 1620 Coen had observed that ‘our nation must drink or die’; in practice, very many VOC servants did both. With their prospects so poor, it is not surprising that most sought refuge in immediate pleasures and maximum avarice.

In the court of Kartasura, anti-VOC sentiments continued to grow. The court was, however, cautious about a full-scale break, for it had ample experience of the VOC’s military capabilities. But in 1684 more violent options began to be considered when a man arrived who was to become the most hated of all the VOC’s Indonesian enemies. This was Surapati, a Balinese slave who had lived in Batavia. Like many other slaves, he had escaped to the highlands south of Batavia and become the leader of a band of brigands. In 1683 he unexpectedly surrendered and was enrolled in the VOC’s military service. He then helped to capture a fleeing son of Sultan Agéng of Bantēn. But in January 1684 he attacked a VOC force, killed 20 out of 39 European troops and then escaped eastwards after a VOC counterattack inflicted heavy losses among his men. In Kartasura the anti-VOC party, led by the *patih* (1682–6) Anrangkusuma, persuaded the king to give refuge to Surapati and his band of 80 men. They were given women and quarters near the court, and settled down. The anti-VOC party believed that they had found just the man they needed.

By 1685 Batavia had concluded that a special embassy to the court was necessary to

resolve all the issues outstanding. Captain François Tack, the saviour of Sultan Haji of Bantěn and the man who had sold the golden crown of Majapahit to Amangkurat II in 1678, was made ambassador. There were few Dutchmen whom the king disliked more. Tack was instructed to deal with a long list of grievances. He was to regulate the affairs of Cirěbon as a VOC vassal, the boundaries of Batavia, the supply of timber and rice, and so on. Most importantly, he was to renegotiate the king's debt, which he was authorised if necessary to reduce to 16 per cent of the required sum in order to induce the king to pay. And he was to lay his hands on Surapati, by whatever means necessary. In November 1685 Tack left Batavia, and on 4 February 1686 he departed from Sěmarang for Kartasura.



*Captain Tack depicted in Javanese theatre as a wayang ogre (left), and Surapati as hero (centre and right)*

As the date of Tack's arrival at court neared, the king faced a dilemma. He would not surrender Surapati, yet he feared the VOC too much to show open resistance. On 8 February 1686 a faked assault was therefore launched on Surapati's quarters by the king's troops. At this moment Tack arrived, thought he saw the king's forces attacking Surapati, and set out in pursuit himself. He then heard cannon fire behind him and concluded that Surapati had doubled back to attack the VOC post at the court. Tack hastened back, and in front of the court was attacked by Surapati and Amangkurat II's own troops disguised as Balinese. Tack was cut down; 20 wounds were later counted on his body. When the day's fighting was done, 74 other Dutchmen were dead. Javanese sources say that the court had carefully plotted this assault, and indeed go so far as to say that it was Pangeran Pugěr, whose safety the VOC had made its special concern, who actually killed Tack. The 248 surviving Europeans withdrew to the VOC garrison post, where they remained until 20 March when they were allowed to withdraw unmolested to Jěpara. The VOC no longer had a garrison at court.

Immediately after the attack Surapati left for Pasuruan in East Java, where Anrangkusuma later joined him. There Surapati proceeded to build up an independent domain. He and his descendants were to govern much of East Java south of the Brantas river for over eight decades. In cooperation with Balinese princes, Surapati even exercised considerable influence in the Eastern Salient. As Surapati's dominance spread in the east, it became clear that the price Amangkurat II had paid for his revenge on the

VOC was a partial dismemberment of his empire. In 1690 he sent an army against Surapati which was completely defeated. Javanese levies could not stand against Surapati, who used his experience of European military techniques to good advantage. Surapati's links with the court seem never to have been entirely severed, however, for various dignitaries apparently maintained contacts with him.

Amangkurat II sent letters to Batavia claiming that he was innocent of the assault on Tack and the VOC at Kartasura. No one believed him. In fact, evidence soon came to light of attempts by the king to build up an anti-VOC alliance with anyone available. In 1686 the VOC discovered letters written before the attack which linked the king to the Minangkabau adventurer Raja Sakti (Ahmad Syah ibn Iskandar), who was threatening both Bantēn and the VOC in Sumatra. Amangkurat II also sent letters to Cirébon in 1686 and to Siam in 1687 and contacts were apparently also made with Johor and Palembang. It was later said that he had also attempted to contact the English East India Company for assistance before the attack. In the years 1686–9 rumours spread of an impending general uprising against the VOC throughout much of the archipelago. The Dutch attributed Islamic xenophobia to their enemies, but the apparent willingness of several of their opponents to solicit English or Siamese support and the involvement of Balinese bands in several places suggest that the antagonisms were specifically against the VOC rather than generally against non-Muslims.

In 1689 a plot was discovered which terrified the VOC. Since 1665 the head of the Ambonese in Batavia had been a Muslim called Captain Jonker. He had fought for the VOC against the Portuguese in Timor and Sri Lanka, against the Makassarese, against the Bantēnese near Batavia, against the Minangkabau in Sumatra, and in Java he had not only fought Trunajaya but had personally arrested him at the end of 1679. In August 1689 it was discovered that Jonker had joined with other opponents of the VOC in plotting a massacre of the Europeans in Batavia. He was believed to have had contacts with both Raja Sakti and Amangkurat II, and men, horses and money were said to be on the way from Kartasura to assist him. Upon discovering the plot the VOC attempted to arrest Jonker, but he broke into open plunder and murder and was only caught and killed after a pursuit. His followers then fled to Kartasura, where they at first found refuge. A few months later, however, Amangkurat II turned over some fifty of the conspirators to the VOC, which executed them. Jonker was replaced as head of the VOC Ambonese by his Christian nephew Zacharias Bintang (d. c.1730).

Both the VOC and Amangkurat II were apprehensive. With troubles on all fronts, the VOC did not want a new war in Central Java, and with mounting financial worries it could ill afford one. Its forces were weak. The VOC maintained trading posts at Jépara, Sěmarang, Surabaya, Rěmbang, Děmak and Těgal in order to acquire such products as it could, but in 1702 the total military strength of these posts was 869 European troops. The VOC administration was also chaotic. In 1691 Governor General (1691– 1704) Willem van Outhoorn was in conflict with the Council of the Indies and especially with the Director-General Joan van Hoorn. This was solved by van Hoorn marrying van Outhoorn's daughter. The **Heeren XVII** in Amsterdam feared the effects of nepotism, however, and in 1701 ordered van Outhoorn to retire and van Hoorn to become Governor General. Van Hoorn refused and over two years of confusion ensued. The **Heeren XVII** persisted and now named a new Director-General as well, so that there

were now two Governors General (one who refused to retire and another who refused to take his post) and two Directors-General. Finally van Hoorn gave in; he became Governor General in July 1704 and held this post until 1709.

For Amangkurat II, the prospect of a war against the VOC was unattractive. His kingdom was falling apart. Surapati's power was growing in the east and by 1699 it reached as far as Madiun. Eastern Java north of the Brantas river was falling under the dominion of the powerful lord of West Madura, Panémbahan Cakraningrat II (r. 1680–1707), and of his son-in-law Angabei Jangrana I (d. 1693) and the latter's son Jangrana II (r. 1693–1709). Amangkurat II's court was splitting into factions, with the party of the crown prince (later Amangkurat III) opposed to another surrounding Pangeran Pugér (later Pakubuwana I). In his search for allies, the crown prince was apparently in friendly contact with Surapati. In 1702 the king sent an emissary to a secret meeting with the VOC at Sěmarang, at which his desperate situation and his hopes for a reconciliation with the Dutch were expressed. But the VOC, quite understandably, would not trust him.

In 1703 Amangkurat II died and was succeeded by his son Amangkurat III (r. 1703–8; d. 1734). Conflicts with his uncle Pangeran Pugér and the latter's family led Pugér to flee from the court in March 1704. He went to Sěmarang and there told the VOC that Amangkurat III was their joint enemy and an ally of Surapati. He claimed that most Javanese preferred him to the new king and asked the VOC to recognise him as monarch. The Dutch were greatly influenced by Cakraningrat II of West Madura, whom they regarded as a reliable ally. He supported Pugér's claims and convinced the VOC that Pugér had the support of the Javanese.

It is unclear why Cakraningrat II should have endorsed a man whom he later seems to have disliked intensely. It is probable, however, that a primary consideration was the threat which was posed to Cakraningrat II's own designs in East Java by an alliance between Amangkurat III and Surapati. By this time, Cakraningrat II was quietly extending his dominance over the Javanese coast from Surabaya in the east to Juwana and Pati in the central north coast, and had perhaps also gained control of the toll gates along the Sala river. He may therefore have preferred to see a ruler in Kartasura whom he expected to be weaker and less likely to frustrate his plans. He may also have looked forward to the prospect of a new war in Central Java, which would present the Madurese with the first opportunity for intervention there since the defeat of Cakraningrat II's own nephew Trunajaya.

In June 1704 the VOC recognised Pugér as Susuhunan Pakubuwana I (r. 1704–19), and the conflict known as the First Javanese War of Succession (1704–8) began. The coastal areas whose support Pakubuwana I had claimed soon proved to have little interest in him. Several asked to be made dependants of the VOC, as was Cirébon, thereby sparing themselves from the coming conflict and the burdens of rule by the Mataram dynasty. This the VOC was unwilling to accept. The main coastal resistance to Pakubuwana I came from Děmak, which was conquered in October and November 1704. The coastal areas now fell into line, and in August 1705 a force of Javanese and Madurese, with VOC Europeans, Bugis, Makassarese, Balinese, Malays, Bandanese, Ambonese and **Mardijkers** (free Portuguese-speaking Indonesian soldiers) marched for Kartasura. Amangkurat III's main force changed sides as Pakubuwana I and his allies

approached, leaving Amangkurat III little option but to flee. In September Pakubuwana I entered Kartasura without encountering resistance, and occupied the throne.

Amangkurat III fled eastwards and joined Surapati. He took with him all the holy regalia (*pusaka*) of the kingdom. In 1706, 1707 and 1708 furious campaigns were fought by the VOC, Madurese and Kartasura forces in East Java. Heavy losses were suffered from both battles and disease, and the VOC's commerce and its finances were seriously affected. In 1706 Surapati was killed at Bangil, but the campaign was otherwise a failure. In 1707, however, Pasuruan was conquered and Amangkurat III and Surapati's sons fled to Malang.

This First Javanese War of Succession was the first major military intervention in Java by the VOC since the war against Trunajaya. The forces deployed by the Company and Pakubuwana I were substantial. According to one European source, 46,000 men marched in the largest campaign, that of 1707 (comparable to the 52,000 led by the Duke of Marlborough at the battle of Blenheim in 1704). The campaigns were costly efforts with enormous losses of men, often due more to disease than to military action.

One of the most remarkable features of the fighting was the evidence that innovations in military technology which arose from warfare in Europe in the seventeenth century and were introduced into Java by the VOC were then rapidly adopted by the Javanese. Matchlocks (originally introduced by the Portuguese) were succeeded by flintlock *saphaen*, the origin of the modern Javanese and Indonesian word for a rifle, *sēnapan*. Similarly, pre-packaged paper cartridges, small mortars, grenades and (after their introduction somewhat later than the First Javanese War of Succession) bayonets were quickly adopted by Javanese. Javanese and European artillery, fortifications and siegework had always been, and remained, at a comparable technological level. Cultural differences – which were probably enhanced by the process of familiarisation which was taking place between Europeans and Javanese and which led to no greater desire to borrow cultural elements from each other – did not impede the rapid transfer of military technology to the Javanese side. Javanese warfare thereby became more modern and consequently more costly in human and economic terms. Thus did the Dutch and the Javanese, two of the leading warrior nations of seventeenth-century Europe and Asia, come to share in the bloody fruits of contemporary technological advance.

In 1708 Amangkurat III finally agreed to negotiate with the VOC, on the understanding that he would be allowed some part of Java to govern and would not have to submit to Pakubuwana I. The VOC, however, was better at fighting wars than keeping promises. Amangkurat III was arrested and exiled to Sri Lanka, where he died in 1734. There followed a desperate search for the missing *pusakas*. It appeared that Amangkurat III had either distributed them among his followers, hidden them in East Java, smuggled them into exile with him or melted them down. Some of the regalia were brought back to Java in 1737 when Amangkurat III's sons were allowed to return from Sri Lanka, but there is room for doubt whether the whole set of *pusakas* was ever in fact reassembled. Over the years various regalia were said to have come to light in the hands of rebels. As late as 1762 a great-grandson of Amangkurat III named Raden Mas Guntur apparently had a *pusaka kris* (dagger).

In October 1705 a new contract was agreed between Pakubuwana I and the VOC.

The Dutch abolished the dynasty's accumulated debts before 1705 in return for Pakubuwana I making large concessions to the VOC. The main concessions were: (1) renewed recognition of Batavia's boundaries including Priangan; (2) recognition of Cirébon as a VOC protectorate; (3) cession of the eastern half of Madura; (4) confirmation of VOC control of Sěmarang (where the VOC finally moved its coastal headquarters in 1708); (5) a right to construct fortifications anywhere in Java; (6) a right to purchase as much rice as it desired; (7) confirmation of the monopolies of opium and textile imports; (8) 800 *koyan* (approximately 3 million lb/1300 metric tons) of free rice annually for 25 years; (9) the restoration of a VOC garrison at the court at the king's expense; (10) a prohibition on Javanese sailing farther east than Lombok, farther north than Kalimantan or farther west than Lampung (South Sumatra). In 1709 further agreements were made concerning the delivery of rice, timber, indigo and coffee (the cultivation of which the VOC had introduced into Java from 1696). The VOC appeared to have secured its dominance in Java. Pakubuwana I's policy was clearly to agree to anything the VOC demanded and then to tell his subjects to pay it.

But Java could not be exploited by pieces of paper. The burdens apparently led to population movements from several areas and, with the cultivators moving away, deliveries became more difficult. The north coast was badly deforested and could not supply timber except from far-distant stands. Pakubuwana I made a serious effort to pay what he owed, but this was beyond his capacity. In three years of his reign his total payments actually exceeded one year's due, but he was never able to dispose of the arrears accumulated in 1705–9. By 1717/18 he had paid 69 per cent of his total debt, but then his payments began falling behind again as his kingdom fell apart. Regional officials naturally disliked both the burdens and the king who ordered their payment. By imposing heavy burdens on Java, the VOC merely lessened the likelihood that its own candidate for the Mataram throne would be able to rule in tranquillity.

The VOC had serious financial problems. Of its 23 offices in Asia in the period 1683–1710, only three (Japan, Surat and Persia) normally showed profits. Nine showed losses in every year, including Ambon, Banda, Ternate, Makassar, Bantěn, Cirébon and the coast of Java. The VOC's accounts for its posts on the Javanese coast show that it never covered more than 15 per cent of its costs there, except when it chose to count Pakubuwana I's debt repayments as if they were income. Even then, no more than 60 per cent of expenditure was covered. The VOC was now committed to an enterprise which could hardly be profitable. Its enormous expenses led it to demand resources from the Javanese, which led to further rebellion and resistance, and thus to yet more expense.

Intrigues and animosities grew at the court of Kartasura and in the outlying regions. In 1709 Jangrana II of Surabaya was murdered in the court at the behest of the VOC for his treachery in the 1706 campaign. This completed the alienation of his brothers, who succeeded him in Surabaya. Pangeran Cakraningrat III (r. 1707–18) of West Madura began to lay plans for the expansion of his own influence. By 1712 Cakraningrat III, and by 1714 Jayapusita of Surabaya, were refusing to come to court. Surapati's descendants and Balinese forces naturally became involved in these and other intrigues. Regional officials were clearly revealing their lack of enthusiasm for the king, while the princes and dignitaries at court split into factions. The VOC commandant at Kartasura

since 1715, Lieutenant Jochum Frederikse, was meanwhile so often drunk that he was unreliable.

In 1717 Surabaya rebelled and called in Balinese troops as allies. Thus began six years of brutal fighting. In the first months of 1718 the VOC campaign against the Surabaya rebels was an utter disaster. In mid-year, however, Batavia sent a new commander, reinforcements and heavy guns to demolish the Surabayans' fortifications. At last, in October 1718, the VOC was able to retake the city of Surabaya, but the rebel forces were not destroyed. In 1718 Panaraga, Madiun, Magétan and Jagaraga rebelled. In the same year the king's son Pangeran Dipanagara was sent to attack the rebels, and himself rebelled. He was proclaimed king by the rebels, who now had a member of the royal house of Mataram to lead their cause. He took a title which was later to be made famous by another Dipanagara, the great rebel leader of the early nineteenth century (see [Chapter 11](#)). He called himself Panembahan Erucakra, a title associated in Javanese messianic traditions with the 'just king' (*ratu adil*), who will save Java from oppression and usher in a golden age. Cakraningrat III's position was unclear to the VOC, to which he continued to profess a dubious loyalty. In January 1718 he boarded a VOC ship, where a misunderstanding led to fighting and to his death. Balinese then plundered West Madura, but after a difficult campaign they were expelled by Madurese and European troops in the course of 1718.

In the midst of this collapse in the east of his kingdom, Pakubuwana I died in February 1719. He was succeeded by his son Amangkurat IV (r. 1719–26), whom the VOC described at the start of his reign as a ruler who was deserted by all of his people and had acquired virtually the whole of the Javanese world as his enemy. In June 1719, the new king's younger brothers Blitar and Purbaya led an assault on the court. They were supported by the entire Islamic religious establishment of the court and evidently had the sympathy of their (and the king's) mother Ratu Pakubuwana, who was a formidable influence in the life of the court. But they were repulsed by cannon fire from the VOC guard at the court. So the rebel princes fled to Mataram with their followers. Their uncle Pangeran Arya Mataram took no part in this initial uprising but he shared the others' distaste for Amangkurat IV and the following day he, too, left the court, heading for the north coast where he proclaimed himself a rival king. Thus began the Second Javanese War of Succession (1719–23). Yet again, only the VOC could save the king.

In November 1719 the VOC took the offensive and drove the rebel princes from their stronghold in Mataram. In 1720 they fled eastwards into the heart of the areas already in rebellion, and the main VOC effort now moved to these eastern regions. As VOC victories accumulated, at the usual heavy cost to all involved, the various rebellious forces in the east coalesced. But under the heavy toll taken by disease and battle, the rebellions began to disintegrate. In October 1719 Pangeran Arya Mataram had already surrendered and had then been strangled at Jépara. Among the Surabaya family, Jangrana III died in 1718 and Jayapusita in 1720. Pangeran Blitar died in 1721. Finally, in May and June 1723 the remaining rebels surrendered, including several of Surapati's descendants, Surengrana of Surabaya and Pangerans Purbaya and Dipanagara. Purbaya was kept at Batavia, but the others were exiled to Sri Lanka. Remnants of the Surapati family and Balinese forces remained involved in eastern Java

and the Eastern Salient for many more years, but the main rebellions were now broken. The cost of these wars was now added to the royal debt to the VOC.

Despite the crushing of the rebels, the last years of Amangkurat IV's reign were far from tranquil. Pangeran Cakraningrat IV (r. 1718–46; d. 1753) of West Madura resisted the king's authority as much as had his predecessors. It was his desire to stand under the VOC rather than Kartasura, but neither the king nor the VOC would agree to this. Personal animosity between himself and the king contributed to his refusal on several occasions to come to court, where he feared he would be poisoned. As court intrigues grew, the VOC found that there was no opportunity to renegotiate its contracts with the court.

For the VOC this was a time of continuing frustration, as it became clear that its role in Amangkurat IV's victory did not give it the profit or predominance it sought. The Javanese had by now a sophisticated understanding of the Company's ways of operating and used that knowledge to good effect. On the western north coast of Java, important to the VOC for its supplies of rice and timber, the Europeans faced the king's Sino-Javanese governor Adipati Jayaningrat (d. 1726) who, with other local lords, cornered the local rice market and thereby manipulated the price to the Company's disadvantage. They also frustrated access to timber reserves, which were by now becoming seriously depleted. In 1724 a dispute arose involving the VOC, Jayaningrat and the court – by now very much in the hands of the *patih* Danurēja (in office 1708–33, d. 1745) – over whether certain coins imported by the VOC were legal tender in Java. The court resolved the matter by decreeing that all such coins were to be accepted, but at a new exchange rate between Dutch currency and the Spanish *real*, the main unit of account in the kingdom. This had the effect of unilaterally devaluing the Company's currency in Java by about 7 per cent and thereby also reducing the royal debt to the VOC by the same figure. The VOC was unable to do anything but accept the new rate under protest.

In March 1726 the king fell ill. Before he could decide which of his relatives and dignitaries to accuse of poisoning him, he died on 20 April. He was succeeded by his son Pakubuwana II (r. 1726–49), whose reign is distinguished from the others described in this chapter by being an even greater catastrophe.

Pakubuwana II was only 16 years old when he became king, and in the early years of his reign he was dominated by his mother Ratu Amangkurat, the *patih* Danurēja, and his elderly and very influential grandmother Ratu Pakubuwana, who was a devout Sufi. It may have been Ratu Pakubuwana's influence which led to early signs that the new king intended to promote greater Islamic piety. Relations with Cakraningrat IV were restored and he was given one of the king's sisters in marriage. Thereafter Cakraningrat IV and his mother-in-law Ratu Amangkurat seem to have had a sympathetic understanding. The VOC was also pleased by Pakubuwana II's promise to pay off the royal debt. The statistical record is incomplete, but it seems that Pakubuwana II kept pace with his burdens under the old treaties and that by 1733 the remaining arrears consisted largely of the debt of 1705–9 which Pakubuwana I had never paid, plus the arrears for 1718–23. Even so, the VOC had not yet been paid for approximately one-third of its costs in putting Pakubuwana I on the throne and maintaining a garrison at the court since then, nor had it received anything at all towards the costs of the wars of

1717–23. It was therefore anxious to have a new contract to regulate the payment of these debts.

Despite the apparently promising beginning of the reign, the court very rapidly became a centre of intrigue, with powerful individuals manoeuvring for wealth and influence. Yet again, relations with the VOC were involved, for it was both the main military guarantee of the dynasty's rule and the main drain on the kingdom's wealth. Danurēja's power grew rapidly. The king's brother Pangeran Arya Mangkunēgara, who had been in rebellion with the other princes but had surrendered in 1723 and been allowed to return to Kartasura, was popular and influential. He and Danurēja hated each other and in 1728 Danurēja engineered a trap for him. He was accused of attempting an affair with one of the wives of the king, who asked the VOC to exile him. The VOC disbelieved the charges but feared that Mangkunēgara would rebel and that many dignitaries would join him. It felt compelled, therefore, to send him into exile, first to Batavia, then to Sri Lanka and finally to the Cape of Good Hope. Many courtiers took the exiling of Mangkunēgara as a sign that the kingdom was in the hands of a capricious king and a dangerous *patih*.

Dutch suspicions of Danurēja were now growing. He was clearly ill-disposed towards the VOC and was suspected of having contacts with the descendants of the hated Surapati who still held out in East Java. Javanese dignitaries were also more and more anxious to be rid of Danurēja's burdensome rule. Cakraningrat IV distrusted both Danurēja and the king, and began again to say that he desired to be a subject of the VOC.

The king's formidable grandmother Ratu Pakubuwana now took steps to free the king of the *patih*'s influence and to make of him a model Sufi monarch. She turned to supernatural steps which invoked both divine intervention and the continuing influence of Sultan Agung, the dynasty's greatest king and its most powerful symbol of Islamic piety. The books which had been written in connection with Sultan Agung's pilgrimage to Tēmbayat in 1633 were now rewritten a century later at the old queen's orders. In 1729–30, *Carita Sultan Iskandar*, *Sērat Yusup* and *Kitab Usulbiyah* were composed anew by the Ratu's scribes. In the opening to *Iskandar* and *Yusup*, Ratu Pakubuwana was described as being especially knowledgeable, influential and blessed by God and she prayed for Pakubuwana II 'that he might long endure as king, sovereign of the world, great in might, in abundance governing his realm; may he be beloved by God and secondly by God's Messenger [the Prophet Muhammad]'. Her *Usulbiyah* was even more explicit about the supernatural forces being deployed by Ratu Pakubuwana in these books. She created this book, it says, because of 'her striving to make perfect the reign of her royal grandson; for her sun, indeed, rests upon the mountain-tops, for she is already old and is nearing perfection'. *Usulbiyah* itself was explicitly equated with the *Qur'an*. It was said to contain God's words and to be able to guarantee invulnerability and victory in Holy War. Recitation of the book was equivalent to going a thousand times on the pilgrimage to Mecca or reciting the *Qur'an* a thousand times; preserving the book meant being guarded by 7700 angels and defended from witchcraft. An infidel who owned it would become a Muslim, an ignorant person who read it would become a learned master of the mystical science of perfection.

One of Ratu Pakubuwana's most noteworthy works was a short text written in 1730

called *Suluk Garwa Kancana* (evidently meaning ‘Song of the House of Gold’). This poem was, it seems, ascribed to Sultan Agung himself and sets out a philosophy of Javanese kingship inspired by Sufi mysticism. The king is admonished to turn away from worldly indulgences and the flatteries of his court. ‘Let that which serves as your citadel be constant struggle, that which serves as your weapon the exalted contemplation [of God]; as your vehicle: steadfast trust in God.’ The king was to go into battle armed with the tools of mysticism: piety, the repetition of divine formulae and the *Qur'an* serving as his weapons. Then he would receive new raiment, with Divine Reality as his crown, the mystical way (*tarekat*) as its crest, and the law (*sarengat*) as his lower garment.

Ratu Pakubuwana and the influential courtiers who supported her represented the most powerful movement for greater Islamisation within the Javanese court since the time of Sultan Agung. They appear to have had much success. Pakubuwana II continued to display a strong commitment to Islamic piety and morality. The principal opponent to the Islamising faction appears to have been the *patih* Danurěja.

In 1732 Pakubuwana II began to turn against his *patih*. The following year he announced that he was taking personal charge of affairs of state and asked the VOC to exile Danurěja, which it gladly did. He then appeased Cakraningrat IV and excused him from appearing personally at court. At last the treaty revision also took place. After lengthy negotiations, the king promised to pay 10,000 *reals* annually for 22 years to cover arrears and interest, 15,600 *reals* annually for the costs of the VOC garrison at Kartasura and 1000 *koyan* (approximately 3.8 million lb/1700 metric tons) of rice annually for 50 years. These rice deliveries were 1.15 times the highest delivery ever made before, and the cash payments were 1.52 times the best previous payment. What is truly extraordinary is that Pakubuwana II appears to have kept up with these payments until his break with the VOC in 1741.

It is difficult to estimate the impact of this level of payments upon Javanese society in general. The absence of reliable information on Java’s population at this time or on the mechanisms by which the burdens were distributed means that one can only deal in rough estimates. But those suggest that the mean burden per agricultural family was not excessive – of the order of a mere 16 kilograms (35 lb) of rice annually or the equivalent of the value of one cow every five years. No doubt for some Javanese the presence of the Company brought welcome commercial opportunities. Nevertheless, it is clear that many Javanese resented the actions of the Company and the interference of the Company’s agents, most of them Chinese, who travelled the countryside in search of agricultural products. Relations between Javanese and Chinese were complex. While some Chinese were clearly alien to Javanese society and experienced Javanese animosity, others had local roots, adopted Islam, took Javanese or Malay names, intermarried and even served in high office within the kingdom. As will be seen below, in the 1740s many Javanese were prepared to ally with the Chinese rebels who fought the VOC, regarding the European Christians as more alien than the Chinese. In 1733, however, the Europeans thought they had at last achieved a stable relationship with the Javanese state. They had little inkling of how the Islamising of the court – of which they had hardly any notion – would come to have an impact upon themselves. They kept their garrison post at Kartasura, but they withdrew the detachment on the raised terrace

in front of the court (*Siti Inggil*), which had commanded the palace itself.

The VOC found that its affairs were caught up in complex Javanese elite intrigues which were obscure to the Europeans. The king's piety was now – after the death of Ratu Pakubuwana – evidently being encouraged by his brother-in-law Pangeran Purbaya and the new *patih* Raden Adipati Natakusuma (in office 1733–42), whom the Dutch described as pious and stupid. In 1735 the Company announced a unilateral revaluation of its main coins by 25 per cent, reversing the unilateral Javanese devaluation of Dutch currency of 1724. VOC servants were paid at the new rate (that is, with 25 per cent less cash) but the Javanese state and its people simply refused to recognise it. So VOC servants suffered a 25 per cent reduction in purchasing power while the Company was powerless to change Javanese policy in this regard. After a year, Pakubuwana II announced that his subjects were free to accept the new valuation, but with various exceptions (notably, the rate at which they had to pay their taxes to their Javanese superiors) which made certain that they would not do so. The VOC blamed Purbaya for much of its troubles in Kartasura and was encouraged in this view by reports from anti-Purbaya aristocrats, who accused him of multiple abuses. The Company also regarded the *patih* Natakusuma as a key leader of anti-VOC conspiracies. In 1737 Pakubuwana II named Purbaya as a second *patih*, alongside Natakusuma.

Pangeran Purbaya's influence over the king came to an end when his sister, Pakubuwana II's wife, died after giving birth to a stillborn son in 1738. The VOC wanted to be rid of him. Without his sister's patronage within the royal chambers, with powerful enemies among the Javanese elite and subject to manifold criticisms from the Europeans, Purbaya was surrendered by the king to the Company, which happily exiled him to Sri Lanka in November 1738. The VOC would also have liked to exile Natakusuma, but had to accept the king's wish to keep him. From this time the king's dislike of the VOC seems to have grown steadily. He was now very much on his own, without his grandmother Ratu Pakubuwana or Purbaya to guide him. It may have been during this period that Pakubuwana II wrote the book of teachings which is ascribed to him, the *Sérat Wulang Pakubuwana II*. This emphasises Islamic mystical doctrines, condemns such practices as opium smoking and urges a life of piety and morality.

As his court split into hostile factions in Kartasura, Pakubuwana II's kingdom began to collapse on its eastern boundaries. By 1738 Cakraningrat IV was refusing to come to court, despite the king's order that he should again do so, and for a time he even refused to send his wife (the king's sister) or his son as his representative. Cakraningrat IV's power in East Java was growing and he was challenging Balinese power in the Eastern Salient; he again insisted that he be relieved of his loyalty to Kartasura and be made a VOC vassal. Ratu Amangkurat apparently supported his cause, but the VOC opposed giving him or his sons control of any more lands on the north-eastern coast. Pakubuwana II faced a deadly dilemma. He sought to become the model Sufi king, leading his people in piety and mysticism, standing close to God. But the phenomenal world he faced was full of problems to which his piety did not offer – or at least had not yet offered – solutions. He was dependent on the VOC and owed it much, but sought to escape blame for the burdens and interference which this dependence brought to his court and subjects. Yet he wished not to offend the *kafir* Company. This dilemma may

go some way towards explaining the inconstancy and vacillation that marked the whole of his reign.

The VOC's headquarters at Batavia was now acquiring the reputation for pestilential mortality which it would retain well into the nineteenth century. Fishponds were being created along Batavia's coastline, which were ideal breeding grounds for the anopheles mosquito. From 1733 onwards this produced deadly malaria epidemics. Between 1733 and 1795 about 85,000 VOC servants died in Batavia from this and related causes. In 1734 a general day of prayer and fasting was declared to urge God to lift this plague from the city. The pleas of Batavia's populace, generally conceded to be a debauched and irreligious rabble, went unanswered. Sickness continued and carried away Governor General Dirk van Cloon (1732–5). The high administration of the VOC was splintered by conflicts and could agree on little except that it was fortunate not to be facing another war in Java, for which it was unprepared. The Council of the Indies was unable to agree on who should succeed van Cloon and resorted to drawing lots. The draw was won by the aged and decrepit Abraham Patras (the only Frenchman to become Governor General). Before the *Heeren XVII* could act on his urgent request to be relieved of the job, he too died in 1737. Meanwhile, the VOC accounts for Bantěn and the coast of Java showed constant heavy losses. Exports were small and market calculations wrong. In 1738, for instance, too much sugar and too little coffee were sent to the Netherlands, and the Governor General and Director-General were ordered to cover the resulting losses out of their own pockets.



*Batavia city hall, built in 1710, now restored in the older area of modern Jakarta*

The mounting crises within the court of Kartasura, the outer districts of the kingdom, the VOC generally, and the city of Batavia coalesced in 1740. The catalyst was provided by the presence of large numbers of Chinese at Batavia. Chinese had been present in Indonesia as traders for centuries and since 1619 they had been an important part of Batavia's economy. They were active there as traders, skilled artisans, sugar millers and shopkeepers. By 1740 there were 2500 Chinese houses within Batavia's walls and the total Chinese population of the city and its surroundings was probably no less than 15,000. This would have been at least 17 per cent of the total population at this

point. It is possible that in fact the Chinese were an even larger element of the population, for in a census of 1778 approximately 26 per cent of the population of the city's environs (outside the walls) was Chinese, and in the British period (1811–16) approximately 24 per cent of the population within the city and its immediate suburbs was Chinese. In 1740 there were also Chinese in the Javanese ports and at Kartasura, although their numbers seem to have been small.



*Old houses in the former Chinese quarter of Batavia, now a part of the modern capital city of Jakarta*

The **Heeren XVII** in Amsterdam admired the industry of the Chinese, but the local population of Batavia disliked and distrusted them. Other developments contributed to the Europeans' sense of insecurity in Batavia. In December 1721 the VOC discovered what it thought to be an Islamic plot to massacre the Europeans in Batavia, with support from Bantěn, Cirébon, Bali, Balambangan and Kartasura. The ringleader was supposed to be a wealthy Batavian mestizo named Pieter Erbervelt. Forty-nine people, including three women, were brutally executed. From 1722 the treatment of Chinese in Batavia was also typified by excessive brutality and corruption. Despite this, their numbers were growing rapidly. The VOC imposed a quota system to cut down immigration but Chinese ship captains were able to evade it, often with the help of corrupt VOC officials. Many of the Chinese who arrived could find no employment and large numbers joined criminal gangs around Batavia.

In October 1740 mutual suspicions led to violence. The VOC concluded that the Chinese were plotting a rebellion, for which there was some evidence. The Chinese believed that the VOC was going to ship excess Chinese out of Batavia and throw them into the sea as soon as they were over the horizon. On 7 October Chinese bands outside the city attacked, killing several Europeans. The VOC feared that Chinese inside the city would join the attackers, so a curfew was imposed and a search of Chinese houses for weapons was ordered. Precisely what happened next is unclear, and was later hotly debated. But it seems that Governor General Adriaan Valckenier (1737–41) hinted that a massacre of the Chinese would not be unwelcome. The search of Chinese houses soon got out of hand, shots were fired and on 9 October a general massacre of the Chinese began. Europeans and slaves did most of the killing and in the end something like

10,000 Chinese were killed. The Chinese quarter burned for several days and the looting was only stopped by paying a premium to VOC troops to return to duty. This slaughter had important repercussions within the VOC, as will be seen below. It also had great significance in Java, for it was the beginning of the last series of wars of the eighteenth century.

The fighting which now began in Java was to last, almost without interruption, for 17 years. The Chinese who escaped the slaughter in Batavia headed eastwards along the coast and joined compatriots who had already begun hostilities there. They overran the VOC post at Juwana in May 1741. The VOC's coastal headquarters at Sěmarang was besieged and other posts threatened. The post at Děmak was withdrawn in May 1741. An attempt was made in June to withdraw the VOC post at Rěmbang, but it was completely cut off and in July the VOC personnel there were massacred. The Dutch at Sěmarang were deeply divided among themselves and short of men and military supplies. They told Batavia that they had little chance of holding out, but in the end they proved able to do so.

Pakubuwana II was now faced with the most difficult decision of his reign. According to a Javanese source, his court split into two main groups. One group, which was led by the *patih* Natakusuma, favoured joining the Chinese against the VOC. The other, led by powerful coastal lords, reasoned that the VOC was bound to win in the end; the king should therefore wait until the VOC's situation was more desperate and then come to its aid at the price of a complete revision of VOC–Javanese relations, getting rid of payments, garrisons and so on. This coastal view was, with hindsight, probably a correct estimation of how to grasp a golden opportunity. Typically, Pakubuwana II made the wrong choice and decided to break with the VOC. He sent an army and artillery to Sěmarang ostensibly to relieve the VOC, but in fact his forces joined the besieging Chinese. By November 1741, the VOC post at Sěmarang was surrounded by an estimated 20,000 Javanese and 3500 Chinese with 30 cannon. Cakraningrat IV was now convinced that Pakubuwana II was heading for disaster and that alliance with the VOC was more essential than ever.

The VOC already suspected that Pakubuwana II was close to a final break. In July 1741 any lingering doubts were removed when the king's forces in Kartasura attacked the VOC garrison post there. In the initial assault the VOC commandant, Johannes van Velsen, and others were wounded and about 35 Europeans were killed. The Javanese were repelled and proceeded to besiege the Company's fortress for three weeks. They told the Europeans that if they would convert to Islam they would be spared, but initially there were no takers. When the garrison finally surrendered in August, they were given the choice of conversion by circumcision or death, and almost all chose the former. Several European officers were obliged to undertake Islamic religious instruction. Van Velsen was killed and the VOC fortress in Kartasura was demolished. Pakubuwana II had unequivocally declared himself the enemy of the Europeans, the conquering mystic king of Holy War.

In these desperate circumstances, the VOC turned to the only significant military force which was offering itself as an ally: Cakraningrat IV and his Madurese. Cakraningrat IV said that he would come to the VOC's aid if it was agreed that he should become free of Kartasura and rule independently under VOC protection, and

have a free hand in East Java. In June–July 1741 the VOC formally accepted his offer of aid, but postponed any commitment concerning East Java. Cakraningrat IV, however, proceeded to conquer much of it. Reinforcements were meanwhile reaching Sěmarang, which by November had over 3400 VOC troops in the fortress. The VOC now went over to the offensive. It drove the attackers from Sěmarang and massacred all Chinese in the area. In late 1741 and early 1742 the VOC retook other threatened areas, while Cakraningrat IV continued his sweep through East Java.

Pakubuwana II now saw what a terrible mistake he had made. His Chinese allies were losing the war, many of his dignitaries were unenthusiastic about his policies, and the eastern part of his kingdom was rapidly falling to Cakraningrat IV. He and his mother Ratu Amangkurat now contacted the VOC and begged forgiveness. The VOC was, of course, deeply suspicious, but felt that it had little option but to respond favourably. A small Dutch force of seven soldiers under Captain Johan Andries Baron van Hohendorff undertook the dangerous trip to the court in March 1742 and began negotiations. In mid-June 1742 the king sent his *patih* Natakusuma to Sěmarang; the VOC arrested him there with the king's approval and sent him into exile. The last major figure in the court who was associated with pious Islamic models of kingship was thereby removed.

The king had now detached himself from the anti-VOC war. But this war had very deep roots. The Javanese who had already joined with the Chinese in their thousands were not only motivated by hatred of the VOC, but by suspicions of the monarchy as well. These suspicions were now confirmed by the renewed, if shaky, friendship between Pakubuwana II and the Dutch. As the rebellion gathered force, the rebels named a new Susuhunan early in 1742, a 12-year-old grandson of the exiled Amangkurat III named Raden Mas Garéndi (Sunan Kuning). The war was now as much anti-Pakubuwana II as anti-VOC, and the main forces were now more Javanese than Chinese. Several major princes were with the rebels.

At the end of June 1742 the rebellion reached its peak with the conquest of Kartasura itself. The rebels plundered the court and many of its treasures were never seen again. Pakubuwana II and van Hohendorff fled Kartasura, making their way eastwards towards Panaraga. After six weeks van Hohendorff set off for the coast, leaving Pakubuwana II in the care of the few lords whose loyalty he still commanded.

The miserable king could hardly escape the conclusion that his role as the pious Sufi monarch had led to no success, and indeed was at least partly the cause of the loss of his kingdom. Those many subjects to whom he had presented himself as their leader in Holy War against the *kafir* Company now saw him again as the ally of the VOC, just as he and most of his predecessors had been for the previous seven decades. As he sought solace in mystical exercises, it seems that he moved away from the pious Sufism of Ratu Pakubuwana and was rather more inclined to indigenous pre-Islamic supernatural forces. In particular, stories were told of him communing with the spirit of Mount Lawu, named Sunan Lawu, who promised him supernatural aid to reclaim his kingdom. Other stories tell of the wretched king finding spiritual support at the famous *pěsantron* (Islamic religious school) of Těgalsari, but there are grounds for thinking this to be a later tale. In the last years of Pakubuwana II's reign, there is no evidence of the Islamising thrust of the earlier years.

Pakubuwana II addressed a desperate plea to the VOC. If he could be restored to his throne, he would repay the Dutch by giving them the coast and letting them choose the **patih**. The VOC decided to accept this offer. The rebellion rolled on, however, and the VOC found that while it could hold a stalemate on the coast it could not attack the rebel armies in the interior. Pakubuwana II had no troops of his own, so the only offensive force was that of Cakraningrat IV.

In November 1742 Cakraningrat IV's forces conquered Kartasura and expelled the rebels. Whatever remained in the court was now subjected to the second plundering within five months. For nearly seven decades Madurese lords beginning with Trunajaya had been intervening in Java and for the second time the great prize, the court itself, had fallen to one of them. Cakraningrat IV told the VOC that Pakubuwana II should be killed as an example to disloyal rulers. But the VOC decided that stability was still to be sought in alliance with a malleable king of the Mataram dynasty, and no king could be more malleable than Pakubuwana II in 1742. To avoid a breach with the VOC, Cakraningrat IV was therefore obliged to hand the battered court back to Pakubuwana II. The VOC was now beginning to worry about the ambitions of its Madurese ally.

The rebellion now began to collapse. In October 1743 Garéndi surrendered, followed by many others. By the end of 1743 the main rebels remaining were the king's brothers Pangeran Singasari and Pangeran Mangkubumi (later Sultan Haméngkubuwana I, r. 1749–92), and his nephew Mas Said (later Pangeran Adipati Mangkunégara I, r. 1757–95). Mangkubumi, the king's most influential brother, had a complicated relationship with Pakubuwana II, a mix of rebellion and submission which mystified the VOC.

The VOC relationship was reconstructed in a treaty of November 1743, by which Pakubuwana II was formally restored to his throne. This restoration can safely be called the sole success of his reign. In addition to other commitments, the king ceded to the VOC full sovereignty over West Madura, Surabaya, Rěmbang, Jěpara and the Eastern Salient (where his claims were, in any case, empty pretensions), and a part of the incomes of all the other ports. The VOC was further given an option to take a narrow strip along the entire coast and along all rivers flowing into the Java Sea, if it desired. The king was also to turn over 5000 *koyan* (approximately 18 million lb/8600 metric tons) of rice annually for ever, as well as other crops. The **patih** could be chosen only with VOC approval and there was to be a VOC garrison at court. Javanese were to sail nowhere outside Java, Madura and Bali.

Once again it looked as if the VOC was 'the master of Java', or so Batavia assured the **Heeren XVII** in 1745. Yet again, this proved untrue. Nor was the VOC entirely the master of itself. The bitterest of all the VOC's internal feuds involved the Chinese massacre of 1740. Gustaaf Willem Baron van Imhoff had been picked by the **Heeren XVII** to restore the VOC's fortunes, and since his arrival in Batavia in 1740 he had led the party opposed to Governor General Valckenier. What roles these two men actually played in the Chinese massacre is not entirely clear, but van Imhoff blamed Valckenier for the whole affair. In December 1740 Valckenier arrested van Imhoff and sent him to the Netherlands under military arrest. Ignorant of these events, the **Heeren XVII** had meanwhile named van Imhoff Governor General (1743–50) and when he arrived in the Netherlands they promptly sent him back to Batavia. When the appointment of van

Imhoff was learned of in Batavia late in 1741, Valckenier retired and sailed for home. In May 1743 van Imhoff's ship reached Batavia and he immediately took over from the interim Governor General Johannes Thedens (1741–3). An order had already been sent to the Cape of Good Hope to arrest Valckenier when he called there. He was brought back to Batavia in November 1742 and was jailed in the fortress, where he remained until his death. He was accused of every conceivable offence and sentenced to death after a trial which was rigged by van Imhoff. He avoided decapitation by appealing. His friends in the Netherlands also brought a suit on his behalf which was not settled until 1760, after both protagonists had died, van Imhoff in 1750 and Valckenier in 1751. Valckenier's son won the suit.

While this bitter episode was being played out in Batavia, yet more war was breaking out in Java. Cakraningrat IV believed that he had won a right to much of East Java. The VOC, however, denied his 'exorbitant pretensions'. The VOC had concluded, quite wisely, that a Madurese domain in East Java was unlikely to bring much tranquillity. Cakraningrat IV therefore forged links with the family that governed Surabaya and with the descendants of Surapati brought in Balinese troops, and stopped the payments of rice and port duties from East Java to the VOC. In July 1744 the VOC attempted negotiations with him, to no avail. In February 1745 they declared that he was deposed and to be treated as a rebel. Cakraningrat IV went to war and conquered East Madura. Fighting now took place throughout Madura and along the coast of Java from Pasuruan to Rēmbang. A VOC force in Madura found itself surrounded for six months, but as 1745 passed, VOC victories began to accumulate. Finally Cakraningrat IV saw that his cause was lost and at the end of the year he fled to Banjarmasin in Kalimantan. There he took refuge on an English ship, where he was robbed. The Sultan then betrayed him to the VOC, which took him to Batavia and thence exiled him to the Cape of Good Hope in 1746. His son succeeded him as the VOC's vassal in West Madura.

Madurese intervention in Java was at an end and Pakubuwana II was back on his throne. But, as will be seen in the following chapter, there was still no peace in Java.

## **Chapter 10**

---

# **Java and the VOC, c.1745–92**

The military advance which has been discussed since [Chapter 6](#) had won no stability and little profit for the VOC. In Java, it had been attended by a series of brutal wars and permanent instability. In the second half of the eighteenth century the pace of the VOC's advance would halt, and this first Dutch attempt at empire would end in partial withdrawal. The VOC was to restrict its activities largely to west and north coastal Java and Maluku, and a partial restoration of the Javanese state would become possible. But the Javanese elite would still have to face the problem which had given rise to so much turbulence and bloodshed: their own disunity. Their solution was to be the partition of the kingdom. But before all this could take place, there were still more battles to be fought.

Pakubuwana II decided to abandon the battered court of Kartasura. Some seven miles (12 km) to the east, on the Sala river, he built the new court of Surakarta, which is still occupied by his descendants. This was virtually completed in 1745, and the formal move took place in February 1746. VOC administrations were meanwhile being set up in Surabaya, Rěmbang and Jěpara, and of course Sěmarang remained in VOC hands.

The new court was as unstable as the old. Mas Said, Pangeran Singasari and at least four other princes were still in rebellion. To subdue the rebels, the king announced that whoever could drive them from Sokawati, a district to the north-east of the court, would be paid with an appanage of 3000 households. The fiery Pangeran Mangkubumi accepted the challenge. In 1746 he defeated Mas Said and claimed his reward. But then his archenemy at court, the *patih* (1742–55) Pringgalaya, persuaded Pakubuwana II to withhold the appanage. Into this delicate situation came the indelicate Governor General van Imhoff. This was the first time a serving Governor General had ever appeared at court; van Imhoff had no experience to enable him to understand Javanese kingship or to guide him through the treacherous maze of court intrigue. His visit precipitated an eleven-year war.

Van Imhoff's main concern was to deal with the problem of the coast. Under the 1743 treaty the VOC had an option for a narrow strip along the entire coast and all rivers that led into the sea. But what van Imhoff wanted was the complete cession of all the coastal ports not already ceded, with their inland dependencies. To him, this was a potential source of profit. To the king he presented it as a solution to the inability of the Mataram court to govern the coast, which had been amply demonstrated for a century. The inconstant Pakubuwana II hardly knew how to react. But van Imhoff pressed, so

the king gave in. The coast was leased to the VOC in return for an annual rent of 20,000 *reals*.

When Pakubuwana II informed his closest advisers of the leasing of the coast, Pangeran Mangkubumi objected. The sum of 20,000 *reals* was too little, he said. (It may be noted here that in 1744 coastal *syahbandar*-ships were farmed for a total of 94,176 *reals* per year; all of this and much other income would now fall to the VOC.) More fundamentally, Mangkubumi saw that under VOC pressure the king had offended a basic principle of Javanese kingship. He had taken a major decision, indeed he had signed away one of the richest parts of his kingdom, without consulting his dignitaries. In such an environment, powerful dignitaries like Mangkubumi naturally doubted whether their self-interest would be served by further loyalty. What the future of the kingdom might be without the coast was also a source of worry. Mangkubumi's alienation was complete when van Imhoff intervened in the dispute concerning the 3000 households. The Governor General persuaded the king that this would give Mangkubumi too much power and that the reward should be withheld. Before a court gathering, van Imhoff then personally reprimanded Mangkubumi for being too ambitious.

Mangkubumi had had enough. In May 1746 he went into rebellion, and the Third Javanese War of Succession (1746–57) began. Mangkubumi now joined with Mas Said and these two rapidly attracted a large following. By 1747 Mangkubumi commanded an army estimated at 13,000 men, including 2500 cavalry. The VOC's army was in a poor state by this time, and although yet again it could maintain a stalemate in its coastal areas, it could not defeat the rebels farther inland. In 1748 Mangkubumi and Mas Said attacked Surakarta and for a time threatened the court itself.

In the midst of this threat, Pakubuwana II fell ill late in 1749. The VOC Governor of the North-east Coast, Baron van Hohendorff (1748–54), therefore went to Surakarta to oversee the succession. He was the man who had engineered Pakubuwana II's reconciliation with the VOC in 1742 and had remained at the court as VOC commandant until 1748. When he now returned to Surakarta, Pakubuwana II seized upon him as a source of salvation for the kingdom. He proposed that van Hohendorff himself should take charge of the state. Although initially taken aback, van Hohendorff soon agreed with the proposal. A contract was drawn up and signed on 11 December 1749 by which sovereignty over the entire kingdom was ceded to the VOC. Nine days later the king died. The treaty he had signed was not, however, the landmark that it may seem, nor was it the final step in the VOC conquest of Java. Like so many treaties before, it was only a piece of paper. In 1749 the VOC was in the midst of the last major Javanese war of the eighteenth century and no document could win that war. In fact, until the early nineteenth century this treaty was a dead letter. The VOC did not again refer to it, and by the time the fighting ended the Dutch had neither the means nor the will to exercise sovereignty in the interior of Central Java.

On 15 December 1749 van Hohendorff announced the succession of the crown prince as Susuhunan Pakubuwana III (r. 1749–88), but even before this could be done Mangkubumi had been declared king by his followers. In his rebel headquarters at Yogyakarta in Mataram, on 12 December 1749 Mangkubumi also took the title Susuhunan Pakubuwana. Thus began the long reign (1749–92) of the most able ruler from the

Mataram royal family since Sultan Agung. In 1755 he became the first ruler since Agung to take the title sultan, and he then adopted the name Hamēngkubuwana (I), which all of his successors have used. Thus, from the end of 1749 Java was again divided between a rebel king and a monarch supported by the VOC. The difference this time was that the rebel was so strong, and the VOC was growing so much weaker financially and militarily, that the rebel could not be destroyed.

As the 1750s passed, the rebellion grew in strength. In 1750 Mas Said, now Mangkubumi's *patih*, again attacked Surakarta and inflicted heavy losses on the VOC. Pakubuwana III was being deserted by more and more dignitaries: in 1753 even the crown prince of Surakarta joined the rebels. But there was no final victory for either side and both began to conclude that such a victory was not likely. The VOC could defend Pakubuwana III but could not subdue his kingdom for him. The rebels could win victories but could not eliminate the king in Surakarta. By 1752 a split was also developing between Mangkubumi and Mas Said and Mangkubumi may have feared losing his dominance over the rebel armies. The VOC decided to attempt to negotiate a settlement, in order to extricate itself from the wars in Java which were bankrupting it. By 1754 Mangkubumi was also ready to attempt negotiations.

In 1754 the new Governor of the North-east Coast, Nicolaas Hartingh (1754–61), was authorised to placate Mangkubumi by offering him a part of Java. Through a Turkish intermediary named Seh Ibrahim contact was made and indirect negotiations began in April 1754. By September they had progressed sufficiently for a personal meeting to take place between Hartingh and Mangkubumi. Mangkubumi was by this time desirous of VOC military support against Mas Said. Although there were substantial initial differences between him and the VOC, the negotiations ended in a settlement on Mangkubumi's terms. He was to receive one-half of the kingdom, with his capital in Mataram; he seemed reluctant to recognise VOC rule on the coast, but in the end accepted it as the price of an alliance, and he would also receive half of the 20,000 *reals* paid annually for its lease. The VOC and he were to be allied against Mas Said. Batavia was not entirely happy with these arrangements, but felt obliged to ratify them. Pakubuwana III had not been consulted about this dismemberment of his kingdom, but he too had no choice but to agree.

On 13 February 1755 the Treaty of Guyanti was signed and the VOC recognised Mangkubumi as Sultan Hamēngkubuwana I, the ruler of half of Central Java. This formalised the defeat of VOC policy in Java. Since their first military intervention nearly eighty years before, the Dutch had sought stability by maintaining a king on the throne of Mataram who would rule all of Java in their interest. They had found that instead of enjoying the profits of stability, they were constantly fighting wars on behalf of the kings whom they supported, at a crippling cost to themselves. In 1743–6 they had taken the first step away from this policy by deciding that direct VOC rule over the coast was preferable to rule by the court. Now they also admitted that they could not maintain the unity of the kingdom under a single malleable monarch. Instead, they had to recognise the most powerful rebel they had ever faced as ruler over half of it. This defeat of one policy, however, soon gave rise to another which had somewhat more promise of success. The VOC soon learned that the partition of the kingdom made possible a policy of divide and rule. By the second half of the eighteenth century,

however, the VOC was in such an advanced state of incompetence, corruption and financial difficulty that this possibility was only rarely used to success. Hamēngkubuwana I was therefore in a more advantageous position than any monarch for many generations, and he made good use of his opportunities.

In 1755 Hamēngkubuwana I moved to Yogyakarta. In 1756 he built a court there and renamed the town Yogyakarta. But the new Sultan faced formidable obstacles. There was still another king, Pakubuwana III, in Surakarta. The problems posed by the presence of two kings for Javanese theories of legitimacy, which were posited upon the rule of a single king who had supernatural sanctions, were not to be solved for several decades. Hamēngkubuwana I may have thought that Pakubuwana III would not last long, for in 1755 he had hardly any supporters left at court. But after the Giyanti settlement, many dignitaries who had previously fled returned to Surakarta. For the first time Pakubuwana III became a serious contender for elite support, which gave the partition between the two courts the beginnings of an air of permanence.

But the war was not yet at an end. The main contender had now become a sultan, but many other rebels were still at large. Mas Said was the most important and his army was still formidable, although desertions were increasing. In October 1755 he defeated a VOC force and in February 1756 he nearly burned the new court at Yogyakarta. The forces of Surakarta, Yogyakarta and the VOC were unable to capture Mas Said, but he was also clearly unable to conquer Java against such a combination of enemies. He therefore began negotiations in 1756. In February 1757 he submitted to Pakubuwana III and in March at Salatiga he formally swore allegiance to Surakarta, Yogyakarta and the VOC. In return he received an appanage of 4000 households from Pakubuwana III, but nothing from Hamēngkubuwana I. Mas Said now became Pangeran Adipati Mangkunēgara I (r. 1757–95); he had his own princely domain under Surakarta, but the status of this domain and whether his descendants would succeed to it were not yet clear. Hamēngkubuwana I had wanted to destroy Mangkunēgara, not appease him, and was scornful of the settlement. The continuing animosity between them remained a major theme of Javanese history for many years.

After 1757 the main warfare was over. There was no major war in Java from 1757 to 1825, the longest period of peace since at least the early sixteenth century. The rebels who still remained, or those who attempted new rebellions in coming years, had relatively small followings. They were either defeated and killed or took refuge in inaccessible areas, especially in Malang, where Surapati's descendants still ruled. As peace returned, Javanese agriculture began to flourish again. Dignitaries now enjoyed a more settled life and more regular incomes, and it seems that the idea generally took hold that Java need not always be at war. A determination began to grow among the elite that the peace should be preserved. Although the partition of the kingdom was not yet accepted as a permanent arrangement, warfare ceased to be an acceptable means of overturning it. With great relief the VOC now paid off most of its Indonesian troops and settled down to administer the coast; at last it could withdraw its armies from the interior of Java (except for token garrisons at the courts), as it had wanted to do since 1680.



*Inside the kraton of Yogyakarta, established by Sultan Hamēngkubuwana I in 1755–6*

Having abandoned warfare as a means to reunite the kingdom, Sultan Hamēngkubuwana I, Pangeran Mangkunēgara I and Susuhunan Pakubuwana III now engaged in a complex game of marriage diplomacy. The prize to be won was the succession in Surakarta, for Pakubuwana III had no sons. A marriage to one of his daughters could therefore legitimise succession in Surakarta by either Hamēngkubuwana I's or Mangkunēgara I's line. Mangkunēgara had already married Hamēngkubuwana I's eldest daughter in the period when they were allies, and although the Sultan had sons, this marriage might be of use in Yogyakarta as well. There followed several years of complicated manoeuvrings, with marriages proposed and refused, and minor outbreaks of violence. This was all complicated by the fact that Pakubuwana III had none of the strength of will or political skill of Hamēngkubuwana I, so that the Surakarta court remained a spider's web of intrigue throughout his reign.

In 1762 Mangkunēgara I's eldest son was married to Pakubuwana III's eldest daughter, which appeared to place him in a powerful position with regard to the succession. But Mangkunēgara I's potential claim through marriage in Yogyakarta as well came to an end in 1763, when his wife Ratu Bēndara (Hamēngkubuwana I's daughter) left him and returned to Yogyakarta. For a time it seemed as if full-scale war would break out, but in the end Ratu Bēndara divorced Mangkunēgara I. He remained bitter about this to the end of his life, believing that Hamēngkubuwana I had forced his daughter to divorce him against her will. But he did not go to war. At the end of August 1768 the whole game of marriage diplomacy collapsed when Pakubuwana III finally had a son, who lived to rule as Pakubuwana IV. Now that there were heirs in both courts, another step had been taken towards a permanent partition.

There were still rebels who had not yet accepted the authority of Hamēngkubuwana I, Pakubuwana III or Mangkunēgara I. These included a few who posed a potential threat of some significance, but as the 1760s passed they were eliminated. In 1762 Raden Mas Guntur, a great-grandson of Amangkurat III and son-in-law of Mangkunēgara I, was killed after attempting rebellion. Thus ended the attempts by the line of Amangkurat III, which had been bypassed by the installation of Pakubuwana I, to regain power in Java. These attempts had included several lesser episodes as well as

those of Raden Mas Garéndi in the Chinese War and Raden Mas Guntur. The Amangkurat III line had represented an alternative, and perhaps more legitimate, branch of the dynasty since 1708, but was now finished. In 1763–5 a rebel named Abdul Kadir and his two sons won considerable success in the areas to the west of Sěmarang, perhaps with clandestine support from Haměngkubuwana I. But the sons were killed by Pakubuwana III's troops; Abdul Kadir himself disappeared and perhaps died in 1764.

Finally attention shifted to Pangeran Singasari, Haměngkubuwana I's brother and Pakubuwana III's uncle. He was at Malang with Surapati's descendants. Attempts had been made by both Surakarta and Yogyakarta to cajole him into submission, but to no avail. Then the VOC decided to wipe out resistance in the Eastern Salient, which it had acquired in the 1743 treaty. With both the Dutch and the Javanese ignorant of precise longitudes in East Java, it was wrongly believed that Malang was on the VOC's side of the line established in 1743. In 1767 and 1768 the VOC sent a series of expeditions into these eastern areas, at a time when the Balinese were distracted by civil war. In July 1768 Pangeran Singasari was captured. Haměngkubuwana I and Pakubuwana III both asked that he be exiled from Java, but he died in imprisonment in Surabaya before this could be done. Surapati's descendants were defeated, and the last of his line was finally captured in 1771. Although by this time the VOC had discovered that Malang was not on its side of the 1743 line, both Javanese rulers were quite willing to let the VOC have it.

The whole area of Malang and the Eastern Salient was nearly devoid of population after so many years of turmoil. As their vassal rulers in the Eastern Salient the VOC recognised two Balambangan princes who abandoned Hinduism and embraced Islam. The VOC hoped thereby to detach them from the Balinese. But in 1771–2 a further war was necessary against Balinese and local resistance. Thereafter the VOC was less insistent upon Islamisation, but Hinduism was nevertheless rapidly losing ground in the Eastern Salient. It is one of the curiosities of VOC history that in the Eastern Salient, where it faced the threat of Hindu-Balinese intervention, the VOC encouraged the spread of Islam, which elsewhere in Indonesia it greatly feared.

By the late 1760s the political situation in Central Java had acquired a fairly stable form. Alternatives to the partition of the kingdom had been progressively eliminated. The VOC, too, had settled into its new role as sovereign of the coast. Its interference in court affairs had now lost most of its military sanction. Haměngkubuwana I even prevented the VOC from constructing a defensible fortress in Yogyakarta until very nearly the end of his reign. Nonetheless, behind the growing durability of the partition of the kingdom lay the potential power of the VOC. Anyone who went to war could assume that he would find the VOC among his enemies, a prospect that was far from attractive. Pakubuwana III was far too timid to offend the VOC and was easily influenced by it (indeed, he was easily influenced by almost anyone). Haměngkubuwana I knew well that the VOC could be a dangerous enemy, although he knew equally well that it was far from invincible and could be manipulated. He managed to keep the VOC out of court affairs, and generally had his own way. Among the three principals of Javanese history in this period, only Mangkuněgara I seems to have been contemptuous of the VOC, but he never had an opportunity or perhaps sufficient recklessness to express his contempt in battle.

In the early 1770s, the partition of Java acquired still greater permanence and the need for the VOC as a mediator between the courts was further reduced. Disputed boundaries arising from the 1755 division had caused much argument and some violence. In 1773–4 a new census and an agreed division of territories between Surakarta and Yogyakarta were achieved and procedures for settling further disputes were established. New law codes were also jointly agreed, ending the complex jurisdictional problems which the partition had created and formally regulating relations between the subjects of the two courts. The *Anggér-Agēng* ('Great Law Code') and *Anggér-Arubiru* ('Law on Disturbing the Peace') were agreed in 1771 and 1773 respectively, and regularly renewed thereafter by the two *patihs*. The system of partition was thus becoming more regularised and stable, because the Javanese principals agreed to make it so. As this happened, the roots of many conflicts between Surakarta and Yogyakarta were removed and with them the need for VOC mediation.

Although the partition was becoming more regularised, it was not yet seen to be legitimate. In the essentially fragile kingdoms of Java, a sense of legitimacy, with its supernatural sanctions, was one of the prime pillars of kingship. This was particularly true after the mid-eighteenth century, for the military function of kingship was rapidly losing its relevance. The Javanese high and low had had enough of inconclusive civil war. It was therefore essential that legitimacy be sought, especially by Hamēngkubuwana I, for his new court of Yogyakarta clearly stood outside the line of courts which led to Surakarta and lent it a form of legitimacy.

Javanese historical traditions now both presented a crisis of legitimacy and offered a solution to it. Court chronicles depicted the rise and fall of courts in a rigid cycle of centuries. According to several of these texts, Majapahit fell in Š 1400 (AD 1478), Děmak was founded in Š 1403 (AD 1481) and ended in Š 1500 (AD 1578) and Pajang was founded in Š 1503 (AD 1581). Pajang and Mataram were regarded as a single stage in this cycle, so that the next event was the fall of Plered in AJ 1600 (AD 1677), followed by the foundation of Kartasura in AJ 1603 (AD 1680). The fall of Plered and the foundation of Kartasura actually took place in these years. These events may therefore have been the model for the entire theory, but there is evidence to suggest that the theory in fact predated these events and, therefore, presumably influenced their occurrence. In the eighteenth century, as the partition of the kingdom increasingly gained an air of permanence, the end of the century approached again: AJ 1700 began in March 1774. It may have been apprehension about the approach of this year, when a court was expected to fall, which moved both Surakarta and Yogyakarta to conclude the land settlements and legal codes of 1771–4, by which the stability of both courts was enhanced.

At the beginning of AJ 1700 (March 1774) the crown prince of Yogyakarta, later Sultan Hamēngkubuwana II, wrote a remarkable book entitled *Sērat Surya Raja* ('The book of the Sun of Kings'). This enormous work became one of the holy regalia of the Sultanate. It prophesied the resolution of Yogyakarta's problems in a thinly disguised allegorical form. Fictitious kingdoms and characters represented the main actors in Yogyakarta's future. According to the *Surya Raja* scenario, the divided kingdom would be reunited and the Dutch converted to Islam after a series of horrific wars in which the Goddess of the Southern Ocean and eventually God would come to the aid of the hero,

who evidently represented none other than the crown prince himself. Whether, or how, this was to come about in the real world is unclear. But it would appear that *Surya Raja* was an attempt to surmount the crisis of AJ 1700. Sultan Hamēngkubuwana I apparently contemplated abdicating in favour of his son at this point, so as to produce a new ruler, if not a new court, for the new century. Yet this attempt at a literary solution to the crisis seems not to have been sufficient. The difficulties of translating it into real events may have seemed insoluble – at least, in the face of VOC reluctance to recognise the crown prince's right of succession, Hamēngkubuwana I did not abdicate. But the historical theory remained to be faced. Now, however, the political environment was such that no major force existed which dared to initiate full-scale war and thereby make a court fall in accordance with the theory.

In AJ 1703 (AD 1777), when a new court should have been founded, another book was written by a son-in-law of the Sultan. This was a chronicle called *Babad Kraton* ('Chronicle of the courts'). Unlike *Surya Raja*, it looked backwards rather than forwards. It presented a view of the past which made Yogyakarta seem to be that which it was not: the direct successor to Kartasura. It took two tries to select the correct point at which to end the chronicle, but finally it was concluded with the fall of Kartasura (1742). The implication appears to have been that Kartasura, the last court to have been founded in accordance with the historical theory, could be regarded as equivalent to the court which should have fallen in AJ 1700 (AD 1774) (the point at which, according to the theory, Kartasura should indeed have fallen). Yogyakarta could therefore be regarded as its legitimate successor of AJ 1703 (AD 1777). The elite of Yogyakarta were thus taking refuge in a contrived picture of the past in an effort to avoid the hard, and potentially bloody, implications of the turn of the Javanese century.

A kind of legitimacy had been found, and with its discovery the partition of the kingdom can be said to have achieved permanence. But this legitimacy was founded on a fiction. Each king was legitimate to his supporters, each was the protégé of the Goddess of the Southern Ocean, each set of regalia was the true set, but only if the existence of the other court was ignored. The legal agreements and land settlement of 1771–4 made it possible for the two kings to ignore one another, for conflicts between the two courts diminished and any new disagreements were to be settled by the *patihs*. The rulers took refuge in the fiction that the other did not exist, and were thereby spared the necessity of going to war to reunify the kingdom. Yet there were two courts and an inherent dislike of the partition never entirely disappeared. By the 1770s, however, the system was so regularised, and so many dignitaries were committed to it for their own benefit, that it was never to be overturned. The legitimacy which each could claim in the new Javanese century was based upon a fiction, but it was sufficient for the senior dignitaries, who had by now concluded that there was no real alternative to partition.

The permanent division of Central Java between two courts was thus at last accomplished. Both Hamēngkubuwana I and Pakubuwana III could proceed without fear of challenge from each other. Problems persisted, but now they were predominately internal to each ruler's domain. Only the continuing animosity between Hamēngkubuwana I and Mangkunēgara I caused tensions which crossed the borders of Yogyakarta and Surakarta. But Mangkunēgara I's position, too, was changing. He seems to have abandoned any serious designs upon the throne of either court, and

instead concentrated on an attempt to make his princely domain permanent. Although the status of his holdings was still not clarified, the institution of a permanent, inheritable, but subsidiary principality in Surakarta was beginning to take form.

As the years passed, the older generation which had engineered the permanent partition of the kingdom began to be challenged by rising younger men. In Yogyakarta the crown prince (b. c.1749–50) won ever greater authority, occasionally in the face of his father's displeasure. His later reign as Sultan Hamēngkubuwana II (see [Chapter 11](#)) was hardly successful, but as his power first began to grow in the 1770s and 1780s he appeared to be a man of considerable talent. He recognised the VOC's military weakness and, as his influence grew at court, the VOC was taken less and less seriously. Much of the later tragedy of his reign as sultan resulted from his failure to recognise the sudden change in European power which occurred in the early nineteenth century. It was the crown prince's influence which led to the sudden construction of massive European-style fortifications around the court in 1785, and the Sultan may have formally turned over much of his authority to his son at this point.

Hamēngkubuwana I himself was also growing less concerned about maintaining friendly relations with the Dutch. The main aim of his alliance with the VOC, the destruction of Mangkunēgara I, had never been achieved. After 1757 the VOC refused requests from the Sultan to exile Mangkunēgara I on several occasions. The Sultanate was meanwhile growing progressively more powerful, prosperous, and stable, and was clearly the predominant military power in Central Java. Hamēngkubuwana I maintained his alliance with the VOC, but he revealed his growing dissatisfaction with it on several occasions. For instance, from 1777 to the end of his reign he refused to send missions of felicitation to new Governors General because he would not accept a VOC change of protocol which he found demeaning. Pakubuwana III, by contrast, accepted the new arrangements.

In Surakarta, internal problems continued to grow. Pakubuwana III's general incompetence, court intrigues and behaviour by VOC officials that was poor even by the standards of the age, began to threaten security and stability there. The Dutch placed complete trust in Pakubuwana III's loyalty, but began to worry about the obviously volatile state of his kingdom. They had never trusted Mangkunēgara I and tended to blame him for much of the tension in Surakarta. Mangkunēgara I, however, began to display greater loyalty and cooperation towards both Pakubuwana III and the VOC in the 1780s, apparently in the hope that they would arrange for his descendants to inherit his position.

The first major test of the durability of the partition occurred when Pakubuwana III died in 1788 and was succeeded as Susuhunan of Surakarta by his 19-year-old son Pakubuwana IV (r. 1788–1820). He brought unrealistic aspirations and a consistent inability to assess his political environment to a tense and intrigue-ridden court where some of the VOC's most corrupt and incompetent officers served. Early in 1789 Pakubuwana IV began to appoint a new group of favourites to high positions. These men were inspired by religious ideas which were opposed by the established religious hierarchy in Surakarta. The Javanese text ***Wicara Kras***, which was written by their enemies, suggests that they were a deviant group claiming falsely to be from the Shattariyya Sufi ***tarekat***. Whatever the case, they encouraged the new king to think that

Surakarta could become the senior court of Java, thereby overturning the equality which underlay the permanent partition between Surakarta and Yogyakarta. The court of Yogyakarta believed that Pakubuwana IV was planning a war of conquest to reunify the kingdom. In fact, military measures do not seem to have been contemplated; instead, Pakubuwana IV's aims were to be achieved by persuading the VOC to recognise Surakarta's dominance.

Rumours began to spread. Mangkunégarra I feared for his and his descendants' futures; Yogyakarta worried about the stability of the partition; displaced Surakarta notables feared for their fortunes and for that of the kingdom. These people all began trying to manipulate the VOC into joining them against Pakubuwana IV. The VOC was slow to recognise the existence of a threat, although the Governor of the North-east Coast knew that the corrupt and extortionate practices of the Surakarta Resident (1784–8) W. A. Palm had contributed to an aversion to Europeans on the part of the new king. The Dutch were suddenly shocked, however, in July 1789 when it was rumoured that Pakubuwana IV and his new advisers were planning a general massacre of Europeans in Java. Then in September 1789 the VOC Resident (1788–90) in Surakarta, Andries Hartsinck, was discovered going to a secret conference in the court at night, clad in Javanese dress. The VOC now began to fear that treachery reached even to within their Surakarta fortress. In fact, the rumours of a massacre of Europeans were probably false, and Hartsinck's role was never wholly clarified. The VOC, however, began to panic. By this time, Haméngkubuwana I was both old and sometimes ill; the Dutch feared that he would die and that a succession crisis in Yogyakarta would lead to military intervention by Surakarta.

The court of Yogyakarta fed ever wilder rumours to the VOC and in the end convinced the Dutch that military measures were necessary to stop Pakubuwana IV's designs. The threat of his plans was believed by both Haméngkubuwana I and Mangkunégarra I to be so great that for the first time in nearly forty years they acted together. From the VOC, Mangkunégarra I now got 4000 *reals* annually to relieve him of his dependence on Pakubuwana IV and to ensure his support of VOC actions. Later, in 1792, the VOC also decided that Mangkunégarra I's descendants should inherit his domain of 4000 households; the Mangkunégaran principality thereby became a permanent institution.

In November 1790 Pakubuwana IV's enemies began the encirclement of the court. Several thousand troops from Yogyakarta and Mangkunégarra I's lands took up positions around Surakarta. The VOC sent several hundred Madurese, Bugis, Malay and European troops to its fortress within the city. The senior princes and officials of Surakarta increased their pressure upon Pakubuwana IV to abandon his advisers and their schemes before they brought the kingdom to ruin. Sultan Haméngkubuwana I began to think that the absorption of Surakarta might now be possible; he asked the VOC whether his own son, the crown prince, might have the throne there if Pakubuwana IV were deposed. The VOC rejected this, however, having already secretly decided to recognise Mangkunégarra I as king of Surakarta if it came to a deposition.

Finally Pakubuwana IV saw the hopelessness of his position. On 26 November 1790 he surrendered his advisers to the VOC and they were promptly exiled. He begged the

VOC's pardon, which was quickly granted. The VOC was relieved to have been spared the expenses of war, and the older generation was again dominant in Surakarta. The permanent partition of Central Java had been vindicated: the vested interests which supported it were such that even a king's closest relatives and courtiers would oppose his attempt to overturn it. For Yogyakarta the outcome of the crisis was only a partial success. It had successfully manoeuvred the VOC into action, but it had failed to bring about a reduction of Surakarta's status.

The 1790 crisis had involved supernatural forces, magic powers which the king's new teachers had claimed and disputes about what was a proper understanding of Islam. In this context, during the next fasting month in May 1791, Surakarta courtiers produced new versions of *Iskandar* and *Yusup*, the spiritually powerful works created at the order of Ratu Pakubuwana in 1729–30 which went back further to texts done at the time of Sultan Agung's pilgrimage to Tēmbayat in 1633. The new versions specifically claimed descent from Ratu Pakubuwana's versions and appear to have been part of the Surakarta court's means of bringing the supernatural aftermath of the crisis of 1790 under control. The 1791 *Yusup* includes admonitions about avoiding false teachers, advice probably aimed directly at Pakubuwana IV. He seems to have taken this to heart, at least for a time. The book of teachings ascribed to this king himself, called *Wulang Reh* ('Teachings on conduct'), opens with admonitions to choose one's teacher with great care and to adhere to the fundamentals of Islamic law.

From the crisis of 1790 emerged a new treaty which formalised the constituent elements of the permanent partition of Central Java. This was signed upon VOC urgings by Pakubuwana IV, Hamēngkubuwana I, Mangkunēgara I, and the VOC Governor of the North-east Coast (1787– 91) Jan Greeve in September–November 1790. It was, of course, a dead letter until after Pakubuwana IV's submission in late November. This new treaty was an advance on previous agreements in that it explicitly admitted Mangkunēgara I as a signatory, thereby acknowledging his special standing above other princes, and formally recognised that the VOC was the final court of appeal for otherwise insoluble disputes among the Javanese signatories. Just as the military intervention of the VOC from 1677 had been partly responsible for the partition of the kingdom, so now its continued presence was recognised as essential to the functioning of that partition on a permanent basis.

Having made Yogyakarta a prosperous, permanent and powerful state, Hamēngkubuwana I died in March 1792, at about 80 years of age. He left behind a tradition of greatness which his son, now Sultan Hamēngkubuwana II (r. 1792–1810, 1811–12, 1826–8), hoped to emulate. But already intrigues were developing among this younger generation of Yogyakarta dignitaries. And their conviction that the Europeans were a factor which could be ignored or manipulated at will was soon to lose its basis in fact. Nevertheless, by 1792 a restoration of a kind had been completed. Yogyakarta was the most powerful and independent Javanese state since the seventeenth century, and Hamēngkubuwana I had been the greatest monarch of the Mataram dynasty since Sultan Agung. The Javanese kingdom was, however, permanently divided, and it was therefore unable to stand united against the European threat which was to rise from the VOC's ruins early in the nineteenth century.

In Bantēn, the other main kingdom of Java, troubles had also arisen in the mid-

eighteenth century, but the outcome there was very different from that in Central Java. Bantĕn was much closer to Batavia and much smaller than Surakarta and Yogyakarta. For the military security of Batavia and Priangan, and because of Bantĕn's financial importance as a source of pepper, the Dutch could not afford to ignore instability in Bantĕn. The dominance which the VOC established in Bantĕn in 1682 (see [Chapter 8](#)) began to be undermined by palace intrigues in the reign of Sultan Zainul Arifin (1733–48). His Arab wife Ratu Sarifa engineered a conflict between Zainul Arifin and his son the crown prince which resulted in the prince being exiled and Sarifa's nephew being named as the new crown prince in 1747. This new prince was too young to rule, however, and Zainul Arifin was showing signs of insanity. In November 1748 the VOC, with the agreement of Ratu Sarifa, therefore arrested the Sultan and exiled him to Ambon. Then she was made regent in the name of the VOC, which announced its direct control of Bantĕn until a further agreement concerning the institution of the Sultanate could be arrived at.

Sarifa's regency soon provoked domestic opposition. The elite of Bantĕn complained that she ignored them in decision-making, while her extortionate rule brought protests from both commoners and aristocrats. In October 1750 a full-scale rebellion broke out under the leadership of a religious teacher named Kyai Tapa. The VOC's army was in a poor state and was already deeply involved in the Third Javanese War of Succession. In November 1750 a combined force from Ratu Sarifa and the VOC, totalling 800 men, collapsed in the face of the Bantĕnese rebels. Shortly thereafter a VOC force of 460 men (including over 300 Europeans) was driven to flight by an enemy force estimated at 7000 men, with the loss of over 30 European officers and soldiers. The VOC held its two fortresses in the city, but most of Bantĕn fell to the rebels. They also began to threaten Batavia's boundaries and forced the VOC to abandon its post at Tulang Bawang in Lampung. The VOC saw that more vigorous measures were necessary if it was not to be defeated both in Mataram and in Bantĕn.

In November 1750 Batavia ordered the VOC commander in Bantĕn to arrest and exile both Ratu Sarifa and her nephew the crown prince. In March 1751 Ratu Sarifa died on the island of Edam in the bay of Batavia. The throne was offered to Pangeran Arya Adi Santika, a brother of the exiled Sultan Zainul Arifin. Adi Santika accepted the position of 'Sultan-Regent' only until the lawful successor, the crown prince who had been exiled in 1747, was brought back. Adi Santika's elevation did not induce Bantĕnese to desert the rebellion. Batavia sent such forces as it could spare to Bantĕn and by January 1751 had over 1000 European and 350 Indonesian (mainly Balinese) troops there. Although most of these soldiers were ill, the remainder managed to drive the rebels from the city. Then Kyai Tapa began to burn, plunder and murder in Batavia's highlands; virtually every European plantation was destroyed. But his main stronghold was finally taken in September 1751. Kyai Tapa and the pretender he had supported, Ratu Bagus Buang, fled. Bagus Buang was killed in 1755. Kyai Tapa continued desultory attacks on the VOC for some time on the Sunda Straits and near Bandung and Bogor (Buitenzorg). Then he went eastward into the battles of the Third Javanese War of Succession and disappeared.

In 1753 the exiled son of Sultan Zainul Arifin was brought back from Sri Lanka and declared to be Sultan Zainul Asyikin (r. 1753–77). Thereafter Bantĕn was formally a

fief of the VOC. Peace returned to Bantěn, but it was unlike the peace enjoyed in Central Java. In Bantěn, this peace came with submission to VOC dominance. Problems of course continued, and dislike of the VOC was never far from the surface, but VOC influence in Bantěn was never again seriously challenged.

The Bantěnese experience was unusual. Outside Java, the later eighteenth century saw a general retrenchment of VOC positions comparable on a smaller scale to its withdrawal to the coast in Central and East Java. The VOC no longer faced serious competition in Indonesia from other Europeans, except for the British in South Sumatra. Outlying posts such as those at Timor, Makassar, Palembang, Padang and South Kalimantan were essentially being reduced to mere symbols of a VOC presence. Even the VOC clove monopoly in Ambon was collapsing; in 1769–72 two French expeditions captured clove plants there and introduced the clove to Mauritius, and soon to other French colonies. VOC finances were in decline. The VOC was exhausted by its wars, and wanted no more. Its main efforts now went into the production of tea and coffee in the Priangan highlands. In the midst of corruption, inefficiency and financial crisis, this first Dutch empire in Indonesia was gently going to sleep.

### *III*

---

## The Creation of a Colonial State, c. 1800–1910

## ***Chapter 11***

---

### **Java, 1792–1830**

In the last decade of the eighteenth century, the Javanese kingdoms of Surakarta and Yogyakarta faced many problems, but they were more independent of European pressure than any Javanese state since the late seventeenth century. The aristocratic elite were still in control, and in Yogyakarta in particular a substantial restoration of the state had been accomplished. Soon, however, internal conflicts would bring crisis to Yogyakarta, just at a time when the European threat was suddenly renewed. The result would be the utter destruction of Javanese independence within less than forty years of the death of Hamēngkubuwana I, and the beginning of the truly colonial period of Javanese history.

Peace had reigned since the 1750s and the population of Java was beginning the substantial growth which was particularly notable later in the nineteenth century. Although all of the statistics for this period are doubtful, it seems that in 1755 the population of Surakarta and Yogyakarta was no more (and probably less) than about 690,000 to 1 million, while by 1795 it was about 1.4 to 1.6 million. The area under cultivation seems to have expanded rapidly, and there was still land available for further development.

The Javanese were prospering in many ways and Yogyakarta was an especially powerful kingdom. For instance, the professional standing troops of Sultan Hamēngkubuwana II c.1808 amounted to 1765 men and, at least in theory, he had a potential troop levy of over 100,000 men from his subordinates. The Dutch situation was very different: in 1803 the Dutch garrison at Yogyakarta totalled a mere 89 men, most either very young or very old and afflicted by varying degrees of disease and debauchery. There were, however, internal problems in both Javanese states. Pakubuwana IV of Surakarta (r. 1788–1820) was a mercurial man who disliked the existence of the court of Yogyakarta and desired revenge for the humiliation he had suffered in 1790 (see [Chapter 10](#)). Hamēngkubuwana II of Yogyakarta (r. 1792–1810, 1811–12, 1826–8) bears the greatest responsibility for the decline of Yogyakarta in this period, and is discussed below.

The north coastal territories under VOC rule since 1743–6 appear to have been prospering. Again, all population figures are doubtful, but it seems that the coastal regions and Madura had no more than about 380,000 to 490,000 people in 1755, while by 1795 the population was perhaps as much as 1.5 million. The rate of population growth was thus very much greater than in the Javanese kingdoms, the difference

presumably representing internal migration to the coast.

The VOC itself was on its last legs. During the Fourth English War (1780–4) the VOC in Indonesia was isolated from the Netherlands. It not only had to request the loan of about 2300 troops from Surakarta and Yogyakarta to defend Batavia against an expected British attack (which never occurred), but also turned to the Dutch government at home for financial support. The government then began an investigation of the affairs of the VOC and revealed bankruptcy, scandal and mismanagement in all quarters. During December 1794 to January 1795 the French successfully invaded the Netherlands and a new French-dominated regime was established. In 1796 the **Heeren XVII** were dismissed and replaced by a new committee, and then the VOC was formally dissolved on 1 January 1800. Its territorial possessions now became the property of the Netherlands government. There was little immediate change in Indonesia, however, for the same personnel remained in their jobs and pursued their old ways.

Relations between the Dutch and the Javanese were fairly stable by 1792. On the north coast, the Dutch ruled directly in theory, but in practice local lords (**bupati**) acted as their agents. In the interior, the treaty of 1749 which had given sovereignty over the Mataram empire to the VOC was a dead letter and Dutch relations with the Javanese courts in fact took the form of an alliance. Dutch Residents at the courts functioned as ambassadors, not as colonial rulers. The Javanese had created a mythological justification for their relationship with the Dutch, which is found primarily in texts called **Sérat Baron Sakendher** ('The book of Baron Sakendher'). These portrayed the Dutch as being the legitimate heirs to the sovereignty (and supernatural powers) of Pajajaran in West Java, and natural senior allies of the Central Javanese kings, but not a sovereign power in Central Java. The military weakness of the Dutch and the military strength of the Javanese states, especially Yogyakarta, meant that there could be no Dutch pretensions to sovereign authority in the interior.

The military predominance of Yogyakarta was, however, being threatened by the rule of Haméngkubuwana II, which began to destroy the elite consensus which was essential to strength and stability. The Sultan was at odds with his brothers, especially with Pangeran Natakusuma (1764– 1829), who was intelligent, capable and influential in the court. Many of Haméngkubuwana I's advisers and officials were already dead or of advanced age, and Haméngkubuwana II rapidly replaced them with his own, less capable, favourites. His father's able **patih** (1755–99) Danuréja I was succeeded by his grandson Danuréja II (1799–1811); he was inefficient and soon became closely allied with a court clique surrounding the crown prince (later Haméngkubuwana III). The Sultan's taxation and corvée system was rapidly growing more oppressive. His building projects at the court placed a particularly heavy labour burden upon the population of the outer districts (**mancanégara**). His contempt for the VOC's weakness contributed to a rapid deterioration of his relations with the Dutch at his court. And his three wives became increasingly influential as the arbiters of court intrigue. Out of all of this, uncertainty and disaffection grew.

In Surakarta, both Pakubuwana IV and Pangeran Adipati Arya Mangkunégara II (r. 1796–1835; at the start of his period known as Pangeran Prangwadana) were attempting to isolate Yogyakarta and turn the Dutch against the Sultan. Mangkunégara II had good

reason to dislike the Dutch, for on his accession the whole of his inheritance was confiscated by the Dutch Resident (1790–6) in Surakarta, J. Frederik Baron van Reede tot de Parkeler. This man probably has the distinction of being the most corrupt ever to serve in the VOC, a status requiring truly colossal dishonesty. Not until 1809 did Mangkunégara II regain his inheritance after lengthy litigation. He nevertheless had decided that his future was best secured by cooperation with the Dutch, his only defence against the hostility of both the Susuhunan and the Sultan. In 1808, upon the order of Daendels (see below), Mangkunégara II organised his military retainers into the ‘Mangkunégaran Legion’ with Dutch financial aid. He was given the rank of Colonel and over 10,000 *ryksdaalders* annually as a salary and support for a legion of 1150 men. His legion was to see much service in alliance with colonial governments in the coming years, including the storming of Yogyakarta in 1812, the Java War of 1825–30, and the Aceh War in 1873–4. Pakubuwana IV also attempted to ingratiate himself with the Dutch, but at the same time pretended friendship and courtesy towards Haméngkubuwana II. His aim was to engineer Yogyakarta’s destruction. As Haméngkubuwana II’s relations with the Dutch deteriorated and opposition grew within his own domain, he was clearly playing into the hands of his enemies.

In 1808 a new age in Javanese–European relations began. The Netherlands had been under French domination since 1795. In the interests of greater centralisation of power, Napoleon Bonaparte placed his younger brother Louis Napoleon on the throne of the Netherlands in 1806. In 1808 the Napoleonic regime sent Marshal Herman Willem Daendels to be Governor General in Batavia (1808–11) and to fortify Java as a base against the British in the Indian Ocean. Daendels was an admirer of revolutionary principles of government. He brought to Java a combination of reforming zeal and dictatorial methods which achieved little but offended many. He attempted to clean up the inefficiency, abuses and corruption that pervaded the European administration, but many of his reforms had little effect. Towards Javanese lords (*bupati*) in Dutch-controlled regions he felt a distaste arising from his anti-feudal instincts. He treated them not as lords over their society but as officials of the European administration, and reduced their powers and incomes.

Daendels approached the Central Javanese rulers as if they were vassals of Batavia. In law he was correct, for the 1749 treaty had surrendered sovereignty to the VOC. But never before had Batavia attempted to exercise sovereignty in the interior. The Residents at the courts were now redesignated ‘Ministers’. They were to be regarded not as ambassadors from one ally to another, but as the local representatives of the sovereignty vested in the European government and represented in Batavia by the Governor General. In all matters of protocol they were to be the equals of the Javanese kings. This was a direct assault upon the relationship that had existed since the 1750s. Consistent with their personalities and policies, Pakubuwana IV accepted the changes but Haméngkubuwana II rejected them. A long period of conflict now began which was to end in the Java War.

Daendels had brought no new troops with him but he rapidly built up the mainly Indonesian forces in Dutch service from 4000 to 18,000 men. These troops were poorly disciplined and performed badly on several occasions. Nonetheless, the European side of the military equation in Java was growing less contemptible; Haméngkubuwana II,

however, continued to be disdainful. He resisted all that Daendels stood for: a new age in European attitudes, in which the exercise of sovereignty over all the Javanese and the reform of Javanese society were seen as necessary and proper objects of government.



*The former residence of Governor General H. W. Daendels (1808–11), on Medan Mérdeka, Jakarta*

Pakubuwana IV's more astute responses persuaded Daendels that he was cooperative, but Hamēngkubuwana II appeared to be preparing for war. In fact, he seems not to have contemplated full-scale war at this stage, but Daendels' suspicions contributed to the danger of Yogyakarta's position. In 1810 the Sultan's chief administrator of the outer regions (*mancanégara*), Raden Rangga, launched a revolt against the European government. He was the Sultan's brother-in-law and had the tacit support of the Sultan and the Yogyakarta aristocracy. The rebellion was easily crushed and Rangga was killed, but his son Sēntot survived to play a leading role in the Java War. The growing tensions within the court meanwhile led Hamēngkubuwana II to bypass the *patih* Danurēja II (whose post was by treaty a joint Javanese–Dutch appointment) and to give his powers to Pangeran Natadiningrat, a son of the Sultan's brother Natakusuma.

The rebellion of Raden Rangga provoked an ultimatum from Daendels to Hamēngkubuwana II. He must accept the revised court ceremonial regarding the position of the European Minister, restore Danurēja II to full authority, and accept responsibility for Rangga's rebellion. The Sultan resisted, so in December 1810 Daendels marched upon Yogyakarta with 3200 troops and compelled Hamēngkubuwana II to step down in favour of his son, who now became 'prince regent' (Hamēngkubuwana III, r. 1810–11, 1812–14). About 500,000 guilders in prize money was taken. Hamēngkubuwana II was, however, allowed to remain in Yogyakarta at the insistence of the 'prince regent'.

In January 1811 Daendels imposed new treaties on both Surakarta and Yogyakarta, which involved extensive annexations to Dutch government territory. Consistent with the assumption of sovereignty, the rent for the coast which Batavia had paid since 1746 was now cancelled. At a stroke, Daendels thereby abolished the main financial incentive for the Javanese courts to tolerate European rule of the coast, and removed a

significant source of court income. He then exiled Pangeran Natakusuma and his son Natadiningrat to imprisonment in Cirébon because he believed them to have been intimately involved in Rangga's rebellion. Although he did not order their execution, he let it be known that he would be glad to learn of their deaths. They survived only by luck. On all sides there were now deep and bitter hatreds, for Haméngkubuwana II suspected Danuréja II of denouncing the two princes, while Natakusuma never forgave Haméngkubuwana III for his exile and near-death.

The Napoleonic wars in Europe now spilled over into Indonesia. When William V of the Netherlands fled from the French armies to England in 1795, he took up residence at Kew and issued what are known as the 'Kew letters'. These instructed Dutch colonial officials to surrender their territories to the British in order to keep them out of the hands of the French. Armed with this authority and with more ships, men and firepower than the Dutch possessed in Indonesia, the British proceeded either to conquer or to be given several Indonesian posts. In 1795 they occupied Padang (which in fact they had earlier occupied in 1781–4) and Malacca, and in 1796 Amboina and Banda. From 1795 the British mounted blockades of Batavia which seriously affected the Dutch administration's income by disrupting the export of coffee. With the fall of the main French base on Mauritius late in 1810, the British were ready to conquer the heart of Dutch possessions – the island of Java.

In May 1811 Daendels was replaced as Governor General by Jan Willem Janssens, who had already suffered the humiliation of surrendering the Cape Colony to the British in 1806. He lasted just long enough in Java to do the same. On 4 August 1811, 60 British ships appeared before Batavia and the city and its surroundings were in British hands by 26 August. Janssens retreated to Sémarang, where the Mangkunégaran Legion and troops from Yogyakarta and Surakarta joined him. The British drove them back and on 18 September Janssens capitulated near Salatiga.

The British conquest was followed by a period of confusion. Haméngkubuwana II grasped this opportunity to retake the throne of Yogyakarta. His son was reduced to his former status as crown prince and then the Sultan had the *patih* Danuréja II murdered. But he had misjudged the nature of the times and there rapidly followed a series of disastrous events. Thomas Stamford Raffles was appointed Lieutenant Governor of Java (1811–16; there was no post of Governor General in Java under the British), and if Haméngkubuwana II thought that his government would differ from Daendels', he was soon proved wrong. Raffles was as much a reformer and opponent of 'despotism' as Daendels. At first he tolerated Haméngkubuwana II's measures, but it was soon clear that the Sultan was a hard and determined man from whom the British could expect no cooperation. It began to seem as if the life of the crown prince (Haméngkubuwana III), whom the British favoured, was in danger at his father's court. Pakubuwana IV, on the other hand, seemed pliant and reasonable.

In November 1811 John Crawfurd arrived in Yogyakarta as the new Resident (1811–14, 1816). He was a man of inflexible opinions, one of which was that Haméngkubuwana II could not be tolerated. He both gave and received slights and insults at court until finally concluding that only the firmest measures would suffice. Raffles urged caution until sufficient troops were available, but did not substantially differ in his view of the Sultan. When Raffles visited the court in December 1811 he

personally encountered the Sultan's hostility and replied with belligerence which on one occasion nearly led to armed combat in a crowded room. Meanwhile, Pangeran Natakusuma had been released from imprisonment. As an enemy of Daendels he naturally became an ally of the British; as an enemy of both Hamēngkubuwana II and his son, he exerted every effort to achieve an independent status in the court.

Pakubuwana IV now joined the conflict. He entered into a secret correspondence with Hamēngkubuwana II which led the latter to believe that Surakarta would stand by him in armed resistance to the European government. The Susuhunan's true aim was to encourage the Sultan to a boldness which would bring about the destruction of the Sultanate at European hands. The British were soon informed of the Surakarta-Yogyakarta correspondence. They began secret negotiations with the Yogyakarta crown prince (Hamēngkubuwana III) and Natakusuma, and prepared for the destruction of Yogyakarta.

In June 1812, 1200 European troops and Indian sepoys, supported by 800 men of the Mangkunēgaran Legion, conquered the court of Yogyakarta after an artillery barrage. Pakubuwana IV did nothing but put his troops across the British lines of communication. The court of Yogyakarta was plundered, its library and archives were looted, large sums of money were taken, and Hamēngkubuwana II was deposed and exiled to Penang. He was replaced as sultan by his son Hamēngkubuwana III. Natakusuma was rewarded for his assistance to the British by being given an independent inheritable domain of 4000 households in Yogyakarta lands and the name Pangeran Pakualam I (r. 1812–29). The Pakualaman thus became the Yogyakarta mirror-image of the Mangkunēgaran in Surakarta, and the division of the kingdom of Mataram into two senior and two junior principalities was complete. A Pakualaman Corps of 100 cavalry (later 50 cavalry and 100 infantry) was also established. But unlike the Mangkunēgaran Legion, it was never of much significance and was eventually disbanded in 1892.

The impact of the conquest of Yogyakarta cannot be overestimated. This was the only time in Javanese history when a court was taken by storm by the forces of a European government. The humiliation of the Yogyakarta aristocracy was profound. No one could any longer doubt that a new era had dawned in Java.

Pakubuwana IV soon learned that he had failed in his scheme to reduce Yogyakarta while leaving Surakarta intact. All European governments in Java followed a policy of equality towards both courts in order not to upset the balance in Javanese politics, so what was done to one court was invariably done to the other. In any case, the devious Surakarta correspondence with Yogyakarta had been discovered and had compromised Pakubuwana IV. Indeed, Raffles nearly decided to march on Surakarta and depose him, too. Instead, he annexed many regions from the outer districts of both Yogyakarta and Surakarta, whereby many dignitaries lost their appanage lands. The British also took over the administration of toll-gates and markets. These were then farmed out to Chinese, who had run the tollgates since the previous century, but now their administration was marked by increasing abuse and extortion at the expense of the Javanese. As reward for his assistance, Mangkunēgara II received another 1000 households from the lands of Pakubuwana IV.

In 1814–15 Pakubuwana IV entered into the last and most unlikely of his major

conspiracies. He plotted with disaffected Indian sepoys stationed in Java to destroy both the European government and Yogyakarta. The plot was discovered, however, and nearly 70 sepoy ringleaders were court-martialled; 17 were shot and the remainder sent back to India in irons. Raffles decided not to depose Pakubuwana IV for his part, but exiled the main prince involved in the plot. This was the third time since 1788 that Pakubuwana IV had only narrowly escaped deposition.

Raffles stands in the annals of colonial history as a great reformer. Bastin points particularly to his enunciation of 'native welfare' as a concern of government, his introduction of the 'land rent' (land tax) system which laid the foundations for the later growth of a money economy, his emphasis on the village as a primary unit of colonial administration and his perseverance in Daendels' principle of treating Javanese officials as part of the governmental bureaucratic machine. Many of his reforms, like those of Daendels, were never put into effect, but several of his principles were taken up by his successors. The idea that the welfare of Indonesians should be a primary concern of the colonial government, however, was only a theory in Raffles' time and rarely as much as that thereafter, at least until the later nineteenth century. Daendels and Raffles together are most important for Indonesian history as the originators of a colonial revolution, a new policy which called for European assumption of sovereignty and administrative authority throughout Java and which aimed to use, reform or destroy indigenous institutions at will. In 1816 Java and other Indonesian posts were returned to Dutch authority as part of the general reconstruction of European affairs after the Napoleonic wars. Raffles had already left Java to return to England; he was ultimately to achieve his greatest fame as the founder of Singapore in 1819.

From 1812 to 1825, discontent grew in Java as a result of several continuing problems. Europeans continually interfered in court affairs generally, and especially in the succession in Yogyakarta. Corruption and intrigue grew at both courts. Europeans and Chinese were leasing ever-larger tracts for sugar, coffee, indigo and pepper plantations in Central Java, especially from aristocrats in need of funds. On these plantations Javanese villagers and their customary law (*adat*) were treated with contempt. As farmers were increasingly obliged to pay their government taxes in money rather than kind, they were forced into the hands of moneylenders, most of whom were Chinese. Chinese entrepreneurs and tax farmers also played an increasingly prominent role in rural society, all of which exacerbated ethnic tensions between them and the Javanese. In territories remaining to the Javanese rulers, the administration of taxes and tollgates was extortionate; indeed, the European government's revenue from Yogyakarta tollgates trebled from 1816 to 1824. In territories newly annexed to the colonial government, conditions for tax-paying peasants were, if anything, even worse. The proliferation of tollgates meanwhile threatened to choke off rural commerce. Hardship led to social dislocation and robber bands grew in number and daring. The use of opium spread among the Javanese population as a consequence of such dislocation, much to the profit of the European government, nearly 12 per cent of the revenues of which came from its monopoly of opium in the years 1827–33.

Into this increasingly turbulent picture stepped one of the most famous figures of Indonesian history, Pangeran Dipanagara (1785–1855). The eldest son of Sultan Hamengkubuwana III, he grew up amidst the intrigues and troubles of

Hamēngkubuwana II's reign. During his childhood and adolescence he lived with his grandmother the Ratu Agēng (d. 1803) at Tēgalrēja, an isolated residence some miles from the court of Yogyakarta. There he meditated and studied Islamic religious texts as well as Javanese classics and history. He moved in *pēsantron* (religious school) circles and resisted appearing at the court, which he disliked for its intrigue, decadence, immorality and corrupting European influence. His links with the rest of Javanese society were perhaps unique. As a senior prince he had access to the aristocracy, as a mystic to the religious community, and as a rural dweller to the masses of the countryside. As a critic of the state of affairs in Central Java, he became a focus of loyalty for the discontented.

About 1805–8 Dipanagara underwent a religious experience which convinced him that he was the divinely appointed future king of Java. He went on a pilgrimage to holy sites associated with the Mataram dynasty, in which he had a series of visions. The Goddess of the Southern Ocean came to him and promised him her aid, thereby confirming his status as a future king. A disembodied voice finally made it known that he was to initiate a period of devastation which would purify the land.

For nearly twenty years Dipanagara bided his time, while the situation in Java deteriorated and his following coalesced. In the 1820s small uprisings began. In 1821 there was a poor rice harvest and cholera spread to Java for the first time. In 1822 Hamēngkubuwana IV (r. 1814–22) died amidst rumours that he had been poisoned, and there were heated disputes over the appointment of guardians for his three-year-old son Hamēngkubuwana V (r. 1822–6, 1828–55). At the end of 1822 a major eruption of Mount Mērapi occurred and was taken as an omen of impending chaos. The seeds of war planted since 1808 now rapidly grew to maturity.

In 1823 Governor General G. A. G. Ph. van der Capellen (1816–26) decided to end the abuses surrounding the private leasing of land in Central Java. He ordered that such leases should be abolished. The aristocrats who had leased their lands now not only lost this source of revenue, but were obliged to repay advances (which in most cases had already been spent) and to compensate the Chinese and European leaseholders for capital improvements on the lands (most of which were valueless to the aristocrats, who did not intend to run their appanages as plantations). This was the final step in pushing many aristocrats towards rebellion.

In May 1825 a new road was to be built near Tēgalrēja. As the stakes for the roadway were being placed, a clash occurred between retainers of Dipanagara and those of his enemy the *patih* (1813–47) Danurēja IV. A period of considerable tension followed. On 20 July the Dutch sent forces from Yogyakarta to arrest Dipanagara. Open fighting broke out, Tēgalrēja was captured and burned, but Dipanagara fled and raised the banner of rebellion. The Java War (1825–30) had begun.

The rebellion rapidly spread throughout Central and East Java, but its heart was in the Yogyakarta area. There 15 out of 29 princes joined Dipanagara, and 41 out of 88 *bupatis* (senior courtiers). Surakarta remained aloof, but the court seems to have been ready to go over to the rebel cause if its success appeared certain. The religious community rallied to Dipanagara, among them Kyai Maja, who became the spiritual leader of the rebellion. Dipanagara adopted the title Erucakra, thereby claiming to be the prophesied *ratu adil*, the just king who would deliver Java from oppression.

Villagers fought for Dipanagara and supported his battalions when they were unable to fight themselves. Troops which the ambivalent court of Surakarta sent to help the Dutch achieved little against the rebels. The Dutch also received troops from the Sultan of Yogyakarta: Dipanagara's animosity was, after all, directed at the court as well as the Europeans. Many Yogyakarta soldiers, however, deserted to the rebels. Troops from the Mangkunégaran Legion showed both ability and loyalty to the anti-rebel cause. The princes of Madura and most regional Javanese officials also opposed Dipanagara.

As the rebel attacks on Chinese and Europeans spread, Dutch government authority was threatened throughout Central and East Java. By the end of 1825 it was clear that the rebels would not, however, be able to drive the Dutch out of Java easily. The Dutch were short of troops, but with the assistance of their Indonesian allies they withstood the first onslaughts. By 1826 Dutch government troop strengths were adequate, but they were poorly used. Large formations of government forces were able to achieve little against the rebels' mobile guerrilla tactics. Dipanagara suffered a major defeat in October 1826 when he was pushed back from Surakarta. Nevertheless, by the end of 1826 the government forces seemed at a standstill and Dipanagara controlled much of the countryside in the interior of Central Java. In August 1826 the Dutch brought the aged Sultan Haméngkubuwana II back from exile in Ambon and placed him on the throne of Yogyakarta (1826–8), but this failed utterly to win Javanese support away from the rebellion.

By 1827 the Dutch were learning how best to use their troops. They adopted the *benteng-stelsel* (fortress system), by which small mobile columns operated independently from an ever-growing network of strategic fortified posts and permanently policed the local population. Rebel parties were offered battle before they could grow to significant numbers and were prevented from establishing themselves for long in any district. As 1827 passed, Dipanagara and his forces found themselves increasingly pursued and harassed. Cholera, malaria and dysentery claimed many on both sides, but by 1828 the war had clearly turned in favour of the Dutch and their allies.

Desertions and captures from the rebel side increased. In November 1828 Kyai Maja surrendered to the Dutch along with many other Islamic leaders; their abandonment of Dipanagara's cause arose largely from a growing conflict between their religious goals and the more secular aims of Dipanagara's aristocratic advisers. In September 1829 Dipanagara's uncle Pangeran Mangkubumi surrendered; he was allowed to return to Yogyakarta where he became one of the most senior and respected princes. In October 1829 Dipanagara's main commander, Ali Basa Prawiradirdja, better known as Séntot, also surrendered. Séntot was thereupon given the rank of Lieutenant Colonel in the colonial army. He went to West Sumatra in 1831 to fight on the Dutch side against the Padris (see [Chapter 13](#)). But his anti-Dutch sentiments were never far from the surface. Indeed, Séntot perceived in Sumatra an opportunity to become an autonomous king of the Minangkabau highlands. His machinations were, however, obvious to the Dutch, who placed him under strict control at Béngkulu in 1833, where he lived until his death in 1854. Finally, in March 1830 Dipanagara entered into negotiations in Magélang. What he expected to come of this conference is unclear, but it was inevitable that he would be arrested. The Dutch exiled him to Ménado and then

Makassar, where he died in 1855. The rebellion was finished. It had cost the government side the lives of 8000 European and 7000 Indonesian soldiers. At least 200,000 Javanese had died, and the population of Yogyakarta was reduced by about half.

After the end of the Java War, the government held Yogyakarta responsible and all its outer districts (*mancanégara*) were annexed. To maintain the principle of equality which all European governments in Java followed, the outer districts of Surakarta were also annexed. Pakubuwana VI (r. 1823–30) was so disturbed by this apparent injustice that he left Surakarta and set out for the Indian Ocean to confer with the Goddess of the Southern Ocean. Fearing yet more rebellion, the Dutch brought him back and exiled him to Ambon, where he died in 1849.

The Java War was the last stand of the Javanese aristocratic elite. It had been a conservative movement, a vain effort to turn back the colonial tide which had been rising since 1808. The breadth of the social movement of protest which supported the war effort clearly reveals in retrospect how deeply the colonial revolution had already disrupted Javanese society, and in this respect the Java War prefigured the anti-colonial movement of the twentieth century. Dipanagara and his senior followers, however, may not have comprehended just how revolutionary were the changes which the renewed European threat had brought. Armed with ideas and traditions that were increasingly irrelevant, Dipanagara went down to defeat.

Many local lords and princes had found themselves on the Dutch side in the war. After 1830, almost all of the aristocratic elite took this course. Thus the mass protest which had fuelled the rebellion was left without access to aristocratic leadership. The Central Javanese courts, now without most of their territories, became ritual establishments and generally docile clients of the Dutch, although a dislike of their subservient position was often just below the refined surface of court affairs. For his services, Mangkunégara II was decorated and his estates increased.

The support which many Javanese aristocrats had given the Dutch and the deeply rooted social malaise which had caused the war, together led the Dutch to a major revision of policy. The dangers of tampering with institutions which were perceived as traditional and the value of holding the allegiance of the aristocracy seemed clear. The anti-feudal instincts of Daendels and Raffles were therefore rejected by the Dutch. For many years thereafter, Dutch rule would be based upon an alliance with the indigenous aristocracy. In a partial sense, the conservative Javanese aristocracy thus collectively won the peace, although the most dynamic part of it had lost the war. The aristocracy had, however, lost its last chance for any independent control of its environment.

## **Chapter 12**

---

# **Java, 1830–1900**

In 1830 the truly colonial period of Javanese history began. For the first time, the Dutch were in a position to exploit and control the whole of the island, and there was not to be any serious challenge to their dominance until the twentieth century. Their position was, however, a curious one. For over 200 years they had been involved in Java, and for over 150 years directly involved in the interior. The Java War had been their last great investment of men and money in the struggle for hegemony. In 1830 political dominance throughout Java was at last achieved, but on balance this effort had been a financial failure. If there was profit to be had out of involvement in Central and East Java, for over two centuries no one had succeeded in extracting it, except for the benefit of individuals who corruptly acquired personal fortunes. Only the coffee plantations of Priangan (West Java) had ever looked like being consistently profitable ventures. But in Central and East Java, profits had been wiped out by military and administrative overheads. The question that therefore faced the Dutch in 1830 was whether the dominance they had at last achieved could be made profitable.

Profit from Java was essential. Not only must it cover the costs of the administration in Java, but it was also needed to bolster the deteriorating financial position in the Netherlands. In the aftermath of the Napoleonic wars, the Dutch domestic debt and interest payments upon it rose sharply. The position grew still worse when the Dutch–Belgian union created by the Congress of Vienna in 1815 collapsed in the Belgian revolt of 1830. The Dutch attempt to reconquer Belgium was defeated in 1831–2 and in 1839 the Netherlands recognised Belgian independence. The Netherlands thus lost a part of the state and invested yet more money in a fruitless attempt to regain it.

During the Java War, the Dutch contemplated various proposals for Java. All shared a general aim of somehow procuring tropical produce at the right volume and price to make a profit, an aim which had been central to Dutch thinking since the first voyage set sail in 1595. In 1829 Johannes van den Bosch (1780–1844) submitted proposals which were to become the so-called *cultuurstelsel* (cultivation system, sometimes less accurately called culture system). The king accepted the proposals, and in January 1830 van den Bosch arrived in Java as the new Governor General (1830–3).

Van den Bosch's thinking on the *cultuurstelsel* was never very explicitly formulated, but it was apparently founded on a simple general principle. The Javanese villages owed a land tax (the 'land rent') to the government, normally calculated as 40 per cent of the village's main crop (usually rice). In fact, the actual assessment was

often below this figure, and collection of the tax (largely to be paid in cash) had often been difficult because of inadequate administrative resources and shortages of currency. Van den Bosch's idea was that each village should set aside part of its land to produce export crops (especially coffee, sugar and indigo) for sale at fixed prices to the colonial government. The village would thereby be able to cover its land tax commitment, and van den Bosch estimated that the produce of 20 per cent (later 33 per cent) of the village land should be sufficient for this purpose. If the village earned more by the sale of crops to the government than its land tax obligation, it would keep the excess payment; if less, it must still pay the difference from other sources. By 1833, a link between land tax and crop payments was less clear in van den Bosch's statements, and he spoke instead of the production of export crops as being more profitable to the village than growing rice. In any case, the principle was clearly that for the village there should be a trade-off between land tax based on rice production and export crop sales to the government.

In theory, everyone was to benefit from this system. The village would be left with more land for its own use and would acquire a cash income. Instead of an uncertain land tax revenue the government would acquire tropical produce so cheaply that, in van den Bosch's estimate, it could even compete on the world market with West Indies sugar produced by slave labour. The crops would then be shipped to Europe by the Netherlands Trading Company (NHM: *Nederlandsche Handelmaatschappij*), set up in 1824–5 upon the Dutch king's initiative. This would break British and American dominance of shipping in the Malay–Indonesian area and bring transportation revenues to the Netherlands.

In practice, there was hardly a 'system' at all. There were wide variations in the application of van den Bosch's ideas from one area to another in Java. His concept of procuring benefit for all turned into one of the more purely exploitative episodes of colonial history. Local officials, both Dutch and Indonesian, set both the land tax assessment and the level of export crop production for each village, then compelled the village to produce. As the payment for the crops rose, officials used this as a justification for increasing the land tax assessment, so that much of the excess crop payment was brought back into the hands of government. In fact, the *cultuurstelsel* amounted to compulsory delivery of export crops to the government, and was to a very large extent like the system of compulsory deliveries which the VOC had imposed for coffee in Priangan in the eighteenth century. Indeed, just as before van den Bosch's arrival, coffee was consistently the most profitable crop; it was also the last to be abolished when the *cultuurstelsel* came to an end.

The administrative structure of the *cultuurstelsel* was consistent with the new conservatism of Dutch policy after 1830. Previous experiments in dealing with individual cultivators were abandoned, and the village became the basic unit of administration. The village headman was the link between the cultivator and higher levels of Indonesian officials, culminating in the aristocratic Regency head, the *bupati* (called Regent by the Dutch). The *bupati* was responsible to the European administration, but European officials were also involved at lower levels. For the first time the appearance of European officers at village level indicated to ordinary Javanese that their lives were under colonial rule. The officials, both Dutch and Indonesian, who were charged with implementing the new scheme were paid percentages upon crop

deliveries. This was a fruitful source of corruption and a stimulus to extortions demands upon the villages. Indeed, corruption and abuse were rife. Yields were underestimated, a private trade in government crops grew up, and shady deals proliferated among indigenous administrators, Dutch officials and Chinese entrepreneurs. The colonial government in Batavia was never in a position to monitor and control the implementation of its directives, except in a most general way.

The main input into this 'system' was Javanese and Sundanese labour. Only a small portion of the cultivated land was involved. Excluding areas for coffee (which was grown on land unsuitable for rice agriculture), for all of Java only 6 per cent of cultivated land was involved in 1840 and 4 per cent in 1850. There were major regional variations, but the highest official figures were for Bagelen and Pekalongan, where 15 per cent of the land was committed to government crops in 1840. But the labour investment was clearly massive. The statistics for the *cultuurstelsel* are not reliable in detail, for there was substantial underreporting. Fasseur's unadjusted figures show that in all of Java 57 per cent of the population was involved in production of government crops in 1840, and 46 per cent in 1850. Allowing for underreporting, Van Niel concludes for the period of 1837–51 that over 70 per cent of agricultural families were producing export crops, over half of them in coffee. The distribution of this enormous burden was very uneven. Fasseur's unadjusted figures show that in some areas considerably less than half the population was involved; in 1840, however, the figure for Bantén was 92 per cent, and in 1845 for Kedu it was 97 per cent. Elson calculates that 73 per cent of all agricultural households were engaged in cultivation services in 1840, with 100 per cent of such families involved in Bantén, Banyumas and Kedu Residencies but less than 50 per cent in some others. In most places, coffee cultivation imposed by far the greatest demands, but sugar was a major crop in Pekalongan, Tegal, Jepara, Madiun, Pasuruan and Surabaya.

These percentages probably represent a continually growing exploitation in terms of number of people, for throughout the nineteenth century the population of Java maintained the steady increase that had begun in the eighteenth century. There are serious and probably insoluble problems surrounding population figures, but at the end of the eighteenth century the population was probably somewhere between 3 and 5 million and by 1830 it was around 7 million. By 1850 it had reached 9.5 million, by 1870 it was 16.2 million, and by 1890 it had reached 23.6 million. There was thus a fivefold to eightfold increase over a century. It was this steady growth of available labour which made the *cultuurstelsel* a success. Possible causative links between the *cultuurstelsel* and this high rate of population growth have been a subject of considerable historical controversy. Boomgaard argues that opportunities for paid non-agricultural employment encouraged couples to marry earlier and to have more children. In the second half of the nineteenth century, when birth rates may have declined somewhat, this was more than offset by a decline in mortality (especially infant mortality) through successful vaccination against smallpox and the decreasing virulence of cholera and typhoid epidemics.

The impact of the *cultuurstelsel* upon the Javanese and Sundanese varied widely over Java, and is still disputed. Pending further research, certain suppositions seem reasonable. For many of the aristocratic elite throughout Java this was a time of

apparent benefit. Their positions became more secure, and hereditary succession to official posts became the norm, especially after the Constitutional Regulation of 1854. They often made great profits from the percentages paid on crop deliveries. They were, however, directly dependent upon Dutch rule for their positions and incomes, and had to organise the compulsion which was essential for the *cultuurstelsel* to function. They were increasingly subject to supervision or interference from Dutch officials. They were being detached from their own society, relieved of pressure from the former indigenous sanctions upon the abuse of power, and not encouraged to modernise in any way. Indeed, it was a prime aim of Dutch rule to employ the ‘traditional’ prestige of the aristocracy in the cause of cheap administration. The aristocratic clients of Dutch rule were thus slowly moving away from their position of leadership within the society, although their prestige was still high among many in the villages.

It is impossible to arrive at definitive generalisations about the impact of the *cultuurstelsel* on lower levels of Javanese society for two reasons. Firstly, the statistical evidence from this period is voluminous but often of doubtful reliability. Secondly, these questionable sources are nevertheless sufficient to demonstrate that there were substantial variations from one part of Java to another. It is, however, possible to say that, while there were certainly benefits for some, for the majority of Java’s indigenous population this was probably a time of hardship.

The impact of the compulsory cultivation of government crops was complex. The development of sugar and indigo plantations took land, labour and water away from rice cultivation (to the detriment of the local people) but provided opportunities for paid employment (to their benefit). In some areas, notably Pasuruan, local people developed a symbiotic relationship with the sugar industry to the benefit of both sides. Everywhere government payment for crops and greater opportunities for wage labour increased the amount of money in circulation. This provided a general stimulus to trade. Growth in production encouraged labour specialisation in non-agricultural activities associated with the plantations and factories in the countryside. There were significant investments in infrastructure: in factories, storehouses, roads, bridges, water-control systems and port facilities.

If there were benefits to be seen, particularly after the 1840s, there were also very serious burdens laid upon most local people. In the first place, while the distribution of benefits is difficult to see in the extant evidence, it was certainly inegalitarian. Those who were in the best position to take advantage of the *cultuurstelsel*’s opportunities were the village and suprvillage elites through their control of land and local authority, non-indigenous entrepreneurs (mainly Chinese, but also some Arabs) through their control of capital and tax farms (notably the opium farm), and European officials and entrepreneurs through their control of capital and influence over government. Shared interests often linked these three groups in arrangements of dubious legality. There is reason to believe that the local social order grew less egalitarian and more stratified, as the elite grasped opportunities to increase their land-holdings and incomes while more of their compatriots became landless labourers. In some areas there may have been a trend towards communal land-holding c.1830–50 so as to share the burden of taxation and labour which attended land-holding, but this, too, enhanced the position of the village elite who determined the distribution of land under communal rotation

arrangements. For the poorest people of Java, the landless labourers, new opportunities for paid labour may have meant significant improvement in their material circumstances. The peasantry of Java appears to have been quite mobile in this period, with significant numbers moving considerable distances to escape burdens or to seek employment. Other forms of resistance were also seen, such as sabotage, individual acts of violence and communal demonstrations of protest. This was true of areas which were heavily committed to government crops and of those with little or no such commitment, which suggests that many of the problems experienced by the people of Java arose more from the general circumstances of Dutch rule than from specific arrangements under the aegis of the *cultuurstelsel*.

A new and important group emerged within Javanese society in the nineteenth century, nurtured by opportunities for wage labour and entrepreneurship that arose during the *cultuurstelsel* and the ‘liberal’ period that followed. While the heart of the *cultuurstelsel* was compulsory labour, there were many activities that were not organised in this way: pottery- and gunny sack-making, textile production, bricklaying, entertainment, smithing, agricultural processing, land transport, shipbuilding and similar trades and even some sugar cane harvesting were open to wage labour and local entrepreneurs. From this activity there began to emerge an indigenous middle class. The market tax was abolished in 1851 and thereafter local markets flourished. Improving networks of roads and railways also facilitated local commerce, as did the general growth of population and increasing money supply. During the post-1870 ‘liberal’ period, wage labour was encouraged as a matter of colonial policy. In a census of 1900, 16 per cent of working adult males in Java were employed exclusively in non-agricultural work: as officials, school teachers, professional religious, traders, fishermen, factory workers, craftsmen, carters and shippers. Another 15 per cent were partially employed in this way, with supplementary agricultural income. This census did not include women, who had long dominated small-scale trading. So there was now a nascent proletariat and an emerging middle class that had crucial roles to play in religious reform movements beginning in the nineteenth century and in anti-colonial agitation in the twentieth.

The results of the *cultuurstelsel* for the Dutch are quite clear: at long last, steady and immense profitability was achieved. By 1831 the colonial Indonesian budget was balanced, and thereafter the old debts of the VOC were paid off. Enormous remittances were sent to the Netherlands: from 1831 to 1877 the Dutch home treasury received 832 million florins (f.). Before 1850 these remittances accounted for about 19 per cent of Dutch state revenues, in 1851–60 for about 32 per cent and in 1860–6 for about 34 per cent. These revenues kept the domestic Dutch economy afloat: debts were redeemed, taxes reduced, fortifications, waterways and the Dutch state railway built, all on the profits forced out of the villages of Java. Ironically, the funds were also used to pay compensation to slave-owners to emancipate the slaves of Surinam (Dutch Guiana). Amsterdam again became a major world marketplace for tropical produce, especially coffee and sugar.

It had been demonstrated that Java was capable of producing a substantial surplus, at least under coercion. This surplus was, however, used to support the Dutch colonial administration in Java, its conquests in the outer islands (see [Chapter 13](#)) and the Dutch

home economy. The main investment was Javanese and Sundanese labour, and both the agricultural and administrative techniques were mostly of a traditional kind. The Dutch succeeded in milking the economy of Java, while returning significant benefits to only a small stratum of the indigenous society.

By the 1840s, however, the *cultuurstelsel* was already encountering problems. Signs of hardship among the Javanese and Sundanese began to appear, particularly in sugar areas. Sugar cane was grown on the same land as rice, and the time required for the growth and harvesting of sugar, followed by preparation of the fields for rice, made it difficult to achieve a steady rotation of the two crops. Sugar mills also competed with rice agriculture for water supplies. Indigo also produced problems. For example, there is reason to believe that in the vast areas committed to indigo in Pěkalongan, nutrients in the soil were so depleted as to cause a series of bad rice harvests several years after indigo planting was cut back. Rice shortages appeared, and the price of rice fluctuated widely, with some sharp rises in the late 1830s and 1840s. The famines which broke out in Java were, however, caused more by the poverty of the peasants and the avarice of those who held power over them than by actual shortages of rice, for there was often rice available (not infrequently warehoused by local elites and Chinese traders seeking higher prices) but the peasants could not pay for it. In 1844 there was a major rice crop failure followed by famine in Cirěbon. Epidemics, particularly typhoid, broke out in 1846–50, and famines spread in Central Java around 1849–50. The government meanwhile imposed drastic increases in land tax and other impositions. Mass flight from villages led to even more rice land falling out of production. Financial crises also occurred in both the Netherlands Trading Company and the Java budget. The extension of the *cultuurstelsel* was reaching its limits, and in 1845–50 exports of coffee, sugar and indigo fell. After 1850, however, profits from coffee and sugar again rose rapidly as the world prices for these crops rose. Indeed, in 1851–70 the Netherlands treasury received twice the amount of remittances it had received in 1831–50. In the colonial budget itself, however, a major escalation in military expenditures (see [Chapter 13](#)) produced a deficit by 1858, which could only be made good from the profits of the *cultuurstelsel*. The financial surplus from the Indies finally came to a definitive end in 1877.

Opposition to the *cultuurstelsel* now grew in the Netherlands. Government opinion began to doubt whether the system was tenable any longer, despite its renewed profitability. In 1848 a liberal constitution for the first time gave the Dutch parliament (States-General) a position of influence in colonial affairs. In parliament, opposition coalesced. Dutch middle-class interests, grown wealthy on the profits which the Dutch economy had derived from Java, pressed for change. They urged a ‘liberal’ reform: a drastic reduction of the role of government in the colonial economy, a freeing of the restrictions on private enterprise in Java and an end to forced labour and oppression of the Javanese and Sundanese. In 1860 a former colonial official, Eduard Douwes Dekker (1820–87), published a novel entitled **Max Havelaar** under the pseudonym ‘Multatuli’. This was a devastating exposure of the oppressive and corrupt state of Dutch rule in Java. This book became an influential weapon against the nineteenth-century colonial regime in Java. The liberals faced a dilemma, however, for they wanted to be rid of the *cultuurstelsel* but not of the profits which the Dutch gained from Java.

The result of this political debate in the Netherlands was the piecemeal dismantling of the *cultuurstelsel*, as the colonial government abolished compulsory state crops throughout its Indonesian territories. The first to go were the least profitable, or those which were not profitable at all: pepper in 1862, clove and nutmeg in 1864 (this being truly the end of an era, after over 250 years), indigo, tea and cinnamon in 1865, and tobacco in 1866 (tobacco soon proved, however, to be profitable for private growers; see [Chapter 14](#)). Coffee and sugar, the latter having been a particular source of scandals, were the most profitable and the last to be abolished. In the Sugar Law of 1870 it was decreed that the government would withdraw from sugar cultivation over 12 years, beginning in 1878. Compulsory coffee cultivation was abolished by even slower stages from the 1870s. It finally came to an end in Priangan – where it had begun in the early eighteenth century – at the beginning of 1917, and in areas of the north coast of Java in June 1919.

The Agrarian Law of 1870 opened Java to private enterprise. Freedom and security were provided for entrepreneurs. Only Indonesians could own land, but foreigners were allowed to lease it from the government for up to 75 years or from indigenous holders for maximum periods of between 5 and 20 years (depending upon the conditions of tenure). Private estate agriculture could now develop in Java as well as the outer islands. The opening of the Suez Canal in 1869 and the development of steam navigation (largely in British hands) from about the same time further encouraged private development by improving communications with Europe. In 1860 private and government exports from all of Indonesia were roughly equal in value, but by 1885 private exports were ten times those of government. The total value of state and private exports in 1885 was twice that of 1860. The number of European civilians in Java increased rapidly, from 17,285 in 1852 to 62,447 in 1900. The ‘liberal’ period (c.1870–1900) represented a major intensification in the exploitation of Java’s agricultural resources, as well as those of the outer islands (see [Chapter 14](#)).

The impact of the ‘liberal’ period upon the people of Java requires further investigation. In general it can be said that the hopes of liberal reformers were frustrated in so far as they had believed that the new economic arrangements could both benefit indigenous people and continue to extract an agricultural surplus from Java to the benefit of the Netherlands economy and private entrepreneurs. Chinese entrepreneurs seem to have prospered from the 1870s to the turn of the century, but the incomes of Indonesian entrepreneurs, artisans and wage employees fell in real terms. Rice consumption per capita also fell, particularly after 1885, but an expansion in production of other foodstuffs (notably maize and cassava) meant that the supply of food was usually sufficient to prevent starvation, although famines occurred in Bantěn in 1881–2 and in Central Java, especially Sěmarang, in 1900–2.

The 1880s saw a major crisis which affected both Java’s indigenous people and those who so successfully exploited them. From the 1870s coffee leaf disease began to spread and coffee production fell. Still more importantly, in 1882 a sugar blight hit Cirěbon and thence spread eastwards across Java, reaching its eastern tip by 1892. The Java sugar industry was then dealt a further blow when beet sugar flooded the European market. In 1884 sugar prices plummeted. Sugar’s domination of Java’s economy meant that the impact of the crisis was widespread. A general rural depression ensued which

reached its nadir in 1887–8. Trade stagnated and bankruptcies among traders and planters led many enterprises to fall into the hands of banks and large trading companies. Even Java's wealthy Chinese opium-farmers felt the pinch: by 1889 only four of Java's 19 opium farms had escaped bankruptcy. Peasants whose livelihoods had depended on employment in the coffee and particularly the sugar industry were now thrown out of work. Having become dependent upon export crop sales, the peasants had also become exposed to their risks. The sugar industry eventually survived. After lengthy and difficult experiments in hybridisation the Dutch finally produced cane which resisted the blight. The industry also increased output. The area under cane was expanded but greater growth in production came from improvements in technology. In 1885 sugar production from Java was 380,400 metric tons and in 1890 just under 400,000 metric tons, but by 1895 it had risen to 581,600 metric tons and by 1900 to 744,300 metric tons. The industry also increased its profitability by cutting both the wages and the rents paid to peasants for their lands, so while it survived Javanese peasants continued to suffer.

The gradual freeing of the cultivator from compulsory production of export crops brought little amelioration, for the land tax and other substantial payments were still due to government but the source of income to pay these was being abolished. Van Deventer's 1904 report estimated that the average household in Java owed 23 per cent of its cash income and 20 per cent of its total (cash and kind) income to government. The hardship was felt especially in coffee districts, for coffee land could not be turned to other cash crops. In the wake of the coffee leaf disease from the 1870s onwards, and without either the compulsion of forced labour or attractive wages and prices, coffee production fell. To pay their taxes and meet other expenses, cultivators were obliged to turn to moneylenders, among whom local *hajis* (those who had made the pilgrimage to Mecca) were prominent. These were legally 'natives' and were thus able to own land; their foreclosures on mortgages led to increasing landlessness. Chinese, being classed as 'foreign Orientals', could not legally own land and were thus obliged to work through indigenous middlemen, but they were in a strong position because of their simultaneous control of pawnshops and opium dens. Government sale of opium farms was abolished in stages from 1894, finally being replaced by a state-run Opium Administration throughout Java at the beginning of 1904. The pawnshop farm was abolished in stages shortly thereafter. In van Deventer's view, however, Arabs were the most rapacious usurers of all.

The royal elite of Java were now removed from political affairs. Rebellion was virtually abandoned after 1830. There were several disturbances in the royal domains, but only rarely were members of the royal families involved. In 1842 five members of the Surakarta royal house left the court and attempted to cause trouble, but were captured within five days. In Yogyakarta a rebellion in favour of a weak-minded prince named Pangeran Suryengalaga was plotted by his mother in 1883. This affair worried the Dutch and the Yogyakarta royal establishment, but in the end it was quickly suppressed. Both Suryengalaga and his mother were on their way to exile in Měnado within a week of their attempted rebellion. Suryengalaga's name was, however, invoked in several later conspiracies. Dislike of the Dutch seems to have continued in some court circles, but it led to no serious resistance to Dutch rule. In theory the four princely

houses (the senior houses of the Sultanate of Yogyakarta and the Susuhunanate of Surakarta, and the subsidiary Mangkunégaran and Pakualaman houses) ruled their own territories (the **vorstenlanden**), and Dutch rule was indirect. In fact the Dutch Residents exercised real control there, although there were differences between the principalities and directly ruled areas because of the different legal standing of Dutch authority. The **cultuurstelsel**, for instance, did not in theory apply to these principalities, although similar arrangements for producing export crops existed. At the end of 1872 the population of these principalities was about 1.1 million.

With little room for political manoeuvre, the royal elite turned much of its energy towards cultural affairs. Pakubuwana V (b. 1785, r. 1820–3), while still crown prince, had ordered the compilation of **Sérat Cénthini** ('The book of Cénthini'); this is a major work which imparts Javanese mystical knowledge through the story of a wandering student of religion named Seh Amongraga in the time of Sultan Agung. Pakubuwana V's successors were also supporters of literary activity. With royal patronage, Raden Ngabei Ronggawarsita (1802–73) was active in Surakarta as an author of both prose and verse works in Javanese. Conventionally seen as the last of the great court poets, he is generally accepted as the author of the monumental prose work **Pustakaraja Purwa** ('The book of kings of ancient times'), and its prologue **Paramayoga** ('The exalted age'?) covered the mythical past of Java, beginning with Adam and Indian gods and ending in the year 730. He also wrote several moralistic works in verse and prose. Mangkunégaran IV (r. 1853–81) was a major poet, and collaborated with Ronggawarsita. Among the works attributed to him, the poem **Wedhatama** ('Exalted wisdom') is the most famous; this teaches moral values consistent with the Javanese 'mystic synthesis' variant of Islam, and is critical of the more self-consciously Islamic community in Java.

The royal elite of Yogyakarta were also patrons of literature. Pakualam II (r. 1829–58) and Pakualam III (r. 1858–64) were considerable authors themselves, and the house of Pakualam patronised much literary activity. Sultan Haméngkubuwana V (r. 1822–6, 1828–55) also enthusiastically encouraged the writing of literary works, and may have composed some personally. Thereby the library of the Sultanate, which had been looted by the British in 1812, was gradually rebuilt. Royal patronage of the arts also led to much activity in music and **wayang** in both Surakarta and Yogyakarta. In general, the subsidiary principalities of the Mangkunégaran and Pakualaman seem to have been more lively and experimental than the two senior courts.

The cultural activity of the courts after 1830 did not, however, produce much real innovation. It was largely an attempt to express the ideals of an aristocratic ethos which was increasingly irrelevant in an age of peace, but which the royal elite found reassuring and the Dutch found useful as part of their policy of using 'traditional' authority in the cause of tranquillity. There was very little which was comparable to the development of more modern ideas and literary forms that can be discerned among Filipino, Vietnamese, Japanese, Indian or Arab writers in the nineteenth century.

In the visual arts there were some signs of the arrival of new ideas. Raden Saleh (1811–80), a descendant of the family which ruled Sémarang under the VOC, spent over twenty years in Europe where he was influenced by Delacroix and became a well-known court painter. After his return to Java in 1851 he painted at the courts of Yogyakarta and the Mangkunégaran for a time. A few (mostly anonymous) Indonesians

also became skilled draughtsmen and a few of their illustrations appear in nineteenth-century European publications concerning Indonesia. This was largely a matter of individuals adopting wholly European styles. The traditional Javanese arts were, however, marginally influenced. For instance, a few Javanese manuscripts superimpose *wayang* figures upon more naturalistic water-colour backgrounds or provide rather crude European-style illustrations. This somewhat greater innovation in the visual, as opposed to the literary, arts was probably made possible by the absence of a significant indigenous tradition of painting or illustration (except for manuscript illumination or the rigidly stylised *batik* patterns) to challenge the new styles.

Christianity became, for the first time, an element in indigenous life in the nineteenth century. European missionaries had little success in converting Javanese Muslims, as was also the case in other parts of the Islamic world. But there grew up remarkable communities of indigenous Christians, led by local Christian gurus, inspired by Christian tracts which they read, willing to assimilate Christianity within their Javanese identity and lifestyles, but having little to do – and sometimes significant conflict – with the conventional missionaries sent by Dutch churches. This movement began with C. L. Coolen (c.1773– c.1873), the Indo-European son of a Russian father and an aristocratic Javanese mother from Surakarta. He combined Christianity with local Javanese customs and mysticism. The most famous of the local Christian leaders was Sadrach Surapranata (b. c.1835, d.1924). His version of Christianity led to conflicts with the European missionaries, who accused him of multiple false teachings. Indeed, his teachings revealed clear accommodation of Javanese ideas. He proclaimed Jesus Christ to be the messianic ‘just king’ of Javanese tradition, the *ratu adil*. He used Arabic–Javanese terminology in calling a church a *masjid* (mosque) and the leader of the congregation an *imam*. Unlike his more conventional European missionary competitors, however, Sadrach won converts. For this very reason he was seen as a threat both by the missionaries and by the government. In 1887 he even baptised an aristocrat of the Pakualaman principality. By 1890 Sadrach’s community consisted of nearly 7000 members in 371 villages. By 1900 there were probably around 20,000 Christians in Central and East Java – a mere 0.1 per cent of all Javanese. But it was culturally significant that they represented a breach in the previous equation of Javanese identity with Islamic faith.

A vernacular press emerged in Java in this period. The first vernacular-language newspaper in Indonesian history began to be published in Surakarta in 1855. This paper, *Bramartani*, was published in Javanese using the Javanese script, and was edited by the Indo-European translator C. F. Winter senior (1799–1859) and other members of the Winter family, as well as Javanese editors. This was intended to bring general information, including news from elsewhere in the Indonesian archipelago and overseas, to an elite readership. A year later the first weekly newspaper in the Malay language appeared in Surabaya with the title *Soerat Kabar Bahasa Melaijoe* ('Malay-Language Newspaper'). It was intended for a readership of traders and shopkeepers, but folded after three months. With modern education still very limited in Java, most of these early newspapers and periodicals had short lives, rarely surviving more than two years. *Bramartani*, however, had a longer, if not entirely unchequered, history, lasting until 1932.

Of all the royal courts, the Mangkunégaran was the most successful in adjusting to the new circumstances of Dutch rule. It may be significant that this was the only court where the military traditions of the Javanese aristocracy lived on, albeit under Dutch control. The Mangkunégaran Legion, consisting of infantry, cavalry and artillery, continued to be maintained with Dutch financial support. The Mangkunégaran also developed extensive estate agriculture, especially in coffee and sugar. The foundations of this economic activity were laid in the reign of Mangkunégara IV (r. 1853–81), when Europeans were employed in introducing European techniques of estate management and exploitation, but with the important difference that the profits were reinvested in the prince's domains rather than being sent abroad. Twice, in 1857 and 1877, Mangkunégara IV failed to regain control over lands which had been leased to European planters. But he was successful in slowly replacing the appanage system for his retainers and officials with one of salaries. Although serious burdens were laid upon the village population, migration into his domains suggests that these burdens were less than in some other districts. Mangkunégara IV had, however, created a typically 'underdeveloped' economy, in which revenues depended upon the world price for a few crops. After his time, the spread of coffee diseases and the rise of sugar beet in Europe produced an extended financial crisis in the Mangkunégaran, as they did in the rest of Java. This resulted in the Residents of Surakarta taking direct control of Mangkunégaran finances from 1888 to 1899, during which time the principality's financial position was restored.

As European-style gilt chairs, Italian marble, crystal chandeliers and Dutch military uniforms and decorations appeared, the courts probably became more splendid than they had ever been before. Their cultural prestige among the masses seems to have been high. The combination of their political impotence and cultural prestige perhaps explains why the royal elite were not major targets of criticism for the nationalist movement which arose in the early twentieth century. But there was little substance left to court life: the royal elite were knights with no more battles to fight. The courts therefore degenerated into an effete formalism, an elaborate and antiquated artificiality.

The higher elite, the main foundation of Dutch rule outside the principalities, found their positions changing under 'liberalism', as a renewed zeal for social reform crept into colonial policy. During the *cultuurstelsel*, the *bupatis* and higher administrative elite had profited greatly in both incomes and security. But their abuses, especially in the use of compulsory labour, had produced both animosity from their own society and increasing criticism from their Dutch masters. From the 1860s onwards the Dutch took steps to reform the haphazard administrative structure and to create a more regularised indigenous administration to parallel the Dutch administration. The *bupatis* (of whom there were 72 in 1900) remained in theory the supreme indigenous officials and leaders of their society. Increasingly, however, Dutch practice bypassed them and placed greater reliance on their assistants, the *patihs*. The *wédana* (district heads, of whom there were 434 in 1900) also grew in importance, and the centre of gravity in the indigenous administration came to rest upon the *patih* and *wédana*, whose tasks and posts tended to merge as the years passed.

The highest level of the aristocratic regional elite thus began to be bypassed. The *bupatis'* wealth and opportunities for abuse were also eroded. In 1867 they were

deprived of appanages and were given salaries instead, which were often said to be inadequate. In the same year, the payment of percentages on government crops to European civil servants was abolished, but these percentages continued to be paid to indigenous officials until 1907. As the *cultuurstelsel* was progressively abolished, however, their incomes from this source declined. In 1882 all indigenous officials lost the right to personal services from their subjects, and in the following twenty years many other forms of compulsory labour on public works were abolished. Although this considerably reduced opportunities for abuse by indigenous officials, it brought little improvement for villagers. Their obligation for services was converted into a head-tax in cash, which may have been an even greater burden.

The Dutch had never before been interested in ‘modernising’ the *bupatis*, for they were most useful for their ‘traditional’ status. Their level of education was poor: in 1900 only four out of the 72 *bupatis* were said to know the Dutch language. The colonial government had used the *bupatis* for its own purposes, abusing their status and encouraging them to abuse it. When the abuses became clear and the *bupatis* ceased to be so useful, the government began to bypass them. By 1900 even the outward displays of aristocratic status were under attack. The *hormat circulaire* (etiquette circular) of 1904 ended official Dutch encouragement of ‘outmoded’ displays, such as parasols, large groups of retainers, regalia and so on.

In the ‘liberal’ period the government not only acted to abolish the feudal attributes of the aristocratic elite, but also attempted to instil a new spirit in its younger generation. Beginning in 1878 *hoofdenscholen* (chiefs’ schools) were established for the sons of the higher elite. From about 1893 these took on a more vocational character, with courses in law, bookkeeping, surveying and so on. But the demoralisation within the *bupatis’* families was already such that many sons did not wish to succeed to their fathers’ positions. Increasingly, the government had to fill high administrative posts with the sons of lower officials or even from outside the ranks of the indigenous aristocracy.

The higher aristocratic elite of Java was, by 1900, at a low point in prestige, authority and self-assurance. There were, of course, individual exceptions, such as the *bupati* of Majakerta who in 1896 established a fund to loan seed rice free of interest to farmers, using mosque funds as finance. But many others seem to have responded in other ways to changing and difficult times. Many of the younger generation left administrative service and sought careers in law or medicine.

The higher aristocratic elite also found itself challenged by a growing group of new officials. The administrative upper classes of Java are collectively called *priyayi*, and this new group can be loosely called the ‘new’ or ‘lesser’ *priyayi*. The emergence of this group reflects an ambivalence in late-nineteenth-century colonial policy about the need for ‘traditional’ forms of authority. Their tasks were wholly new, being the jobs which new administrative services required. But they were formally defined into the *priyayi* class and accorded titles and forms of display associated with that class, in order to give these new roles a clear status in indigenous society. In 1861, for instance, government school teachers were given the rank of *mantri-guru* (teaching officer) and the right to appear in public with a parasol, a pike, a mat, a betel-nut set and an entourage of four. A vaccination service had begun on a small scale in 1811, and in

1851 the ‘Dokter-Jawa’ school was established in Weltevreden (a suburb of Batavia, now Gambir). In 1875 the vaccinator course was reformed, and thereafter it consisted of a course of five to six years taught in Dutch. Other new *priyayi* emerged in the irrigation, forestry, railway, telegraph and other services. After the 1904 *hormat circulaire* this process began to be abandoned, the last group to be defined into the *priyayi* class being government pawnshop clerks in 1906.

The new *priyayi* differed from the old aristocratic elite less in their social origins (for many came from families which were at least among the better-off) than in the basis of their status. The new *priyayi* achieved their standing through individual talent, whereas the old had ascribed status due to their birth. Conflicts and tensions naturally developed between these two groups. In the twentieth century, the new *priyayi* were destined to play a crucial role. Those who remained in the bureaucracy joined the older *priyayi* to become the backbone of first Dutch, then Japanese, then Indonesian administrations. Those who turned their backs on government service led the anti-colonial movement and created the independent state.

With the royal and bureaucratic elites of Java so tied to the colonial administration, centred in urban areas, or reduced to political impotence, rural peasant protests found little leadership. They broke out often, especially from the 1870s onwards. Indeed, these protests or small-scale rebellions were often directed specifically against the indigenous administration, as well as against Chinese or against European officials and entrepreneurs. They sought inspiration in messianic ideas, both Islamic and Javanese nativist in origin. Such leadership as existed often came from rural Islamic leaders. But none of these movements seriously threatened colonial rule. Mass discontent was deeply rooted by the end of the nineteenth century, but it lacked effective direction or coordination.

Meanwhile, Islam in Java was undergoing dramatic changes. The ‘mystic synthesis’ version of Islam which was established by the later eighteenth century – Sufism with the three characteristics of strong Islamic identity, widespread observation of the five ritual pillars of Islam and acceptance of local Javanese supernatural forces – was coming under challenge from two main directions. One of these was the new Islamic reform movements spreading from the Middle East, first represented in Indonesia by the Padri reformers of West Sumatra (see Chapter 13). The other was the form of modernity represented by Dutch colonialism and the industrialising, modernising culture of nineteenth-century Europe. The ‘mystic synthesis’ was not completely superseded, but it ceased to be the only or principal expression of religious identity among Javanese.

Reformist Islam began to be noticeable in Java from about the 1850s. The nascent Javanese middle class who had been nurtured by the *cultuurstelsel* played a central role in this. Their commercial activities, particularly in the towns of the north coast, brought them into association with Arab urban communities, among whom were supporters of Islamic reform. Increasing numbers of Javanese had the resources necessary to perform the pilgrimage (*hajj*) to Mecca, where also they encountered reformist movements in Islam. From the 1850s colonial government regulations were changed so that the cost of the pilgrimage was reduced. From the 1860s steamships became available for the *hajj* and the opening of the Suez Canal in 1869 greatly facilitated this traffic, for now the main Indonesia–Europe sailing route went past Arabia. In 1850 – insofar as colonial

records can be relied upon – less than 50 pilgrims left Javanese-speaking areas for the pilgrimage. By 1858 that number had exploded to over 2200. The numbers went up and down in subsequent years, but never again declined to under a thousand. In 1898 there were over 5300 departing pilgrims, in 1911 over 7600. Over 10,000 went in 1914.

These Javanese developments were mirrored elsewhere in Indonesia. For the whole archipelago, an average of some 1600 *hajis* departed for Mecca each year in the 1850s and 1860s, but by the 1870s it was 2600, in the 1880s 4600 and by the end of the century over 7000. Several Indonesians became important figures in Mecca, notably Shaikh Muhammad Nawawi (1813–97) from Bantĕn. In 1828, at the age of 15, he travelled to Mecca, where he spent the rest of his long life. In c.1884 he published a lengthy Arabic commentary upon the *Qur'an*, thereby becoming the first major Indonesian commentator since Abdurrauf of Singkil in the seventeenth century. While Nawawi's commentary is in many respects a conservative one, Johns argues that its approach was consistent with the reformism then arising in the Islamic world.

The growing pilgrimage traffic supported significant changes in the world of Javanese Islam. Not all pilgrims returned as committed reformers, of course. As noted above, not a few were usurers and landowners. But many did support religious reform and activism. The pilgrimage contributed to a rapidly increasing number of professional religious leaders and Islamic schools (*pĕasantren*). In 1862 there were reckoned to be nearly 94,000 Javanese religious students. A decade later that figure was put at over 162,000. Colonial reports say that in 1893 there were nearly 11,000 *pĕasantrens* in Javanese-speaking areas, with over 272,000 students. Many of these schools still taught the 'mystic synthesis' version of Islam, along with rote recitation of the *Qur'an* and martial and magic arts. But the schools of the north coast were likely to teach a more reformist, puritan Islam emphasising understanding of Arabic and fidelity to Islamic law (*shari'ah*). This reformist stream seems to have represented a challenge to the social and religious standing of more traditional Islamic leaders in Java.

More orthodox Sufi orders also spread in the latter half of the nineteenth century among Javanese. The Naqshabandiyya order grew particularly among the elite of West and Central Java. The hybrid Qadiriyya wa Naqshabandiyya – an amalgamation of two orders founded by Ahmad Khatib from the West Kalimantan state of Sambas, who died in Mecca c. 1875 – attracted many adherents and was prominent in some anti-colonial movements, notably the peasant uprising in Bantĕn of July 1888. Naqshabandiyya and Qadiriyya wa Naqshabandiyya challenged the previously dominant Shattariyya order and conflicts between them were not uncommon. In Java, orthodox Sufi teachings were popularised and spread also by the prolific Kyai Haji Muhammad Shaleh bin Haji 'Umar al-Samarani (c. 1820–1903), more commonly known as Kyai Shaleh Darat. Among his many works was the first Javanese-language interpretation of the *Qur'an* from a Sufi perspective. His works are still to be found in bookshops and *pĕasantrens* today.

But not all Javanese responded positively to the new versions of Islam. For the first time in Javanese history, from the 1850s there began to appear a group of ordinary Javanese who were distancing themselves from Islamic practices and commitments. Whereas it seems (on the basis of patchy evidence, it must be remembered) that around the start of the century Javanese of all classes generally observed the five ritual pillars

of Islam – the confession of faith, daily ritual prayer, payment of the religious tax, fasting in the month of Ramadan and undertaking the pilgrimage for those with the means to do so – now a substantial number of Javanese began to abandon such practices. The more pious community castigated these less pious neighbours as ***abangan*** – meaning the red or brown ones, a term perhaps originating from their colourful clothing or even the red tooth-staining that comes from betel-chewing. There is no doubt that by the end of the nineteenth century, the ***abangan*** represented the majority of Javanese. The pious community – who called themselves ***putihan*** (the white ones) but in recent times are more commonly called ***santri*** – were a minority. Thus it seems that, whereas Javanese society had once had a shared sense of religious identity, by the late nineteenth century it was polarising along lines of differing religious identities.

Nor were ***abangan*** commoners the only Javanese who had little or no interest in more reformist Islam. The ***priyayi*** elite's horizons broadened dramatically in the course of the nineteenth century as their association with Dutch colonial power brought them into contact with modernity à la Europe. The new inventions and styles of industrialising Europe and America – steamships, photography, smokeless gunpowder and breech-loading rifles, railways, newspapers, the telegraph, electric lighting, reading clubs, European-style dances and receptions, news from across the archipelago and from the rest of the world, and much more – became part of the ***priyayi*** world. There was little room in this world for reformist, puritan Islamic pieties and little evidence of respect for those who embraced them. The Javanese-language weekly and sometimes biweekly newspaper ***Bramartani*** (for a time entitled ***Jurumartani***) began to be published in Surakarta in 1855 for a ***priyayi***, European and educated Chinese readership; its pages reflected the expanding horizons and interests of the Javanese upper classes. Many older superstitions, an interest in classical Javanese literature and arts and a sympathy for the 'mystic synthesis' style of Islam survived in elite circles, but they were now accompanied by enthusiasm for more modern ideas and European education. From 1848 the government began opening schools in Java where children of the elite could learn useful skills that prepared them for government service. The number of children in these schools was far below that found in Islamic ***pésantrens*** but the graduates of the government schools were destined to play a dominant role in Java.

Amongst the ***priyayi*** elite there were even some who regarded the conversion of the Javanese to Islam as having been a civilisational mistake, which they prophesied would come to an end in an age when ***buda*** (understood as the pre-Islamic, 'Buddhist' civilisation of Java) would be combined with ***budi*** (understood as modern, European-inspired intellectualism). In the 1870s, three famous books were written that proposed an anti-Islamic interpretation of Javanese history. These were ***Babad Kědhiri***, ***Suluk Gatholoco*** and ***Sěrat Děrmagandhul***. The fall of Majapahit to Islamic successor states was depicted as the result of unforgivable perfidy by devious Muslim leaders. The Islamic faith, its followers and some of its holiest aspects were treated with unrestrained, often obscene ridicule, particularly in ***Suluk Gatholoco*** and ***Sěrat Děrmagandhul***.

These religious, social and intellectual developments facilitated increasing polarisation in Javanese society. Many thoughtful Javanese felt their society to be in

crisis, subjugated by foreign rulers, impoverished and with its very cultural identity threatened. For pious Muslim reformers, the answer to these challenges was to perfect the Islamisation of the society through a purified faith. For many of the *priyayi*, the answer was to modernise the society by applying the fruits of Western learning. For a few, the way forward was to overthrow the influence of Islam altogether and return to a pristine, pre-Islamic culture. For the majority of ordinary Javanese villagers who constituted the *abangan*, there was probably no obvious answer at all.

By 1900 an older order had been definitively destroyed in Java. The advantageous ratio of population to agricultural land, the vitality of the old elite, the religious consensus, and the previous structure of power and authority had all disappeared or were rapidly disappearing. The rise of reformist Islamic movements in the Middle East and the growth of population in Java played their part in these developments, but much of the causation is to be ascribed directly to Dutch influence. In 1900 Java was in a state of transition, with an old age dead but the form of the new age not yet clear.

## ***Chapter 13***

---

# **The Outer Islands, c.1800–1910**

By about 1910 most of the regions which now comprise the Republic of Indonesia were brought under Dutch rule. Governor General van den Bosch (1830–3) had established profitability as the main principle of government, and believed that the Dutch should therefore restrict their attentions to Java, Sumatra and Bangka (a source of tin). Nevertheless, from about 1840 onwards Dutch involvement increased throughout the outer islands. There were many reasons for this. Often there were economic motivations, including the protection of inter-insular trade. (The economic developments that followed Dutch expansion are described in [Chapter 14](#).) Often local Dutch officials intervened out of ambition for glory or promotion, despite Batavia's official policy of avoiding further extensions of Dutch authority. Two general considerations applied everywhere. First, to protect the security of areas they already held, the Dutch felt compelled to subdue other regions which might support or inspire resistance movements. Second, as the European scramble for colonies reached its height in the later nineteenth century, the Dutch felt obliged to establish their claims to the outer islands of the archipelago in order to prevent some other Western power from intervening there, even where the Dutch initially had no great interest themselves.

In the last quarter of the nineteenth century, the equation of military power shifted decisively against independent Indonesian states, and this made the final stage of Dutch expansion possible. In the days of wooden sailing ships and muzzle-loading muskets, the gap in military technology between Indonesians and Europeans had not been insuperable. But as the expanding colonial power began to adopt breech-loading rifles, repeaters, steam-powered gunboats, and the other military by-products of an industrialised society, most of the pre-industrial states of Indonesia could resist only with determination and outmoded firearms. A few independent rulers attempted to redress the balance by purchasing modern armaments, but they could rarely equal the military power of the colonial forces for long.

The extension of Dutch power to the outer islands was quite different from its expansion in Java, for in most of the outer islands there had never been any permanent or serious pretensions to authority by the Dutch. There were some areas where the Dutch had long had contacts, but very few in which they had previously been the predominant power. In districts where the VOC had earlier established trading posts, by 1800 these were rarely more than powerless tokens of Dutch interest; some, indeed, had ceased to exist altogether. Even where the Dutch presence had been significant, the

British occupation of Dutch posts during the French Revolutionary wars had severed the Dutch connection. In the outer islands, Dutch expansion in the nineteenth century essentially represented the creation of a new empire, not the culmination of long and intensive involvement. In all areas, it was intimately connected with indigenous Indonesian events. It is unfortunately true, however, that for many of these regions the Indonesian side of developments has so far received inadequate historical attention.

Madura, off Java's northeast coast, did have a long tradition of involvement with the Dutch. This did not arise out of direct Dutch interest in Madura itself, but rather because of Madurese involvement in Java from the seventeenth century onwards. East Madura was ceded to the VOC in 1705 and West Madura in 1743. The island was not very fertile, and was initially of little economic value to the Dutch. Its primary product was people, who migrated in significant numbers to East Java in search of a better life. Madura was also a source of colonial troops, and this was its main value to the Dutch. In the second half of the nineteenth century (especially after 1870), however, Madura acquired greater economic value as the main supplier of salt to Dutch-governed areas of the archipelago, where salt was a profitable monopoly of the colonial government.

There were various arrangements for governing Madura, with authority divided among the lords of Bangkalan, Paměkasan and Suměněp. In 1817 the whole island became a single Residency, and in 1828 it was made a part of the Residency of Surabaya. Thereafter, Java and Madura were viewed together as a single administrative entity by the Dutch. Prior to the restoration of Dutch authority (after the British interregnum) in 1816, the Madurese lords had remained largely independent in internal affairs. After that time the Dutch took a more direct interest in the administration of Madura, and both the titles and prerogatives of the Madurese lords were reduced. Daendels and Raffles had favoured the Cakraningrat line of Suměněp and Bangkalan with the title of sultan, but in the second half of the nineteenth century the Dutch refused to give this title as new Madurese lords succeeded. By 1887 the lords of Bangkalan, Paměkasan and Suměněp were reduced to the same status as *bupatis* in Java: they were merely aristocratic Regency heads, under direct Dutch rule.

The intensification of colonial rule in Madura in the nineteenth century facilitated significant social changes. As arbitrary control by the indigenous elite over the population was restricted, the Madurese found themselves with greater freedom of movement. This led to the opening of new lands to agriculture and, along with improving infrastructure, to greater trade and prosperity. The fruits of this were often used for religious purposes, to endow religious schools and mosques. Madura, with a tradition of devout Islam, also responded to the reformist waves found in the Middle East and brought home by Madurese *hajis*, whose numbers increased as the century passed. Here, as in Java, Islamic leaders represented an influential alternative to the aristocratic elite, which was more and more associated with the *kafir* colonial government.

The experience of Bali was very different from that of Madura. The Dutch had encountered Balinese troops in Java in the eighteenth century and were also the principal purchasers of Balinese slaves, many of whom served in the VOC and colonial armies. But the Dutch had not become directly involved in this turbulent island. The British administration of Java went to war with the kings of Buleleng and Karangasěm

in 1814 in an attempt to end the slave trade. The Balinese submitted but the slave trade continued nonetheless. After 1816 the Dutch colonial government made several attempts to persuade the Balinese rajas (of whom there were about ten in 1839) to accept Dutch authority, but without success. Although the king of Badung agreed to provide soldiers for the colonial army, the Dutch had no significant influence on the island.

During the nineteenth century, Bali experienced a series of tragedies of natural, cultural, economic and political origin which give its history a wider significance and a pervasive grimness. The drama opened with the greatest natural explosion ever known, the consequence of which Bali shared with neighbouring islands. From April to July 1815, Mount Tambora on the island of Sumbawa erupted, killing more people than the better known eruption of Krakatau in 1883. Ten thousand were killed directly, an estimated 38,000 died as a result of famines which followed the eruption, and the total death toll may have been up to 117,000 in Sumbawa, Bali and Lombok. At least 25,000 died in Bali. The island was covered with 20 centimetres or more of volcanic ash which destroyed its rice fields. This tragedy was accompanied by one of several mouse plagues, which devastated food supplies, and by famine and epidemics. A further major epidemic hit Bali in 1817 and a smallpox epidemic raged in 1828. Between 1850 and 1888 there were seven epidemics of smallpox and five of cholera, four mouse plagues, outbreaks of dysentery and finally, in 1888, an earthquake. The worst death toll after 1815 was due to the smallpox epidemic of 1871 which left 15,000–18,000 dead.

Bali's economy at the start of the nineteenth century still depended heavily on the export of slaves, about 2000 being sold by the Balinese aristocracy each year. In return they imported primarily copper coins, weapons and particularly opium, which was widely consumed in Balinese society. From the time of the British interregnum, colonial governments in Batavia sought to restrict and eventually to abolish the slave trade. This threatened the incomes of Balinese aristocrats just when Mount Tambora was working its devastation upon Bali's agricultural economy. But more positive ecological and political developments then produced an economic transformation. Mount Tambora's ash deposits soon enhanced soil fertility, while the British colony of Singapore created a new market for Balinese exports (and a British interest in Bali which the Dutch regarded with much suspicion). Bali was transformed within two decades from an exporter of slaves to an exporter of crops, particularly rice, coffee and indigo, and pig meat. Rather than selling their people, Balinese lords now needed to keep them at work in the fields. The Balinese aristocracy remained in control of this new enterprise, as it had been of the slave trade. This was in sharp contrast to Minangkabau where, as will be seen below, the development of new products in the late eighteenth and early nineteenth centuries undermined the dominance of the old elite. But competition among Balinese *puris* (courts) was enhanced by these new sources of wealth, as was true also among the 'pepper rajas' of North Sumatra, as will be seen below.

By about 1840, two factors had convinced the Dutch that Bali must be brought under their influence: Balinese piracy and plundering of shipwrecks, and the possibility of some other European power becoming established there. There was little real reason to fear intervention by another European nation, for the Balinese sense of independence

was so strong that they could be expected to resist any outside power. But the problem of Balinese piracy and plundering persisted. In 1841 a Dutch ambassador persuaded the rajas of Badung, Klungkung, Karangasem and Buleleng to sign treaties recognising the sovereignty of the Dutch colonial government. It was not the primary intention of the colonial government actually to administer Bali, but merely to create a legal basis for the exclusion of any other Western power. The Balinese rajas were told that these agreements would not limit their own exercise of internal sovereignty, and they accepted them in the hope of Dutch assistance in an attack against the kingdom of Mataram in Lombok. Such military support was apparently promised by the Dutch emissary, contrary to his instructions, and to that extent these agreements rested upon deception.

In 1842–3 these rajas and those of Tabanan and Lombok (which was governed by a line of kings from Karangasem) signed further treaties designed to end the more immediate problem of the plundering of shipwrecks. These proved to be ineffective and plundering continued. The king of Buleleng now became angry when the Dutch seemed to place a wider interpretation upon his surrender of sovereignty, and in 1844 he refused to ratify the agreements. The king of Karangasem also refused. Tensions mounted while the Balinese rajas prepared for war. Late in 1845 Buleleng and Karangasem allied in an attempt to conquer other Balinese states. The Dutch felt obliged to act. In 1846 they successfully attacked Buleleng, but this was merely the first step in a long and bitter struggle. The senior king of Bali, the Dewa Agung of Klungkung, along with most of the other rajas, secretly supported the attempts of Buleleng and Karangasem to resist the Dutch, and began to construct a military coalition. The Dutch attacked again in 1848, but faced greater resistance than they had expected and were defeated. In 1849 they attacked for the third time. This campaign was successful in North Bali. When, however, the colonial forces turned their attention to South Bali, they found themselves facing formidable difficulties. The Danish trader Mads Lange intervened and made it possible for the Dutch government forces to avoid a decisive battle there.

From 1849 to about 1882, the colonial government watched over, but did not significantly interfere in, the internal affairs of South and East Bali (Klungkung, Badung, Tabanan, Gianyar, Mengwi, Bangli and Karangasem). After a domestic rebellion in Buleleng in 1853, however, the Dutch took more direct control of North and West Bali (Buleleng and Jembrana). Dutch administrators were introduced there in 1855–6 for the first time, and Dutch control grew thereafter despite isolated outbreaks of Balinese resistance. In 1882 Bali and Lombok were united as a single Residency of the Netherlands East Indies, and North Bali came under direct Dutch rule.

The kings of South and East Bali were shocked by the announcement of this new Residency of Bali, which appeared to assert a degree of colonial authority over the whole island to which they had never assented. The Dutch assured them, however, that no alteration in their status was intended and confirmed this by adopting a policy of non-interference in their affairs. This area of Bali meanwhile turned into a vast battlefield after 1883 as internecine conflicts and intrigues spread. In 1885 the king of Gianyar offered his land to the colonial government as a means of saving himself from attacks launched by Klungkung, Bangli and Mengwi. But Batavia refused him. This clear evidence that the Dutch would not intervene undermined Klungkung's attempt to

forge a united front among the rajas and encouraged further conflict. In 1891 the king of Měngwi was defeated and killed and his kingdom taken over by Badung. Now the main combatants in South Bali were Klungkung and Karangasém. Because the Balinese kingdom on Lombok was the overlord of Karangasém, the civil war now involved Lombok as well.

While Balinese lords ruled Lombok, its population was partly Hindu Balinese and partly indigenous Sasak Muslims. The various Dutch attempts to impose influence in Bali also involved Lombok, and in 1843 the Balinese raja of Lombok accepted Dutch sovereignty. He subsequently showed himself to be willing to agree to various Dutch demands. Indeed, in 1849 he supported the colonial campaign in Bali by attacking Karangasém; thereafter Karangasém was ruled by a line of the Lombok dynasty. But the colonial government sought a pretext for more direct rule over Lombok. From 1877 onwards, the Dutch desire to control opium smuggling and slavery, and to maintain Dutch prestige in the area, made the imposition of colonial rule nearly inevitable.

When in 1891 the Balinese raja of Lombok levied his Sasak subjects to fight in Bali, he precipitated a Sasak uprising led by a religious teacher of the Naqshabandiyya order. This provided Batavia with a justification for intervention. The Dutch imposed a blockade, which proved ineffective, so in 1894 they invaded. Their first expeditionary force was badly defeated by a Balinese counterattack and reinforcements had to be brought in. The fighting was bitter, but finally the raja's capital of Mataram was conquered and after it the last Balinese stronghold at Cakranégara. There the Balinese went down in a *puputan*, a final suicidal battle, a horrific end to resistance of a kind which would soon follow in South Bali as well.

As a consequence of the Dutch conquest of Lombok, Karangasém in East Bali became a Dutch dependency, which was called a 'government land' (*gouvernements-landschap*). This status provided Gusti Géde Jélantik, the lord of Karangasém, Dutch protection from his enemies. This seemed so attractive to the beleaguered lord of Gianyar that he offered to become a Dutch dependant in 1900 and was accepted. By anticipating Dutch dominion as inevitable, these two lords employed the new political realities of the Indonesian archipelago to protect themselves. The Dewa Agung of Klungkung protested at this extension of Dutch authority, to no avail.

By the turn of the twentieth century, the Dutch were adopting the 'Ethical policy', which is discussed in [Chapter 14](#). In the case of Bali – which remained of little economic value to Batavia – the Dutch were particularly concerned to suppress arbitrary rule, slavery and opium smuggling, the last not in order to abolish opium usage but in order to bring it within the government's own very profitable opium arrangements. The rarely practised but culturally significant custom of burning widows alive at the cremation of their royal husbands also greatly offended the Dutch. Indeed, Governor General W. Rooseboom (1898–1904) was so angry at being unable to prevent a widow-burning at Tabanan in 1903 (probably the last to take place) that he submitted his resignation to the Minister of Colonies, but was refused. The government pressured Balinese lords on this issue and by 1905 all had agreed to the abolition of widow-burning.

Balinese independence finally ended in a horrific fashion. The plundering of a shipwreck in 1904 provided the Dutch with an occasion for military intervention. They

attacked in 1906. The two raja families of Badung responded in a way that has haunted Indonesian history ever since. First at Den Pasar and then at Pamécutan, they ritually purified themselves for death, dressed in white, and, armed only with lances and *krieses*, stormed out to their final battle (*puputan*). As Dutch guns cut down the rajas and their families, including women and children, the Balinese royalty paused only to kill their wounded, and then marched forward again until virtually all were dead. Probably over a thousand died in these *puputans*. The colonial forces moved on to Tabanan, where the raja surrendered but then committed suicide with his son. Karangasém, Klungkung, Bangli and Gianyar were also forced to accept more direct Dutch authority. The last act in Bali's tragedy occurred in 1908. The senior king of Bali, the Dewa Agung of Klungkung, objected to the introduction of the government's opium administration in April 1908 and launched a final and futile attempt to resist Dutch rule. This precipitated the last Dutch expedition of conquest to Bali. The Dewa Agung and his followers were cut down in the last *puputan*. Bali's independence was at an end. The royal families who survived Dutch conquest with some of their status and prerogatives intact were those who had anticipated colonial rule and sought an accommodation in advance of conquest.

Farther east, the remaining islands of Nusa Těnggara (Lesser Sunda Islands) were brought under effective Dutch rule only in the first decade of the twentieth century. The main islands are Sumbawa, Flores, Sumba, Savu, Roti, Timor and the Solor and Alor groups. Flores was the main target of Dutch activity in the nineteenth century. Slave-trading and the plundering of shipwrecks in this area led to expeditions against Flores in 1838 and 1846. The Portuguese still governed East Timor and laid claim to other areas, but in 1859 they recognised Dutch claims to Flores. In 1890 a further Dutch military expedition was sent there to protect a tin-exploration mission. A rebellion in 1907 led to a colonial expeditionary force sweeping through the whole of Flores in 1907–8, putting down resistance everywhere, but not ending local animosity towards Dutch rule. This conquest facilitated proselytisation by Catholic missions in Flores, using village schools as their primary vehicle. Conversions were welcome to the colonial government as a barrier to the penetration of Islam. The other areas of Nusa Těnggara were also brought under definitive Dutch rule in the years 1905–7. The Portuguese, however, remained in control of East Timor.

The cultural, economic and demographic character of Nusa Těnggara was significantly affected by Dutch expansion. Except for providing soldiers for the VOC, Savu had remained relatively isolated before the nineteenth century, resisting both Islam and Christianity, although there had been some movement of Savunese to Sumba. From about 1860 Savu was forced open to the outside world. One of the first consequences was a smallpox epidemic which killed between one-third and one-half of the population of Savu in 1869. Christian missionary work also began there. Christian converts were rejected by Savunese society, quite unlike the circumstances on Roti, and these Christian Savunese were now encouraged to settle in larger numbers on Sumba in an effort to counteract the spread of Islam there, and on Timor (but in smaller numbers). At the same time Christian Rotinese were being encouraged to settle on Timor. The palm-tapping economies of the Rotinese and Savunese were thus transported to Sumba and Timor. On both of the islands the immigrants formed a favoured and educated elite,

whom the Dutch defended from local attacks. In the twentieth century Rotinese and Savunese Christians were to dominate both government service and the anticolonial movements on Timor. Important changes also followed the introduction of horse raising for export in Sumba from the 1840s and of Balinese cattle in Timor from about 1910; these developments are analysed in detail by Fox (*Harvest of the Palm*).

South Sulawesi was a great challenge to the Dutch. As the main ally of the VOC, Bone had become the most powerful state in the area. In 1814 and 1816 Bone and other South Sulawesi states attacked the British, but were defeated. When the Dutch returned in 1816 the hostilities ceased, but tensions grew between the Dutch and Bone. Many South Sulawesi rulers believed that their previous relations with the Dutch had been cancelled by the Dutch surrender to the British in 1811, and that the Treaty of Bungaya (1667) no longer had legal force. In 1824 Governor General van der Capellen visited the region and persuaded the other states of South Sulawesi to renew the Treaty of Bungaya, but Bone refused. Upon van der Capellen's departure, the queen of Bone led the Bugis states into war, conquered Dutch-governed districts and slaughtered two Dutch garrisons.

In 1825 the Dutch and the Makassarese forces of Gowa defeated Bone, but when the Java War (1825–30) broke out, all but an absolutely essential minimum of colonial troops were withdrawn to Java, thereby enabling Bone to resume its hostile posture. Not until 1838 did Bone renew the Treaty of Bungaya. This did not, however, establish Dutch supremacy. Rebellions continued to break out, both because of indigenous conflict and because of opposition to Dutch rule. Colonial forces again fought major campaigns in 1858–60, but the final and decisive conquest did not occur until 1905–6, when the resistance of the Bugis and Makassarese states was broken.

The animist Toraja peoples of the South Sulawesi highlands also represented a considerable challenge to the Dutch in the late nineteenth century. Most Torajans continued to adhere to their 'Aluk' animist religion, having resisted Islamising pressures from their southern Bugis neighbours for two centuries. By the late nineteenth century the Torajan highlands were notable particularly for the export of coffee and slaves. Perhaps as much as 10 per cent of the Torajan population was exported as slaves. Trade in firearms also grew from about the 1870s, making intra-Torajan conflicts bloodier and the cost to foreign conquerors potentially higher. Such trade and conflicts also increased interaction (including intermarriage) between Torajan and Bugis elites, opening the door to Islamising influences.

In the wake of their attack on Bone in 1905, the colonial forces prepared to march into the highlands. The Torajans resolved – but then failed – to take a common stand against them. Bitter resistance nevertheless prevented the Dutch from subduing the highlands until 1906. In Toraja, the Dutch perceived a race between Christianity and Islam, so Batavia subsidised Protestant – and from 1937 also allowed Catholic – missions among the Torajans. The Protestant missionary A. A. van de Loosdrecht came to Toraja in 1914 but was murdered in 1917 after he decided that it was necessary to stop gambling, cockfighting and the all-important death feasts. This was part of a wider armed resistance of that year which the Dutch crushed. They were not thereafter challenged in the Torajan highlands until the arrival of the Japanese in 1942. In the religious competition, Christianity outpaced – but did not eliminate – the spread of

Islam. Both remained minority religions among the Torajans and not a few converts reverted to Aluk. The arrival of **Muhammadiyah** (see Chapter 15) in the area in 1930 seems, indeed, to have slowed the spread of Islam, as a consequence of **Muhammadiyah's** generally uncompromising animosity towards local traditions.

The Dutch faced problems after the British interregnum even in Ambon, the oldest of their directly governed districts in Indonesia. The Ambonese had been pleased by the two periods of British administration (1796–1803, 1810–17), and had lost much of their awe for Dutch power. When the Dutch administration returned in 1817, it seemed unwilling to support the Protestant church to the extent that Ambonese thought proper. This was a major cause of the violence which immediately erupted. An Ambonese Christian soldier named Thomas Matulesia (?1783–1817), also known as Pattimura, led a rebellion on Saparua, took the Dutch fortress there and repelled the colonial force sent against him. After the Dutch Resident on Saparua and his family (except for one small child) were murdered, the Dutch sent reinforcements from Batavia. The rebels were then defeated and Matulesia surrendered. In December 1817 he was hanged in Ambon with three others. Ambon gradually assumed its role as the most loyal of all Dutch territories in Indonesia. In the later years of the nineteenth century, the ending of the government clove monopoly created an economic crisis in Ambon. For the more educated Ambonese – who were overwhelmingly Christian rather than Muslim – the main opportunity for economic advancement now lay in service with the expanding colonial government, either as bureaucrats or as soldiers. The special role which they thus came to play elsewhere in the Indonesian archipelago was to make Ambonese Christians the objects of suspicion in the eyes of twentieth-century nationalists.

The eastern extremity of contemporary Indonesia, Papua (Irian Jaya, West New Guinea), was the last area to come under Dutch rule. In 1828 Fort Du Bus was established at what is now Lobo, solely to prevent any other power from settling there. It was soon concluded that, so far as could then be seen, there was nothing to attract anyone on this vast and remote island, its interior populated by bands of Stone Age peoples. Fort Du Bus was located in a malarial region and took a great toll in men and money; it was abandoned in 1836. Papua was in fact only brought under Dutch occupation beginning in 1898, especially in the period 1919–28.

The Aru and Tanimbar island groups to the west of Papua were of little interest to the Dutch. Only Aru had much economic value as a source of pearls and mother-of-pearl, as well as birds of paradise. The VOC had monopolised the trade between Banda and Aru from the 1620s, but in the general VOC withdrawal in the late eighteenth century this trade had been taken over by Bugis and Makassarese. Only after 1882 were Aru and Tanimbar brought under regular Dutch administration.

In Kalimantan (Borneo) there emerged a more direct competition between expanding imperial interests. In the early nineteenth century, both Britain and the Netherlands had interests there which were fairly clearly defined. For the British the main issue was strategic: Kalimantan itself was of little interest, but because it flanked the sailing routes between India and China, the British could not ignore the possible establishment of any other European power there, especially in West and North Kalimantan. The Dutch interest was in principle more colonial: Kalimantan lay on the north side of the Java Sea and was a centre for pirates and anti-Dutch Chinese.

Although the interior was unknown and apparently of little value, the Dutch had some interest in controlling the south and west coasts.

By the late 1820s and 1830s the Dutch had concluded treaties with Pontianak, Měmpawah, Sambas and other small west-coast states. But Dutch operations there were on a very small scale. In 1834, for instance, the entire Dutch garrison at Měmpawah consisted of one Indonesian officer and four policemen. In some areas, after the treaties of the 1830s were signed, the Dutch had no further relations until the 1840s. At Banjarmasin in south-east Kalimantan there had been VOC posts, but in 1809 Daendels had withdrawn them. In 1817 the Dutch returned and the Sultan of Banjarmasin signed several districts over to Dutch rule, including Kotawaringin (but the Dutch did not bother to open an office there). In 1826 further Banjarmasin coastal districts were signed over to the colonial government, but the Sultan remained sovereign in his own lands. Until 1840, Dutch interest was wholly restricted to the coast of Kalimantan, and even there little reality attached to Dutch claims of predominance.

Dutch imperial interest in Kalimantan was suddenly stimulated by the intervention of the Englishman James Brooke (1803–68) in Sarawak. Brooke used his modest inheritance to buy an armed yacht, and in 1839 he sailed to Singapore and thence to Sarawak in search of adventure. He intervened in a civil war there in support of a Brunei prince and in 1841 he was rewarded (after some difficulty with the prince) by being made governor of the area of Kuching, which became the First Division of Brooke's extraordinary private empire. The expanding territorial authority of James Brooke and his two successors, the three 'white rajahs' of Sarawak, caused embarrassment in London and much anxiety in Dutch circles. The spectre of intervention by other Europeans had suddenly turned into reality, and the lackadaisical Dutch attitude towards Kalimantan was converted into a more active policy of imperial expansion. In the 1840s and 1850s the Dutch intervened in several areas, putting down internal disputes and regulating relations with new treaties. From 1846 on, coal mines began to be opened in South and East Kalimantan, whereby the island acquired greater economic value to the colonial regime.

In West and South-east Kalimantan the new Dutch attitude produced significant resistance. The Chinese *kongsis* (associations) which controlled the gold mines of the Pontianak–Sambas area were in bitter dispute with each other over control of the declining gold resources. Despite Dutch intervention, this rivalry persisted, sporadic hostilities breaking out from 1850 to 1854. In the end the Dutch colonial forces were victorious, but disturbances continued in this area thereafter.

Banjarmasin was the scene of a more familiar form of Indonesian resistance. When Sultan Adam (r. 1825–57) died in 1857, the Dutch elevated his grandson Tamjidillah to be sultan (r. 1857–9). The crown prince Abdul Rakhman, Sultan Adam's son and Tamjidillah's father, had died in 1852 and since then it had not been clear who would succeed the old sultan. Tamjidillah was Abdul Rakhman's eldest son, but he was not popular in Banjarmasin, both because his mother was Chinese rather than a Banjarese aristocrat and because he had a taste for alcohol, which offended Islamic sensibilities. Prince Hidayatullah, a younger son of Abdul Rakhman by an aristocratic mother, was a more popular candidate. But Tamjidillah was preferred by the Dutch because he promised them greater concessions; their determination to install him as sultan in the

face of popular discontent precipitated tensions which shortly led to the Banjarmasin War (1859–63).

In April 1859 a major rebellion broke out in Banjarmasin led by a prince from a line of the royal family whose power had been usurped in the eighteenth century, Pangeran Antasari, and two peasant leaders. They attacked a Dutch coal mine and European missionary stations, killing Europeans whom they encountered there. The Dutch brought in reinforcements and had regained the military initiative by the end of 1859, but the war took a heavy toll on Dutch finances and manpower as rural Islamic leaders led a courageous and determined resistance. In June 1859 the Dutch forced Tamjidillah to abandon his throne and exiled him to Bogor in West Java. In 1860 they declared the Sultanate of Banjarmasin to be ‘lapsed’ and announced direct colonial rule. Hidayatullah joined the side of the resistance but surrendered early in 1862 and was exiled to Cianjur in West Java. After his exile, Antasari became the principal focus of loyalty for those who wished to resist Dutch conquest, until his own death from smallpox in October 1862. Major hostilities carried on until 1863, with more sporadic resistance thereafter. The descendants of Antasari allied with those of a major Muslim Dayak leader named Surapati (d. 1875) and together they maintained resistance for many years in an attempt to preserve the Sultanate from colonial conquest. Finally, in 1905 Sultan Muhammad Sēman of the Antasari family was killed, ending the line of royal leadership. The last resistance to Dutch rule ended in 1906.

Some of the most protracted warfare associated with the new phase of Dutch expansionism occurred in Sumatra. This great island had long been of interest to the Dutch. It occupied a crucial strategic position, was an area of rivalry with the British and had pepper and other valuable products. The VOC had been active in several areas of Sumatra. It was nonetheless true there, as elsewhere, that the decline of the VOC in the eighteenth century and the subsequent British interregnum meant that the Dutch had to rebuild and extend their influence in Sumatra after 1816 virtually from nothing.

In South Sumatra, the Sultanate of Palembang had long had contacts with the Dutch. It was important for its strategic position, its pepper and its sovereignty over the islands of Bangka and Bēlitung. Tin had been discovered in Bangka at the beginning of the eighteenth century. After decline later that century, the tin mines had acquired renewed importance and higher productivity early in the nineteenth century. Bēlitung also had tin, and was occupied by the Dutch in 1817 over British protests. The main actor in the drama of Palembang, Sultan Mahmud Badaruddin (r. 1804–12, 1813, 1818–21), was no friend of the Dutch. In the confusion surrounding the British conquest of Java in 1811, he attacked and slaughtered the 87 men (24 of them Dutch) at the Dutch garrison in Palembang. Nor was he more cooperative towards the British. Consequently, in 1812 the British attacked Palembang, sacked the court, and installed Badaruddin’s younger brother as Sultan Ahmad Najamuddin (r. 1812–13, 1813–18). Badaruddin fled but in 1813 he submitted and again occupied the throne for just over one month, until Raffles rejected this arrangement (which had been made by the Resident of Palembang) and put Najamuddin back on the throne. The tensions between these two brothers persisted until after the Dutch returned in 1816. The Dutch were then unable to exercise any real control, and the British complicated matters by interfering in Palembang affairs from their post at Bēngkulu (Bencoolen).

In 1818 a Dutch expedition was sent against Palembang, and Najamuddin was exiled to Batavia. When this did not end Palembang's independence, a further expedition was dispatched in 1819, but it was defeated by Badaruddin. In 1821 the Dutch put together a large force of over 4000 troops which was, however, repelled in its first attack. Its second assault succeeded, and Badaruddin was sent into exile on Ternate. Palembang was now near the end of its independence. Najamuddin's eldest son was made sultan, also with the name Ahmad Najamuddin (r. 1821–3). In 1823 the Dutch placed Palembang under their direct rule and the Sultan was given a pension. He and his courtiers were dissatisfied. In 1824 they first attempted to poison the Dutch garrison, and their subsequent attack upon it was easily repulsed. The Sultan fled but surrendered in 1825 and was exiled to Banda, whence he was moved in 1841 to Ménado. There was a last rebellion in 1849, which the Dutch suppressed.

Jambi had had relations with the VOC since the seventeenth century, but in 1768 the VOC post there had been abandoned. Dutch involvement began anew in 1833 when Sultan Muhammad Fakhruddin (r. 1821/9–41) sought and received Dutch help against pirates, but then invaded districts of Palembang. He was driven back by Palembang forces, and the Dutch used this opportunity to impose a treaty upon the Sultan, recognising Dutch sovereignty (1834). A colonial garrison was established downriver at Muarakumpe. In 1855 Sultan Abdul Rahman Nasiruddin (r. 1841–55) was succeeded by Ratu Taha Saifuddin (r. 1855–1904), whose refusal to sign a treaty precipitated a Dutch attack in 1858. Taha fled into the interior, taking the most important regalia with him. His Dutch-supported successors recognised Dutch sovereignty, but Taha and his supporters controlled much of the interior and inspired resistance for many decades. He was finally killed in the interior by a government patrol in 1904. In 1899 the last sultan recognised by the Dutch, Ahmad Zainuddin (r. 1886–99), retired. The Dutch and the elite of Jambi were unable to agree upon a successor, so the Dutch Resident of Palembang was placed in charge of Jambi in 1901. Fresh resistance broke out, which military expeditions into the interior districts of Jambi failed to suppress until 1907.

In the west coast Minangkabau districts, Dutch expansionism clashed violently with the first major Islamic revival movement of Indonesia. Minangkabau has been a centre of social, religious and political change since the late eighteenth century, and consequently has a significance for the rest of Indonesia which is greater than that of many other regions of the outer islands.

A system of royal government had been imposed in Minangkabau by Adityavarman (r. c.1356–75), a protégé of Majapahit. Minangkabau began to be Islamised in the sixteenth century, and it is traditionally believed that a system of three kings then emerged: Raja Alam (king of the world), Raja Adat (king of customary law) and Raja Ibadat (king of the Islamic religion). Royal authority rested primarily upon the control of gold. The villages supporting royal interests occupied the main gold-producing areas (in the Tanah Datar district) and the main export routes, and followed the system of customary law called **Kota Piliang**. By the 1780s, gold supplies were running out and the old order of Minangkabau society was threatened by the rise of new sources of prosperity, especially coffee, salt, gambier and textiles. These were centred in the hill areas of Agam and Limapuluh Kota districts, in villages which followed a different customary law system called **Bodi Caniago** and which traded primarily with the

Americans and the British (whose establishment of Penang in 1786 greatly stimulated this commercial revolution).

Out of this new commercial activity arose an Islamic reform movement, which began in Agam in the 1780s. After about 1803–4, this became known as the Padri movement because of the leadership of the *orang Pidari*, the ‘men of Pēdir’ who had made the pilgrimage to Mecca via the Acehnese port of Pēdir. The reform movement derived its impetus from Agam and Limapuluh Kota, from hill districts, from **Bodi Caniago** villages, and from merchants who sought protection in a revitalised Islamic law from the prevailing violence and insecurity which threatened their contracts, their goods and their persons. Sufi teachers, especially of the Shattariyya order, played important roles, although in later stages of the movement there were signs of anti-Sufi sentiments.

A group of three *hajis* (pilgrims) who returned to Minangkabau in 1803 or 1804 were inspired by the conquest of Mecca (early in 1803) by the puritanical Wahhabi reformers, and were similarly willing to use violence to reform Minangkabau society. The Padri movement opposed gambling, cockfighting, aspects of the local matriarchal customary law (especially concerning inheritance), the use of opium, strong drink, tobacco and betel nut, as well as the generally lax observance of the formal ritual obligations of Islam. They did not, however, share all the puritanism of the Wahhabi movement in Arabia, for they did not oppose reverence for saints or holy places.

The main Padri leaders were accorded the Minangkabau title of respect for religious teachers, *tuanku*; the most prominent among them was Tuanku Imam Bonjol (1772–1864). Dutch observers tended to see the conflict in terms of Islam versus *adat* (customary law), or of *tuanku* (religious leaders) versus *pēnghulu* (clan heads, the *adat* or ‘secular’ leaders). This assumption later became a principle of Dutch administration here as elsewhere in Indonesia, as will be seen below. This does not, however, adequately depict the complex social and theological issues involved in the Padri movement, as preceding paragraphs show. Indeed, *tuankus* were in dispute among themselves about both the aims and the methods of the reform movement, and *pēnghulus* existed who were supporters of it.

In the course of the civil war which grew out of the attempts at reform, the Padris faced greatest resistance in Tanah Datar and in plains areas, that is, in those regions least involved in the commercial revolution. But the reformers won victory upon victory. In 1815 most of the Minangkabau royal family was murdered in Tanah Datar and the Padri victory was nearly complete. Now the Padris spread into South Tapanuli and began the Islamisation of the pagan Bataks there. But the military success of the Padris was soon threatened by the return of the Dutch (after the British interregnum) to Padang in 1819. Anti-Padri *pēnghulus* and the remnants of the royal family turned to the Dutch for support. In February 1821 they signed a treaty surrendering Minangkabau, over which they no longer held any real authority, to Dutch sovereignty. The first Dutch attack upon the Padris followed shortly thereafter, and the Padri War (1821–38) began.

The colonial forces found that they faced a formidable enemy. Their victories were mixed with failures, including a serious defeat in Lintau in 1823. During the Java War (1825–30) the Dutch were unable to act decisively, but reinforcements later became

available. By this time Imam Bonjol had Acehnese support, but even so by 1832 the Padris seemed to be subdued. In 1833, however, the war resumed and renewed colonial offensives were required. The economic lifelines of Minangkabau resistance were progressively cut as the Dutch sealed off the west coast and then the east coast outlets for Minangkabau trade. In 1837 the fortified town of Bonjol was finally taken. Tuanku Imam Bonjol fled but then surrendered. He was exiled first to Priangan, then to Ambon, and finally to Měnado, where he died in 1864. The Padri War ended with a final colonial victory at Daludalu at the end of 1838.

Dutch rule was now imposed throughout Minangkabau. The colonial government relied upon the '**adat** chiefs' (the *pěnghulus*) to counteract what it saw as Islamic fanaticism. The Dutch thereby artificially enhanced the distinction between customary law (**adat**) and Islam in Minangkabau society, and contributed to a decline in the prestige of the *pěnghulus*. The colonial government did not allow Minangkabau royalty to regain any autonomous power, but treated them as mere Regents (*bupatis*), on the Javanese model.

Despite their military defeat, the Padris had left a deep and lasting mark upon Minangkabau society. A strong commitment to Islamic orthodoxy remained. In the fluid balance between **adat** and Islam, the role of Islam as a part of the whole set of rules which governed Minangkabau society had been greatly increased. Under Dutch rule, there was indeed a further wave of reform in the mid-nineteenth century, when the Qadiriyya and especially the Naqshabandiyya orders of Sufism, with a greater concern for orthodox ritual, forced the Shattariyya order to lose its predominant position in the area.

Naqshabandiyya was evidently first introduced into Minangkabau in the early 1850s by a returning pilgrim from Mecca. It spread rapidly, opposing the more syncretic practices of the **tarekats** already represented in Minangkabau. In some respects this was the first wave of a reformism which would culminate in the Modernist movement in Minangkabau (see [Chapter 15](#)), although that movement would adopt an anti-Sufi stance. Some of the prominent early leaders of Minangkabau Modernism were indeed the sons of Naqshabandiyya shaikhs.

The Dutch advance in Sumatra now seemed to be moving inexorably up to the boundaries of Aceh. A treaty was signed with Inděragiri in 1838, Singkil and Barus were occupied in 1839–40, and in 1840 a protection treaty with Siak was near completion. As a result of the Padri War, Dutch influence also permeated the Batak areas to the north of Minangkabau. The Bataks were a fierce and violent pagan people whose religious life was a combination of animism, magic and old Hindu (or Hindu-Javanese) influences. The Padris had supported the spread of Islam among the Bataks, and from the 1850s the Dutch encouraged Christianisation and began to suppress cannibalism. The Bataks had no higher political organisation, except for a certain loyalty to a divine king called Si Singamangaraja at Bangkara. Resistance to the Dutch was therefore not unified, but the colonial army was obliged to fight several fierce campaigns. In 1872 what is known as the Batak War occurred, which ended in victory for the Dutch and their local allies, but Batak resistance was not finally crushed until 1895.

The apparently inexorable Dutch advance was, however, halted temporarily by the

same factor which had in part encouraged it: the threat of British influence in the area. Throughout the nineteenth century, the British rather than the Dutch were the most powerful naval and commercial force in the Malay–Indonesian area. The British were vitally interested in anything that happened in the Straits of Malacca, through which the China–India trade routes passed. With the foundation of Penang (1786) and Singapore (1819) British commercial contacts with Sumatra expanded greatly. To avoid Anglo–Dutch conflict in the Straits, in March 1824 the Treaty of London defined British and Dutch spheres of interest. In essence, the British sphere contained the Malay Peninsula and the Dutch contained Sumatra. Dutch Malacca and Dutch posts in India were turned over to the British, and British sovereignty over Singapore was recognised; Běngkulu in Sumatra was surrendered to the Dutch. There were two particularly important aspects of this treaty for future events. First, British trade with Sumatra was not to be restricted irrespective of Dutch political dominance there. And second, the independence of Aceh was guaranteed, but the Dutch were supposed to exercise an ill-defined moderating influence over Aceh.

As the Dutch seemed about to subdue all of Sumatra up to the borders of Aceh, the merchants of Singapore and Penang objected that Dutch tariffs were restricting their trade, contrary to the Treaty of London. The Dutch gave in, being anxious not to offend the British. In 1842–4 they withdrew their posts on the east coast north of Palembang and broke off negotiations for a treaty with Siak. Their garrison near Jambi remained, on the grounds that it was essential for the defence of Palembang, but the discriminatory tariffs there were suspended. For several years Dutch expansionism was restricted to Bali, Nusa Těnggara, Kalimantan and Sulawesi, the areas described earlier in this chapter. In the west of the archipelago, they extended their influence only to the pagan island of Nias, which was of little commercial interest to the British. A treaty had been signed there in 1825 to end slave trading, which nevertheless continued, most of the slaves being sold in Padang and Singapore (despite Raffles' official abolition of slavery there). In 1840 a Dutch office was opened at Gunungsitoli. Military expeditions were required in 1847, 1855 and 1863 to establish Dutch authority over Nias.

Aceh was now expanding as a commercial and political power. By the 1820s it produced over half of the world's supply of pepper. The spread of pepper production meant independent sources of wealth for many lords of small ports who were nominally vassals of Aceh. As Europeans and Americans competed for access to this pepper, the northern part of Sumatra became a scene of political disintegration. The 'pepper rajas' acted independently, and American, British and French gunboats went into action as a result of various violent incidents. But a vigorous and capable new Acehnese leader, Tuanku Ibrahim, began to restore order and the authority of the Sultanate, for the first time since the great days of the seventeenth century. During the reign of his brother Sultan Muhammad Syah (r. 1823–38), Tuanku Ibrahim emerged as the most powerful force in the Sultanate. In 1838 he became guardian to the heir Sulaiman (nominally sultan from 1838 to his death in 1857), and from 1838 to 1870 Tuanku Ibrahim in fact ruled Aceh, taking the title of Sultan Ali Alauddin Mansur Syah. His able rule was threatened only by Sulaiman's abortive attempts to claim his throne in 1850–7.

Tuanku Ibrahim played the 'pepper rajas' off against each other, and in 1854 sent an expedition down the east coast which imposed his authority in Langkat, Děli and

Sĕrdang. Aceh was thus moving south just when the Dutch had temporarily suspended their northward advance. A clash between these two imperial powers was inevitable. Aceh was too powerful and wealthy for the Dutch to allow it to continue as an independent state. Dutch fears of intervention there by another European power were also growing. Various rumours and incidents suggested that Aceh might allow such an intervention. In 1852 it was reported that an Acehnese emissary had been received by the French Emperor Napoleon III (r. 1852–70). In 1869 it was learned that the Acehnese had appealed to the Turks for protection. The Dutch now realised that the Treaty of London, by ruling out British involvement in Aceh and obliging the Dutch to respect its independence, effectively reserved Aceh for intervention by any power other than Britain or the Netherlands. Not surprisingly, expansionist pressures began to grow again in Dutch circles.

In 1857 the suspended negotiations with Siak were resumed and resulted in a treaty in 1858 by which Siak became Dutch territory. The second article of this treaty defined the boundaries of Siak in an exaggerated fashion, reaching as far north as Alas and Langkat and thus including pepper ports which were both under Aceh's jurisdiction and important to British trade. The British objected and in 1863–5 sent gunboats to these pepper ports. Several Sumatran states, most importantly Aceh, concluded that the British (their main trading partner) would be willing to defend them against the Dutch. In Batavia the Council of the Indies realised that the Siak treaty infringed upon Aceh's territory, but felt that they could not afford to back down and reveal again the weakness which the withdrawal of the 1840s had shown. The die was cast.

British policy towards Aceh now changed. Dutch commercial policy had grown more liberal since 1848, and by the late 1860s it no longer seemed essential, or indeed feasible, to insist on independence for Aceh. As the European competition for colonies accelerated, London decided that it would be better to let Aceh be taken by the Dutch than by a stronger power such as the French or the Americans. The result was the November 1871 Anglo-Dutch Treaty of Sumatra which, with two related treaties, represented one of the greatest trade-offs of the imperialist age. The Dutch surrendered the Gold Coast in Africa to the British, the British allowed the shipment of Indian contract labourers to Dutch Surinam in South America, the Dutch were given an entirely free hand in Sumatra with British approval, and British and Dutch commerce were to have equal rights there from Siak to the north. This treaty represented a public pronouncement that the Dutch intended to take Aceh, a pronouncement which in this imperialist age had to be acted upon with haste. For both the British and the Dutch this trade-off meant war: by mid-1873 the British were involved in the Ashanti War in Africa and the Dutch in the Aceh War.

Early in 1873, the American Consul in Singapore had discussions with an Acehnese emissary about a possible Acehnese–American treaty. The Dutch saw this as a justification for intervention; in March they bombarded the Acehnese capital Banda Aceh (Kutaraja) and in April they landed a force of 3000 men. But they had misjudged the opposition; their force was beaten into a withdrawal by the Acehnese with the loss of its general and 80 men. The Dutch now resorted to a blockade and the Acehnese gathered to do battle; estimates of their numbers varied from 10,000 to 100,000. The colonial advance had now encountered its wealthiest, most determined, most organised,

best armed and most fiercely independent opponent. In his last months of formal independence, Sultan Mahmud Syah (r. 1870–4) appealed to the Turks, the British, the Americans and the French for support. He got nothing but pious sentiments from the Turks (who were in any case powerless to help), a flat rejection from the British, encouragement from the American Consul but rejection by Washington, and no reply at all from the French. The Acehnese were on their own.

A second Dutch expedition was dispatched late in 1873. This was one of the largest they had ever assembled in Indonesia: 8500 troops, 4300 servants and coolies, with a further reserve of 1500 troops soon added. Both the colonial force and the Acehnese suffered greatly from cholera and other diseases. Between November 1873 and April 1874 as many as 1400 men died in the colonial army. The Acehnese decided to abandon Banda Aceh, and in January 1874 the Dutch moved in, believing that they had thereby won the war. They announced that Aceh was annexed and the Sultanate abolished. While this was sufficient to prevent other foreign powers from intervening, it did nothing to abate Acehnese resistance. Sultan Mahmud and his followers withdrew to the hills, where Mahmud died of cholera. A young grandson of Tuanku Ibrahim named Tuanku Muhammad Daud Syah was proclaimed by the Acehnese to be Sultan Ibrahim Mansur Syah (r. 1875–1907).

The Sultanate and Acehnese resistance continued for many decades after the Dutch annexation. The colonial forces were now, in effect, besieged in Banda Aceh, losing some 150 men each month from cholera. The rulers of Acehnese ports quickly made nominal submissions to the Dutch in order to be freed from the blockade, but then used their incomes to support the resistance forces in the interior. The Dutch hoped that they might finalise their dominance by a treaty of the kind they had won elsewhere in the archipelago, but their abolition of the Sultanate made negotiations impossible. Since the Acehnese refused to surrender, outright conquest was the only option remaining to the Dutch.

The Aceh War was a long and bitter struggle. As the Dutch advanced, bombarding and burning villages, the population fled to the hills and maintained their resistance. In 1881 the Dutch declared the war to be over, one of the most fanciful pronouncements of colonialism. The guerrilla resistance came to be dominated by religious leaders, the *ulamas*, among whom the most famous was Teungku Cik di Tiro (1836–91), and the resistance assumed the nature of a holy war of Muslims against unbelievers. The Dutch found that they had won nothing except what was permanently occupied by their garrisons. The costs of this war were so huge that major economies were required in other areas of the colonial budget, and taxes on Indonesians had to be increased. In 1884–5 a retrenchment was ordered, and much of the countryside relapsed to Acehnese control.

The Dutch finally found a solution to their dilemma in the policies of two men: Dr Christiaan Snouck Hurgronje (1857–1936) and Joannes Benedictus van Heutsz (1851–1924). Snouck Hurgronje was the foremost Dutch scholar of Islam; from 1891 to 1906 he was principal adviser to the colonial government on Islamic and indigenous Indonesian matters, and he ended his days as a professor of Leiden University. He maintained that nothing could be done to appease the fanatical resistance of the *ulamas*, so they should be utterly crushed and reliance placed upon the *uleebalang* (seen as the

*adat* or ‘secular’ chiefs). This would, however, be a very expensive policy. But by now economic considerations were playing a role in determining Dutch policy alongside imperial motivations. Before about 1880, few believed North Sumatra to have much economic potential, but from that time onwards these views began to change. Meanwhile – as will be seen in Chapter 14 – the Netherlands East Indies oil industry was developing. In 1898 the future of ‘*de Koninklijke*’ (the major Dutch oil company – see Chapter 14) seemed threatened by both rising American competition and declining output from its existing oilfield. Oil had been discovered further north in areas involved in the Aceh fighting. ‘*De Koninklijke*’ promptly mobilised its very considerable political connections in The Hague and Batavia to press for military measures which would secure access to these more northerly reserves; vigorous military action followed, under the command of van Heutsz, a soldier who had served in Aceh for long periods since 1874. He was appointed Governor of Aceh (1898–1904) and thereupon carried out the campaigns that gave Aceh at last a semblance of pacification, with Snouck Hurgronje at his side until 1903. The Dutch sought out amenable *uleëbalangs*, whom they perceived to be the equivalent of Javanese *bupatis* or Minangkabau *pënhulus*: *adat* leaders who would counterbalance Islamic political influence. And slowly the *uleëbalangs* compromised with the Dutch, thereby creating a deep and eventually bloody division between them and much of Acehnese society. Snouck Hurgronje also proposed a new form of political agreement with local potentates, the so-called Short Declaration (*Korte Verklaring*), which was first introduced in Aceh in 1898 and thereafter became the standard form of agreement throughout the archipelago. It replaced long and cumbersome contracts with individual rulers with a standard short agreement whereby an Indonesian ruler recognised the authority of the Netherlands East Indies government and agreed to accept its orders.

By about 1903 a fairly stable government, resting upon an alliance with cooperative *uleëbalangs*, was established. In 1903 the Sultan, Tuanku Daud Syah, surrendered, but he maintained his contacts with the guerrillas. In 1905 he contacted the Japanese Consul in Singapore, and in 1907 he plotted an attack upon the Dutch garrison of Banda Aceh which failed. The Sultan was then exiled. Panglima Polem Muhammad Daud (1879–1940), the main military leader of the later stages of the war, also surrendered in 1903 and became a major official under Dutch rule. The *ulamas*, however, carried on their resistance for another decade or so. It is a matter of judgement as to when the Aceh War actually ended. Several of the leading *ulamas* were killed in battle in 1910–12. In the minds of some Acehnese, however, the war never came to an end. It is significant that after the Second World War, when the Dutch attempted to reconquer Indonesia, Aceh was the only Residency they did not try to retake. In their absence, the leading *uleëbalangs* were imprisoned or murdered in 1946.

Van Heutsz went on to become Governor General (1904–9), in which capacity he presided over the final conquests throughout Indonesia which have been described in this chapter. Dutch possessions in the west of the archipelago were rounded off by military occupation of the Mëntawai islands, despite prolonged local resistance, from about 1905. By about 1910, the boundaries of the present state of Indonesia had been roughly drawn by colonial armed forces, at a great cost in lives, money, devastation, social cohesion and human dignity and freedom. But a dislike of colonial conquest and

exploitation should not blind one to the more positive consequences of Dutch expansion. Feudal political systems, slavery, widow-burning, internecine wars, head-hunting, cannibalism, piracy and other unacceptable practices were being abolished under Dutch rule. New and more modern abuses replaced them, of course, as an industrialising coloniser proceeded with its exploitation of subject peoples. But in important respects many Indonesians had been forced into a more modern age. The peoples of Indonesia had also been given a potential common enemy. The foundations had been laid for the eventual creation of a new nation, united by centuries of economic interaction, by related cultural and political traditions and by the recent experience of Dutch conquest and rule. The Dutch did not create Indonesia, but they did define its territorial extent and create an environment in which nationalist forces could ultimately develop.

It is wise to consider, however, the means with which this new colonial state had been created. Because Indonesians were still divided from one another, they were not only subdued by relatively small colonial forces but actively assisted in the subjugation of each other. In 1905 the indigenous population of Indonesia was estimated to be about 37 million. Europeans serving in the colonial army and navy in Indonesia at that point totalled only 15,866 officers and men. But at their side fought 26,276 Indonesians. Most of these were in the army (24,522), and of these 68 per cent were Javanese, 21 per cent Ambonese, and the rest Sundanese, Madurese, Bugis and ‘Malays’ (mostly from Timor). A sense of a common Indonesian identity or of common goals simply did not yet exist. Most Javanese, for instance, neither knew nor cared about what happened in Aceh, except for those who were fighting beside the Dutch to destroy its independence. The growth of a shared Indonesian identity had to await the tumultuous events of the twentieth century.

Nor should one overestimate how firmly the Dutch controlled these new colonial possessions. The 1824 Treaty of London had drawn a theoretical line down the Straits of Malacca, distinguishing British from Dutch colonial spheres, but this line had more reality on paper than on the narrow waters of the Straits. That border in fact remained highly porous. The same was true of the boundary between Dutch and British spheres in Kalimantan/Borneo, which was only agreed in 1889 and ratified by treaty in 1891. In the later nineteenth century, the British colony of Singapore acted as a central entrepôt in the smuggling trades across these theoretical boundaries. Singapore’s Chinese tended to be the main smugglers, but Arabs, Armenians and many others were also actively involved in subverting colonial borders for personal profit. Counterfeit currency, opium and other narcotics, firearms, prostitutes, indentured labourers and much else was smuggled into the territories the Dutch claimed, but which often remained beyond the colonial state’s control well into the twentieth century. It is worth noting that in the vast reaches of the outer islands, the colonial police force totalled only 2235 underpaid and poorly equipped men in 1905. The scale of these ‘secret trades’, as Tagliacozzo has called them, was considerable. One claim, for example, is that in the fifty years from 1868 nearly half a million Japanese women were trafficked to Southeast Asia for prostitution. The porosity of these borders was a function of the difficult terrain, limited colonial human resources and limited communications in the outer reaches and remote areas of Indonesia. From c. 1870, the spread of steam shipping and the telegraph – and

later telephone and radio – enhanced the government's capacity for control. But even today, with much more advanced communications available, these same borders can be difficult or impossible for states such as Indonesia, Malaysia or the Philippines to control effectively.

## ***IV***

---

### **The Emergence of the Idea of Indonesia, *c.*1900–42**

## **Chapter 14**

---

# A New Colonial Age

As the twentieth century began, Dutch colonial policy underwent the most significant change of direction in its history. Its authority was acquiring a new territorial definition as the conquests described in the preceding chapter were being completed. It also now adopted a new aim. The exploitation of Indonesia began to recede as the main justification for Dutch rule, and was replaced by professions of concern for the welfare of Indonesians. This was called the ‘Ethical policy’. The period during which this policy emerged saw such fundamental changes in the colonial environment that Indonesian history in the early twentieth century cannot be understood without reference to it. There was more promise than performance in Ethical policies, and the fundamental facts of exploitation and subjugation were not in fact altered, but this does not lessen the importance of understanding this new colonial age.

The Ethical policy had roots both in humanitarian concern and economic advantage. The denunciation of Dutch rule presented in the novel *Max Havelaar* (1860) and in other exposés began to bear fruit. Voices were raised in favour of relief for the oppressed peoples of Java, and by the late nineteenth century new colonial administrators were on their way to Indonesia with *Max Havelaar* in their baggage and its message in their minds. During the ‘liberal’ period (c.1870–1900) private capitalism came to exert a preponderant influence upon colonial policy. Dutch industry began to see Indonesia as a potential market, which required a rise in living standards there. Capital, both Dutch and international, sought new opportunities for investment and extraction of raw materials, especially in the outer islands. A need for Indonesian labour in modern enterprises was felt. Business interests therefore supported more intensive colonial involvement in the causes of peace, justice, modernity and welfare. The humanitarians justified what the businessmen expected to be profitable, and the Ethical policy was born.

In 1899 C. Th. van Deventer (1857–1915), a lawyer who had spent 1880–97 in Indonesia, published an article in the Dutch journal *de Gids* entitled ‘*Een eereschuld*’ (‘A debt of honour’). He argued that the Netherlands owed the Indonesians such a debt for all the wealth which had been drained from their country. This was to be repaid by giving primacy in colonial policy to the interests of Indonesians. Until his death, van Deventer was one of the foremost champions of the Ethical policy, as an adviser to government and a member of the States-General. In 1901 Queen Wilhelmina (r. 1890–1948) announced an enquiry into welfare in Java, and the Ethical policy was thereby

officially endorsed. In 1902 Alexander W. F. Idenburg became Minister of Colonies (1902–5, 1908–9, 1918–19). In this post, and as Governor General (1909–16), Idenburg more than any other single individual put Ethical ideas into practice. The Dutch enunciated three principles which were thought of as typifying this new policy: education, irrigation and emigration. For such projects funds were necessary. The colonial government's debt of some f.40 million was therefore taken over by the Netherlands government, so that Batavia could increase expenditure without further indebtedness. The Ethical policy was on its way.

All this was occurring within a rapidly altering economic environment. The conquests in the outer islands brought new areas under Dutch rule, and these islands rather than Java became the main focus of new economic development. The knitting-together of the outer islands involved a great shipping enterprise: the *Koninklijke Paketvaart Maatschappij* (KPM, Royal Mail Steam Packet Company). This was established in Amsterdam in 1888 and began operations in 1891. It handled virtually all colonial government shipping throughout Indonesia and its expanding network was a vital element in the extension of Dutch rule. In the outer islands, the production of tropical crops expanded rapidly in the hands of private enterprise. From 1900 to 1930 sugar production rose nearly four times, tea nearly eleven times. Tobacco developed rapidly from the 1860s, especially on the east coast of Sumatra. Pepper, copra, tin, coffee and other products expanded, and now were largely developed in the outer islands. Two new products were particularly important for placing Indonesia at the forefront of world economic interest in the twentieth century: oil and rubber. Both were predominantly, although not exclusively, outer island products.

Since the 1860s the existence of petroleum deposits in the Langkat area of North Sumatra had been known. This was a troubled region throughout the Aceh War. In 1883 A. J. Zijlker received government approval for a concession from the Pangeran of Langkat, and test drilling began. After many problems of personnel, finance, terrain, climate and a well fire in 1888, oil at last began to flow in promising quantities. In 1890 Zijlker set up the *Koninklijke Nederlandsche Maatschappij tot Exploitatie van Petroleum-bronnen in Nederlandsch-Indië* (Royal Dutch Company for Exploitation of Petroleum Sources in the Netherlands Indies), usually known simply as '*de Koninklijke*'. In 1892 production began. By 1900 *de Koninklijke* was exporting oil to other parts of Asia, from Chinese ports in the east to Indian ports in the west. In 1901 it expanded its activities to Kalimantan.

Oil was initially used primarily for lamp-oil. It is one of the coincidences of modern history that just as the electric light bulb, commercially developed from the 1880s, threatened to destroy the oil industry, the petrolengine motor car opened vast new opportunities for it from about 1900 onwards. Other companies were soon attracted to Indonesian oil deposits, and by the 1920s there were some fifty companies at work in Sumatra (along the east coast from Aceh to Palembang), Java (at Sěmarang, Rěmbang and Surabaya) and Kalimantan (on the east coast). Exploration continued in other areas, but offered little promise of success. To finance drilling in East Kalimantan, in 1897 a company was set up in London with British capital which became the Shell Transport and Trading Company. In 1907 Shell and *de Koninklijke* merged to become one of the great oil multinationals, Royal Dutch Shell. By 1930 Royal Dutch Shell was producing

about 85 per cent of the total oil production of Indonesia. American companies began taking up major concessions from the 1920s; the most important among them were Caltex (California Texas Oil Corporation) and Stanvac (Standard Vacuum Oil Co.). In 1930 the Japanese entered the Indonesian oil business with their Borneo Oil Company, which operated at Kutai in East Kalimantan.

Rubber was the other new product which rode, literally, on the wheels of the booming car industry. The native rubber tree *Ficus elastica* was tried as a plantation crop in West Java and the east coast of Sumatra from 1864. But it was the first government experiments with the imported *Hevea brasiliensis* in 1900 which pointed the way to success. The colonial government encouraged the spread of the new product (as it encouraged other products) by providing advice, scientific research, general regulation, and so on. From about 1906 *Hevea brasiliensis* spread rapidly, especially in Sumatra. When the first trees reached sufficient maturity for tapping (after about five years), rubber began to be exported in 1912. The internationally agreed Stevenson Rubber Restriction Scheme of 1922 did not apply to Indonesia, but restricted production in British Malaya. There followed a rubber boom in Indonesia. By 1930 as much as 44 per cent of the acreage devoted to the principal plantation crops in Indonesia was planted with rubber. By this time, Indonesia was producing nearly half the world's rubber supply. The Depression, however, brought a major crisis to the rubber industry in 1930, as well as to other enterprises.

It was not only Dutch entrepreneurs who were active in Indonesia. The creation of Royal Dutch Shell in 1907 reflected a general internationalisation of investment. In agricultural development, Dutch capital was predominant overall. But about 70 per cent of Dutch capital in 1929 was invested in Java, and about half of it in sugar. The outer islands were a more international operation. In East and South Sumatra over 40 per cent of agricultural investment in 1929 was non-Dutch, over 18 per cent of it British. The oil industry was even more international. Indonesians were active in agriculture as well, especially in the outer islands. In 1931 small-scale Indonesian producers accounted for 35 per cent of rubber production, 79 per cent of tobacco, 57 per cent of coffee, 19 per cent of tea, and nearly all coconut, pepper and kapok production.

All of this activity meant that the outer islands surpassed Java both as a field of investment and as a source of exports. Java's main exports were coffee, tea, sugar, rubber, cassava and tobacco. In most of these, the outer islands surpassed Java. There were considerable fluctuations, but overall the value of Java's coffee exports fell by nearly 70 per cent from 1880 to 1930; by 1930 coffee exports from the outer islands were about twice the value of Java's, exports of outer island rubber were nearly twice the value of Java rubber, and outer island tobacco exports were nearly four times the value of Java tobacco (large amounts of tobacco were also grown by Indonesians in Java and the outer islands for the domestic market). Among major exports, Java exceeded the outer islands only in tea and sugar, the latter being almost exclusively a product of Java. The value of Java sugar exports reached a peak in 1920, but fell by 75 per cent in the following decade because of lower prices (production actually rose in volume). Java tea exports grew in value, but in 1930 they were worth only half the value of outer islands rubber exports. Cassava exports came almost exclusively from Java, but in 1930 the value of these was only about one-eighth of outer islands rubber

exports. In 1925 as much as 99 per cent (by value) of the oil exports came from the outer islands. In 1930 the main exports (cassava, coffee, copra, rubber, sugar, tea, tobacco, tin, oil) amounted to about f.930.5 million, of which 55.3 per cent came from the outer islands. Java produced 44.7 per cent, but over 60 per cent of this represented sugar exports, of which Java (especially East Java) was one of the world's major producers. The drop in sugar prices and the need to use sugar land to grow rice for Java's increasing population threatened even this main export.

The shift of economic activity to the outer islands introduced a major complication into government policy, a complication which persisted for much of the twentieth century. The major fields of investment and the major earners of export revenues were now the outer islands. The main welfare problems, the main claims upon a 'debt of honour', however, were in Java. In theory, welfare programmes in Java could have been financed by requiring the outer islands to subsidise them, thereby avoiding increases in the already very heavy levels of taxation in Java. This would have required substantial taxation upon the fortunes being made in outer island enterprises. Not surprisingly, this did not happen. The outer islands were not taxed to the degree which would have been necessary to raise living standards in Java. The humanitarian and economic interests whose alliance created the Ethical policy in practice went their separate ways, while subscribing to the same rhetoric. As welfare measures were introduced in Java, the Javanese and Sundanese found that both money and labour were demanded of them to pay for the new programmes. When colonial finances were threatened after the First World War, taxation upon Indonesians was substantially increased, demonstrating that in practice welfare was subordinated to a balanced budget.

Thus the distinction between Java and the outer islands which had roots in the past was now further accentuated. The outer islands were the areas of deeper Islamic commitment, greater entrepreneurial activity, more valuable export products, greater foreign investment, more recent Dutch subjugation and less population pressure. Java was the land of more uneven Islamisation, less entrepreneurship, declining value as a source of exports, less new economic development, longer and more fundamental colonial interference, and overpopulation. Such generalisations of course conceal much variety and many changes, but nevertheless the history of twentieth-century Indonesia was shaped to a considerable degree by this distinction.

Another complication arose from colonial-era restructuring of Indonesian economic activity. In pre-colonial times, as pointed out at the end of [Chapter 2](#), economic interaction supported relationships that drew the archipelago together. Now economic redirection in the interest of the colonial state and international investors was attenuating those relationships. We may presume that, in the days of Malacca, much – in some cases most – of the trade of any part of the archipelago was with other parts of the archipelago. By contrast, in 1914 the ratio of inter-island to foreign trade in Indonesia was only 5.5 per cent. In 1921 it was 10.0 per cent and in 1939 still only 17.0 per cent. One of the challenges of postcolonial Indonesia would be to find economic foundations for the unity of Indonesia, a task made more difficult by this colonial legacy.

Economic development and the concern for indigenous welfare were linked in infrastructure projects. There was, for instance, a major expansion of railways and

tramways. In 1867 there were only about 15 miles (25 km) of railway in the whole of the Netherlands East Indies, and in 1873 only about 160 miles (260 km). But then a rapid expansion followed. By 1930 there were 4614 miles (7425 km) of railway and tramway. Even more directly linked to welfare were the irrigation projects which were attempted, not always with success. A major scheme to irrigate the Sala river valley was abandoned after about f.17 million had been wasted upon it. Nevertheless, between 1885 and 1930 the area of irrigated rice land went up by about 1.8 times. The significance of this can be seen against the perspective of population, which also increased by about the same factor in the same period. The Dutch colonial government failed to produce policies which might have encouraged industrialisation in Indonesia.

The Dutch contributed to food production by experimenting with new seeds, encouraging the use of fertilisers and so on. These efforts met with considerable success, but not enough to keep pace with population. The consumption of rice per head of population in Java and Madura seems to have fallen somewhat between 1913 and 1924, although this was partly compensated for by an increase in the consumption of other, but less nourishing, foods.

Population growth overshadowed all the events of this new colonial age, as it has overshadowed Indonesian history ever since. In brief, Java (especially Central and East Java) was becoming seriously over-populated, while in the outer islands there were still vast unpopulated or underpopulated tracts. Not until 1930 was there a census which can be said to give reliable figures for the whole of Indonesia, but despite this the general trends are clear. In 1900 the indigenous population of Java and Madura was already about 28.4 million, a dramatic increase over the 5 million which was suggested in [Chapter 2](#) as a maximum – and debatable – estimate for the period before 1800. By 1920 the indigenous population of Java and Madura had reached 34.4 million, and the definitive figures for the 1930 census place it at 40.9 million. The outer islands were estimated to have 7.3 million indigenous inhabitants in 1905, 13.9 million in 1920, and the final 1930 figures give 18.2 million. The total indigenous population of Indonesia in 1930 was 59.1 million (plus 1.6 million Europeans and ‘Foreign Orientals’, 1.2 million being Chinese, giving a total of 60.7 million).

Thus, nearly 70 per cent of the Indonesian population in 1930 was living in Java and Madura, which comprise about 7 per cent of the total land area of Indonesia. Java, once the rice bowl of the archipelago, had by now become a deficit food area. Ironically, however, it would again became a net rice exporter after 1936 when the effects of the Depression (especially the exclusion of Java sugar from some of its principal markets) led to much sugar land reverting to rice agriculture; this was not, of course, an indicator of general prosperity but one of the many anomalies caused by the Depression. In general, it is difficult to avoid the suspicion that the race with population in Java was already lost before the Dutch or anyone else realised it had begun.

Java’s growing population was of fundamental relevance to its low level of welfare, but the Dutch had no policy which could solve the problem. Indeed, it is difficult to see what could have been done in any case. Except for limited and unsuccessful experiments in agrarian reform, the only answer offered by the Dutch was emigration from Java to the outer islands, a policy which continued after Indonesian independence under the label of ‘transmigration’. In 1905 the first colonies of Javanese were placed in

Lampung (South Sumatra) and other areas were subsequently opened for colonisation. In 1930 the population of these colonies totalled about 36,000. Many inhabitants of Java also left their island to work as contract labourers on the plantations of East Sumatra and elsewhere (in 1931 there were over 306,000 such labourers), and some left to seek other work or trading opportunities. But the total number of such people amounted to only several hundred thousand. Between 1905 and 1930 the population of Java meanwhile increased by about 11 million.

The Dutch increased their expenditures on public health projects nearly tenfold between 1900 and 1930. But set against the massive poverty and overpopulation of Java the results were of marginal benefit. Various immunisation programmes, anti-malaria campaigns and hygienic improvements may have contributed to a lowering of the mortality rate (and thus to the growth of population as well), although the statistics are open to question. Whatever the case, mortality still remained at high levels. The most lasting result of hygiene reform was the general adoption of tiles rather than thatch for house roofs. This was a measure designed to cut down infestation by rats and other vermin, which gave particular cause for concern after the first outbreak of bubonic plague in 1911. Professional medical provision, however, remained generally inadequate. In 1930 there were only 1030 qualified doctors in Indonesia (667 of them in Java), representing one for every 62.5 thousand inhabitants (of all ethnic groups) in Java and one for every 52.4 thousand in the outer islands. These doctors were largely to be found in the cities and towns, on plantations and so on; professional medical care for villagers was nearly non-existent. There were in addition medical and other welfare services provided by Indonesian organisations, which are discussed in [Chapter 15](#).

The village was to be the main instrument of government welfare efforts. The 1906 Village Regulation and subsequent Dutch practice aimed to increase democratic popular involvement in village affairs, to increase social cohesion, and to allow the Dutch Resident and Controleur, in conjunction with the village headman, to direct the village towards necessary welfare measures. These efforts failed. Poverty and overpopulation might have been sufficient by themselves to destroy the autonomous and semi-democratic life of the villages of Java. In any case, the heavy hand of Dutch paternalism ensured this outcome. The Dutch found the Javanese village to be an inefficient administrative unit. To produce a more rational administrative structure and to guarantee larger incomes to village headmen, a policy of amalgamating villages was introduced. In 1897 there were 30,500 villages recorded in Java with an average population of 800 each. In 1927 only 18,584 amalgamated villages remained, with an average population of 1800 each. These new administrative units often had no indigenous basis and failed to grow into the autonomous welfare organisations the colonial government sought. Village banks, rice-stores and other projects were encouraged, with mixed results. There was considerable corruption and maladministration. Population pressure led to ever-decreasing field sizes, and poverty and unemployment encouraged violence and criminality. Many villagers were also caught up in the political turmoil and violence described in the following chapter. Not surprisingly, Dutch and Indonesian officials of the colonial government in fact directed such welfare measures as were introduced, rather than the villagers themselves.

A great deal of effort was put into education, and the results were often pointed to

with pride by Dutch officials. All supporters of the Ethical policy favoured an increase in education for Indonesians, but there were two distinct schools of thought about what kind of education and for whom. Snouck Hurgronje and the first ‘Ethical’ director of education (1900–5), J. H. Abendanon, favoured an elitist approach. They wanted more European-style education in the Dutch language for a Westernised Indonesian elite which could take over much of the work of Dutch civil servants, thus producing a grateful and cooperative elite, cutting administrative expenses, restraining Islamic ‘fanaticism’ and ultimately creating an inspiring example for lower levels of Indonesian society. Idenburg and Governor General van Heutsz (1904–9) favoured more basic and practical education in vernacular languages for these lower levels. The elitist approach was intended to produce leadership for the new Dutch-Indonesian age of enlightenment, the mass approach to contribute directly to welfare. Neither policy was pursued with sufficient resources, and neither succeeded in doing what its supporters wanted.

Under Abendanon the elitist approach was favoured. In 1900 the three old *hoofdenscholen* (chiefs’ schools) at Bandung, Magélang and Prabalingga were reorganised to become schools clearly designed for the production of civil servants, and were renamed OSVIA (*Opleidingscholen voor inlandsche ambtenaren*, Training schools for native officials). The course was now five years long, in Dutch, and open to any Indonesian who had finished the European lower school. It was no longer necessary for an entrant to be from the aristocratic elite. In 1927 the course was reduced to three years. In 1900–2 the Dokter-Jawa school at Weltevreden was turned into STOVIA (*School tot opleiding van inlandsche artsen*, School for training native doctors). Its course was also taught in Dutch. Since 1891 the European lower schools which were a necessary prerequisite for admission to OSVIA and STOVIA had been open to Indonesians, but the fees could be afforded only by the wealthy. Abendanon widened the opportunities for non-aristocratic Indonesians to attend, and abolished the fees for parents with incomes below f.50 per month.

Abendanon faced opposition in these reforms from many directions, including the more conservative *bupatis*. He persevered, however, and was defeated only in his desire to increase educational opportunities for upper-class Javanese women. His hopes were shared by Raden Ajeng Kartini (1879–1904), the daughter of Raden Mas Adipati Arya Sasraningrat of Jépara, one of the most enlightened of Java’s *bupatis*. Kartini had attended the European lower school in Jépara at a time when many *bupatis* found the idea of female education entirely unacceptable. This remarkable young woman hoped to contribute to the enlightenment of the women of her class. She married another progressive *bupati*, Raden Adipati Arya Djajaadiningrat of Rěmbang, but tragically died at the age of 25, a few days after giving birth to their first child.

The cause of women’s education so desired by Kartini and Abendanon was never taken up as a government priority. Conservative *bupatis* and sceptical colonial officials ensured that this was so. In 1911 Abendanon paid personal tribute to Kartini by publishing the moving letters which she wrote to his wife and others between 1899 and 1904 under the title *Door duisternis tot licht* (‘Through darkness into light’). Women’s education did, however, receive attention from non-governmental organisations. Indonesian activities in this field are mentioned in [Chapter 15](#). In the Netherlands, a private foundation called the *Kartini Fonds* (Kartini Fund) was established in 1913 to

provide Dutch-language education for Javanese women, and the colonial government then provided a subsidy. The ‘Kartini schools’ which this foundation set up in Java played an important role in subsequent years, and Kartini is remembered as an early representative of female emancipation and the national awakening which is the subject of following chapters.

During van Heutsz’s period as Governor General (1904–9), during most of which Dirk Fock was Minister of Colonies (1905–8), the idea of mass education received more encouragement. Fock favoured technical and vocational schools. Snouck Hurgronje and his followers argued that the products of these schools would not, as Fock hoped, stimulate indigenous enterprises, but would only be able to find employment in European concerns. Fock, however, insisted. Various vocational schools had been opened by Christian missions since 1881 in Minahasa, the Batak regions of Sumatra, and Java. In 1909 the first government vocational schools were opened in Batavia, Sēmarang and Surabaya. Eventually they taught courses for metal- and woodworkers, electricians, car repairers and so on. Their graduates did sometimes stimulate indigenous enterprises, but most became employees of European firms. The sceptics were proved right.

The most significant educational reforms were in the old two-class primary school system which had been available on a very small scale to Indonesians since 1892–3. First Class schools were designed for the upper classes while Second Class schools were for the general population. To relieve pressure on the European lower schools, the only institutions where an Indonesian could learn Dutch adequately and proceed to OSVIA and STOVIA, the First Class schools were reformed in 1907. They now provided a five-year course in which Dutch was taught, with a sixth year in which Dutch was the medium of instruction (a seventh year was added in 1911). Dutch teachers now appeared in these schools (mostly women, since their male colleagues were reluctant to teach ‘natives’). At the indigenous teacher-training schools (*kweekscholen*), the first of which was opened in 1852 with several others following especially after 1870, Dutch was reintroduced as a subject after some twenty years during which it had been removed from the course of study; shortly thereafter it became the language of instruction.

Indonesians now had greater access to Dutch-language instruction, but a structural problem remained. The First Class schools were in the ‘native’ educational system; there was no way for an Indonesian to leap from this system to the parallel European system, which alone led to secondary education. In 1914 the First Class schools were therefore turned into **Hollandsch-Inlandsche** (Dutch–Native) schools (HIS). Although these remained schools for the Indonesian upper classes (there was still a minimum income requirement for parents), they were now formally a part of the European school system in Indonesia. The **Hollandsch-Inlandsche** schools, the **Hollandsch-Chineesche** (Dutch–Chinese) schools which were begun in 1908, and the European lower schools, although in principle ethnically distinct, now all led to the secondary levels of European education and thence to higher bureaucratic employment. Dutch was the language of instruction in all of them.

Above the HIS level, ethnic separation in education ended. In 1914 MULO (**Meer uitgebreid lager onderwijs**, More extended lower education, a sort of junior high)

schools were created for upper-class Indonesians, Chinese and Europeans who had finished their respective primary schools. In 1919 AMS (*Algemeene middelbare scholen*, General middle schools) were established to carry pupils to university entrance level. Up to this time, there had been no university-level education available in Indonesia. The minuscule number of Indonesians who had access to university education were those who went through the European system to HBS (*Hoogere burgerschool*, Higher middle-class school) and thence to university in the Netherlands. In 1905, only 36 Indonesians entered HBS. In 1913 Hoessein Djajadiningrat (1886–1960), from one of the most distinguished *bupati* families of West Java, became the first Indonesian to gain a doctorate with his Leiden University thesis on *Séjarah Bantén*. In 1920 university-level education, without regard to ethnicity, at last became available in Indonesia with the opening of the *Technische Hoogeschool* (technical college) at Bandung. In 1924 a *Rechtshoogeschool* (law college) opened in Batavia, and in 1927 STOVIA was turned into the *Geneeskundige Hoogeschool* (medical college).

The reform of the First Class schools and the further educational developments described above had no effect on lower-class Indonesians, for whom the Second Class schools had been designed. Broadening education for the masses was an awesome financial problem, and a cause for which there was far from unanimous support even among followers of Ethical ideas. In 1918 it was estimated that it would cost f.417 million per year to provide Second Class schools for all Indonesians; this was considerably more than the colonial government's total expenditure. Initial plans for expanding the Second Class schools were greatly delayed for financial reasons.

In 1907 van Heutsz found the answer. Village schools (*desascholen*, also called *volksscholen*, people's schools) were to be opened, with the villagers themselves bearing much of the cost but with government subsidies where necessary. As with so many other Ethical reforms, the government decided what was good for the Indonesians and then told them how much they must pay for their betterment. These schools were to have a three-year course taught in the vernacular offering basic literacy, numeracy and practical skills. Fees were to be charged. The villages proved to have little enthusiasm for the village school idea, so the Dutch proceeded by exerting *perintah halus*, the 'gentle pressure' from above which typified the Dutch approach to village welfare measures. By 1912 there were over 2500 village schools. By the 1930s there were some 9600 and, of Indonesian children between the ages of six and nine, over 40 per cent attended a school of some sort at some time, most of them at government village schools and many of them more or less unwillingly. In 1915 *Inlandsche Vervolgscholen* (native senior schools) were created to carry pupils to a higher level of education.

The old Second Class schools became *Standaardscholen* (standard schools) in 1908, and were now intended for those engaged in trade, or otherwise removed from the agrarian life of the villages, which the village schools were to provide for. Chinese were now admitted to the *Standaardscholen*, which theoretically became 'middle-class' schools, between the lower-class village schools and the elite First Class schools. They were really an anomaly within the educational system and when the effects of the Depression hit after 1930, they were converted into village schools and attached

## *Vervolgscholen.*

The complex school system now seemed to provide for everyone except a village child who wished to proceed from his village school to the secondary level, which existed only in the European system. In 1921 the first *Schakelschool* (link school) was opened, with a five-year course which proceeded from the level of the village school to that at the end of HIS. Thence the student could proceed to MULO. These link schools were of little importance. Most upper-class Indonesians sent their children to HIS or the European schools; villagers had little interest in higher education and could rarely pay the fees. In 1929 many of the link schools were closed.

The high point of educational reform, as of other Ethical reforms, was reached about 1930, after which time the Depression ended any major new development, although the number of school places continued to grow. The absolute increase in educational opportunities was great. In 1900, there were only 265,940 Indonesians in private or government schools in the whole of Indonesia. In 1930–1 there were over 1.7 million Indonesians in such Western educational institutions. But when these figures are set against the terrible facts of population size, it can be seen how marginal all of this effort was. In 1930–1, about 1.66 million Indonesians were in the vernacular primary schools designed for them: 2.8 per cent of the total population, or 8 per cent of the population group between infants who could not yet walk and adults. In the European school system (including HIS, MULO, AMS, vocational schools, but excluding kindergarten) below university level, there were 84,609 Indonesians: 0.14 per cent of the total population. At university level, there were 178 Indonesians: 3 ten-thousandths of 1 per cent of the population. In vocational agriculture and forestry schools, a sector where one might have expected much to be done, there were 392 Indonesians: 7 ten-thousandths of 1 per cent of the population.

In the 1930 census, the literacy rate for adult Indonesians throughout the archipelago was only 7.4 per cent: 13.1 per cent in Sumatra, 6 per cent in Java and Madura, and only 4 per cent in Bali and Lombok. Much of this literacy was due to indigenous educational institutions, both the old *Qur'an* schools and the more modern schools described in the following chapter. The highest literacy rate (50 per cent) was in Christian areas of South Maluku, where Christian missions were active in education. The literacy rate in the Dutch language among Indonesians in 1930, however, was only 0.32 per cent (but reaching 13 per cent in the city of Ambon). This makes for a poor comparison with the most ambitious public education programme in a colonised country, that of the United States in the Philippines, where by 1939 over a quarter of the population could speak English. The Dutch never made a commitment to public education like that of the Americans, and even had they done so the size of the problems they faced might have proved insuperable.

Education produced neither a grateful and cooperative new elite nor a buoyant new spirit among the masses; welfare measures in general did not produce welfare. Although all the welfare surveys of the Ethical period produced doubtful statistics, there is no evidence of increasing general prosperity before 1930, and some evidence of declining living standards after 1914. After 1930, there is no dispute about the decline of welfare. Education produced some able and loyal officials, but it also produced a tiny dissatisfied elite who led the anticolonial movements described in subsequent chapters.

A similar story attends Ethical political reforms.

Decentralisation was a main aim of Ethical supporters: decentralisation from The Hague to Batavia, from Batavia to the regions, from the Dutch to Indonesians. Despite various reform measures, however, The Hague remained in control of Indonesia. Local councils began to be set up in 1905 for the main towns, and by 1939 there were 32 urban councils (19 of them in Java). These urban councils were reasonably successful, but all had a Dutch majority and the franchise was extended only to literate male residents with high levels of income tax payments, thus excluding all but a handful of Indonesians. Councils were also set up for each of the 76 Regencies (*kabupaten*) in Java, but the Indonesian members were largely officials while the *bupati* was chairman. The *bupatis* were indeed the main group of Indonesians to benefit from these reforms. As political agitation increased (see [Chapter 15](#)), from about 1915 the government lost much of its suspicion of *bupatis* and began again to push them forward as leaders of their society. These councils were all basically advisory, and there was little real delegation of power from Batavia. The *bestuurshervormingwet* (government reform law) of 1922 called for Indonesia to be split into large regions with local councils. West Java was made such a region in 1926, East Java in 1929, Central Java in 1930, and in 1934 three governmental regions were established covering the outer islands. But the whole scheme was the object of much criticism. The majorities in the councils were Dutch and ‘others’ (mainly Chinese), and the Indonesian members were primarily officials. Government in Indonesia in practice remained centralised.

The most obvious gesture towards decentralisation and increasing popular involvement in government was the creation of the *Volksraad* (People’s Council), which first met in 1918. The origins of this body were associated with the *Indië weerbaar* (defence of the Indies) agitation described in the following chapter. The *Volksraad* was established as a unicameral body with advisory powers only, but it had to be consulted by the Governor General on matters of finance. Initially it had 19 elected members (ten of them Indonesians) and 19 appointed members (five of them Indonesians), plus a chairman. The electorate, however, consisted of the conservative and official-dominated local councils. More radical Indonesians found themselves in the *Volksraad* only when the Governor General appointed them to it. With about 39 per cent of the membership initially Indonesians, this grew to 40 per cent when the *Volksraad* was expanded to 49 members in 1921, to 42 per cent when it was expanded to 60 members in 1927, and to 50 per cent when the balance among European, Indonesian and other (mainly Chinese) members was altered in 1931. The number of elected members came to exceed the appointed members, but the electorate still consisted of the conservative local councils. In 1939 the *Volksraad* electorate totalled only 2228 individuals in the whole of Indonesia, the population of which was then about 70 million.

In its early days, the *Volksraad* was a source of considerable criticism and pressure upon the colonial government. A new *staatsinrichting* (constitution) for Indonesia introduced in 1925 reduced the Council of the Indies to an advisory body and gave the *Volksraad* limited legislative powers. The budget and other internal legislation now required its assent and it could initiate legislation. In fact, however, the States-General in The Hague remained as much in control of the colonial budget as before. The

Governor General and the heads of the various administrative departments were not responsible to the **Volksraad** and could not be removed by it. The **Volksraad** never developed into a true parliament. Through its various phases, it remained what it was always intended to be: a gesture towards popular involvement in what was still a colonial state resting upon economic and military dominance, in which a small European nation governed a large Asian territory. But, not surprisingly, from its very beginning the **Volksraad** was caught up in the political awakening discussed in the following chapters.

A major question about the Ethical period upon which many scholars have disagreed is when it ended. Several points have been suggested. The period of the conservative Minister of Colonies Simon de Graaff (1919–25) and of Dirk Fock as Governor General (1921–6) has been suggested. In an effort to balance the colonial budget, many services were cut back and the already heavy tax burdens upon Indonesians were increased. Those who emphasise political aspects (see [Chapter 15](#)) also point to the period from 1919, when rising political activism and violence led to the arrest, imprisonment and exile of several Indonesian leaders, or to 1927, when the Communist rebellion ushered in a period of still greater political repression. Those who look at economics prefer 1930, when the Depression destroyed export prices and government revenue and expenditure, and pushed welfare levels to new lows. Those who emphasise the existence of a general, if unrealised, commitment to Indonesian welfare as a principle of government point to 1942, when the Japanese put an end to Dutch rule.

If one considers the general shape of this new colonial age, however, the question of when it ended becomes still more complex. Throughout the period described in this chapter, there was a general distinction between proclaimed principles and actual performance. Welfare was proclaimed, but set against the perspective of population the results were few. The semi-democratic village was to be the basis of all, but in fact it was only treated as a passive and malleable tool in the hands of officials who wished to direct its development. The populace was to be associated with its rulers, but only as grateful and cooperative followers of a conservative elite. There was no real attack on population growth. The nation's wealth was used for the interests of foreign enterprises and indigenous industries were not developed. The main economic development took place in the outer islands, while the main welfare problems grew in Java. Education was to be the key to a new age, but the number of school places provided was small when set against the size of the population. Token concessions of political authority were made to legitimise an authoritarian government. Token welfare measures were meant to show that it was good. These features will be seen to recur throughout Indonesian history in the twentieth century, even after the Dutch were gone from the scene. In some senses the Ethical policy set patterns, not for two decades, or three, or four, but for the much of the twentieth century.

## ***Chapter 15***

---

# **The First Steps towards National Revival, c.1900–27**

The first three decades of the twentieth century witnessed a new territorial definition of Indonesia and the proclamation of a fresh colonial policy. There was also a transformation of indigenous Indonesian affairs which was so profound that in political, cultural and religious affairs Indonesians were set upon novel courses. Rapid change occurred in all the areas recently conquered by the Dutch. But with respect to the anticolonial and reform movements which first emerged in this period, Java and the Minangkabau area of Sumatra attract particular attention. There the changes were such that the history of modern Indonesia moved into a new age and acquired a new vocabulary. The reasons for Java and Minangkabau being the leaders in this sudden transformation are reasonably clear. The degree of social disruption and change in Java has been described in previous chapters. Minangkabau had undergone the first major Islamic reform in Indonesia under the Padris, had experienced great changes since the imposition of Dutch rule, and had traditions of mobile external contacts which opened it to new ideas. While Balinese kings and Acehnese *ulamas* were still fighting to defend an older order against colonial conquest, Minangkabaus and the people of Java were already laying the foundations for a new order.

The key developments in this period were the emergence of novel ideas of organisation and the arrival at more sophisticated definitions of identity. The former involved new forms of leadership and the latter involved a deeper analysis of the religious, social, political and economic environment. By 1927 a different kind of Indonesian leadership and a new awareness of self were established, but at a considerable cost. These leaders found themselves bitterly opposed to each other, and greater self-awareness split this leadership along religious and ideological lines. The Dutch moved to a higher level of repression in response to these developments. This period saw no solution of problems, but it did irrevocably change the Indonesian leadership's view of itself and its future.

The 'new' or 'lesser' *priyayi* of Java, the upwardly mobile officials who saw education as the key to advancement, were the first to seize the initiative. This group represented a major social and cultural stream in twentieth-century Indonesia. They were predominantly *abangan*, whose adherence to Islam was seldom more than a formal, nominal commitment. *Abangan* were the majority among Javanese; they tended

to be mystical in their religious ideas, relatively unconcerned about the demanding ritual obligations of Islam and culturally committed to Javanese art forms such as *wayang* (shadow theatre) which are largely pre-Islamic in inspiration. In the early twentieth century, Western education seemed to offer to the administrative upper classes (*priyayi*) among the *abangan* a key to a new synthesis which they saw as the basis for a rejuvenation of their culture, class and people. Among this group, most were prepared to regard Islam with at least friendly neutrality, but as Islamic pressures grew some became hostile to it.

The idea of emancipating Indonesians through the education of the *priyayi* was encouraged from an early stage by the journal *Bintang Hindia* ('Star of the Indies'), first published in the Netherlands in 1902. This was edited by a Minangkabau graduate of the Dokter-Jawa school (after 1900 called STOVIA) at the Batavia suburb of Weltevreden named Abdul Rivai (b. 1871) and a Dutchman who subsequently found Rivai's ideas to be too progressive for his taste. The journal was distributed in Indonesia and was widely read among the Indonesian elite before it ceased publication in 1906.

Dr Wahidin Soedirohoesodo (1857–1917) inspired the first recognisably modern organisation for Javanese *priyayi*. He was also a graduate of the Dokter-Jawa school and worked as a government doctor in Yogyakarta until 1899. In 1901 he became editor of the periodical *Retnadhoomilah* ('Luminous jewel'), printed in Javanese and Malay for a *priyayi* readership and reflecting *priyayi* concern for their problems and status. Wahidin was a gifted performer of classical Javanese music (*gamelan*) and *wayang* as well as a product of Western-style education. He saw Javanese culture as being primarily Hindu–Buddhist in inspiration, hinted that the decline of the Javanese was at least partly to be blamed upon the coming of Islam, and sought restoration of the Javanese through Dutch education.

Wahidin attempted to set up scholarships to provide Western education for Javanese *priyayi*. But few of the older generation of officials or those of the *bupati* class were enthusiastic; this hereditary elite in fact tended to fear the competition they faced from the rising lower *priyayi*. In the highest levels of Javanese society, only a prince of the Yogyakarta lesser royal house of Pakualam supported him. Indeed, several scions of the Pakualaman played significant roles in the new developments of this period.

In 1907 Wahidin visited STOVIA and there, in one of the most important institutions producing the lesser *priyayi* of Java, he encountered an enthusiastic response from the students. It was decided to create a student organisation to further the interests of the lesser *priyayi* and in May 1908 a meeting was held at which *Budi Utomo* was born. This Javanese name (properly spelt *budi utama*) was translated by the organisation as *het schoone streven* (the beautiful endeavour), but in the rich connotations of the Javanese language it also carried the meanings of superior intellect, character or culture. At the initial meeting, students of STOVIA, OSVIA, teacher-training schools and agriculture and veterinary schools were represented. Branches were set up in these institutions and by July 1908 *Budi Utomo* had 650 members. Non-students also joined, and as they did so student influence began to diminish and the organisation grew into a party of the Javanese lesser *priyayi* in general.

*Budi Utomo* was always primarily a Javanese *priyayi* organisation. It officially defined its area of interest as including the peoples of Java and Madura, thus reflecting

the administrative union of these two islands and including the Sundanese and Madurese whose cultures were related to the Javanese. Malay rather than Javanese was adopted as the official language. But Javanese *priyayi*, and to a much lesser extent Sundanese, were the heart of ***Budi Utomo***'s support. The Javanese sense of cultural superiority was rarely far from the surface: in Bandung there were even separate chapters for Javanese and Sundanese members. ***Budi Utomo*** never acquired a true mass base among the lower classes and reached a peak membership of just 10,000 at the end of 1909. It was also primarily a body with cultural and educational interests; as will be seen below, it rarely played an active political role.

In October 1908 ***Budi Utomo*** held its first congress in Yogyakarta. Wahidin was by now becoming a mere father figure and new voices arose to direct the organisation. A minority was led by the radical Tjipto Mangunkusumo (1885–1943), also a medical doctor. He wanted ***Budi Utomo*** to become a political party working for the uplifting of the masses rather than just the *priyayi*, with its activities throughout Indonesia rather than restricted to Java and Madura. Tjipto also did not share the general admiration for Javanese culture as the basis for rejuvenation. Dr Radjiman Wediodiningrat (1879–1951), another Dokter-Jawa, also put forward his ideas. He was influenced by Javanese culture, by the dialectics of Hegel, the subjectivism of Kant and the antirationalism of Bergson, and had already embraced the mystical doctrines of Theosophy as a synthesis of East and West. Theosophy was one of the few movements which brought elite Javanese, Indo-Europeans and Dutch together in this period, and was influential among many ***Budi Utomo*** members. Among prominent Theosophists were found Prince Pakualam VII (r. 1903–38) of Yogyakarta and Susuhunan Pakubuwana XI (r. 1939–44) of Surakarta. But within ***Budi Utomo*** neither Tjipto nor Radjiman carried the day. The former seemed a dangerous radical and the latter a stuffy reactionary. A board of directors was elected which was dominated by an older generation of officials who favoured greater education for *priyayi* and the encouragement of Javanese entrepreneurial activity. Tjipto was elected to the board but resigned in 1909 and eventually joined the radical ***Indische Partij***.

Governor General van Heutsz welcomed ***Budi Utomo***, just as he had welcomed the publication of ***Bintang Hindia***, as a sign of the success of the Ethical policy. It was, indeed, just what he wanted: a moderately progressive indigenous organisation controlled by enlightened officials. Other Dutch officials suspected ***Budi Utomo*** or simply thought it a potential nuisance. But in December 1909 it was declared a legal organisation. The welcome it received from government led many of the more dissatisfied Indonesians to suspect it. Throughout its life (it was formally dissolved in 1935) ***Budi Utomo*** often seemed in fact to be a quasi-official government party.

In general, ***Budi Utomo*** stagnated almost from the very beginning, being short of both money and dynamic leadership. It pressed government for more Western education, but this pressure played only a minor role in the reforms described in Chapter 14. Many of the senior ***bupatis*** of Java and Madura looked down upon ***Budi Utomo***'s lesser *priyayi* origins and feared that their own influence upon government might be threatened by it. In 1913 they formed their own ***Bupatis' Union (Regentenbond)***, which did virtually nothing for several years. The bureaucratic elite of Java were too concerned about their careers and too divided by social distinctions from

each other and the masses to play a dynamic role.

More active and significant organisations were soon formed. Some of these were religious, cultural and educational, some political, and several both. These organisations functioned at lower levels of society and for the first time built links between villagers and new elites. The lesser *priyayi* class was important in several of these movements, but this was a different branch of the lesser *priyayi* from that which was active in *Budi Utomo*. Whereas *Budi Utomo* members were largely making their careers in government service, those who led these more activist movements were almost entirely those who had gone through Dutch schools but had then either resigned or been dismissed from government jobs. A new religious leadership also appeared, as Indonesian Islam was launched on the most significant period of reform in its history.

In Javanese society, the minority who tried to adhere strictly to the obligations of Islam in their daily lives were called variously *wong Muslimin* (the Muslims), *putihan* (the white ones) or *santri* (students of religion). Two groups could be distinguished within this community: the rural Muslims grouped around teachers of Islam (*kyai*) and their religious schools (*pésantren*, the place of the *santris*) and, on the other hand, urban groups who were often engaged in commerce. These urban groups lived in separate districts in Javanese towns called *kauman* (the place of the pious), usually near the main mosque. In the early twentieth century, these urban Muslims were open to ideas of reform and progress. They found themselves increasingly in conflict with locally domiciled Chinese. The latter were in commercial competition with Javanese entrepreneurs and their relations with Javanese society in general were strained by increased Chinese displays of arrogance and pride in the wake of the 1911 revolution in China.

In 1909 a graduate of OSVIA named Tirtoadisurjo (1880–1918), who had left government service and become a journalist, founded *Sarekat Dagang Islamiyah* (Islamic Commercial Union) in Batavia. In 1910 at Buitenzorg (Bogor) he set up another such organisation. Both were designed to support Indonesian traders. Tirtoadisurjo was already a man of considerable achievement. In 1903 he established the first newspaper founded, financed and run by indigenous Indonesians, the Malay-language weekly *Soenda Berita* ('News of Sunda'), which was printed in Cianjur. In 1907 he founded the weekly *Medan Prijaji* ('The *priyayi*'s arena') in Batavia. In 1910 *Medan Prijaji* became a daily, the first such newspaper under indigenous Indonesian control. Tirtoadisurjo's role as the father of Indonesian journalism is recounted in the novel *Sang Pemula* ('The pioneer') by Pramoedya Ananta Toer (1925–2006). In 1911 Tirtoadisurjo encouraged a successful *batik* trader in Surakarta named Haji Samanhudi (1868–1956) to found *Sarekat Dagang Islam* as a Javanese *batik* traders' cooperative. Other branches were soon set up. In Surabaya H. O. S. Tjokroaminoto (1882–1934) became a leader of the organisation. He, too, was a graduate of OSVIA who had turned his back on government service. He was a charismatic figure who became known for his belligerent attitude towards those in authority, whether Dutch or Indonesian, and was soon to become the most prominent leader of the early popular movement.

In 1912 the organisation changed its name to *Sarekat Islam* (Islamic Union, SI). Tirtoadisurjo and Samanhudi fell out with one another, so Samanhudi, whose time was committed to business affairs, turned to Tjokroaminoto to lead the organisation. The

Islamic and commercial origins of the organisation were soon obscured, and the term Islam in its title now reflected little more than a general awareness that its Indonesian members were Muslims while the Chinese and Dutch were not. Tjokroaminoto himself seems to have had no very profound knowledge of Islam, at least when compared to the learned men discussed below who founded the true religious reform movement.

From 1912 SI grew rapidly, and for the first time a mass base appeared, albeit an unruly and ephemeral one. By 1919 SI claimed 2 million members, but the true number probably never exceeded half a million. Unlike *Budi Utomo*, SI spread from Java to the outer islands, but Java remained the centre of its activities. Membership involved secret oaths and membership cards which villagers sometimes regarded as amulets. Tjokroaminoto was sometimes taken to be the *ratu adil*, the ‘just king’ which Javanese messianic traditions prophesied, who would be named Erucakra (that is, the same name as *Cakra*-aminata, Tjokroaminoto). Even some members of the Javanese court elite, resentful of Dutch intrusion into their affairs, supported SI.

SI proclaimed loyalty to the Dutch regime, but as it spread in the villages violence erupted. Villagers seem to have perceived SI less as a modern political movement than as a means of self-defence against an apparently monolithic local power structure, in the face of which they felt impotent. It thus became an expression of group solidarity, united and apparently motivated by dislike of the Chinese, the *priyayi* officials, those who did not join SI, and the Dutch, approximately in that order. In some areas SI became virtually a shadow administration which the *priyayi* officials were obliged to accommodate. A boycott of Chinese *batik* traders in Surakarta rapidly grew into mutual Chinese–Indonesian insults and violence across Java. In 1913–14 there was a particularly severe outburst of violence in towns and villages, with local SI branches playing a leading role.

Governor General Idenburg was cautiously favourable to SI and in 1913 he granted it legal recognition. He did not, however, recognise it as a national organisation controlled by its headquarters (*Centraal Sarekat Islam*, CSI), but rather as a collection of autonomous branches. In doing this, Idenburg may have intended to help the leaders of the new organisation by not burdening CSI with legal responsibility for the activities of all SI branches. The consequence of his decision was that in practice it became even more difficult for CSI to exercise control. Other Dutchmen thought that Idenburg was wrong to recognise SI at all, and it began to be said that SI actually stood for *salah Idenburg* (Idenburg’s mistake).

A more idiosyncratic form of rural protest also reached a peak in 1914. In the southern Blora area (North-Central Java), an illiterate Javanese peasant named Surantika Samin (?1859–1914) had built up a following among peasants who rejected any form of outside authority, and who especially disliked the new forestry regulations being introduced in this teak-forest region. Saminists followed a nativist religion which Samin called *elmu nabi Adam* (the science of the prophet Adam) which, despite its Arabic terminology, owed nothing to Islam. Nor does it seem to have been Hindu-Buddhist in inspiration. Rather, it was a body of religious and ethical doctrine which stressed the importance of agricultural labour and sexuality, passive resistance and the primacy of the nuclear family, while rejecting the money economy, non-Saminist village structures and any form of external authority. Saminists refused to pay their

taxes, to perform corvée labour or to use government schools. In 1907 the government feared that revolt was imminent, quite wrongly so far as can be seen, and it therefore exiled Samin to Palembang, where he died. But his movement carried on, and Saminist passive resistance reached a peak in 1914 when the Dutch demanded an increased head-tax. Infuriated *priyayis* could not break the Saminist movement, which indeed survived into recent times in this region.

Throughout Indonesia, the period after about 1909 saw an extraordinary proliferation of new organisations among the educated elite, most of them based on ethnic identities. Students at STOVIA in Batavia, where **Budi Utomo** was born in 1908, also produced several other of these new organisations, including **Tri Koro Dharmo** (1915) which in 1918 became **Jong Java** (Young Java), **Jong Sumatranen Bond** (Young Sumatrans Union, 1917), the **Studerenden Vereeniging Minahasa** (Minahasan Study Union, 1918) and **Jong Ambon** (Young Ambon, 1918). Other such organisations included **Sarekat Ambon** (Amboinese Union, 1920) and **Pasundan** (Land of the Sundanese, 1914), which was meant to be a sort of **Budi Utomo** for Sundanese. In 1921 Rotinese and Savunese established **Timorsch Verbond** (Timorese Alliance) to defend the interests of the peoples of Timor. **Kaum Bētawi** (The People of Batavia, 1923) promoted the claims of the ‘original’ Indonesian citizens of Batavia; **Pakēmpalan Politik Katolik Jawi** (Political Association of Javanese Catholics, 1925) served the interests of that minority group. These and many other groups reflected the new enthusiasm for organisation, but also the continuing strength of ethnic and communal identities. The concept of an all-Indonesian identity had as yet hardly any following at all.

Even trade unions came to Indonesia in this burst of organisation building. The first union was established in 1905 for European employees of the state railways, but Indonesians soon joined and by 1910 formed the majority of the membership, albeit a majority without voting rights. In 1908 the **Vereeniging voor Spoor- en Tramweg Personeel** (Union for Railway and Tram Workers, VSTP) was founded; membership was open to Indonesian employees on an equal footing with Europeans from the beginning. Thereafter more unions were founded for teachers in government schools, customs officers, government pawnshop employees, government opium-monopoly workers, public works employees, treasury workers, sugar factory workers, and for peasants and workers in general. Organised labour was generally weak, however, for there was an abundance of labour available, and the employers (both government and private) were rarely restrained either by law or by sentiment from the use of any available means to break strikes. In the years 1918–21, however, a shortage of skilled labour placed trade unions in an unusually strong position, as will be seen below.

An even more profound sign that a new age was dawning was the birth of the Islamic reform movement. The background to this reform movement must be sought both in Indonesia and in the Middle East. Indonesian Islam was notable for its considerable diversity. All Indonesian Muslims were in principle Sunnis (Orthodox, as opposed to Shi‘is) and were followers of the Shafi‘i school of law, founded in the Middle East in the late eighth and early ninth centuries AD. Many pious Indonesians were also involved in Sufi mysticism, notably the Shattariyya, Qadiriyya and Naqshabandiyya orders and a popular combination of the last two called Qadiriyya wa

Naqshabandiyya. But behind this superficial uniformity lay much diversity, heterodoxy and ignorance. As in any place where one of the great world religions is found, Islam in Indonesia had been influenced by many local customs (*adat*) and ideas. Learned Indonesian Muslims consequently observed all around them a widespread need for reform; their feelings were strengthened by Dutch domination, which they felt had been made possible by the decline of Islam.

Some Middle Eastern Muslims had already come to similar conclusions in the nineteenth century. Jamal ad-Din al-Afghani (1839–97), Muhammad Rashid Rida (1865–1935) and above all Muhammad ‘Abduh (1849–1905) produced a reform movement which came to be called Modernism, with its centre in Cairo. Modernism had a dual thrust. On the one hand, it wanted to break free of the domination of the four mediaeval schools of law and to return to the original sources of Islam: the *Qur'an*, the Word of God transmitted to His Prophet Muhammad, and the *Hadith* or *Sunnah*, the traditions of the Prophet's life. These alone should be the basis of law (*shari‘ah*) and doctrine. The four Orthodox schools had arisen through a process of reasoning (*ijtihad*) by learned scholars who had arrived at consensus (*ijma‘*) concerning the interpretation of the sources of law. *Ijma‘* had led to the establishment of the four schools of law, after which time they believed that no Muslims had been sufficiently learned to become new interpreters of the law. Modernists said that *ijma‘* could not close the *bab al-ijtihad* (the gate of reasoning), and that new circumstances called for reinvestigation of the eternal truths of the *Qur'an* and *Hadith*. Islam must be purified of all the illegal innovations (*bid‘a*) which had crept into it over the centuries. This first thrust was, thus, scripturalist, fundamentalist, and in spirit puritanical. The second thrust was what justified the term Modernism. This new *ijtihad* must make use of the scientific advances of modern (that is, Western) learning which, Modernists believed, could be combined with a purified Islam to raise Islamic civilisation out of its centuries of ignorance, superstition and decline (as they saw it). Scripturalist, fundamentalist, opposed to mediaeval elaborations of doctrine and open to the advances of science, Modernism was a combination of the progressive and the conservative.

The British colony of Singapore played a major role in spreading the Modernist analysis to Indonesia. The Dutch distrusted Islam and attempted to restrict the pilgrimage traffic to Mecca until about 1902, when Snouck Hurgronje succeeded in altering this policy on the grounds that as a religious doctrine Islam should be free of interference, although as a political force it should be destroyed. In the late nineteenth and early twentieth centuries, many Indonesian *hajis* (pilgrims) therefore travelled via Singapore, where the British did not restrict them and, in any case, where places on ships were both more numerous and cheaper. Indonesians often lived in Singapore for extended periods in connection with their pilgrimages.

In Singapore there was a substantial community of Arabs (mostly Hadhramis) and locally born Indian Muslims. Both groups often had Malay mothers. The Singapore Muslim community was in contact with the Middle East, heavily engaged in trade throughout the Indonesian archipelago, largely untouched by the local traditions that influenced Malay Islam, and deeply conscious of its religious identity because of direct competition and daily contact with the Chinese. In the later nineteenth century Singapore Muslims established lithograph presses which produced a stream of religious

texts and newspapers reflecting Modernist ideas. A part of this material was printed in Malay. In terms of the religious reform movement, Singapore was much more influential in Indonesia than in Malaya, where the conservative religious establishments dominated by the Sultans kept out Modernist ideas, and where such ideas in any case seemed to evoke little response.

Minangkabaus played a leading role in the early reform movement. In 1906 the Malay-language paper *al-Imam* ('The religious leader') began to be published in Singapore, with the first really serious presentation of the Modernist analysis of social, religious and economic issues. Among the Muslims involved in *al-Imam* was the Minangkabau scholar Shaikh Tahir bin Jalaluddin (Muhammad Tahir bin Jalaluddin al-Azhari, 1869–1957), the son of a famous Minangkabau Naqshabandiyya Shaikh. Tahir Jalaluddin had lived for 12 years in Mecca, where he stayed with his Minangkabau cousin Shaikh Ahmad Khatib (1852–1915). The latter had risen to be head (*imam*) of the Shafi'i school of law at the mosque of Mecca (*Masjid al-Haram*) and many of the reformist leaders of Indonesia were his students there. Ahmad Khatib of course defended the Shafi'i school, but allowed his pupils to read Modernist works. Tahir Jalaluddin went on to study in Cairo for four years, where he was influenced by 'Abduh's ideas and became a close friend of Rashid Rida. Ahmad Khatib supported the idea of reform and disapproved of Sufism, which was so influential in Indonesia. In 1906–8 he wrote three tracts which particularly denounced the practices of the Naqshabandiyya order on the grounds that they constituted *bid'a*. Modernists in Indonesia had to come to terms with Sufism: some were willing to tolerate it as a pious way of life, others were suspicious of it as an exaggeration of Islam, and others were entirely hostile to it, seeing Sufism as a haven of heresy.

In 1903 Shaikh Muhammad Djamil Djambek (1860–1947) returned to Minangkabau from Mecca, and in 1906 Haji Rasul (Haji Abdul Karim Amrullah, 1879–1945) returned. Both had been students of Ahmad Khatib and both had become Modernists. Haji Rasul was particularly known for his belligerent opposition to *adat* or to any who opposed him. In 1909 the first Modernist school, the Adabiyah School, was opened in Padang, but when it received a government subsidy and a Dutch head in 1915 it fell outside the religious reform movement. The Thawalib School of Padangpanjang was more important, as Haji Rasul and others developed it into a model of Modernist educational reform. Arabic was stressed so that students could have independent access to the sources of Islam. In 1916 a system of graded classes was introduced and in 1919 desks and a more developed curriculum were introduced. Egyptian textbooks began to be used and subjects such as geography and history were added to the religious subjects. In 1915 Islamic women's education began when the Diniyah School was opened in Padangpanjang. In 1911 a fortnightly paper entitled *al-Munir* ('The illuminative') began to be published in Padang (later in Padangpanjang), the first Modernist journal in Indonesia.

The Modernist movement in Minangkabau provoked opposition. A group of aristocrats and officials who favoured the kind of progress that seemed to be represented by Dutch education and social styles, and who were suspicious of the influence of religious teachers, was led by Datuk Sutan Maharadja. This group wanted reform of the *adat* and thus found itself in opposition to many of the older generation of

officials as well. Sutan Maharadja favoured women's education, reflecting the high status of women in Minangkabau *adat*. In 1909 he set up the first weaving school for women in Padang, and in 1911 he opened a newspaper called *Soenting Melajoe* ('The Malay ornament'), one of the first publications for women in Indonesia.

The religious reform movement also spread to Java. The first initiatives were taken by the Arab community of Batavia, who in 1901 established *Jam'iyyat Khair* (Benevolent Society) there. This opened a modern school taught in Malay, to which in 1911 a Modernist teacher from Sudan named Shaikh Ahmad Surkati (1872–1943) was invited. Surkati soon fell out with his employers and in 1915 he set up *al-Irshad* (*Jam'iyyat al-Islah wal-Irshad*, Union for Reformation and Guidance). *Al-Irshad* established coeducational schools taught in Malay, Arabic and Dutch, most of them in Java. Although most of its students were Arabs, some Indonesians also attended.

In 1911 the first cautious steps for reform were taken by Indonesian Muslims in West Java. The *Persyarikatan Ulama* (Union of Religious Scholars) was set up by Orthodox teachers, but they entertained some of the Modernist ideas of reform and had little contact with old-fashioned *pésantren* circles. *Persyarikatan Ulama* opened a school (1916), set up an orphanage run largely by its own women's branch, and engaged in economic activities such as printing, weaving and agriculture.

The most significant Modernist organisation of Indonesia was established in Yogyakarta in 1912. Kyai Haji Ahmad Dahlan (1868–1923) was from the religious establishment of the Yogyakarta Sultanate. In 1890 he went to Mecca and studied with Ahmad Khatib and others. He returned with a determination to reform Islam and to resist the Christianising efforts of Western missionaries. In 1909 he joined *Budi Utomo* in the hope of preaching reform among its members, but his supporters urged him to establish an organisation of his own. In 1912 he established *Muhammadiyah* (the Way of Muhammad) in Yogyakarta. *Muhammadiyah* threw its energies into educational and welfare efforts, and into a missionary programme of its own to counteract Christianity and local 'superstitions'. In 1917 Dahlan formed a women's section named Aisyiyah, after a wife of the Prophet, which was to play an important role in the modernisation of the life of Indonesian women.

At first *Muhammadiyah* grew only slowly. It faced opposition or indifference from officials, from the old-fashioned Islamic teachers of the countryside, from government-recognised religious hierarchies, and from pious communities who rejected Modernist ideas. In its purification efforts it criticised many customs which pious Javanese had believed for centuries to be the true Islam. In its early years, *Muhammadiyah* thus brought much hostility and bitterness to the religious community of Java. By 1925, two years after Dahlan's death, *Muhammadiyah* had only 4000 members, but it had established 55 schools with 4000 pupils, two clinics in Yogyakarta and Surabaya, one orphanage and one poorhouse. It was introduced into Minangkabau by Haji Rasul in 1925. Once it was linked to the dynamic Islamic world of Minangkabau, it grew rapidly. In 1930 it had 24,000 members, in 1935 43,000, and in 1938 it claimed a remarkable membership of 250,000. By 1938 it had spread throughout the main islands of Indonesia, ran 834 mosques and prayer houses, 31 public libraries and 1774 schools, and had 5516 male and 2114 female proselytisers (*muballigh*). The history of Islamic Modernism in Indonesia after 1925 is to a very large extent the history of

### **Muhammadiyah.**

Two contending streams of thought had emerged as a basis for national rejuvenation, and now a third was added. To the upper-class Westernising (and at least potentially anti-Islamic) stream represented most clearly by **Budi Utomo** and the Modernist Islamic stream typified by **Muhammadiyah**, radical socialist ideas were now added. In 1911 a political party called the **Indische Partij** (Indies Party) was founded by the radical Indo-European E. F. E. Douwes Dekker (1879–1950, also known as Setiabuddhi), a distant relative of E. Douwes Dekker (Multatuli). It proclaimed an ‘Indies’ nationalism and called for independence. Two prominent Javanese, Tjipto Mangunkusumo and Suwardi Surjaningrat (later called Ki Hadjar Dewantara, 1889–1959), joined Douwes Dekker. The government refused recognition to the party, and in 1913 all three of these leaders were exiled to the Netherlands (Tjipto until 1914, Douwes Dekker until 1918, and Suwardi until 1919).

In 1913 H. J. F. M. Sneevliet (1883–1942) arrived in Indonesia. He had begun his career as a Catholic mystic but had then turned to socialdemocratic revolutionary ideas and trade union activism. He was later to act as the Comintern (Communist International) agent in China under the alias G. Maring. In 1914 he founded the **Indische Sociaal-Democratische Vereeniging** (Indies Social-Democratic Association, ISDV) in Surabaya. This small leftist party was shortly to become the first Communist party in Asia outside the Russian sphere. ISDV was almost entirely Dutch in membership, but it desired a base among the Indonesian masses. In 1915–16 it allied with **Insulinde** (Indies Archipelago), a party which had been founded in 1907 and which had absorbed most of the radical Indo-European membership of the **Indische Partij** after 1913. **Insulinde** had 6000 members, including some leading Javanese, but it was clearly not the ideal means of access to a mass base. So ISDV’s thoughts began to turn to **Sarekat Islam**, the only organisation with a large following among the Indonesian masses.

The First World War (1914–18) initiated a period of hectic political activity in Indonesia. Shipping between Indonesia and Europe was disrupted by the hostilities, communications were hampered, the colonial military budget was raised and the welfare budget cut, prices rose and Indonesian welfare declined. With imports disrupted, some local import-substitution industries grew up, only to be wiped out when imports resumed at the end of the war. In the midst of this uncertain time, there arose a major political issue in which the new Indonesian parties played a significant role.

The **Indië weerbaar** (defence of the Indies) issue began as a defence question but soon became entangled with proposals for the creation of a **Volksraad** (People’s Council). The idea of a part-time militia composed of Indonesians had been considered and rejected by the government in 1913–14. But when the First World War broke out in August 1914 it was taken up again, for this would be a cheaper defence force than an enlarged professional army. **Budi Utomo**, which had branches among Javanese serving in the colonial army, was awakened from its general lethargy and began to campaign for such a militia. Critics hinted that **Budi Utomo** had been put up to this by the government. **Sarekat Islam** took the view that the peoples of Indonesia could be expected to defend the colonial regime only if they were represented in its government. In 1915 **Budi Utomo** also endorsed this view. The **Indië weerbaar** campaign had thus

quickly shifted to the issue of popular representation. In 1916–17 a delegation consisting of representatives from *Budi Utomo*, SI, the *Bupatis'* Union and similar organisations for the four Javanese principalities, visited the Netherlands. They petitioned Queen Wilhelmina and toured the country giving lectures. When the Dutch States-General acted on the issues, the bill to create an indigenous militia failed, but in December 1916 the bill to establish the *Volksraad* passed.

The Indonesian parties now prepared for the *Volksraad* elections. *Budi Utomo* quickly revealed its limitations. It was proposed to make Islamic appeals a part of its platform in order to attract a mass following, and to spread its sphere of activity beyond Java and Madura. The anti-Islamic potential in the ideas of Radjiman and others carried the day, however, and there was not enough support to launch *Budi Utomo* out of its Java-centric thinking either. *Budi Utomo* now began to split between moderates and conservatives. With Governor General J. P. Count van Limburg Stirum (1916–21) still in favour of further political reform, *Budi Utomo* was in some danger of finding itself to the right of the colonial government.

*Sarekat Islam* was undergoing increasing leftist influence, as ISDV sought its mass base. In 1914 a young Javanese railway worker named Semaun (1899–1971) joined SI's Surabaya branch. In 1915 he moved to Sēmarang, where Sneevliet was active in the Railway and Tram Workers' Union (VSTP). Semaun now joined ISDV as well. The Sēmarang SI grew rapidly to 20,000 members in 1917, and under Semaun's influence it adopted a strongly anti-capitalist line. It opposed SI's participation in the *Indië weerbaar* campaign, opposed the idea of sitting in the *Volksraad*, and bitterly attacked the Central *Sarekat Islam* (CSI) leadership. In the 1917 SI congress the radicals seemed to have considerable support. Tjokroaminoto feared to start an internal battle with them and agreed to a condemnation of 'sinful' capitalism, thereby apparently condemning foreign and Chinese capital but not capital in the hands of Indonesian *hajis* and others. Abdul Muis (1890–1959), a Minangkabau who had been SI's representative on the *Indië weerbaar* delegation to the Netherlands, went so far as to say that if the *Volksraad* proved to be a failure, SI would revolt.

SI was now splitting into several segments, although the full significance of these was not yet clear. The leftists led by the Sēmarang branch were working for control. In West Java a secret revolutionary branch called '*Afdeeling B*' (Section B) or '*Sarekat Islam B*' was being set up by Sosrokardono of CSI and some other activists, beginning in 1917. CSI was meanwhile looking towards legal political activity in the *Volksraad*. The unruly mass membership was still inclined to disorganised violence. And finally, since 1915 a new force had been rising within SI. In that year a Minangkabau employed as a police informer, named Haji Agus Salim (1884–1954), went to a SI meeting, was converted to SI's cause, and brought with him a commitment to Pan-Islam and Modernism as the proper basis for political activity. As a young man, Salim had studied in Dutch colonial schools and had, indeed, hoped to travel to the Netherlands to further his studies. But he failed to win the necessary scholarship, despite the advocacy even of Kartini. Instead he took a job at the Dutch consulate in Jeddah (1906–11), where he handled the affairs of Indonesian *hajis*, himself undertook the *hajj* on five occasions, and grew close to his Minangkabau cousin Shaikh Ahmad Khatib. He thereby regained the religious convictions which had waned during his Dutch schooling. On his return to

Indonesia, he was destined to become one of the leading Islamic figures of his generation.

At the beginning of 1918 the results of the **Volksraad** elections became known. Abdul Muis of CSI and Abdul Rivai, who was a member of **Insulinde**, were elected, but the rest of the elected Indonesian members were mostly **bupatis** or other officials. Governor General van Limburg Stirum was disappointed by this outcome. He used his powers of appointment to name, among others, Tjipto Mangunkusumo (now back from exile) from **Insulinde** and Tjokroaminoto from SI, in the hope of involving the more radical forces and bringing them to a cooperative approach. The elected European members were more progressive than the majority of Indonesian members. Dutchmen opposed to Ethical reforms had largely ignored the elections, so the Ethically inclined **Nederlandsch Indische Vrijzinnige Bond** (Netherlands Indies Liberal Alliance), along with the Dutch socialists (**Sociaal Democratische Arbeiderspartij**, Social Democratic Workers' Party) and the more liberal Indonesians formed a majority of elected members. The ISDV now began to fear that the **Volksraad** might prove to be a success and thereby lead progressive Indonesians away from the extreme left.

In November 1918 the political excitement of the First World War period reached a peak when it seemed as if the social-democratic revolution in Germany would overflow into the Netherlands. The attempt failed. But while uncertainty about the outcome persisted in Indonesia, van Limburg Stirum – who probably already knew that the Dutch monarchy was safe and merely used the occasion to support further reform – issued his ‘November promises’, agreeing to further transfer of power to the **Volksraad** and other unspecified social reforms. The **Volksraad** looked increasingly promising.

But during 1919 the colonial government withdrew from its apparent liberalism, as even van Limburg Stirum began to feel that things were getting out of hand. He turned first to ISDV. Since the Russian Revolution of 1917, ISDV had become an even more clearly Communist body. Late in 1917 it had gathered 3000 soldiers and sailors into soviets (workers’ revolutionary councils), mainly in the port city of Surabaya. During 1918 and 1919 the government crushed these soviets, exiled Sneevliet and arrested or exiled most of the other Dutch leaders of the party. As the Dutch radicals disappeared, however, ISDV fell to Indonesian leadership, which would shortly enable it at last to acquire its mass base. **Insulinde** was the next to be hit. Early in 1919 there were rural troubles in Surakarta led by Haji Misbach (d. 1926), a man whose preaching of the doctrine that Islam and Communism were the same thing earned him notoriety as the ‘red **haji**’. Other **Insulinde** leaders also seemed to be involved, so Misbach and Douwes Dekker were arrested and Tjipto Mangunkusumo was banished from all Javanese-speaking areas. Next it was SI’s turn.

In May 1919 a Dutch official was murdered at Tolitoli (North Sulawesi) just after Abdul Muis of CSI had made a speaking tour in the region. CSI was blamed and Muis was arrested. Then in June 1919 a shooting incident at Garut (West Java) led to the discovery of the secret Section B. Sosrokardono of CSI was arrested along with some Indonesian ISDV members. In 1921 Tjokroaminoto himself was arrested for perjury in the Section B trials. Moderate members of SI now began to worry about the organisation, and its mass base began to wither as villagers feared that SI membership cards were passports to trouble. The Javanese **priyayi** administrators became even more

consciously opposed to the popular movements, and the Dutch expanded their intelligence and police organisations.

The political environment was turning against radicalism, but ironically this left ISDV in a position to take command of the popular political movement. ISDV was now in the hands of Semaun and a young Javanese aristocrat named Darsono Notosudirdjo (1893–1976). It was still very small (269 members in 1920), but it was now predominantly Indonesian. In May 1920 it changed its name to *Perserikatan Komunist di India* (the Communist Association in the Indies); in 1924 it was changed to *Partai Komunis Indonesia* (the Indonesian Communist Party). PKI was born.

PKI propaganda now revealed how thoroughly Indonesian the party had become. Rather than emphasise the theoretical doctrines of Marx and Lenin, PKI spoke in a vocabulary which appealed to Indonesians, especially to Javanese *abangan* (nominal Muslims). The classless society was presented as a reincarnation of a romanticised Majapahit, seen as a great egalitarian age before the Dutch had come and, significantly, before Islam. The heroes of PKI were Dipanagara, Kyai Maja and Sëntot from the Java War. The messianic prophesies of the *ratu adil* (just king) were also harnessed to PKI appeals. And there was an Islamic Communist variant of all this. Between his release from prison late in 1922 and his arrest the following year, Haji Misbach spread Islamic Communism in the Surakarta area. Islamic Communism also spread in Minangkabau and in West Java. It is important to note that although students from Modernist schools were often attracted to Islamic Communism, it was mostly led by Sufi teachers and other representatives of more traditional forms of Islam. Modernist leaders, with their dedication to strict scriptural orthodoxy, were the main opponents of Islamic Communism.

Between 1918 and 1921, Indonesian trade unions had considerable success in improving conditions and wages for their members. This was primarily because those years saw a combination of price inflation, shortage of skilled labour and successful organisation of labour by political parties, mainly SI and PKI. Unions' successes naturally encouraged people to join them. As they attracted members, the unions played a significant role in politicising workers and contributing to the development and organisation of Indonesian anticolonialism. In December 1919 an attempt was made to create a federation of PKI and SI unions, containing 22 unions and 72,000 members. Semaun chaired this federation, while the vice-chairman was the CSI union leader Surjopranoto, nicknamed *raja mogok* (the strike king), who soon disputed Semaun's leadership. The federation was permanently crippled by such internal conflicts. Meanwhile employers were becoming more organised and effective in resisting strikes, the government was growing more repressive towards Indonesian trade unions and economic conditions were turning against them as the shortage of skilled labour turned into a surplus by 1921. Thus the context in which unions tried to operate was becoming more hostile.

Now SI and PKI came into open and irreconcilable conflict. In November 1920 the PKI's Dutch-language newspaper *Het vrije woord* ('The free word') published Lenin's theses on the national and colonial questions, which included denunciations of Pan-Islam and Pan-Asianism. SI was now more and more under the influence of Haji Agus Salim and others who supported Pan-Islam. The ensuing public battle was bitter, and no

matter what contortions PKI attempted it could not avoid the charge of being anti-Islamic. The bitter personal rivalries that were splitting the political movement had now achieved an ideological definition. As the public battle raged in meetings and newspapers, the mass base that SI claimed was even more inclined to abandon political organisations altogether.

Attempts by some leaders to patch up the quarrels failed. At the October 1921 SI congress, ‘party discipline’ was adopted. This made it impossible for an SI member to belong to another party (although some exceptions were allowed, such as *Muhammadiyah*). PKI members were now driven out of CSI, but the battle remained to be fought out in each SI branch. The result was that SI began to split into ‘Red SI’ and ‘White SI’ branches. Semaun left Indonesia to go to the Soviet Union and Tjokroaminoto was now in jail. In their absence a Minangkabau named Tan Malaka (1897–1949) made some fruitless efforts to restore PKI–SI cooperation. In 1922 the first really large-scale strike broke out in the pawnshop workers’ union led by Abdul Muis of CSI. PKI felt obliged to announce its support. The strike was broken by the government, which simply fired the strikers, and Muis and Tan Malaka were both exiled.

In May 1922 Semaun returned to a scene of apparent catastrophe. He immediately set to work to rebuild PKI unions and PKI influence in SI branches and schools. Tjokroaminoto was released from jail in May 1922 (he was formally acquitted of perjury in August); by now he was determined to be rid for ever of PKI, which among other things had been calling him a dishonest drunkard. At the February 1923 SI congress he set up *Partai Sarekat Islam* (Islamic Union Party) with party discipline, and determined to establish a branch of this party wherever there was a ‘Red SI’ branch. The ‘Red SI’ branches were now renamed *Sarekat Rakyat* (People’s Union) and the battle was on.

In mid-1923 Semaun was exiled to Europe after the government crushed a strike by his railway and tram workers’ union (VSTP). Darsono became PKI leader. Salim’s influence in CSI now led it to adopt a policy of non-cooperation (it withdrew its *Volksraad* members), which it called *hijrah* (migration) in remembrance of the Prophet Muhammad’s *hijrah* from Mecca to Medina in AD 622. CSI was now withdrawing from any significant political action. As CSI slowly faded into inactivity, PKI began its last drive to take control of the dying popular movement. The main scene of the contest was now in what remained of the unruly rural SI branches.

While the political movement was disintegrating, the religious and cultural debate was also producing deeper divisions. In 1916 SI had already split along doctrinal lines in Minangkabau. Modernists called themselves ‘white card SI’ while the more old-fashioned religious groups led by Sufis were called ‘red card SI’. The party of progressive *adat* leaders under Datuk Sutan Maharadja meanwhile reconciled its differences with the older aristocrats. In 1916 they formed the *Sarekat Adat Alam Minangkabau* (Adat Union of the Minangkabau World); this became a pro-government political party opposed to the reformist religious leaders. In 1918 the traditionalist religious leaders and the *adat* party moved closer together in their shared opposition to Modernism. In 1919 *Sumatra Thawalib* (General Organisation of Students of Sumatra) was formed for Modernist students and by 1922 political activism was strong among

them. Until his arrest in November 1923 Haji Datuk Batuah (b. 1895) spread Islamic Communism among the students, against the bitter opposition of Haji Rasul and the Modernist teachers. As noted above, in 1925 Haji Rasul brought **Muhammadiyah** to Minangkabau, apparently having lost hope in the **Sumatra Thawalib**.

Javanese-centred nationalism was significant in this period. Javanese nationalists generally held unsympathetic views of more reformist Islam and tended to look back upon pre-Islamic Majapahit as a golden age. The fruits of government-funded archaeological work, including the reconstruction of splendid pre-Islamic *candis* (temples), and the publication of Old Javanese texts by scholars of philology made pre-Islamic Java better known, held it up as the ‘classical’ high point of Javanese civilisation and thereby encouraged Javanese nationalist sentiments. In 1917 a **Comité voor het Javaansch Nationalisme** (Committee for Javanese Nationalism) was established; it became active in 1918 when it began to publish the monthly **Wederopbouw** ('Reconstruction'). The principal guiding force behind this movement was the Mangkunégaran principality, particularly Mangkunégara VII (r. 1916–44). Javanese nationalism and Islamic reform clashed when an article appeared in the Surakarta newspaper **Djawi Hisworo** ('Javanese of the King') in January 1918 which slandered the Prophet Muhammad as a drunkard and opium smoker. Muslims were incensed and in February they set up a committee called **Těntara Kangjéng Nabi Muhammad** (Army of the Prophet Muhammad). The **Comité voor het Javaansch Nationalisme** published a pamphlet condemning Islamic fanaticism; although these people, too, disapproved of the style of the **Djawi Hisworo** article, Islam as it was now being taught by the reformists seemed to them to be an unwelcome foreign import.

A more positive and significant reaction to the rising tide of Islamic reform came from the former **Indische Partij** radical Suwardi Surjaningrat. Suwardi was from the Yogyakarta royal house of Pakualam and a brother of the CSI union leader Surjopranoto. During his exile in the Netherlands (1913–19) he had taken an interest in new educational movements. On his return he joined a Javanese mystical group in Yogyakarta, where **Muhammadiyah** was based. This mystical group felt that a truly indigenous (that is, non-government and non-Islamic) educational system was needed. In 1922 Suwardi, now renamed Ki Hadjar Dewantara, therefore set up the first **Taman Siswa** (Garden of Pupils) school in Yogyakarta, combining modern European-style education and traditional Javanese arts. By 1924 its school took students up to the level of MULO and teacher-training school. **Taman Siswa** did not, however, adopt the government’s curriculum and therefore received no government subsidy (nor did it want one, preferring its independence). Here was the logical outcome of the feeling among many Javanese that Islam, and certainly Modernist Islam, was not an acceptable basis for national revival. **Taman Siswa** soon spread outside of Yogyakarta. By 1932 it had 166 schools and 11,000 pupils.

Modernism was meanwhile reaching new extremes. In 1923 a group of merchants set up **Persatuan Islam** (Islamic Union) in Bandung. In 1924 a Singapore-born Tamil with a Javanese mother named A. Hassan (b. 1887) joined the organisation. His biting defence of Modernist doctrines, his denunciation of anything that smacked of superstition (that is to say, much of what was accepted as proper Islam by local Muslims), his vehement opposition to nationalism on the grounds that it divided

Muslims in one land from another, all justified the organisation's nickname 'Përsis' (a pun on the Dutch *precies*: precise, punctilious). This resulted in the exodus of more moderate members of the group; in 1926 they formed ***Permufakatan Islam*** (Islamic Agreement).

The strict Islamic community of Indonesia was now becoming as split as the political movement. The adoption of the *hijrah* policy of non-cooperation by the declining SI even led it into conflict with the expanding but largely non-political ***Muhammadiyah***, which accepted government subsidies for its schools. In 1929 SI eventually adopted party discipline towards ***Muhammadiyah***, thus driving its members out. But the strongest reactions came from within the ranks of the Orthodox Shafi'i Muslims who objected to Modernism's purifying efforts and its denial of the authority of the four Orthodox schools of law. The arguments were extremely bitter, with accusations flying back and forth that those on the other side were ***kafirs*** (infidels). A crisis in the Middle East finally brought a formal split between Orthodox and Modernist Indonesians.

In 1924 Turkey abolished the position of Caliph, the spiritual head of all Muslims which the Ottoman Sultans had claimed to be for some six decades. Egypt planned an international Islamic conference to discuss the Caliphate question. But further confusion ensued when in 1924 Ibn Sa'ud captured Mecca, bringing with him puritanical Wahhabi ideas of reform and a claim that he was Caliph. He, too, invited all Muslims to a Caliphate conference. During 1924–6 Indonesian Muslims set up committees to attend these conferences but the representatives were predominantly Modernist, and Tjokroaminoto appeared prominently.

The Orthodox Shafi'i leaders in Java had had enough. They disliked Modernism, which in any case they equated with Wahhabism (a puritanical movement which accepted only the authority of the Hanbali school of law), they had a low opinion of Tjokroaminoto, and they feared that the interests of the Shafi'i school of law would be ignored in Mecca and Cairo as they were being attacked in Indonesia. In 1926 Kyai Haji Wahab Chasbullah (c.1883/4–1971), with the support and blessing of East Java's most respected ***kyai***, Kyai Haji Hasjim Asjari (1871–1947), therefore set up ***Nahdlatul Ulama*** (the Rise of the Religious Scholars, NU) to defend the interests of Orthodox Muslims. Other rural Orthodox teachers (***kyais***) in East Java joined NU, the leaders being mainly people who had family connections to Hasjim Asjari. NU spread in other areas, but East Java always remained its heartland. It supported the improvement of Orthodox religious schools, care for the needy, and economic enterprises. By 1942 it had 120 branches in Java and South Kalimantan, much of its membership being traders.

The government was now trying to get some control over the proliferating Islamic educational establishments, which it saw as a potential threat to the colonial regime. In 1905 it had proclaimed a ***goeroe ordonnantie*** (teacher ordinance) for Java, which required written permission from the authorities before religious instruction could be given, and the keeping of pupil lists. Many ***pésantrens*** with teachers who did not know the Western alphabet but only the indigenous and Arabic scripts, and which had floating student populations, were unable to meet these requirements. But in those days before the religious and political turmoil had begun, there was no organised protest. This ***goeroe ordonnantie*** appears to have had only a limited impact. In 1925 a new ***goeroe***

*ordonnantie* was proclaimed. This time it applied to all Indonesia and was in some ways milder: it only required written notification of an intention to give religious instruction, but student lists and curriculum details had to be submitted on standard forms. In Minangkabau the protest at this interference in religious affairs was now so great that the Governor General decided it was wiser to suspend the *goeroe ordonnantie* there. In both Minangkabau and Java the effect of this new ordinance was to increase politicisation and antigovernment sentiment among devout Muslims.

With animosities growing on all sides, the Indonesian political parties moved towards catastrophe. The competition for a rural following between SI and *Sarekat Rakyat* branches led PKI into a violent and anarchic milieu. The PKI leadership was uncertain about its course, its ideology or its appeals, as it found itself with a growing non-proletarian following. SI split up still further as Salim and other Pan-Islamic leaders gained in influence. Sosrokardono (released from prison in 1923) broke with SI and joined PKI in 1924. Two other Javanese who had also been involved in the Section B affair, Alimin Prawirodirdjo (1889–1964) and Musso (1897–1948), both of whom had been ISDV members but had been loyal to Tjokroaminoto at the Section B trials, joined PKI on their release. Surjopranoto also leaned towards the Communists.

In early 1924 violence in rural Java increased with the appearance of groups called *sarekat hijau* (green union), especially in Priangan. These were gangs of thugs, policemen and *kyais*, encouraged by the Dutch administration and *priyayi* officials. By early 1925 there were about 20,000 members who attacked PKI and SI meetings and intimidated their members. Government surveillance was greater, and what remained of the PKI leadership often found itself under arrest.

Unable to decide finally whether it should abandon the *Sarekat Rakyat* in order to preserve a proletarian character, PKI stumbled towards rebellion. In December 1924 it was decided to prepare for insurrection. The PKI leadership in Java found itself criticised by the Comintern and by its own leaders in exile, notably Semaun and Tan Malaka, but it stood firm. An attempt to foment a major strike wave in 1925 was a disaster. Thereafter, the government thoroughly suppressed what remained of the trade unions and PKI was virtually driven underground as the police broke up its meetings and carried off individual leaders. In September 1925 Darsono and many others were arrested; Darsono was allowed to travel at his own expense to the Soviet Union the following year. Alimin fled to Singapore where he joined Tan Malaka. As the confusion mounted, PKI appeared in an exotic array of local styles, few of which had much to do with theoretical Communism. In Bantěn it became hyper-Islamic. As it grew more and more attractive to the anarchic elements of rural society, PKI grew rapidly in Sumatra and Java, with little central coordination.

In December 1925 the remaining PKI leaders decided to rebel. The government attempted to arrest most of the central leadership in January 1926 but many succeeded in escaping. The only remaining leader of any stature was Musso, who fled to Singapore. With its leaders in exile and their heirs in Java thoroughly split over the proper course, PKI was fast disintegrating. The police had penetrated its chaotic lines of communication and, before the insurrection could break out, in November 1926 many branch leaders were arrested, including those along the north coast of Java where the insurrectionary urge had been strongest. When the moment came, these branches did

nothing. On the night of 12 November 1926 the PKI uprising broke out in Bantěn, Batavia and Priangan. It was put down in Batavia by the next day, and throughout Bantěn and Priangan by December. One European was killed. After the revolt had been utterly crushed in Java, it broke out in Sumatra on 1 January 1927. The fighting here was heavier, but the insurrection was crushed by 4 January. Another European was killed by the rebels.

PKI was dead, and was not to be resurrected for nearly twenty years. About 13,000 people were arrested; some were shot. Some 4500 were imprisoned and 1308 were sent to the notorious prison camp at Boven Digul in Papua, which was specially constructed in 1927 to house them. With PKI's destruction two other things came to an end for the duration of the colonial period. Not until the Second World War did the rural masses again play such an active role in political agitation. And never again did the Dutch tolerate radical anticolonial movements for more than brief periods. Conservative views among the Dutch colonialists now went largely unchallenged.

The first stage of national revival came to an end as the shock of the PKI rebellion and its utter failure spread throughout Indonesia. Indonesian life, especially in Java and Minangkabau, had been truly transformed. It was not yet clear, however, whether it had progressed. Some important patterns had emerged, but they had only increased the sense of disunity among Indonesians. Instead of a vague sense of a shared Islamic identity, it now mattered what kind of Muslim one was or, indeed, whether one wished to be a Muslim at all. Instead of an unspecified opposition to Dutch rule, it was now a question of what kind of anticolonial doctrine one supported or, indeed, whether one's interests really lay with the colonial regime. Instead of a general belief that Indonesians had something or other in common, regional identities were even clearer as a result of the growth of ethnically based organisations. Instead of an assumption that various classes in each region were brothers of a sort, the bureaucratic elites and their subjects were very clearly warned of the interests that divided them.

There were, however, some promising signs. The next generation of Indonesian politicians would include some who were more realistic, Islam was undergoing a true reform, and the nature of the enemy had been perceived. Eventually Indonesian leaders would find that there were things which united them, and that these things could be regarded as more important than the issues which divided them, at least as a temporary expedient. Out of this discovery, nationalism would shortly be born. This would be a new step, for among the major organisations described in this chapter the influence of religious reform, of Pan-Islam, of international Marxist categories or of regional and communal identities was such that none was truly nationalist. But soon some leaders would begin to think of all the indigenous peoples of Indonesia as their constituency and an Indonesian national state as their goal. On this, at least, many would eventually be able to agree.

## ***Chapter 16***

---

# **Repression and Economic Crisis, 1927–42**

Between 1927 and the destruction of the Dutch colonial state by the Japanese in 1942, the Indonesian national revival proceeded in a less flamboyant fashion. In political affairs, the anticolonial movement went through a series of false starts which ended in nothing. The Dutch regime entered the most conservative and repressive phase of its twentieth-century history. The rural masses no longer played an active political role, being both disillusioned by their experience with SI and PKI in preceding years and, from 1930 onwards, more immediately occupied with surviving the hard years of the Depression.

There were, however, several aspects of this period which set the stage for the events which were to follow after 1942. Firstly, any hopes of progress in cooperation with the Dutch were utterly dashed, so that opposition to the Dutch became the only possible tactic for the future. Secondly, the deep divisions within the tiny Indonesian elite were generally subordinated to an understanding that some form of autonomous or independent Indonesian state was the prime goal of political effort; thus nationalism was established as the dominant ideological position. Thirdly, in the interest of maximum unity among Indonesia's cultural, religious and ideological streams, this nationalist idea rejected the Pan-Islamic and reformist instincts of the urban Islamic leadership, adopting a position which is conventionally called 'secular' but which in practice was often seen as anti-Islamic by Muslim leaders; Islam was thus pushed into the isolated political position which, with rare exceptions, it occupied for most of the rest of the century. Fourthly, the awareness that they faced many common challenges and shared a common commitment to their faith lessened the bitter arguments between Modernist and Orthodox Muslims and brought these two wings closer together. And finally, the individuals who emerged as Indonesian leaders in this period were significant, for, despite all appearances at the time, they were destined to be the first generation in Indonesian history to preside over the entire archipelago as a unified and independent nation.

Among the new leaders who emerged after the destruction of PKI, particular interest attaches to the man who was eventually to become the first President of independent Indonesia. Sukarno (1901–70) was the son of a Javanese teacher in the government school system and his Balinese wife. His father was from the nominal Muslim (*abangan*) community of Java and a Theosophist. After finishing his studies in his father's school in Majakerta (East Java), Sukarno went into the European school

system, finishing the European Lower School there in 1916. Then he was sent to the European HBS (Higher middle-class school) in Surabaya, where he boarded with Tjokroaminoto of SI, who was a friend of his father.

In Surabaya, Sukarno met many of the early political leaders: Tjokroaminoto himself, Salim, Sneevliet, Semaun, Musso, Alimin and Ki Hadjar Dewantara among others. He began to read widely, exploring European and American history and absorbing many new ideas. His resentment at the petty discrimination he suffered at HBS, the things he learned from the political leaders and his studies and private reading all began to move him towards an anticolonial political position. In 1918 he joined the youth movement *Jong Java*, started to write for the SI newspaper *Oetoesan Hindia* ('Indies messenger') and began to speak impressively at SI meetings. In 1920 or 1921 he sealed his status as a protégé of Tjokroaminoto by taking the latter's 15-year-old daughter in a 'hung marriage' (*kawin gantung*), a form of matrimony in which the consummation of the marriage is postponed, often because of the young age of one or both of the partners.

In 1921 Sukarno finished HBS and proceeded to the recently opened Technical College in Bandung. When Tjokroaminoto was arrested for perjury in the Section B trials in August 1921, Sukarno left his studies and returned to work as a railway clerk in Surabaya in order to support the family. When Tjokroaminoto was released in 1922 Sukarno returned to Bandung. But in Bandung new influences were beginning to weaken his links with Tjokroaminoto. His new landlord's wife Inggit Garnasih began to hold a great attraction for him. In 1922 he divorced Tjokroaminoto's daughter and the following year he married Inggit, thus ending his personal tie to Tjokroaminoto. Bandung was also a centre of new kinds of ideas which contributed to the increasing sophistication of Sukarno's outlook. Here Modernist Islam took its most extreme form in *Persatuan Islam*. Here also PKI was active.

Most significantly, in Bandung Sukarno met and was deeply impressed by Douwes Dekker and especially Tjipto Mangunkusumo, and grew much closer to Ki Hadjar Dewantara. Before their exile in 1913 these three had led the radical *Indische Partij*, the membership of which had been largely Indo-European and which had been the only party to think in Indonesian nationalist terms rather than in Islamic, Marxist or narrowly ethnic categories. All three were now back from exile. Their influence was revealed repeatedly in Sukarno's subsequent career. In their ideas he found justification for a form of nationalism which was devoid of any specific Islamic commitment, theory of class struggle or formal link to a particular ethnic group. Dewantara's *Taman Siswa* school system, begun in 1922, rejected reformist Islam and adopted Javanese culture as the philosophical basis for a new national character. This struck a responsive chord in Sukarno's thinking. The way in which Javanese *abangan*, and especially the upper-class *priyayi* among them, had absorbed Hindu, Buddhist, Islamic and Western ideas into a unique synthesis which they found satisfactory seemed to Sukarno to be a model for the Indonesian nation as a whole.

In Sukarno's hands, appeals to nationalism and to unity in the cause of nationalism meant that other doctrines must be subordinated to a set of ideas which denied the need for Islamic reform or dominance, for social struggle within Indonesian society or for anything other than a vaguely radical rejection of colonial rule. This political

philosophy was, and remained, almost wholly devoid of positive prescriptions for what should follow once independence was won. Sukarno's main contribution to this nationalism was the injection of a romantic streak, a belief that he could be like the great men of history of whom he had read: Washington, Lincoln, Garibaldi and others. Throughout his career, Sukarno believed so strongly in his own historical destiny that many others also began to believe in it.

In November 1925, during his final year at the Technical College, Sukarno helped to found the *Algemeene Studieclub* (General Study Club) among the students. This was inspired by the Study Club set up in Surabaya in 1924 by Dr Sutomo (1888–1938), one of the founders of *Budi Utomo*, who had won notoriety for his view that Islam detracted from proper nationalistic sentiments. Sukarno's Study Club was overtly political, with independence for Indonesia being its goal. In the deeply divided anticolonial movement of the day, Sukarno saw evidence that above all else unity must be achieved.

When he finished his engineering degree in Bandung in 1926, Sukarno was still uncertain whether to go into government service or political activity. He was now one of the most highly educated Indonesians of his time, but to what use should he put his status and learning? His dilemma was, of course, that of the lesser *priyayi* as a whole. His feeling that the anticolonial movement needed to be unified, and that he was the man to achieve this, meanwhile continued to grow. Later in 1926 he published a series of articles which argued, as others had argued before, that Islam, Marxism and nationalism should be united in the cause of independence. In practice, he implied that the first two of these should be subordinated to the third. By assuming that the real differences among these ideologies did not exist, and by resisting involvement in the bitter controversies of the day, Sukarno's Study Club managed to maintain friendly contacts with all other factions. When the PKI rebellion was crushed in late 1926 and early 1927, by which time SI had largely faded into inactivity, fate seemed to have made Sukarno's choice of careers for him. With Communism destroyed and Islam increasingly impotent as a political force, the time for nationalism seemed to have dawned.

On 4 July 1927 Sukarno and his Bandung Study Club took the initiative in founding a new political party, the *Perserikatan Nasional Indonesia* (Indonesian Nationalist Association), with Sukarno as chairman. In May 1928 its name was changed to *Partai Nasional Indonesia* (Indonesian Nationalist Party, PNI). PNI's aim was independence for the Indonesian archipelago, to be achieved by non-cooperative methods and mass organisation. This was the first major political party in which the membership was ethnically Indonesian, the goal was simply political independence, the territorial vision encompassed the boundaries of Indonesia as defined by Dutch colonial rule, and the ideology was 'secular' nationalism. By May 1929 PNI had branches in the main cities of Java and one in Palembang, and claimed 3860 members (most of them in Bandung, Batavia and Surabaya); at the end of 1929 it had 10,000 members.

By the end of 1927, Sukarno already appeared to have achieved a united front of the main Indonesian political organisations. The *Partai Sarekat Islam* leader Sukiman Wirjosandjojo (c.1896–1974) gave Sukarno crucial support in creating this ephemeral unity, over the objections of Salim who disapproved of 'secular' nationalism and disliked the influence of the new generation of Westernised intellectuals. *Partai*

**Sarekat Islam, Budi Utomo**, the Surabaya Study Club and the main regionalist and Christian organisations joined with PNI in a body known as PPPKI (**Pěrmufakatan Pěrhimpunan-pěrhimpunan Politik Kěbangsaan Indonesia** – Agreement of Indonesian People's Political Associations). The idea of an all-Indonesian nationalism as a common denominator was now growing. The intellectual leaders of ethnic and regionalist groups were adopting the concept partly as a means of defence against potential Javanese domination, and Christian groups saw it partly as a defence against Islamic domination. Some sections of the Chinese and Arab communities also endorsed Indonesian nationalism on a multiracial basis. But the growth of nationalism had more positive roots as well, for many leaders were convinced that there was such a thing as an Indonesian nation and that this nation had a right to a life of its own.

Real differences of aims, ideology and personalities still divided the movements, however, and the unity achieved by PPPKI was superficial. The **Partai Sarekat Islam** (in 1929 renamed **Partai Sarekat Islam Indonesia**, PSII) withdrew from PPPKI in 1930 because the other groups refused to give Islam the recognition that the urban Islamic leaders thought it deserved. The ‘secular’ nationalists tended, indeed, to look admiringly at Egypt, Persia, Iraq and especially Turkey, where religion and the state were being separated in the name of modernity. The Indonesian Islamic leadership could not accept such ideas. The loose unity represented by PPPKI confirmed the idea that a nationalism devoid of regional or religious ties was a possible basis for joint action, but this implied that joint action would almost certainly bypass the Islamic groups who would therefore find themselves isolated from the mainstream of political leadership. This did not yet, however, bring Muslims closer together. The urban PSII leaders continued to stress Modernist ideas which the rural Orthodox leaders of NU found unacceptable.

In the Netherlands, too, a new leadership group was emerging among Indonesian students. This group was shortly to produce the main alternative to Sukarno’s style of religiously neutral nationalism. In 1922 the old organisation for Indonesian students in the Netherlands, the **Indische Vereeniging** (Indies Association, established 1908) was renamed **Pěrhimpunan Indonesia** (Indonesian Association) and became more involved in political questions. The exiled PKI leaders Tan Malaka and Semaun, among others, spoke to its meetings and the organisation moved in a radical direction. Two of its main leaders were Minangkabaus: Mohammad Hatta (1902–80) and Sutan Sjahrir (1909–66). Hatta was to become both Vice-President and Prime Minister of Indonesia and Sjahrir was to become Prime Minister. Two other future Prime Ministers, the Javanese Ali Sastroamidjojo (1903–75) and Sukiman Wirjosandjojo, were also prominent. These were, in general, the most intellectual of the Indonesian leaders: they had attended Dutch universities and had an informed and generally unromantic view of the outside world, of the Dutch and of imperialism, but they often lacked empathy with their less favoured countrymen at home. Hatta was the dominant personality among them. In ideology they were mostly socialists who accepted much of the Marxist interpretation of imperialism. Later, in 1931, **Pěrhimpunan Indonesia** was to split when Moscow-oriented Communists gained control; both Sjahrir and Hatta were then expelled.

In September 1927 Hatta, Ali and others were arrested on a charge of encouraging armed resistance to Dutch rule in Indonesia. After over five months in prison they were

tried in The Hague in March 1928 and were acquitted, much to the embarrassment of the authorities. Hatta had used his defence speech to make a sweeping denunciation of Dutch rule and justification of Indonesian nationalism. In Indonesia as well the government moved against the new leaders.

The Dutch community in the Indies was turning even more to the right in this period. In the 1920s and 1930s, once-fashionable ideas of modernising Indonesians and of cultural convergence between the local and the modern (that is, European) – ideas which were fundamental to the Ethical policy – retreated before cultural relativism and racial determinism, as was also true in other colonial realms. Now conservatives argued successfully that Indonesian natives and Europeans differed irrevocably and eternally. No amount of modern education could bridge this gap, nor of course could culturally ‘hybrid’ Western-educated nationalists. So it was best, they argued, to leave Indonesians in the hands of paternalistic Dutch administrators and ‘traditional’ *volkshoofden* (peoples’ heads), who were the European administration’s local allies and protégés. This more conservative European community was greatly worried and offended by large public meetings where Sukarno and others deliberately insulted colonial authority. The Ethically inclined Governor General (1926–31) Andries C. D. de Graeff was still reluctant to endorse general repression. Nevertheless, he sent Tjipto Mangunkusumo into exile on Banda in 1928 (until 1941) and presided over the destruction of the last remnants of the leftist labour union movement when the leadership of the *Sarekat Kaum Buruh Indonesia* (Indonesian Workers’ Union, established 1928) was arrested in 1929.

In 1929 the government finally acted against PNI by arresting Sukarno and other leaders. Despite the fiasco of the trials in The Hague, it was eventually decided to send Sukarno for public trial in Bandung late in 1930. He made a resounding defence speech which echoed the commitment if not the intellectual rigour of Hatta’s speech in The Hague. Sukarno was convicted of being a threat to public order and sentenced to four years in Sukamiskin prison in Bandung. PNI was paralysed by the arrest and imprisonment of its leader and suspended its activities. With Sukarno’s removal PNI seemed to amount to very little.

The idea of a national Indonesian identity devoid of specific religious or regional ties had even so begun to be widely accepted among the elite, and by now was being supported by developments in the cultural field. A new literature was growing, based upon the Malay language, which had been used for centuries as a lingua franca in the archipelago and was therefore essentially neutral in ethnic terms. More specifically, it was not Javanese, and therefore carried no implication of Javanese dominance. As this literature developed, Indonesian intellectuals stopped calling the language Malay and instead referred to it as the Indonesian language (*Bahasa Indonesia*). The linguistic vehicle of national unity was thereby born.

All branches of writing expanded rapidly in Indonesia. In 1918 there were already about 40 newspapers published, mostly in Indonesian; by 1925 there were about 200; by 1938 there were over 400 dailies, weeklies and monthlies. A modern literature also evolved, in which Minangkabau writers played a leading role. They were products of a dynamic society whose role in the modernisation of Indonesia has already been discussed in the preceding chapter, and of all the regional languages of the archipelago

Minangkabau was the closest to Malay/Indonesian. Muhammad Yamin (1903–64), who was to become one of the most radical of Indonesian political figures, abandoned the *pantun* and *syair* forms and published the first truly modern poems in 1920–2. In 1922 Marah Roesli (1889–1968) published the first modern novel *Sitti Noerbaja* ('Miss Nurbaya'), dealing with a tragic love affair which arises from the clash between traditional and modern values. The Batak writer Sanusi Pane (1905–68) was also writing modern poetry by 1921 and after spending 1929–30 in India began to urge that cultural inspiration be sought in Indonesia's pre-Islamic past, despite the fact that he was himself a Muslim.

Much of this modern Indonesian literature was published by the government printing house *Balai Pustaka* (Office for Literature; in Dutch: *Commissie – after 1917 Kantoor – voor de Volkslectuur*, Committee/Office for Popular Literature), which was established in 1908. This performed three main functions: the publication of older classical works and popular stories in regional languages, the translation of Western literature into Indonesian and the publication of the new Indonesian literature. At one and the same time it thus helped to keep regional cultures alive, opened Indonesia to more universal literary values and contributed to the creation of an all-Indonesian culture. In the literary field it thus maintained some of the high ideals of the Ethical policy long after they were dead in political affairs. *Balai Pustaka* also set up public libraries within the HIS (Dutch–Native schools) and managed thereby to spread its publications remarkably widely, given the low levels of literacy among Indonesians at that time. In 1920 it sold 100,000 books and recorded one million borrowings. Its publications were used not only to convey works of literature to a widening circle of readers, but also to spread approved ideas about modern ways of living, whether to do with personal hygiene, traffic rules or the undesirability of a modern emancipated woman dealing in politics.

In other branches of creativity, too, dramatic changes were evident. In the late 1920s–1930s emerged a modern form of Balinese painting. Previous Balinese artistry was bound by classical rules and the artists were anonymous. In the late 1920s the German painter Walter Spies (1895– 1942) and the Dutch artist Rudolf Bonnet (1895–1978) settled in Bali and a process of mutual influence began. Other modern artists, such as the Mexican Miguel Covarrubias (1904–57), also played a role in this mutually fruitful cultural interchange. Balinese artists adopted new media, new and more dramatic colours and a powerful new style, characterised by sinuous human figures in voluptuous tropical settings, with little sense of perspective. And now they signed their works, reflecting a modern individualism in their artistry. This new style of painting and some of the individuals who produced it won widespread recognition outside Indonesia and helped to maintain Bali's role as a quintessential tropical paradise in Western eyes.

In October 1928 the cultural and political trends towards Indonesian unity were formally joined at a Youth Congress held in Batavia. In its 'Youth Pledge' (*sumpah pemuda*) the congress adopted three ideals: one fatherland, Indonesia; one nation, Indonesia; and one language, Bahasa Indonesia, the language of unity. In celebration of this congress, Yamin wrote a collection of poems which were published in 1929 under the title *Indonesia tumpah darahku* ('Indonesia, land of my birth'). These reflected the self-conscious conviction among young intellectuals that they were Indonesians first,

and only secondly Minangkabaus, Bataks, Javanese, Christians, Muslims or whatever.

The economic context within which Indonesians lived was suddenly altered by the worldwide economic Depression of the 1930s. Just as there were signs of an impending crisis in the industrialised world before the Wall Street Crash of October 1929, so also in Indonesia there were indications that the apparent prosperity of the late 1920s would not last. Prices for some of Indonesia's products were already on a downward trend and the market for sugar exports was contracting as beet sugar production expanded elsewhere, particularly in Great Britain and Japan. Yet no one was adequately prepared for what was to follow after October 1929. Indonesia was heavily dependent on its exports, particularly oil and agricultural products. In 1930, as much as 52 per cent of these exports went to the industrialised nations of Europe and North America. The economic crisis in these lands followed by the widespread adoption of protectionism, coupled with falling prices, suddenly plunged Indonesia into an economic crisis from which it never fully recovered before the Japanese conquest in 1942.

Price fluctuations were a common phenomenon, but now the prices for all Indonesia's main exports fell simultaneously and disastrously. Beginning in 1929 the average price for Indonesia's exports plummeted. By 1935 the value of Indonesia's exports was about 32 per cent of that in 1929. The volume of exports also fell as markets contracted and protectionism spread. The impact upon various sectors differed widely. The oil industry expanded production to cope with falling prices, as did rubber, copra and other producers; but rubber, sugar, coffee and tobacco – products which employed large numbers of Indonesians as labourers and small-scale producers – faced disaster. In 1932 the price of rubber was 16 per cent of the 1929 price. Sugar contracted dramatically. The area under cane was reduced as rapidly as possible: in 1934 there were 200,000 hectares under cane; in 1939 there were only 90,000. Workers were dismissed and the sugar industry's wage bill was thereby cut by 90 per cent. The Depression in fact brought an end, after over a century, to the domination of Indonesia's exports by sugar and coffee. Javanese workers on the plantations of East Sumatra began to flow back home as work opportunities disappeared there. In 1930 there were 336,000 estate workers in East Sumatra; by 1934 this had fallen to 160,000. On balance, Indonesian incomes appear to have dropped more in the outer islands than in Java, but the crisis was severe everywhere.

As exports fell it was necessary also to reduce imports, including food items. Government revenues derived largely from trade levies and taxes upon income and expenditure, so Batavia found itself facing a revenue crisis. The land taxes paid primarily by Indonesians also declined, but slower than did the price of rice, the principal domestic crop, so the real tax burden on Indonesians rose. Government revenue was necessarily cut back. Civil service recruitment was almost entirely halted, salaries were cut (although, given falling prices, real incomes frequently rose) and non-essential government employees were laid off. This only exacerbated the problem of unemployment among Indonesian graduates of the modern school system. There was, however, simultaneously some tendency in the opposite direction as firms dismissed higher paid European, Indo-European and Chinese employees and replaced them with lower paid Indonesians.

The Dutch colonial government abandoned its laissez-faire economic instincts in an

attempt to mitigate the scale of the disaster. For example, it restructured the production of rubber, employing restriction schemes and excise tax which hurt Indonesian smallholders most and large plantations least. One of Batavia's greatest difficulties arose from sudden Japanese penetration of the Indonesian economy. In 1929–30 Japan accounted for 10 per cent of the value of all imports into Indonesia. Whereas the Dutch clung to the gold standard until September 1936, the Japanese devalued the yen in December 1931 and thereafter rapidly displaced the Dutch in Indonesia's imports. The availability of cheap Japanese goods was important in mitigating the impact of the Depression upon Indonesians. By 1934, the peak of Japan's success in this regard, Japanese imports represented 32.5 per cent of the value of all Indonesian imports, nearly two-and-a-half times the value of Dutch imports into the colony. Negotiations with the Japanese to restrict their import penetration failed in 1934, so Batavia introduced a system of licences and quotas which had the effect of restricting Japan's imports alone. By 1936 Batavia and Tokyo shared an informal understanding on trade matters. Japan's imports fell to 25.4 per cent of the value of Indonesia's imports in 1937 and finally were surpassed again by imports from the Netherlands in 1938, when Dutch imports were 22 per cent while Japanese imports were 14.4 per cent of the value of all imports. As the Japanese were pushed out of markets they had previously penetrated, Indonesians found lower-priced Japanese goods replaced by costlier Dutch products. The Japanese retail network had employed Indonesian workers, but they now lost their jobs as the European importers again turned to their customary Chinese middlemen.

The impact of this crisis upon Indonesians was clearly very serious. While it is true, as some Dutch observers said at the time, that Indonesian labourers could often return to subsistence agriculture, it is also true that many did not have this option at all. As land fell out of sugar production some of it returned to rice production, but the increase in rice production could not keep pace with the growing population's need for food and employment. In fact per capita availability of foodstuffs declined from 1930 to 1934. Indeed, there is no serious doubt that at least until the late 1930s Indonesian welfare was in decline. By 1937 per capita income had probably recovered to 1929 levels, but such figures reveal nothing about the distribution of income. Undoubtedly, for many Indonesians, times were still very hard indeed on the eve of the Japanese conquest. Indonesian welfare organisations such as *Muhammadiyah* and some political parties set up village-level support activities. Some unions were still functioning sufficiently to support retrenched workers, notably the pawnshop workers' union. For Indonesians who managed to retain salaried jobs in the urban formal sector, these were much less difficult times, for salaries fell less than prices, but their hours of work and other conditions worsened.

Just as there was no cause for optimism in economic affairs in the 1930s, so also was there none in political affairs. From 1931 to 1936 the Governor General was Bonifacius C. de Jonge, a former Minister of War and director of Royal Dutch Shell. He was opposed to any form of nationalism and unwilling even to see the *Volksraad* play any significant role. Political meetings were frequently broken up by the police and speakers arrested. His successor, Alidius W. L. Tjarda van Starkenborgh Stachouwer (1936–45), was a rather more flexible man, but brought no great change. The Minister of Colonies in The Hague from 1933 to 1937 was Hendrikus Colijn, a bitter opponent

of Ethical ideas and sometime director of Shell. In this environment, it is hardly surprising that nationalism made little progress. In the 1930s the Dutch were firmly in control of Indonesia and determined to remain so.

Political leaders reacted to the arrest of Sukarno and the changing economic and political climate in various ways. Within the **Volksraad** Muhammad H. Thamrin (1894–1941), the leader of **Kaum Bētawi**, set up a National Party (**Nationale Fractie**) in January 1930, based upon both Java and outer islands members. Its aim was to work for some form of Indonesian autonomy in cooperation with the Dutch. In Surabaya, Sutomo reorganised his Study Club in October 1930 and turned it into the **Persatuan Bangsa Indonesia** (Indonesian People's Union), which was viewed with considerable suspicion by the government. This turned to economic and social activities in East Java such as setting up clinics, student houses, village banks, advice bureaux and so on. It therefore paralleled similar activities by Islamic organisations, and is to be seen as the social and economic equivalent to **Taman Siswa**'s challenge to Islam in the educational field.

PNI itself was dissolved in April 1931. Its leaders had received clear warnings from the Dutch authorities in January 1930 that PNI would not be allowed to pursue political activities while charges against its leaders were pending; after Sukarno's conviction PNI's leaders felt that the party had in effect become a prohibited organisation. In its place was created **Partindo** (**Partai Indonesia**, Indonesian Party), which had the same goal as PNI of achieving independence through non-cooperation and mass action. But many former PNI members were now deeply discouraged. As a consequence, in February 1932 **Partindo** had only 3000 members. Several Indonesian leaders criticised this decision to dissolve PNI, most notable among them being Hatta, who was still in the Netherlands.

In December 1931 a rival to **Partindo** was created by Sjahrir who had just returned from the Netherlands. This was **Pendidikan Nasional Indonesia** (Indonesian Nationalist Education) which, because of its initials, was called **PNI-Baru** (New PNI). This party was led by men whose style differed from Sukarno's, but whose ideas were initially quite similar to his. From 1933 onwards, however, as Dutch political repression intensified, **PNI-Baru** was to develop tactics which distinguished it from the old PNI. **PNI-Baru**'s leaders then developed the view that mass action was difficult if not impossible in the current environment, and reliance on a single leader could lead to the paralysis of a party if he was arrested. Therefore, **PNI-Baru** aimed to create a cadre of leaders who could step into the shoes of arrested politicians. Marxist influences were also evident in **PNI-Baru**, which believed in the necessity for struggle against the indigenous bourgeoisie and thus distanced itself from both Islamic commercial circles and the administrative **priyayi**. The religiously neutral nationalist movement thus came to be split between the mass-action model and the cadre-formation model. Neither in fact had any prospect of success in the 1930s.

While the urban intellectuals were seeking new forms of political organisation in the face of Dutch opposition, the largest political movement in Indonesia was being built by a very different kind of leader. In June 1930 a charismatic, very traditional and poorly educated prince of Yogyakarta named Pangeran Surjodiningrat established **PKN** (**Pakempalan Kawula Ngayogyakarta**, Association of the Subjects of Yogyakarta). The

many grievances of the peasantry during the Depression and the appeal of a princely leader combined to give PKN a potential shared by none of the urban intellectual movements. In May 1931 it claimed over 100,000 members in Yogyakarta, and in August 1939 it claimed nearly 260,000. Its membership within the Yogyakarta area was thus comparable to that of **Muhammadiyah** throughout Indonesia. By actively defending the interests of the peasants, PKN came to be a virtual shadow administration and many peasants were attracted to it in the belief that Surjodiningrat was the messianic **ratu adil** (just king); in these respects PKN was more truly a successor to **Sarekat Islam** in its early days than were any of the urban parties. But it also earned the animosity of the bureaucracy and the Dutch. After 1934, government pressure and police harassment forced Surjodiningrat to restrict PKN's activities to social and economic affairs, especially the promotion of cooperatives. Nor were the urban nationalists willing to link themselves to such an apparently feudal kind of organisation, one which also embarrassed them by being far more successful in winning mass support than their own efforts. PKN nevertheless survived until the Japanese occupation and was revived in 1951 as a local Yogyanese party under the name **Gérinda (Gérakan Rakyat Indonesia**, Indonesian People's Movement), still under the absolute authority of Surjodiningrat.

One of Governor General de Graeff's last acts in office had been to reduce Sukarno's jail sentence. In December 1931 he was freed and immediately attempted to reunify the nationalist movement. He failed in this and in August 1932 joined **Partindo**, which seemed to share his style and instinct for mass action. By July 1933 **Partindo** claimed 20,000 members. In August 1932, Hatta returned after 11 years in the Netherlands and took over the leadership of **PNI-Baru**. The contrast between Sukarno and Hatta now symbolised the divisions within 'secular' nationalism just as their later cooperation after 1942 would symbolise the burying of differences; on the one hand a romantic Javanese nominal Muslim with populist instincts, and on the other a highly intellectual and elitist Minangkabau, a devout Muslim who was nonetheless committed to secular socialist political doctrines.

The reaction of the Islamic leadership to the growth of 'secular' nationalism was generally hostile. Another future Prime Minister, the Minangkabau Mohammad Natsir (1908–93), emerged in this period as a leading Islamic polemicist. He had been educated in the European school system but also attended Islamic schools in Minangkabau. In 1927 he was sent to the General Middle School (AMS) in Bandung. There he became associated with the extreme Modernist thinking of **Persatuan Islam** and in 1932 he took charge of its new school system. Since 1925 Salim had already been warning devout Muslims that Sukarno's idea of 'mother Indonesia' threatened their sole devotion to God. A. Hassan of **Persatuan Islam** equally denounced nationalist ideas. By 1931 Natsir was writing articles which argued that only Islam could be the basis of an Indonesian nationality, but for Muslims independence itself could not be the ultimate goal; rather, they must struggle for a state which would serve Islam and in which Islamic law and Muslim leaders would be dominant.

Modernist Islamic leaders disapproved of nationalism because it was an idea of men whereas Islam was a revelation of God, because it divided the international community of Muslims, and also because it was of European origin and had brought war and

imperialism to the West. They were fundamentally unable to see how, in a country where the majority was Muslim, anything other than Islam could seriously be proposed as the basis of unity. The fact that it was Modernist leaders who most opposed ‘secular’ nationalism, and particularly that the extreme **Persatuan Islam** took this position, only tended to confirm the suspicion among those who did not accept Modernist ideas that Islam was a dangerous and divisive political force. This contributed further to the political isolation of Islam. It also contributed to the isolation of the nationalist elite from the masses, for at this time only Islam could offer potential organisational links between educated urban leaders and rural society. The only significant Islamic political body, **Partai Sarekat Islam Indonesia** (PSII), meanwhile continued under the influence of Salim and Tjokroaminoto to favour Pan-Islam as well as to decline in political influence.

Only in Minangkabau was there a serious attempt to unite Islam and nationalism. Minangkabau students in Cairo began to doubt the value of Pan-Islamic ideas, and were confirmed in this doubt by the failure of the Caliphate conferences in Cairo and Mecca in May and June 1926. Iljas Jacub (b. 1902) and Muchtar Lutfi (b. 1901) returned to Minangkabau in 1929 and 1931 respectively. They took charge of **Permi (Persatuan Muslim Indonesia)**, Indonesian Muslims’ Union), which was founded in May 1930 upon a slogan of *Islam dan kēbangsaan* (Islam and [Indonesian] nationality). This combination was attractive to many younger Minangkabaus, including some who were Orthodox rather than Modernist. By August 1933 **Permī** claimed 10,000 members, about 40 per cent of them women. But **Permī** also provoked much opposition.

By late 1932 all the main political streams were represented in Minangkabau. **Permī** had established links with **Partindo**, and **PNI-Baru** had been introduced into the area. PSII was attempting to establish its own credentials as a radical movement and bitterly attacked the nationalist doctrines of the other parties. Then the government presented these parties and those in Java with a highly emotive issue which drew them together, and thereby brought about their destruction.

In September 1932 the government announced a ‘wild schools ordinance’ (*wilde scholen ordonnantie*), which required permission from the authorities before any private school without a government subsidy (which put a school under government supervision) could be established. There was a national outcry at this interference in private schools, just at a time when the government school system was being restricted for financial reasons. Ki Hadjar Dewantara of **Taman Siswa** led a national campaign in alliance with Islamic groups. Every significant Indonesian organisation, including even **Budi Utomo**, joined the opposition. Even the **Volksraad** disapproved and in 1932 rejected the government’s education budget in protest. In February 1933 Governor General de Jonge backed down and suspended the ordinance.

The government now perceived a dangerous potential for united action among the Indonesian movements. Its concern was increased by a brief mutiny of Dutch and Indonesian sailors aboard the naval ship **Zeven Provinciën** in February 1933, which de Jonge partly attributed to the political agitation of the nationalist parties. He reacted firmly. On the basis of existing legislation the government turned against the schools in Minangkabau, where protest against the ordinance had been strongest. Schools were searched, political literature seized, some schools were closed and many teachers

banned from teaching. Then the government went over to a general repression of political leaders. Beginning in late 1932 and extending into 1934 (but primarily in the course of 1933), the leaders of *Permi* and PSII in Minangkabau were arrested and exiled to Boven Digul, among them both Muchtar Lutfi and Iljas Jacub.

In August 1933 Sukarno was arrested. He was much disturbed by this second arrest. During the following weeks, he wrote four letters to the Dutch authorities, offering to refrain from political activity in return for his freedom, but to no avail. This time there was no public trial; he was exiled to Flores but in 1938 was moved to more comfortable circumstances in Bēngkulu (South Sumatra). In February 1934, Hatta, Sjahrir and other PNI-*Baru* leaders were arrested and then exiled to Boven Digul (in 1936 Hatta and Sjahrir were moved to Banda). Bereft of their leaders and subject to increased police harassment, the ‘secular’ nationalist movements of *Partindo* and PNI-*Baru* and the Islamic anticolonial movements of *Permi* and PSII withered. With the death of Tjokroaminoto in December 1934 the Islamic political movement lost its original and foremost leader, and proceeded to disintegrate into yet more factions.

After 1934 radical anticolonialism on a non-cooperative basis was effectively dead, but cooperative methods had not yet been entirely discredited. In December 1935 the moderate and essentially Javanist bodies *Persatuan Bangsa Indonesia* and *Budi Utomo* merged to form *Parindra* (*Partai Indonesia Raya*, Greater Indonesian Party). Its aim was eventual independence in cooperation with the Dutch. Sutomo was its chairman, and Thamrin and others joined. This was essentially a body of religiously neutral or anti-Islamic conservatives, and some of its leaders began to look to Japan as a model. In 1937 it had over 4600 members and at the end of 1939 about 11,250, most of them in East Java. By May 1941 it claimed about 19,500 members. With the rise of fascism in Europe and Japan, many Indonesian leaders with leftist sympathies also began to feel that they should join with the Dutch against the common fascist enemy.

But even those who were in favour of cooperation with the Dutch were beginning to have some doubts about its value. The degree to which nationalist ideas and dissatisfaction had penetrated even those groups that were closest to the government was revealed in 1936. Soetardjo Kartohadikoesoemo (b. 1892) was a Javanese member of the *Volksraad* with a career in the colonial bureaucracy. He was, therefore, from outside the mainstream of nationalist politicians. But he and his colleagues had grown increasingly dissatisfied with the salary cuts, redundancies, restriction of educational opportunities, and the generally suspicious, interfering and parsimonious policies of the government since about 1930. In July 1936 Soetardjo submitted a petition to the *Volksraad* which called for a conference to arrange Indonesian autonomy within a Dutch-Indonesian union over a period of ten years. This was essentially what the United States had given the Philippines in 1933, resulting in the establishment of the Philippine Commonwealth government in November 1935. Soetardjo and his supporters were aware of and inspired by the Philippines case. The main Indonesian nationalist parties were divided by this proposal, but Christian, Arab, Chinese and Indo-European representatives in the *Volksraad* supported it, and it was passed in September 1936 primarily because most European members also desired greater autonomy from The Hague.

A public discussion of the Soetardjo petition ensued. *Parindra* was suspicious and

did not like the idea of Soetardjo succeeding where recognised leaders of the anticolonial movements had failed. PSII split at this point. In November 1936 Salim, who had decided that the *hijrah* policy of non-cooperation was a failure, set up a cooperative faction called **Barisan Pényadar** PSII (Awareness Front of PSII). In 1937 the **Pényadar** faction was formally expelled from PSII. The radical wing also reorganised itself. In November 1936 **Partindo** was dissolved and in May 1937 **Gérindo** (**Gérakan Rakyat Indonesia**, Indonesian People's Movement) was formed. This included such radicals as Yamin and another future Prime Minister, the leftist Batak Christian Amir Sjarifuddin (1907–48). **Gérindo**'s aim was a full parliament for Indonesia, but on the basis of cooperation with the Dutch against the joint threat of fascism, especially Japanese fascism. None of these parties, however, showed any conspicuous support for the Soetardjo petition.

With the clear dominance of cooperative methods among the Indonesian elite (those who rejected such methods either kept their heads down or were quickly removed by the police) and the moderate proposals embodied in the Soetardjo petition, the loftier ideals of those who had initiated the Ethical policy might have been realised. The Dutch authorities had, however, come a long way since the opening decades of the twentieth century, mostly in a backward direction. In November 1938 a royal decree finally pronounced upon the petition: it was rejected. There was little reaction in Indonesia, for by then few had expected it to succeed. Most Indonesian nationalists concluded that since non-cooperation was merely a passport to prison or exile, moderate and evolutionary methods alone could be pursued. But the attitude of the government consistently led them to doubt whether the Dutch would respond favourably or in good faith.

Meanwhile Indonesian literature continued to stimulate and shape an ideal of Indonesian nationality that was devoid of any specific Islamic character. In July 1933 there began to be published the most influential literary journal of the pre-war period, **Poedjangga Baroe** ('New poet'). Under the editorship of the Minangkabau Takdir Alisjahbana (1908–94) and the Batak Armijn Pane (1908–70) literary and linguistic standards for the language of Indonesian unity were established. The most important poet of the age, Amir Hamzah (1911–46), was published in **Poedjangga Baroe**. A cultural debate was also pursued in its pages with Takdir urging modernisation (that is, the adoption of Western ideas) as the essential part of the new Indonesian identity, while Sanusi Pane (Armijn Pane's brother) looked to pre-Islamic Asian cultural values. No one seriously argued for an Islamic basis to this new culture. **Balai Pustaka** also continued to publish major new novels, including **Salah asuhan** ('Wrong upbringing') by Abdul Muis in 1928, and **Lajar terkembang** ('Unfurled sails') by Takdir in 1936. Armijn Pane's **Belenggoe** ('Shackles') was rejected by **Balai Pustaka** because it was felt to fall below accepted moral standards by describing an extramarital love affair; it was, however, published in **Poedjangga Baroe** in 1940.

As the Islamic leadership found itself progressively isolated from both political and cultural developments, and facing an increasingly hostile colonial regime, the bitter controversies between the Orthodox and Modernist wings at last declined. The Modernists began to accept that the purification they desired would take a long time, and the Orthodox accepted that the Modernists were a permanent feature of the

environment. Orthodox groups also began to adopt many of the reforms introduced by Modernists that did not threaten the dominance of the Shafi'i school of law or Orthodoxy's somewhat more flexible interpretation of the faith. By 1928 *Nahdlatul Ulama* had already begun to use Javanese as well as Arabic in the Friday sermon, and Orthodox schools in Java and Minangkabau soon began to introduce formal curricula and a system of graded classes. Both wings began to accept that, whatever their differences, they were united in their devotion to Islam.

In September 1937 leaders of *Nahdlatul Ulama* and *Muhammadiyah* took the initiative in creating the *Majlis Islam A'laa Indonesia* (Supreme Islamic Council of Indonesia, MIAI). *Persatuan Islam, al-Irshad* and virtually every other Islamic organisation throughout Indonesia soon joined. MIAI was not intended to be a political body but rather a forum for discussion, and many controversies continued within it. There were fundamental issues of Islamic law which were, after all, irreconcilable. But the desire for unity among the Islamic leadership was genuine. They were still unable, however, to convert this into a meaningful role in either political or cultural developments.

PSII continued to split into factions. In 1933 Surjopranoto and Sukiman Wirjosandjojo had set up *Partai Islam Indonesia* (Indonesian Islamic Party, PII) after they had been expelled from PSII, but the organisation had languished. In 1938 Sukiman, Wiwoho Poerbohadidjojo and others revived PII and expanded it rapidly in Java and the outer islands. This was the last serious effort before the Second World War to establish Islam as a basis for political unity among Indonesians. But in many ways the battle was already lost.

All hopes for political progress were by now destroyed by the lengthening shadow of fascism. In 1931 Japan invaded Manchuria; two years later Hitler became Chancellor of Germany; in 1936 the Spanish Civil War broke out and in July 1937 the Sino-Japanese War; in March of the following year Hitler absorbed Austria, and in September the Munich Conference dismembered Czechoslovakia; in March 1939 Hitler invaded its remnants. As war loomed in Europe and the Pacific, Dutch and Indonesian perceptions polarised. Indonesians felt that their willingness to cooperate against fascism and the drain on Dutch strength that a war would bring should inspire the Netherlands to grant Indonesia some form of autonomy. The Dutch felt that this was no time to undertake any new political experiments, which could only increase instability and uncertainty and which, in any case, most Dutch now strongly opposed. Towards Indonesian organisations they grew even more restrictive. Meetings were disbanded and local leaders arrested. *Parindra*, with its sympathies for Japan, was a particular target.

In May 1939 the main Indonesian nationalist organisations except PNI-*Baru* formed GAPI (*Gabungan Politik Indonesia*, Indonesian Political Federation) which called for a full parliament for Indonesia. In December GAPI staged an Indonesian People's Congress (*Kongres Rakyat Indonesia*) in Batavia which was judged to be a great success. But within the *Volksraad* the Indonesian leadership continued to be split. On 1 September 1939 Hitler invaded Poland, and the Second World War began in Europe. GAPI pressed the Dutch to grant autonomy, so that joint Dutch-Indonesian action against fascism would be encouraged. The Dutch would not, of course, respond. In February 1940 the Netherlands government announced that so long as it held ultimate

responsibility for Indonesia there could be no question of Indonesian autonomy or parliamentary government.

On 10 May 1940 Hitler invaded the Netherlands and the Dutch government fled to exile in London. Thereafter it would, naturally enough, make no change in Indonesia's status while the war was in progress. On the same day, martial law was declared in Indonesia and all public political meetings were banned. Indonesian leaders in the **Volksraad** still hoped to win some concessions from the Dutch, but were continually disappointed. They received only vague replies from Governor General Tjarda van Starkenborgh Stachouwer that some changes might follow when the war was over. He cannot have guessed how great the changes were to be.

Three motions in the **Volksraad** sponsored by Thamrin, Soetardjo and Wiwoho asked the government to use the term 'Indonesian' rather than **inlander** (native) in official documents, to define an Indies nationality and to enquire into a reform of the **Volksraad** to turn it into a quasi-parliament. These received a generally negative response from the government in August 1940 and were withdrawn by their sponsors. In the same month GAPI began its final effort when it called for a Dutch-Indonesian union of equality, with the **Volksraad** to be turned into a bicameral legislature based on a fair electoral system. MIAI supported GAPI but, consistent with the general inflexibility of the Islamic leaders in such matters, it added that the head of this new system and two-thirds of the cabinet must be Muslims and there must be a Ministry for Islamic Affairs. But there was no time left for the Dutch even to make a formal rejection.

The war in Asia now approached. Indonesia's resources of oil, rubber, bauxite, tin and other strategic materials had long been important in Japanese eyes. As was pointed out above, during the Depression Japan's peaceful economic penetration proceeded rapidly and with it Japanese intelligence activities expanded. The Japanese gained considerable sympathy from Indonesians, who welcomed cheap Japanese goods and courteous treatment in Japanese shops and admired Japan's strength. In the later 1930s, Japan's share of Indonesia's trade dropped significantly. The United States abrogated its commercial treaty with Japan in July 1939 and proceeded to embargo strategic supplies to Japan and to freeze Japanese assets in the USA. This made access to Indonesia even more essential to the Japanese.

In September 1940 the Tripartite Pact sealed the Japanese-German-Italian alliance. France had fallen in June 1940 and the collaborating Vichy government allowed Japan to have military bases in French Indochina in September. By now Japanese leaders were talking publicly about liberating Indonesia. In The Hague before the fall of the Netherlands, and in Batavia after it, the Japanese pressed the Dutch for access to Indonesia such as they were granted in Indochina, but these negotiations collapsed in June 1941. In July, Indonesian exports to Japan were stopped and Japanese assets in Indonesia frozen. In the same month, Japanese armed forces in Indochina were strengthened.

The Dutch took two more significant steps in preparation for war. The first was to remove some potential troublemakers. In January 1941 the police arrested Thamrin, who was fatally ill, for being in contact with the Japanese, along with Douwes Dekker, who had become secretary of the Japanese Chamber of Commerce. Five days later

Thamrin died in custody. There is no suggestion that the Dutch mistreated him, but this event meant the loss of an important leader and even deeper suspicions of the Dutch. Haji Rasul, now 62 years old but still a very active leader of Modernist Islam and a continual source of irritation to the government, was arrested and exiled from Minangkabau at the same time. Most Indonesian organisations protested, but to no avail.

Then the defence issue which had inspired Indonesians to call for the creation of the **Volksraad** in 1914–18 brought the history of the **Volksraad** to a close. The government was expanding its military forces. Among the new recruits to the professional colonial army was the future second President of Indonesia, a young Javanese named Soeharto (1921–2008) who entered the military school in Gombong (Central Java) in June 1940. The Dutch also wanted to create a militia of up to 6000 Indonesians. Indonesian nationalists in the **Volksraad** took the view that there should be no militia without a full parliament. In July 1941 the militia proposal was nevertheless passed by the **Volksraad** through the support of the appointed and European members.

But Dutch rule was now in its final days. On 8 December 1941 (7 December in Hawaii) the Japanese attacked Pearl Harbor, Hong Kong, the Philippines and Malaya. The Netherlands immediately joined its allies in a declaration of war upon Japan. On 10 January 1942 the Japanese invasion of Indonesia began. On 15 February the supposedly impregnable British base at Singapore surrendered. At the end of that month the Japanese destroyed a combined Dutch, British, Australian and American fleet in the battle of the Java Sea. The Indonesian masses, hardly surprisingly, gave little support to the beleaguered colonial forces and sometimes gladly turned against Dutch civilians and soldiers. On 8 March 1942 the Dutch in Java surrendered and Governor General Tjarda van Starkenborgh Stachouwer was arrested.

Dutch rule in Indonesia was at an end. It left behind few friends among Indonesians. Even those among the elite who had hoped for evolution through cooperation by now had grave doubts about Dutch goodwill. And in detention throughout the archipelago was a generation of leaders to whom Dutch colonialism represented a burden which must never again be tolerated.

# V

---

## The Destruction of the Colonial State, 1942–50

## ***Chapter 17***

---

# **The Second World War and the Japanese Occupation, 1942–5**

The three and a half years of Japanese occupation constitute one of the most crucial episodes of Indonesian history. Before the Japanese invasion, no serious challenge to the Dutch existed. By the time the Japanese surrendered, there had been so many extraordinary changes that the Indonesian Revolution was possible. The Japanese contributed directly to these developments. Especially in Java and to a lesser extent in Sumatra, they indoctrinated, trained and armed many of the younger generation and gave older leaders opportunities to forge links with the masses. Throughout the archipelago they politicised Indonesians down to village level both by intention and by subjecting Indonesia to the most oppressive and devastating colonial regime in its history. The villages were thus rudely shaken out of the lethargy and political isolation of the later Dutch period. In the end, the most helpful thing the Japanese did was to lose the war, for had they succeeded in their intentions for a ‘Greater East Asia Co-Prosperity Sphere’ there would have been little prospect of real Indonesian independence.

Indonesia was divided into three regions by the Japanese. Sumatra was placed under the 25th Army, while Java and Madura were under the 16th Army; both of these were under the 7th Area Army with its headquarters in Singapore. Kalimantan and East Indonesia were controlled by the navy. Policies differed among these regions. In general, Java was perceived as the most politically advanced and least economically important area, its main resource being people. Japanese policies there stimulated nationalism much more than in the other two regions and the greater political sophistication of Java over other areas was thereby enhanced. Sumatra was important for its strategic resources and only when Japan was on the brink of defeat were nationalist ideas encouraged there. The area under naval control was regarded as politically primitive and economically essential to Japan; it was governed in the most repressive manner of all.

Mopping up Dutch and Allied troops and taking over the administration required many months. Dutch military forces collapsed and only a very few bodies of troops held out in some isolated regions. Most Indonesians gave them no support. In some areas they attacked Dutch troops and civilians, whose only means of salvation became surrender to the Japanese. The Japanese intended to intern all Europeans (except

nationals of Japan's allies, most notably Germans, and neutrals), but in some cases their skills were needed to keep industries running. Over a year elapsed before almost all were interned. Estimates of the final number of internees total about 170,000, of whom 65,000 were Dutch military, 25,000 were other Allied troops, and 80,000 were civilians (including 60,000 women and children). Conditions in the internment camps were poor. About 20 per cent of Dutch military internees, 13 per cent of civilian women and 10 per cent of children died. The highest death toll was in the male civilian camps, where 40 per cent died.

One of the first tasks of the Japanese was to stop the revolutions which threatened to attend their conquest. In Bantěn, Cirěbon, Surakarta and many smaller cities and towns of Java, outbreaks of looting and personal violence seemed to betoken a revolutionary surge. In some places these actions were led by local Islamic figures. Europeans and their property, Chinese shops and traders, and in some places Javanese Christians were subjected to violent and occasionally fatal attack. Similarly, in Aceh and in East and West Sumatra the indigenous tensions of the Dutch period began to explode in violence. Acehnese religious leaders (*ulama*) had formed PUSA (*Pĕrsatuan Ulama-ulama Sĕluruh Aceh*, All-Aceh Union of *Ulamas*) in 1939 under the leadership of Mohammed Daud Beureu'eh (1899–1987) to defend Islam and to encourage the modernisation of Islamic schools. It soon became a focus of opposition to the Dutch-supported *uleëbalang* administrators. PUSA had contacted the Japanese and laid plans to assist their attack. On 19 February 1942, three weeks before the Japanese landed in the area, Acehnese *ulamas* began a campaign of sabotage against the Dutch and by early March Aceh was in general revolt. Most *uleëbalangs* decided to shift with the wind, and the Dutch had no choice but to evacuate southward. The PUSA leaders expected the Japanese to reward them for their efforts by removing the *uleëbalangs* from power. In East Sumatra, Karo Bataks with nationalist Gĕrindo leadership aided the Japanese in the hope of seeing the Dutch-backed aristocracy ousted from power. They began to occupy land which they claimed as their own and to attack their opponents, especially in the Dĕli area in June–July 1942. In Minangkabau, too, the *ulamas* hoped to see the *pĕnghulu* leaders ousted from power.

But the Japanese had a war to fight, and their priorities did not include revolutions in conquered territories. They quickly intervened wherever revolution threatened and put a stop to it, if necessary by arresting, shooting or beheading the leaders of local movements. Like the Dutch, the Japanese had to administer Indonesia and had little option but to rely upon experienced local men: the rajas of East Sumatra, the *pĕnghulus* of Minangkabau, the *uleëbalangs* of Aceh, the *priyayi* administrators of Java, and similar groups elsewhere. Although their propaganda had long been aimed at winning the sympathy of Islamic leaders, the Japanese were aware that a group which had largely refused cooperation to the Dutch might also be troublesome for them. They did give Islamic leaders opportunities they had been denied by the Dutch, as will be seen below. But it was only later, when defeat became inevitable, that the Japanese decided to let the revolutionary surge roll on in the hopes of frustrating an Allied reconquest.

A primary Japanese aim was the restructuring and redirection of the Indonesian economy in order to support Japan's war effort and its plans for long-term economic domination of East and Southeast Asia. New regulations to control and redirect

Indonesia's main products and the severing of contact with traditional export markets together produced chaos and hardship which made the worst years of the Depression seem mild. Japan could not absorb all Indonesia's export products, and Allied submarines soon inflicted such damage upon Japanese shipping that even products that Japan required could not be shipped in sufficient volume. By 1943 rubber production was about one-fifth of 1941 levels (in Java and West Kalimantan rubber production was almost completely suspended), and tea was about one-third. Japan and Formosa (Taiwan) were to be the main suppliers of sugar for the Greater East Asia Co-Prosperity Sphere, so this crop, which was a major source of income (especially for landless wage-labourers) in East and Central Java, was to be reduced. Japanese began to take over the sugar estates in August 1943, and it was only then that their European managers were interned. Similarly, considerable tobacco land in East Sumatra was converted to food production.

The military government meanwhile flooded Indonesia with occupation currency, which contributed to rising inflation particularly from 1943 onwards. By the middle of 1945 this currency was worth about 2.5 per cent of its face value. Compulsory food requisitioning and labour recruitment, transportation disruptions and the general chaos led to outbreaks of famine, especially in 1944 and 1945. Mortality rates increased and fertility dropped; the Japanese occupation was the only period in two centuries when population failed to grow significantly, so far as is known. Like other occupied areas, Indonesia became a land of extreme hardship, inflation, shortages, profiteering, corruption, black markets and death.

Japanese policy towards Indonesians had two priorities: to wipe out Western influences among them and to mobilise them in the interests of Japanese victory. The Japanese, like the Dutch, intended to control Indonesia for their own interests. They faced many of the same problems as the Dutch and employed many of the same solutions (indeed, Dutch colonial law remained in force except where it conflicted with Japanese military law). But the Japanese, in the midst of an enormous war requiring maximum utilisation of resources, decided to control through mobilisation (especially in Java and Sumatra) rather than by imposing an orderly quiet. As the war progressed, their increasingly frenetic efforts to mobilise Indonesians laid the groundwork for the revolution which was to follow.

It needs to be remembered how rapidly the Japanese military advance was stopped. In May 1942 a thrust towards Australia was halted in the battle of the Coral Sea. A similar thrust towards Hawaii was stopped at Midway in June. In August 1942 the Americans landed on Guadalcanal (Solomon Islands) and by February 1943 the Japanese had been expelled with heavy losses. From 1943 the Americans took the offensive in the Pacific. Japanese policy in Indonesia therefore evolved within a steadily worsening military context. It was only very late in the war that the Japanese fully accepted that defeat was inevitable, but from an early stage of their occupation of Indonesia they had to contemplate the possibility of an eventual Allied invasion. In the end, however, the Allied advance was to bypass most of Indonesia.

To destroy Western influences, the Japanese banned the use of Dutch and English and promoted the use of Japanese. The banning of Dutch and English books made higher education virtually impossible for the duration of the war. The Japanese calendar

was introduced for official purposes, European statues were pulled down, streets were renamed, and Batavia was again called Jakarta, a name which had never entirely died in Indonesian usage. An intensive propaganda campaign was begun to convince Indonesians that they and the Japanese were brothers in arms in the great struggle for a new order in Asia. The Japanese employed Indonesians to implement their propaganda aims, particularly schoolteachers, artists and literary figures with anti-Dutch records. Muhammad Yamin, Sanusi Pane and Armijn Pane were among those engaged in such work. Films, drama, *wayang* and especially radio were used to spread Japanese messages. Because of a shortage of radios, much radio propaganda was broadcast through loudspeakers erected in public places. This propaganda effort was, however, often frustrated by the realities of the occupation: the economic chaos, the terror of the Military Police (*Kenpeitai*), the forced labour and rice requisitions, the arrogance and cruelty of the Japanese in general, the beatings and rapes, and the obligation to salute every Japanese. Those who had welcomed the Japanese as liberators were often quickly discouraged. This anti-Western campaign did, however, stiffen anti-Dutch sentiments throughout Indonesian society and contribute to the spread of the idea of Indonesia among the masses. Since the Japanese language was little known, Indonesian became the major linguistic vehicle for propaganda and its status as the national language was thereby enhanced.

Until August 1942 Java remained under provisional administrative arrangements, but then an administration headed by a Military Governor (*Gunseikan*) was inaugurated. Many Indonesians were promoted to fill the places of interned Dutch officials, but large numbers of Japanese administrators were also brought in. Many of these new Indonesian officials were former schoolteachers, whose removal from the educational system contributed to the precipitous decline of educational standards.

Along with new administrators to help them run the country, the Japanese in Java sought popular leaders to help mobilise the masses. They first wiped the political slate clean. In March 1942 all political activities were banned and then all existing associations were formally dissolved and the Japanese began to build up new organisations. Islam seemed from the start to offer a primary avenue for mobilisation. By the end of March 1942 the Japanese in Java had already set up an Office for Religious Affairs (*Kantor Urusan Agama*; in Japanese: *Shumubu*).

In April 1942 the first attempt at a mass movement, the ‘Triple A Movement’ (*Pergerakan Tiga A*), began in Java. This name derived from the slogan of Japan as the leader of Asia, the protector of Asia and the light of Asia. Within the movement an Islamic subsection called Preparatory Union of the Islamic Community (*Persiapan Persatuan Ummat Islam*) was set up in July under Abikoesno Tjokrosoejoso (1897–1968), the brother of Tjokroaminoto and his successor as chairman of PSII. Abikoesno was briefly regarded by the Japanese as the natural leader of Indonesian Islam. But it was not long before the Japanese (like the Dutch) began to be uncertain about the politically active Modernist leaders, as will be seen below. In general the Triple A Movement did not achieve its objectives. Indonesian administrators gave it little support, no major Indonesian nationalist was involved in it, and its propaganda was so heavy-handed that even in these early days of the occupation few Indonesians took it seriously.

The Japanese began to accept that if they were to mobilise the masses of Java they would have to use the leading figures of the pre-war nationalist movement. Sjahrir and Hatta had been returned to Java by the Dutch just before the Japanese victory. Both were opposed to fascism and had offered the Dutch their support. These two men were close to each other and decided to adopt complementary strategies in the new circumstances of Japanese rule. Hatta would cooperate with the Japanese, attempting to mitigate the harshness of their rule and to manipulate events in the interests of the Indonesian nation. Sjahrir would stay aloof and build up an ‘underground’ network based largely on former PNI-*Baru* members, and would attempt to make contact with the Allies. Sjahrir and Hatta kept in close touch with each other throughout the war.

On 9 July 1942 Hatta and Sjahrir were joined in Jakarta by Sukarno, whom the Japanese in Sumatra had sent there at the request of the 16th Army. Sukarno was less interested in the theoretical distinctions between fascism and democracy and saw the war primarily as a contest between empires. He joined Hatta in cooperating with the Japanese in the interest of the greater goal of independence. Sukarno and Hatta immediately began to press the still reluctant Japanese to create a mass political organisation under their leadership.

Only one major pre-war leader attempted active underground or resistance activity in Indonesia as these terms are understood in the context of occupied Europe (although there were some Indonesians in the Netherlands who were associated with the Dutch underground). Just before the Japanese victory, Amir Sjarifuddin accepted a substantial amount of money from a Dutch official to set up an anti-Japanese resistance movement. But armed resistance now was even more futile than it had been under the Dutch. The Japanese Military Police penetrated Amir’s organisation and in January 1943 he and 53 others were arrested. In February 1944 several of his lieutenants were executed, but Amir’s sentence was commuted to life imprisonment upon the intercession of Sukarno and Hatta. The Japanese dared not offend the tiny intellectual elite in Java by executing one of its prominent members.

In the outer islands there was some resistance from groups not connected with the pre-war urban politicians. A peasant uprising against the Japanese in Aceh was led by a young *ulama* in November 1942, but was crushed with the loss of over a hundred Acehnese and 18 Japanese lives. In South and West Kalimantan the Japanese suspected plots against them among Chinese, officials and even the sultans. Any such conspiracies were destroyed by arrests in South Kalimantan in July 1943 and the imprisonment of at least 1000 people, including 12 sultans, in West Kalimantan between September 1943 and early 1944. An attempt to set up an Islamic state in the area of Amuntai in South Kalimantan was crushed in September 1943. By late 1944 the Dayaks of West Kalimantan had begun killing Japanese. But none of these forms of popular resistance seriously threatened Japanese rule, and all met with terrible consequences.

In Java there was no serious popular resistance until 1944. In the meantime the Japanese sought leaders to help them mobilise the masses in the interest of the war effort. In September 1942 a conference of Islamic leaders was held in Jakarta which produced disappointing results for the Japanese and pushed them towards other leadership groups. The Japanese had hoped to replace the pre-war MIAI with a new organisation under their direction. The Islamic leaders, however, not only decided to

retain the organisation but also elected a new leadership which was dominated by PSII figures rather than the basically non-political *Muhammadiyah* and NU leaders. The Japanese were already having doubts about the urban Islamic politicians. They were beginning to realise that an avenue to the masses through Islam could only be produced by *Muhammadiyah* and NU, which had schools, welfare activities and informal links reaching out from urban areas into smaller towns and villages, and which lacked any clear political demands. Clearly some new approach to mobilisation was required.

In October 1942 a meeting of the heads of occupied areas in Tokyo was told that, with the military advance halted, mass mobilisation in occupied territories must be given priority. Colonel Horie Choso, head of the Office for Religious Affairs in Jakarta, toured Java late in the year meeting with rural religious teachers (*kyai*), whose *pésantren* schools seemed to be ideal tools for mobilising and indoctrinating young men. In December 1942, Horie arranged for 32 *kyais* to be received in Jakarta by the *Gunseikan*, a distinction unthinkable in Dutch days. The Japanese were now discovering a viable channel for mobilisation. In December they opened another by promising a Jakarta mass meeting that a new political party would soon be created.

Early in 1943 the Japanese began to throw their efforts into mobilisation. New youth movements were given high priority, and were kept under close Japanese supervision. In August 1942 training schools for new officials and teachers had already been opened in Jakarta and Singapore, but now youth organisations were greatly expanded. A semi-military Youth Corps (*Seinendan*) was begun in April 1943 for youths between 14 and 25 (later 22). It had branches down to larger villages, but was primarily active in urban areas. For young men of 25–35 a Vigilance Corps (*Keibodan*) was set up as an auxiliary police, fire and air-raid organisation. In mid-1943 *Heiho* (Auxiliary Forces) was created as a part of the Japanese army and navy. By the end of the war about 25,000 Indonesian youths were in *Heiho*, where they received the same basic training as Japanese soldiers. Various other organisations were also created, some of which will be discussed below. In all of them there was intensive indoctrination and strict discipline. Over 2 million young Indonesians were said to be in such organisations at the end of the war, about 60 per cent of them in the *Keibodan*.

In March 1943 the promised political organisation also appeared in Java and the Triple A Movement was abolished. The new body was called *Putera* (son, prince), an acronym derived from the full name *Pusat Ténaga Rakyat* (Centre of People's Power). This was under close Japanese control, but four leading Indonesians were placed at its head: Sukarno, Hatta, Ki Hadjar Dewantara and Kyai Haji Mas Mansur (1896–1946), a pre-war chairman of *Muhammadiyah*. The Japanese were thus linking the two leading urban nationalist figures to leaders of two major educational systems. But this new organisation again achieved little support, partly because the Japanese were still unwilling to unleash such potentially powerful popular forces: there was, for instance, no question of giving *Putera* any control over the youth movements. Dewantara in fact returned to Yogyakarta early in 1944 to concentrate on seeing his *Taman Siswa* schools through the difficult times, and Mansur gradually withdrew from active involvement, perhaps because of ill health.

The Japanese were by now trying to develop the rural Shafi'i teachers as their main link to the masses of Java. There were many difficulties between the Japanese and

Islamic leaders in general, but especially between them and the urban Modernists. Haji Rasul led the Islamic opposition to bowing towards the Emperor in Tokyo, which appeared to conflict with a Muslim's obligation to pray towards Mecca and to submit only to God. Eventually the Japanese agreed that there need be no bow towards the Emperor on religious occasions. The Japanese also wanted the Second World War to be declared a holy war, which Muslims adamantly refused since the Japanese, like the Allies, were *kafirs* (unbelievers) and a war on their behalf could hardly be designated a holy war. By the end of 1942 the Japanese also had to abandon their wish to ban the use of Arabic, but did so only on condition that Japanese also be taught in Islamic schools and that their curriculum for non-religious subjects be accepted. The Japanese maintained the 1925 Teacher Ordinance (*goeroe ordonnantie*), and the Indonesian officials administered it even more strictly, out of both opposition to Islamic elites and fear of Japanese disciplinary measures if they seemed too lenient. Modernist schools were particularly affected by these policies.

While urban Modernist politicians and the Japanese were thus growing disenchanted with one another, the less sophisticated *kyais* of Java's countryside seemed more amenable to Japanese designs. The Japanese combination of physical, martial and spiritual disciplines struck responsive chords in *pésantren* communities. In July 1943 the Japanese started bringing groups of about sixty *kyais* to Jakarta for training courses of about one month's duration. By May 1945 over 1000 *kyais* had gone through these courses, where they heard some lectures on religious questions but were mainly indoctrinated with Japanese propaganda. They appeared to be so valuable for Japanese purposes that all attempts by the MIAI itself to organise the *kyais* were frustrated by the Japanese. The MIAI leadership wanted to build links with rural Islam, but the Japanese preferred to deal directly with those who already had them.

To stimulate support of the worsening war effort, the Japanese also began to promise some Indonesian involvement in the affairs of government in Java. In August and October 1943 first Burma and then the Philippines were granted puppet independence. Java was felt not to be ready for this, but a series of councils was set up to give an appearance of participation. The number of Indonesian advisers (*sanyo*) to the Japanese administration was increased, a Central Advisory Board (*Chuo Sangi-in*) was set up in Jakarta with Sukarno as chairman, and regional councils (*Shu Sangi-kai*) were established. These were all, however, purely advisory. Even less significant gestures towards popular involvement began in Sumatra in late 1943. The navy took no such steps at this stage in its area except to allow some consultation in municipal administration.

The Japanese 16th Army in Java wanted to move faster in the area of Indonesian participation than did the 25th Army in Sumatra, the navy in East Indonesia, or Tokyo. It may have been for this reason that Sukarno, Hatta and the chairman of *Muhammadiyah*, Ki Bagus Hadikusumo (1890– 1954), were flown to Tokyo in November 1943 to be decorated by the Emperor. This was the first time that Sukarno had been abroad or seen an industrialised country. The impression this trip made on him may have been great, but his efforts to get more Japanese support for Indonesian nationalism failed. The Prime Minister, General Tojo Hideki (1941–4), refused his request to allow the use of the Indonesian anthem '*Indonesia Raya*' (Greater Indonesia)

or the red and white Indonesian flag (*Dwiwarna*, the Bicoloured; or *Sang Merah-Putih*, the Holy Red-and-White).

The Japanese still needed Indonesia's resources for the war, and all else was secondary. Indonesian labour now began to be exploited in a more ruthless fashion than ever before. In October 1943 the Japanese ordered the recruitment of 'volunteer labourers' (*romusha*), primarily peasants drafted from their villages in Java and put to work as labourers wherever the Japanese needed them, as far away as Burma and Siam. It is not known how many men were involved, but it was probably at least 200,000 and may have been as many as half a million, of whom not more than 70,000 could be found alive at the end of the war. Their families were left behind in pitiable circumstances. At the same time the Japanese introduced new regulations for the compulsory sale of rice to the government at low prices, in effect a system of requisitioning to supply the Japanese military. The Indonesian officials who had to administer *romusha* recruitment and rice requisitioning earned much hatred from the villagers.

In October 1943 the Japanese began the most significant of their youth organisations, the *Peta* (*Pembela Tanah Air*, Protectors of the Fatherland). This was an Indonesian volunteer army which by the end of the war had 37,000 men in Java, 1600 in Bali and about 20,000 in Sumatra (where it was usually known by its Japanese name *Giyugun*, volunteer soldiers). Unlike the *Heiho*, *Peta* was not formally a part of the Japanese military but was intended to be an auxiliary guerrilla force to resist an Allied invasion. Its officer corps included officials, teachers, *kyais* and Indonesian soldiers of the former Dutch colonial army. Among them was an Islamic schoolteacher named Soedirman (? 1915–50), who was to become one of the leading military figures of the Revolution. *Peta* discipline was intense and Indonesian nationalist ideas were used in indoctrination.

The Japanese also created their new organisation for controlling Islam in October 1943. MIAI was dissolved and replaced by *Masyumi* (*Majlis Syuro Muslimin Indonesia*, Consultative Council of Indonesian Muslims), with branches in every Residency of Java. The Japanese thoroughly bypassed the urban Modernist politicians who had succeeded in dominating MIAI; *Masyumi* leadership was placed in the hands of *Muhammadiyah* and NU figures. Hasjim Asjari, the founder of NU whom the Japanese had foolishly imprisoned at the start of their occupation but then released in August 1942, was made nominal head of *Masyumi* but he stayed at his *pésantren* in Jombang and the effective head was his son Kyai Haji Wachid Hasjim (1913–53).

In January 1944 *Putera* was replaced by a new mass movement in the search for a more satisfactory umbrella organisation for mobilising the people of Java. The *Jawa Hokokai* (Java Service Association) was set up for everyone over 14 years of age. The *Gunseikan* was head of the association but Sukarno and Hasjim Asjari were made his principal advisers, and the management was assigned to Hatta and Mansur. The Japanese of course intended to use the Indonesian leaders to further their own aims, but the latter were now taking advantage of the Japanese. Sukarno was particularly successful in using propaganda tours for the *Hokokai* to enhance his own standing as the primary leader of popular forces. The *priyayi* administrators were directly tied to the new body by being made heads of it at each level of administration. The *Hokokai* also

had an organisational means of penetrating even the villages. Neighbourhood Associations (*Rukun Tetangga*; in Japanese: *Tonari Gumi*) were set up to organise the whole population into cells of ten to twenty families for mobilisation, indoctrination and informing. Lower level administrators and village headmen had responsibility for these cells. By February 1944 village headmen, too, were undergoing indoctrination courses.

But the Japanese began to realise that they were both losing the war and losing control of the popular forces they were unleashing. In February 1944 the first serious peasant resistance in Java to rice requisitioning broke out in a village in Priangan and was brutally crushed. Leadership had been assumed by a local NU *kyai* and his students, representatives of precisely that group which the Japanese had most hoped to use. Further revolts led by local *hajis* broke out in West Java in May and August, and from this time onwards isolated peasant protests became more common. The Japanese tried to get a firmer grip on rural Islam by setting up branches of the Office for Religious Affairs throughout Java, and in August they appointed Hasjim Asjari (in fact represented by his son Wachid Hasjim) as head of the Office. But the revolutionary potential of rural Islam, once stimulated, could not easily be controlled. In the cities, especially Jakarta and Bandung, educated youths were beginning to establish their own underground networks, in many cases under the influence of Sjahrir. They knew that the war was going badly for the Japanese, and began to lay plans for seizing national independence out of the impending Japanese defeat.

In February 1944 the Americans expelled the Japanese from Kwajalein in the Marshall Islands and B-29 bombing raids on Japan started in June. In the same month the Japanese suffered a crushing naval defeat in the battle of the Philippine Sea. In July the Japanese lost their naval base at Saipan (Mariana Islands), which led to a cabinet crisis in Japan. Tojo resigned and General Koiso Kuniaki replaced him as Prime Minister (1944–5), bringing with him a greater inclination to consider puppet independence for Indonesia. Meanwhile, the Allied invasion of northern Europe had begun in June and Japan's allies in Europe were crumbling. In September the Americans landed on Morotai, off Halmahera in the east of Indonesia. In the same month American planes began to bomb Manila.

On 7 September 1944 Prime Minister Koiso promised independence for the 'East Indies' (*To-Indo*, a term the Japanese continued to use officially until April 1945). But he set no date for independence, and it was clearly expected that Indonesians should respond to this gesture with grateful support for Japan. The 16th Army in Java was now told to stimulate nationalist forces and the Indonesian flag was allowed on *Jawa Hokokai* offices. The navy generally remained unenthusiastic about the whole idea. Since March 1944 it had set up some consultative committees in its area, but they had no authority, consisted only of indigenous officials and aristocrats, and met only a few times before the Japanese surrender. The 25th Army in Sumatra, however, announced a consultative Central Advisory Board (*Sumatra Chuo Sangi-in*) for the island in March 1945. But this body met in Bukittingi only once before the end of the war.

While the navy still resisted any attempts at promoting nationalism in its administrative area, a remarkable naval officer stationed in Java now took an active role. Vice-Admiral Maeda Tadashi was in charge of the army–navy liaison office in Jakarta, and was a man of progressive views regarding Indonesian nationalism. He now

began to use naval money to finance speaking tours by Sukarno and Hatta, even sending them to Makassar in April 1945 and to Bali and Banjarmasin in June. In October 1944 he also established the **Asrama Indonesia Merdeka** (Free Indonesia Dormitory) in Jakarta, either to train new youth leaders for an independent state or to find a means of infiltrating the existing underground youth networks. Maeda became a confidant of many leading Indonesians of all ages, and contributed to the process by which the younger and older generations of leaders came to know and understand (if not always to respect) each other in Jakarta.

New youth and military groups were now created. **Jawa Hokokai** was for the first time given a youth organisation of its own, the **Barisan Pělopor** (Vanguard Column), which at the end of the war was said to have 80,000 members. This was initially to be used for propaganda purposes, but in May 1945 it began guerrilla training. Educated urban youth leaders were linked to lower class youths of the towns and cities, and they in turn were formally linked to the **Hokokai** figures led by Sukarno. In December 1944 **Masyumi** was also given a military wing called **Barisan Hizbulah** (God's Forces), which began training in February 1945 and was said to have 50,000 members at the end of the war. Its leadership was dominated by **Muhammadiyah** figures and members of Agus Salim's cooperative faction of the pre-war PSII. Again the main pre-war non-cooperative Islamic politicians were bypassed.

More Indonesian officials were now promoted. In November 1944 Indonesian Vice-Residents began to be appointed. The advisers (*sanyo*) were gathered into a sort of upper chamber (**Dewan Sanyo**, Council of Advisers) of the Central Advisory Board, with rather wider advisory competence. These higher officials were enrolled in indoctrination courses in January 1945, an experience which both encouraged nationalist thinking among them and enhanced their dislike of the Japanese for requiring them to undergo what seemed to be a demeaning exercise.

The Japanese were finally required to give substance to their promise of independence by the rapid disintegration of their military position. In October 1944 what remained of the Japanese fleet was nearly wiped out in the Leyte Gulf; with its demise even the defence of Japan itself was hardly feasible any longer. In January 1945 the American invasion of Luzon in the Philippines began and in February Manila was taken. After the loss of the Philippines the Japanese navy abandoned its opposition to puppet independence for Indonesia, since it no longer had much hope of retaining control in any case and thus recognised the need to win Indonesian goodwill. But in practice the navy itself did little to encourage this. The difficulty of maintaining such goodwill was meanwhile becoming clearer. In February 1945 the **Peta** detachment at Blitar (East Java) attacked the Japanese armoury and killed several Japanese soldiers. Sixty-eight **Peta** soldiers were courtmartialled (of whom eight were executed) and four senior Indonesian administrators there were forced to resign. The Japanese now began to fear that they could not control the Indonesian military forces they had created. These fears were strengthened in March when comparable forces in Burma turned against them and joined the invading Allies.

As they saw that they were losing control, the Japanese decided to release the remaining restraints upon Indonesian popular forces. The 16th Army pressed more cautious elements within the Japanese hierarchies to act speedily, since it knew well

that the seeds of revolution were deeply planted in Java. In March 1945 the Japanese announced the formation of an Investigating Committee for Preparatory Work for Indonesian Independence (***Badan Penyelidik Usaha Persiapan Kemerdekaan Indonesia***), which met in late May in the old ***Volksraad*** building in Jakarta. Its membership represented most of the surviving middle-aged leaders of Java from all the main schools of thought. Radjiman Wediodiningrat was in the chair, while before him sat Sukarno, Hatta, Mansur, Dewantara, Agus Salim, Soetardjo Kartohadikoesomo, Abikoesno Tjokrosøjoso, Ki Bagus Hadikusumo, Wachid Hasjim, Muhammad Yamin and others. The Japanese were naturally determined that when independence came it would be in the hands of older leaders whom they felt they could deal with rather than the unpredictable younger generation.

In July 1945 the Japanese in Java tried to unify the youth movements, ***Masyumi*** and ***Jawa Hokokai*** into a single ***Gerakan Rakyat Baru*** (New People's Movement). But the attempt collapsed when youth leaders insisted upon dramatic nationalistic gestures which most of the more timid (and more realistic) older generation would not undertake. The initial meeting ended in acrimony and the Movement was stillborn. The Japanese arrested Yamin, whom they believed to have inspired the young activists, but events were now moving too rapidly for the Japanese to make a second attempt at uniting the older and younger leaders.

In the Investigating Committee in Jakarta, Sukarno urged that his version of religiously neutral nationalism should be adopted. Since this was indeed the only basis upon which the other leaders could agree, Sukarno carried the day. In his speech of 1 June he laid out his doctrine of ***Pancasila***, the 'five principles' which were to become the official philosophy of independent Indonesia: belief in God, nationalism, humanitarianism, social justice and democracy. While these principles were sufficiently unobjectionable and ambiguous to receive general acceptance, Islamic leaders were unhappy that Islam seemed to play no special role. Eventually they accepted a compromise called the Jakarta Charter (***Piagam Jakarta***) which said that the state was to be based upon 'belief in God, with the obligation for adherents of Islam to carry out Islamic law'. What this implied for the relationship between Islamic law and the state was to be a source of bitter disagreements in coming years. The committee finished its work by drafting Indonesia's first constitution, which called for a unitary republic with an extremely powerful presidency, and by deciding that the new state should include not only Indonesia but Malaya and British territories in Borneo (Kalimantan) as well.

By July 1945 all elements among the Japanese were agreed that independence must be granted to Indonesia within a few months. In March the Americans had taken Iwojima and begun to use it as a bomber base for raids on Japan. Koiso resigned as Prime Minister in April and was replaced by Admiral Suzuki Kantaro, who favoured a negotiated peace. In May Germany surrendered, leaving the Allies free to concentrate on the Pacific War. In the same month Rangoon fell. Okinawa fell in June and truly massive bombing of Japan began. Late in July at Potsdam the Allied leaders issued a demand for Japan's unconditional surrender. Japan could no longer think of victory or of retaining its conquered territories. In Indonesia its aim now was to create an independent state in order to frustrate the restoration of rule by the Dutch enemy. At the end of July the Japanese army and navy held a meeting in Singapore to plan the transfer

of the economy to Indonesian hands. They decided that Java should be given independence by early September and the other areas soon after.

On 6 August the first atomic bomb was dropped on Hiroshima, killing at least 78,000 people. The war in Asia was nearing its horrific end. The following day in Jakarta, the membership of a new Preparatory Committee for Indonesian Independence (*Panitia Persiapan Kemerdekaan Indonesia*) was announced, and news of this committee was given throughout Indonesia. It had both Java and outer islands representatives, was dominated by the older generation, and was scheduled to meet on 19 August. On the 7th, the parallel committee of Japanese, which was to take the real decisions, met. The Soviet Union declared war on Japan on 8 August. On the following day the second atomic bomb was dropped on Nagasaki and the Soviet Union invaded Manchuria. On that day, with surrender looking inevitable to leading Japanese, Sukarno, Hatta and Radjiman were flown to Saigon to see the Commander of the Southern Area, Field Marshal Terauchi Hisaichi, whom they met in Dalat on 11 August. Terauchi promised them independence for the whole of the former Netherlands East Indies, but vetoed the inclusion of Malaya and British areas of Borneo. Sukarno was appointed chairman of the Preparatory Committee and Hatta vice-chairman. On 14 August Sukarno and his colleagues arrived back in Jakarta.

On 15 August Japan surrendered unconditionally and thereby presented Indonesian leaders with a formidable problem. Because there had been no Allied reconquest of Indonesia, there was now a political hiatus: the Japanese were still in control but had surrendered, and no Allied forces were present to replace them. Plans for orderly Japanese-sponsored independence seemed now to have come to a halt, and by the following day the *Gunseikan* had received specific orders to hold the status quo until Allied forces could arrive. Sukarno, Hatta and the older generation were uncertain what to do and feared to provoke conflict with the Japanese. Maeda wanted to see a quick transfer of power to the older generation, fearing both the volatile youth groups and the demoralised Japanese forces. The youth leaders wanted a dramatic declaration of independence outside of the framework set up by the Japanese, and were supported in this by Sjahrir. But no one dared move without Sukarno and Hatta.

On the morning of 16 August Hatta and Sukarno were not to be found in Jakarta. During the night they had been taken by youth leaders to the *Peta* garrison at Rengasdengklok, a small town well off the main road to Cirébon, on the pretext of protecting them when a rebellion of *Peta* and *Heijo* broke out. There was no uprising and Sukarno and Hatta soon realised that this was an attempt to force them to declare independence outside of the Japanese arrangements, which they refused to do. Maeda sent word that if they were brought back safely he could arrange for the Japanese to look the other way when independence was declared. By that night Sukarno and Hatta were in Maeda's house in Jakarta. During the night the declaration of independence was drafted. The young activists wanted dramatic and fiery language, but to avoid offending the Japanese or encouraging violence a calm and simple statement devised by Sukarno was adopted.

On the morning of 17 August 1945 Sukarno read the declaration of independence before a relatively small group outside his own house:

Proclamation:

We the people of Indonesia hereby declare  
the independence of Indonesia.

Matters concerning the transfer of power, etc., will be carried out  
in a conscientious  
manner and as speedily as possible.

Jakarta, 17 August 1945.

In the name of the people of Indonesia,

[signed] Sukarno Hatta

The red and white flag was raised and '***Indonesia Raya***' was sung.

The Republic of Indonesia was born. Meanwhile the victorious Allies, almost entirely ignorant of what had transpired within Indonesia during the war, were hastily planning their arrival to accept the Japanese surrender and to restore the colonial regime. But the Japanese period had created conditions of such chaos, had so politicised the masses, and had so encouraged both older and younger Indonesian leaders to take the initiative, that the Allies were to find themselves confronted by a revolutionary war of independence.

## **Chapter 18**

---

# **The Revolution, 1945–50**

The Revolution by which independence was won is not only a central episode of Indonesian history but a powerful element in the Indonesian nation's perception of itself. All the uncertain groping for new identities, for unity in the face of foreign rule, for a more just social order, seemed to come to fruition in the years after the Second World War. For the first time in the lives of most Indonesians, the artificial restraints of foreign rule were suddenly lifted. It is not surprising that the result was not the appearance of a harmonious new nation, but a bitter struggle among contending individuals and social forces. Yet behind these often violent struggles lay a commitment to independence. The subsequent national myth that Indonesians stood shoulder to shoulder during the Revolution has little historical foundation. But the conviction that it was the nation's most triumphant hour, that Indonesia's right to independence was demonstrated by the sacrifices made in the name of the Revolution, has much to support it.

Academic studies of the Revolution have done their best to impose order upon a period which was essentially one of disorder. Concerning those Indonesians who supported the Revolution, contrasts have usefully been drawn between the forces of armed struggle (*pĕrjuangan*) and those of diplomacy, between those in favour of social revolution and those against it, between the younger and the older generations, between the left and the right, between Islamic and 'secular' forces and so on. These distinctions are helpful, but it needs to be remembered that they did not always coincide. They are not different labels for the same basic distinction; they are all partial pictures of a period in which the divisions within the nation were multiform and constantly shifting. At the beginning of the Revolution, none of the basic divisions among Indonesians had been resolved except that there was agreement on independence as the immediate goal; for the revolutionaries, anything seemed possible but defeat. By the end, defeat had come very near and the possibilities were drastically limited. The forces of armed struggle and diplomacy, while distrusting each other, jointly won independence. The forces favouring social revolution, the younger generation, the left and Islamic dominance all faced sharply limited prospects.

Both the Dutch and the Indonesian revolutionaries saw the Revolution as a time of continuity with the past. For the Dutch, the aim was to destroy a state run by collaborators with the Japanese and to restore a colonial regime which they believed they had built out of 350 years of effort. For the Indonesian revolutionary leaders, the

aim was to complete and perfect the process of national unification and revival which had begun four decades before. Each believed destiny and righteousness to be on its side. Both views had some justification, but both were also misleading.

In fact, this was the third time the Dutch had set out to conquer Indonesia. Their first effort, in the seventeenth and eighteenth centuries, had ended in partial withdrawal in the face of Indonesian resistance and their own inadequacies, and finally in their defeat by the British. The second, in the nineteenth and early twentieth centuries, had ended in their defeat by the Japanese. They were now to try for a third time, and this time they faced the problem of conquering the whole archipelago at once. For their part, the Indonesians were facing unprecedented circumstances. For the first time they were in occupation of virtually the whole of their national territory and were more united than ever before in facing the Dutch, whom they greatly outnumbered. But full national unity was still a long way from being achieved. Poor communications, internal divisions, the weakness of the central Indonesian leadership and ethnic diversity meant that in practice the Revolution was a highly fragmented phenomenon. Largely for this reason, the Dutch conquest nearly succeeded. In the end it was defeated by Indonesian resistance and the support of sympathetic powers, especially the United States of America. This near victory of the Dutch, however, did much to weld the diverse Indonesian nation into a unitary republic, in considerable agreement on what it opposed, if not always on what it supported. Thus, in the end the Dutch would have to abandon their empire building attempt in Indonesia, leaving behind a precious legacy of unity.

A central Republican government was quickly established in Jakarta in late August 1945. It adopted the constitution which had been drafted by the Preparatory Committee for Indonesian Independence before the Japanese surrender. The Japanese navy warned, however, that Christian Indonesians in its area would disapprove of any special role for Islam, so the Jakarta Charter and a condition that the head of state must be a Muslim were dropped. Sukarno was made President of the Republic (1945–67) and Hatta Vice-President (1945–56), since the Jakarta politicians were convinced that only they could deal with the Japanese. Pending elections, which in the event were not to be held for ten years, a **Komite Nasional Indonesia Pusat** (KNIP, Central Indonesian National Committee) was appointed to assist the President, and similar National Committees were to be established at provincial and Residency levels.

An administrative structure was also easily defined. Incumbent Indonesian administrative advisers (*sanyo*) and Vice-Residents were named as Republican officials, so that the administration could be peacefully and discreetly turned over to them by the Japanese without too obvious violation of the terms of Japan's surrender to the Allies. The **Jawa Hokokai**, which had proved useful to Sukarno and the Republican leaders, was also to be carried on as a state party. It was given the name of Sukarno's pre-war party, **Partai Nasional Indonesia** (Indonesian Nationalist Party), but it soon collapsed. Sjahrir and his supporters objected to such an obvious extension of a Japanese organisation and, of course, to the continued dominance of the collaborating elite which it was intended to ensure. The **Jawa Hokokai** had, in any case, been a forced fusion of elites whose interests were often far from identical, and without Japanese compulsion the **Jawa Hokokai/PNI** was internally incoherent. At the end of August 1945 it was suspended, leaving the KNIP and lower level National Committees

as the main political organs.

While administrative arrangements seemed to be proceeding smoothly in Java, a disruption occurred in the Republic's military forces. Between 16 and 25 August the Japanese in Java, Bali and Sumatra disarmed and disbanded the **Peta/Giyugun** and **Heiho**, most of whose members did not yet know of the declaration of independence. They thereby dismantled the command structures and membership of the forces which the Republican leadership had looked upon as the basis for a national army. Rather than the Republic inheriting a trained, armed and hierarchically structured army (albeit one that lacked higher command levels), the armed forces which began to be formed in early September often grew out of local initiatives by able, and usually younger, leaders with charisma and/or access to arms. One of the major problems of the revolutionary period and after was to create from this disorganisation a rational military structure obedient to central authority.

As news spread of the declaration of independence, many Indonesians far from Jakarta disbeliefed it. On 22 August the Japanese finally made a public announcement of their surrender, but it was well into September 1945 before the fact that independence had been declared was known in remoter regions. Once it was known, the question of allegiance immediately arose. The four rulers of the Central Javanese principalities declared their support of the Republic early in September. But many rajas of the outer islands, who had been supported and enriched, and hence compromised, by the Dutch, were unenthusiastic. They disliked the apparently radical, non-aristocratic and sometimes Islamic nature of the Jakarta leadership as well as the local Republican youth who most directly represented the cause of independence. In South Sulawesi, however, the king of Bone (Arumpone) La Mappanjuki, who still recalled the battles against the Dutch early in the century, declared his support. Most of the Makassarese and Bugis rajas joined him in accepting the authority of G. S. S. J. Ratulangie (1890–1949), a Mēnadonese Christian who was appointed by Jakarta as Republican governor there. By contrast, anti-Bugis and anti-Islamic sentiments among the Torajans of South Sulawesi enabled the Dutch to re-establish their presence there from 1946 and to begin recruiting locally for the colonial army. Like most Sulawesi rajas, several Balinese rajas accepted Republican authority. But in many other regions the rajas chose to oppose the Revolution and thereby often became its victims, as will be seen below.

For the Indonesian masses there was a sense of freedom which led most of them to regard themselves as pro-Republican, but without any very clear knowledge yet of what this commitment would entail. Indonesian bureaucratic administrators, however, faced unprecedented circumstances with the sanctions of foreign rule removed for the first time in their careers. Many simply had no idea what to do. Javanese *priyayi* officials were often quite unable to respond positively; they were both compromised by their service to foreign rulers and deprived of the pre-colonial military skills of their class. The initiative thus fell to others who were not reluctant to embrace violence.

The euphoria of revolution soon began to sweep the country. Indonesian youths in particular responded to the excitement and challenge of independence. Local Japanese commanders often abandoned urban areas and withdrew their troops to perimeter positions to avoid confrontation. Many discreetly allowed young Indonesians to acquire arms. Between 3 and 11 September, Republican youths in Jakarta took over control of

the railway stations, tram system and radio station without encountering Japanese resistance. By the end of September major installations in Yogyakarta, Surakarta, Malang and Bandung were also in the hands of Indonesian youths. Despite the worries of older leaders about provoking the Japanese, mass rallies were held in Surabaya on 11 and 17 September and in Jakarta on 19 September, where some 200,000 people are said to have filled the square now called ***Medan Merdeka*** (Independence Square). On these occasions Japanese forces, including tanks, stood in position around the rallies, but violence was avoided. On 19 September, Sukarno turned his oratorical gifts to convincing the Jakarta crowd to disperse without challenging the Japanese. His success in this confirmed the impression that only Sukarno could prevent massive violence.

In literature and the arts as well as in politics a revolutionary spirit was seen. Republican newspapers and journals sprang up in many places, especially in Jakarta, Yogyakarta and Surakarta. A whole generation of writers is loosely referred to as the 'Generation of 45' (***Angkatan 45***), men whose creative skills came to fruition in the revolutionary period. Among them was the poet Chairil Anwar (1922–49), the prose writer Pramoedya Ananta Toer (1925–2006), much of whose writing was done in a Dutch prison in 1947–9, the journalist Mochtar Lubis (1922–2004) and others. Many of these men believed that their art could be a part of the revolutionary events. There was still little specifically Islamic writing, except for Bahrum Rangkuti (1919–77), who was much inspired by the Pakistani writer Muhammad Iqbal. Modern painting also came to maturity in the Revolution as artists such as Affandi (1910–90) and Sudjojono (1913–1986) not only captured the spirit of the Revolution in their paintings but also gave more direct support by producing anti-Dutch posters.

Many youths joined armed struggle groups (***badan perjuangan***). In Sumatra they had a virtual monopoly of revolutionary authority since established nationalist leaders there were few in number and uncertain what to do. Former ***Peta*** and ***Heiho*** soldiers formed the best-disciplined groups, but many ***badan perjuangan*** were very undisciplined, in response both to the circumstances of their formation and to what was perceived as the revolutionary spirit. The army of ***Masyumi***, ***Barisan Hizbulah***, took in many new fighters, and was now joined by another loose group of Islamic forces generally called ***Barisan Sabillah*** (Forces in the Path of God), mostly led by rural Islamic teachers (***kyai***).

Violence between the Revolution and its perceived enemies soon began. After the Japanese surrender many Dutch internees simply walked out of their camps and went home. By September brawls had begun in the streets of Surabaya between Indonesian youths and Europeans, and tensions were mounting elsewhere. In all these matters Java was more advanced than the outer islands where there were more Japanese troops (especially in the navy areas), less sympathetic Japanese commanders and fewer Republican leaders and activists. So far, however, the Revolution had not yet faced serious resistance. But it was soon to do so.

As the Allies began arriving to accept the Japanese surrender, the first serious challenges to the Revolution emerged. The American advance through the Pacific had left Allied enclaves in Kalimantan (Tarakan and Balikpapan), on Morotai and in parts of Papua. Dutch administrators had already returned to these areas. At the end of June 1945 small commando units (mostly Dutch, but with some British officers) had also

been parachuted into North Sumatra. The Allies had decided early in 1945 that American forces would concentrate upon the Japanese home islands. Responsibility for Indonesia thus fell at the last moment to the British South East Asia Command under Lord Louis Mountbatten. The Dutch were naturally anxious to reoccupy Indonesia and to punish those who had collaborated with the Japanese, but they were in no position to do so themselves in 1945, so their hopes now rested upon the British. Mountbatten was to demonstrate, however, that he had no intention of conquering Indonesia for the Dutch; nor, indeed, did he have enough soldiers to do so. He defined his aims narrowly: to release European internees and accept the Japanese surrender. The rest was up to the Dutch; in practice Mountbatten treated Republican administrations as the de facto authority in areas where they were found.

In the Japanese navy area the Revolution was nipped in the bud when the Allies moved in. Australian troops took the Japanese surrender there (except for Bali and Lombok) and with them came Dutch troops and administrators. Between mid-September and mid-October 1945 the Australians occupied the major cities of East Indonesia, in most cases before Republican administrations had been established. Demonstrations were put down and some pro-Republican officials arrested. The pro-Republican rajas of South Sulawesi decided that it would be unwise to fight the Australians and therefore grudgingly allowed the return of the Dutch.

British troops, most of them Indian, were meanwhile moving into Java and Sumatra. The first reached Jakarta in the latter half of September 1945, and in the course of October they arrived in Medan, Padang, Palembang, Sēmarang and Surabaya. The British commander for Indonesia, Lieutenant-General Sir Philip Christison, hoped to avoid clashes with the Indonesians. He therefore diverted soldiers of the former Dutch colonial army and newly arriving Dutch troops to East Indonesia, where the Dutch reoccupation was proceeding rapidly. The Dutch Lieutenant Governor General Hubertus J. van Mook (1942–8; there was no Governor General appointed after the war) was in favour of the Dutch concentrating initially on East Indonesia, which was of considerable economic value and where the population was expected to be less anti-Dutch.

As Allied troops began to appear, tensions mounted in Java and Sumatra. Street fights developed in October between young Republicans on the one hand and former Dutch prisoners, Dutch colonial troops (including Ambonese), Chinese, Indo-Europeans and Japanese on the other. Hundreds died in these clashes. The Japanese were in a particularly difficult position, for it was no longer possible for them to ignore their obligations to the Allies and maintain a laissez-faire attitude towards the revolutionaries.

In October 1945 the Japanese attempted to recover authority in the towns and cities in Java where they had recently allowed the Indonesians to take over, thereby initiating the first stages of warfare. On 3 October the Japanese Military Police (*Kenpeitai*) massacred Republican youths in Pēkalongan. On 10 October Japanese troops pushed the Republicans out of Bandung and a week later turned the city over to the British. On 14 October they began to retake Sēmarang. The Republicans there retaliated by murdering at least 130, and perhaps as many as 300, Japanese whom they were holding. The British arrived in Sēmarang six days later, by which time the Japanese had nearly

won control of the city, leaving some 500 Japanese and about 2000 Indonesians dead. The British decided to evacuate Indo-European and European internees as quickly as possible from the volatile interior of Java. Detachments went into Magélang and Ambarawa to bring out some 10,000 detainees (mostly women and children), but they encountered so much Republican resistance that air strikes had to be used against the Indonesians. On 2 November a ceasefire was arranged by Sukarno at the request of the British, but by late November fighting had resumed and the British withdrew to the coast.

Surabaya became the site of the heaviest battle of the Revolution and thereby a national symbol of resistance. The senior Japanese commander there, Vice-Admiral Shibata Yaichiro, favoured the Republic and gave Indonesians ready access to Japanese arms. When a Dutch navy captain reached Surabaya as the first Allied representative, Shibata surrendered to him on 3 October and then, recognising the reality of Indonesian control of the city, ordered his forces to surrender their few remaining weapons to the Indonesians who would be responsible for turning them over to the Allies (which, of course, they neglected to do). In late October and early November the leaders of *Nahdlatul Ulama* and *Masyumi* declared that war in defence of the Indonesian fatherland was holy war, an obligation laid upon all Muslims. From the *pésantren* schools of East Java *kyais* and their students began to pour into Surabaya. The fiery Soetomo (1920–81), better known as ‘Bung Tomo’ (Brother Tomo), used the local radio to encourage an atmosphere of fanatical revolutionary enthusiasm throughout the city.

Into this explosive city some 6000 British Indian troops came on 25 October to evacuate internees. Within three days fighting had begun. Some 10,000–20,000 Indonesian armed regulars of the recently formed People’s Security Army (*Tentara Kéamanan Rakyat*) and mobs of 70,000–140,000 people killed many of the Indian troops and seemed poised to wipe out the entire force. The British flew in Sukarno, Hatta and Amir Sjarifuddin (now Minister of Information in the Republican government) and a ceasefire was arranged on 30 October. Fighting broke out again, however, and the local British commander, Brigadier General A. W. S. Mallaby, was killed. During a subsequent lull in the fighting the British brought in reinforcements and evacuated the internees. At dawn on 10 November, a day now commemorated as Heroes’ Day (*Hari Pahlawan*), the British troops began a bloody punitive sweep through the city under cover of air and naval bombardment, in the face of fanatical resistance. In three days about half the city was conquered but it was three weeks before the fighting was over. At least 6000 Indonesians died and thousands more fled the devastated city.

The Republicans lost much manpower and many weapons in the battle of Surabaya, but their sacrificial resistance there created a symbol and rallying cry for the Revolution. It also convinced the British that wisdom lay on the side of neutrality in the Revolution. The battle of Surabaya was a turning point for the Dutch as well, for it shocked many of them into facing reality. Many had quite genuinely believed that the Republic represented only a gang of collaborators without popular support. No longer could any serious observer defend such a view.

The central leadership in Jakarta had little contact, influence or sympathy with the

violence which was now spreading. The earlier and more substantial Allied presence in Jakarta meant that there was less revolutionary violence there, and the central leadership was committed to an orderly revolution which would win diplomatic recognition and support. But Sukarno, who had seemed to be indispensable within Indonesia, was clearly an international liability. Van Mook was told by the Dutch government that he must have no dealings with this arch-collaborator. Although Sukarno continued to demonstrate his ability to sway a crowd, his cautious role since the declaration of independence and especially his intervention at the request of the British to arrange ceasefires at Magélang and Surabaya had also led many young revolutionaries to distrust him.

Sutan Sjahrir thus began to emerge within the manoeuvres of the Jakarta elite, partly because he had not collaborated with the Japanese and was therefore more acceptable to the Allies (which was true) and partly because he was believed to have special influence among Republican youths (which was true only to a limited extent). His pamphlet *Perjuangan kita* ('Our struggle'), published in November 1945, showed Sjahrir to be committed to the idea of an international socialist revolution which would be democratic, antiaristocratic and anti-fascist (and hence opposed to those like Sukarno who had found things to admire in Japanese ideas). But it also reflected the deeply Europeanised cast of Sjahrir's mind, which made it difficult for him to grasp the influence of invulnerability cults and millenarian traditions, the depth of indigenous social tensions or the appeal of violence for many Indonesians. Furthermore, it revealed a basis for distrust between him and the Republic's military forces, many of which had their roots in the Japanese occupation.

On 16 October 1945, Sjahrir and Amir Sjarifuddin (who had not only refused to collaborate with the Japanese but had been imprisoned and nearly executed by them) engineered a takeover within the Central Indonesian National Committee (KNIP). The period of extraordinary presidential powers was ended. The Committee was given legislative powers, to be carried out through a Working Party (*Badan Pekerja* KNIP) which Sjahrir and Amir selected. Political parties were now to be formed, thereby beginning a process which institutionalised the conflicts among Indonesians. On 11 November the cabinet was made responsible to the KNIP rather than the President. Finally, on 14 November a new cabinet was formed. Sjahrir became Prime Minister (1945–7) as well as Minister for Foreign Affairs and the Interior; Amir became Minister for People's Security (that is, Defence) and Information. Thus, after less than three months, the 1945 constitution was suspended in practice, although in theory it remained in force. Sukarno, Hatta and the other leaders whom the Japanese had used were now pushed into the background, while Sjahrir, Amir and their followers in the former Jakarta youth undergrounds gained power at the centre. Neither group had much influence over the Revolution in the countryside, but at least from this point onwards it became more difficult for the Dutch to claim that the Republic was a government of collaborators. Discussions soon began between Sjahrir and van Mook.

By November and December 1945 the Revolution in the countryside was entering a phase commonly known as the 'social revolution'. This label is, however, somewhat misleading if considered in terms of class conflict: a subordinate social class rarely overturned the power of a dominant social class. Most of the 'social revolutions'

resulted from competition between alternative elites, ethnic and communal groups or generations; social class structures were of secondary importance. Most were also of only temporary significance except in some areas of Sumatra, as will be seen below.

The arrival of the first Allied forces only increased the tension in Sumatra and Java, and impelled those who were wholeheartedly in favour of the Republic to turn against those whose commitment was doubted. In the name of ‘the people’s sovereignty’, young revolutionaries intimidated, kidnapped and sometimes murdered administrators, village headmen and policemen whose loyalty was suspect, or who were accused of corruption, profiteering or oppression during the Javanese occupation. In Java, artificial amalgamation of villages by the Dutch had brought firm Muslim (*santri*) and nominal Muslim (*abangan*) communities together under a single headman. *Abangan–santri* tension within these villages had grown throughout the century as a result of heightened pressures for religious orthodoxy, but foreign rule had prevented any serious conflict between the two sides. Now, as the revolutionary spirit rose, members of one or the other of these communities often overthrew the headman if he was from the other community and replaced him with a man from their own side, all in the name of ‘the people’s sovereignty’. In the confusion, actions in the name of the Revolution were sometimes difficult to distinguish from simple robbery, looting, extortion and the settling of old scores.

Social tension on the north coast of Java reached a peak in December 1945. In the three Regencies (*kabupaten*) of Brébés, Pěmalang and Těgal, all of them part of the Residency of Pěkalongan, there occurred what is known as the ‘three regions affair’. Here peasant social protest and a wish to avenge the oppression suffered during the Japanese occupation fuelled widespread violence. By early October actions against village headmen in this area were already under way, the initiative being taken by young activists from the Orthodox Islamic community, survivors of the 1926 PKI uprising and pre-war underground Communists. By the end of November the *bupatis* of Brébés, Těgal and Pěmalang had been replaced by supporters of this ‘social revolution’. On 12 December the social revolutionaries overthrew the Resident of Pěkalongan himself and replaced him with a former secret PKI member and underground leader who had been imprisoned by the Japanese. Now the local opposition swung into action. Local Republican army units and youths who supported them swept through the three Regencies and arrested over 1000 supporters of this ‘social revolution’, which thus ended in defeat. Many of the new *santri* headmen in the villages, however, remained in office.

In the principality of Yogyakarta, more enduring social change took place, this time from the top down. In 1939 Sultan Haměngkubuwana VIII (r. 1921–39) ordered his son to come back from the Netherlands, where he was studying at Leiden University. Shortly after his return the old Sultan died and the young man (b. 1912) became Sultan Haměngkubuwana IX (r. 1939–88). During the Japanese occupation he made some gestures towards reform of his principality, but it was only after August 1945 that this effort could be pursued with success. At the start of that month his chief administrator (*patih*) died and the Sultan appointed no successor, thereby taking personal control of affairs. When the Japanese surrendered and independence was declared, the Sultan had both an opportunity to realise his hopes for change and – because of his personal

popularity, direct control of his administration and the prestige of the Sultanate – the means to do so. When the *patih* of the subsidiary prince Pakualam VIII (r. 1938–98) died, he followed the Sultan's example by appointing no successor; Pakualam VIII now became the Sultan's lieutenant in reforming Yogyakarta.



*President Sukarno (centre) with Vice-President Hatta (left) and Prime Minister Sjahrir (right), Yogyakarta, 1946*

By early 1946 laws had already been promulgated in Yogyakarta which increased the electorate for village councils and headmen and abolished the head tax. Yogyakarta village administration was now probably the most enlightened in Indonesia. The old court bureaucracy was rapidly reduced in power and its incomes, already much reduced by inflation, were allowed to dwindle. In this way the Sultan overturned Dutch practice and gave the court elite a more restricted but more meaningful role. Rather than social atavisms in the countryside they became custodians of royal traditions within the court itself. Indonesian replaced Javanese as the language of official communication, thereby reducing the influence of the subtle hierarchical social levels of Javanese among administrators. The Sultan also formed a *lasykar rakyat* (people's army) loyal to himself. Indeed, he so consciously adopted a military role like that of pre-colonial rulers that he regarded himself as an army officer and was recognised as such by Republican army commanders.

By January 1946 the Dutch reoccupation of Jakarta had proceeded so far that it was decided to remove the Republican government to Yogyakarta, which remained the capital of independent Indonesia for the duration of the Revolution. Dutch occupation of Bandung as well as Jakarta also meant the loss of Indonesian control over the only universities in the country. In 1946, therefore, Gadjah Mada University was opened in Yogyakarta, with the Sultan offering the front portion of his court to house it. Thus, as one of the Sultan's closest advisers has observed, in Yogyakarta 'the Revolution could not possibly smash the palace doors, because they were already wide open' (Selosoemardjan, *Social changes*, p. 365).

In Sumatra there were violent 'social revolutions' which opposed the aristocratic elite. In Aceh the bitter animosity between religious leaders (*ulama*) and aristocratic

administrators (*uleëbalang*) led to a permanent change at elite level. Many *uleëbalangs* expected the Dutch to return and were left exposed when they did not. In August 1945 a Dutch force arrived in Sabang to repatriate labourers whom the Japanese had transported there. A small Dutch group was in Kutaraja (Banda Aceh) from early October to early November, but withdrew to Medan as the atmosphere grew more hostile. Acehnese now began attacking Japanese, or allowing them food only in exchange for weapons. In mid-December the Allies began to evacuate the Japanese from Aceh, except for over a hundred who joined the Republican forces as instructors. Civil war then broke out.

The *uleëbalangs* failed to put up a united opposition to the pro-Republican forces led by *ulamas*. Between December 1945 and March 1946 the leading *uleëbalangs* of Aceh and their families were imprisoned or killed. The violent social division which had roots in the Aceh War and in conflicts over the control of land, the judiciary and administrative authority – conflicts which the Japanese had temporarily halted in 1942 – were thus resolved by the permanent displacement of the *uleëbalang* aristocracy by Islamic leaders. For the duration of the Revolution the Dutch left Aceh untouched. After 1946, the established dominance in Aceh of a coherent elite and a single ideology (Islam) made it the most stable area of Indonesia during the Revolution. But it also placed Aceh at a distance from the rest of the country, for while others were to argue in subsequent years about whether Islam should dominate the nation, in Aceh it already did.

In East Sumatra armed groups consisting largely of Bataks and led by leftists attacked the Malay, Simalungun Batak and Karo Batak rajas in March 1946, as they had in 1942. Arrests and robberies of the rajas soon turned into a slaughter in which hundreds of East Sumatran aristocrats died, among them the poet Amir Hamzah. The Jakarta leadership, local Republican politicians and local army units all opposed this violence, and by the end of April the most notorious leaders of this bloody ‘social revolution’ had either been arrested or gone into hiding. The authority of the rajas of East Sumatra, however, had been irrevocably weakened. The divisions within the revolutionary forces in East Sumatra were clearly revealed by the suppression of the ‘social revolution’; the Dutch would soon be able to profit from this disunity. Similar violence broke out in Tapanuli (North Sumatra), where about 300 people were killed in May 1946 in fighting between Toba Bataks and Karo Bataks, an ethnic conflict which was reinforced by the presence of Christianity among the Toba and Islam among the Karo.

The divisions among the revolutionary elite in Java were meanwhile becoming more rigid as political parties came into being. While some of these represented ideological streams, many were merely the personal followings of particular leaders. An informal group formed around Tan Malaka, the former PKI leader who returned secretly from exile in 1942. In August 1945 he revealed his identity in Jakarta and immediately attracted a large following. Tan Malaka had by now abandoned Stalinist ideas and thus founded what was known in Indonesia as ‘national Communism’, a generally leftist stance founded on the idea that Indonesia must seek its own path to and formulation of the socialist state. Tan Malaka never formed his own political party, but became the acknowledged leader of a group of organisations and individuals opposed to the elite

then in the Republican government.

By the early months of 1946 the main political parties of the revolutionary period could be identified. The Communist Party (PKI) was reconstituted in October 1945, and after considerable internal conflict and a clash with Republican army units in February 1946, by April 1946 it was controlled by orthodox internationally oriented older leaders, many of them former activists from the 1920s now released from detention. In November 1945 Amir Sjarifuddin's followers in the former youth undergrounds formed **Pésindo** (*Pemuda Sosialis Indonesia*, Indonesian Socialist Youth); as Minister of Defence Amir also built up the military police as a force loyal to him. Amir's followers merged with those of Sjahrir to form **Partai Sosialis** (Socialist Party) in December 1945; in early 1947 they split again along these original lines. The Socialists formed the main pro-government force so long as Sjahrir and Amir held power. The main Islamic political party was **Masyumi**, within which **Nahdlatul Ulama** and **Muhammadiyah** functioned as corporate members. In November 1945, urban Modernist politicians led by Sukiman Wirjosandjojo, Natsir and others regained control from the **Muhammadiyah** and **Nahdlatul Ulama** leaders whom the Japanese had favoured. The Indonesian Nationalist Party (PNI) was revived in January 1946, but Sukarno was not made its chairman since as President he was theoretically above politics. PNI's main constituency was still found among the Javanese **abangan** and especially among the Javanese bureaucracy, but it also gained much influence in Sumatra. Although PNI was now a new party, free of the taint of Japanese influence which the involvement of Sukarno would have implied, much of its appeal undoubtedly derived from the facts that it carried the name of Sukarno's old party and was led by pre-war PNI and **Partindo** figures.

The army was also emerging as a political force, but a far from united one. A general distinction can be drawn between two groups. On the one hand, those among former **Peta** and **Heiho** soldiers and irregulars who had no pre-Japanese military training were imbued with a revolutionary spirit and trained primarily for guerrilla warfare. This group was best typified by Soedirman, whom the army elected as its own supreme commander in November 1945. On the other hand, former Dutch colonial army soldiers (who took the view that the Dutch surrender in 1942 had released them from their oath of loyalty to the Dutch queen) were better trained for staff work and had a generally more professional, less populist, view of the military role. This group included such men as the Batak Muslim A. H. Nasution (1918–2000) and the Batak Christian T. B. Simatupang (1920–90). The central Republican government profoundly distrusted Soedirman and tended to favour the 'professionals', who soon dominated the general staff and Ministry of Defence. In May 1946 Nasution took command of the West Java Siliwangi Division, which became the major progovernment element within the regular army. Amir's and Sjahrir's distaste for anything tainted by Japanese fascism, and Amir's hopes of politicising the Republican forces along Marxist lines, meanwhile helped to push Soedirman and his followers into greater opposition to the Republican government.

In the first months of 1946, pressures began to increase on both the Republican and Dutch sides. In December 1945–January 1946 the Dutch relieved the Australians in East Indonesia. They arrested Ratulangie, six of his aides and the rajas of Bone and

Luwu in April 1946. The Revolution was thus deprived of its senior leadership in South Sulawesi, and Republican youths either went underground or set sail for Java. Early in 1946 the Dutch also occupied Bangka, Bělitung and Riau. The British turned Bandung over to the Dutch in April, and on 13 July 1946 the Southeast Asia Command formally handed all of Indonesia over to Dutch authority except for Java and Sumatra. As the Dutch occupation proceeded, the British pressed the Dutch to come to some agreement with the Republic. The Indonesia issue was also raised in the United Nations (UN) for the first time in January 1946, the beginning of UN involvement which would, in the end, prove to be important.

Sjahrir was meanwhile under increasing domestic pressure. Opponents of his government, especially followers of Tan Malaka, argued that Sjahrir's willingness to negotiate with the Dutch would inevitably lead to the demise of the Republic. In January 1946 a Struggle Union (*Persatuan Pérjuangan*) was created under Tan Malaka's influence. Youth leaders (including the future Vice-President Adam Malik, 1917–84), radicals such as Yamin, and most of the armed irregulars supported the Union's demand for '100 per cent independence' as the Republic's basis of negotiation. Sjahrir and his followers were seriously threatened by this coalition.

As the pressure mounted, Sukarno found himself emerging from the peripheral position he had occupied for several months. Being the only Javanese among the major Republican leaders and hence the only one who could appeal directly to the masses of Java, and a man capable of adopting the rhetoric of the radicals while quietly supporting the policy of diplomacy, he was becoming essential again as an arbiter of conflict to whom all could turn for legitimacy in the name of the Revolution.

In March 1946 Sjahrir and Amir pulled their followers, especially the *Pésindo* armed units, out of the Struggle Union. At the Union's conference in Malang that month, *Pésindo* and military police units arrested its leaders. Tan Malaka was held for over two years while awaiting trial, but the opposition's attack on the government was not yet at an end. With the Republican capital situated in Yogyakarta, the rival court city of Surakarta naturally became the centre of the opposition.

In Surakarta the feckless ruler Pakubuwana XII (r. 1944–2004) and the subsidiary prince Mangkuněgara VIII (r. 1944–87) showed few of the skills of their opposite numbers in Yogyakarta, nor were they able to cooperate with one another. They fumbled opportunities to play a positive role in the Revolution and thus never gained control of events. The Surakarta radicals were led by Dr Muwardi (1907–48), who commanded armed groups known as *Barisan Banteng* (Buffalo Column). In January 1946 they kidnapped Pakubuwana XII briefly to demonstrate the people's displeasure, and by April the only real authority in Surakarta was exercised by *Barisan Banteng*. Soedirman and the local army commanders successfully protected *Barisan Banteng* against the government's wish to quell it and restore central authority over Surakarta. Finally on 1 June 1946 the prerogatives of the Surakarta princes outside the walls of their courts were formally abolished by the government under pressure from Soedirman and the radicals; Sjahrir's government was obliged to watch Surakarta fall entirely into the hands of the opposition, both military and political.

Negotiations with the Dutch were now at a delicate stage. In March 1946 Sjahrir had secretly agreed with van Mook to negotiate on the basis of de facto Republican

sovereignty in Java, Madura and Sumatra alone, a recognition of Dutch sovereignty elsewhere, and a cooperative Dutch–Republican effort to create a federal Indonesia within a Dutch–Indonesian union. In April two Indonesian cabinet ministers attended further talks in the Netherlands which broke down because the Dutch government was facing an election on 17 May and dared not appear willing to make concessions to the Republicans. This convinced many Republican leaders that the Dutch would not act in good faith, an impression which was soon strengthened when van Mook decided unilaterally to set up a federal Indonesia under Dutch control.

On 27 June 1946 Hatta made a speech in Yogyakarta which revealed the limited nature of the government's negotiating position. The opposition forces saw this as a betrayal of '100 per cent independence'. That same night, when Sjahrir and several others stopped in Surakarta on their way back from a trip to East Java they were arrested by local army units who hoped that this action would leave Sukarno, Soedirman and '100 per cent independence' in control of the Republic. Instead, Sukarno proclaimed martial law and demanded that the Prime Minister be released. Soedirman, however, refused to have him set free. On 30 June Sukarno broadcast over the radio, saying that the arrest of Sjahrir endangered the unity of the nation. This appeal by Sukarno, as so often in his career, shook the confidence of the opposition. Sjahrir was released that night and returned immediately to Jakarta.

The government now arrested several of its leading opponents. Yamin got away, but Malik and 13 others were captured. Then it was the army's turn to demand the release of these prisoners. On 3 July 1946, army units freed them from jail and sent a delegation to Sukarno in Yogyakarta which demanded that he dismiss the cabinet and put Soedirman in charge of security affairs. This delegation, however, was now arrested and then about a hundred others were captured by government supporters (this time Yamin did not escape). This 'July 3rd Affair' was crucial. All realised how dangerous their domestic rivalries were, how close in fact they had come to civil war in Central Java. The government blamed Tan Malaka, who was still under arrest, for the whole affair. Soedirman decided in the interest of the Revolution and of his supporters to adopt a more flexible stance. And, yet again, Sukarno had emerged as the only man capable of preventing chaos. Sjahrir's domestic support was clearly seen to be small, but in the interest of the Republic's diplomacy he could not yet be replaced.

Meanwhile the Dutch proceeded with their attempt at a federal solution. In July 1946 they organised a conference at Malino (South Sulawesi) where 39 Indonesian representatives of the rajas, Christians and several ethnic groups of Kalimantan and East Indonesia supported the idea of a federal state and some form of continuing Dutch connection. The Dutch were surprised, however, to find that the Indonesians also expected some measure of genuine autonomy. Plans were laid for the formation of a state in Kalimantan and another for East Indonesia.

In November 1946 the Dutch finally concluded their first diplomatic agreement with the Republic. The British had insisted on some agreement before withdrawing all their forces from Java and Sumatra in December. In October negotiations had begun and a ceasefire was agreed in Java and Sumatra. On 12 November, at Linggajati (near Cirébon), the Dutch recognised the Republic as the de facto authority in Java, Madura and Sumatra, both sides agreed to cooperate in the creation (by 1 January 1949) of a

federal United States of Indonesia in which the Republic would be one of the states, and the Dutch queen was to become the symbolic head of a Dutch–Indonesian union of sovereign states. This peace agreement was to have but a brief lifespan. Both sides distrusted each other deeply and in both countries ratification of the agreement provoked bitter political controversies over the concessions that had been made.

The Dutch were discovering that federalism was not necessarily an easy solution. By November 1946 their position in South Sulawesi was being seriously threatened by local Republican youths returning from Java, where they had received further military training. The Dutch responded in December by unleashing one of the most infamous figures of the Revolution, Captain Raymond ‘Turk’ Westerling. His methods of using arbitrary terror were soon emulated by other anti-Republicans in South Sulawesi. In three months at least 3000 Indonesians are estimated to have been killed by these methods. Among them was the pro-Republican Datu of Supa who was killed by Westerling’s troops in February 1947. The Republican youth groups were decimated. In Bali, no more than about 1500 pro-Republican fighters were divided amongst themselves along lines like those in Java between the more professional and the more politically revolutionary, and further along caste lines. In November 1946 the more professional military group, led by I Gusti Ngrurah Rai, was largely wiped out by colonial forces. This had the effect of leaving the Republican side in Bali predominantly in the hands of younger political leaders of lower caste origins. The Balinese Republicans gave greater emphasis to political rather than military activity until after the first Dutch ‘police action’ of 1947, which is discussed below.

The Dutch pushed forward with their plans for federal states as best they could. A state of East Indonesia was created at a conference in Den Pasar (Bali) in December 1946. This was called *Négara Indonesia Timur* (State of East Indonesia) and abbreviated to NIT; opponents joked that these initials stood for *négara ikut tuan* (the state which goes along with the master, that is, the Dutch). But despite continuing Dutch control, even at Den Pasar nationalist ideas were strong: ‘*Indonesia Raya*’ was adopted as the NIT anthem and a pro-Republican Bugis was very nearly elected President. It proved impossible to set up a state for all of Kalimantan, as the Muslims of the south and east coasts were too strongly pro-Republican. In May 1947 a separate state for West Kalimantan was established under Sultan Abdul Hamid II (r. 1946–50) of Pontianak. Sjahrir protested ineffectually at the unilateral creation of these two states.

These developments only deepened Republican distrust of the Dutch and dislike of the Linggajati agreement. In order to have a better chance of getting the agreement ratified by the KNIP, it was necessary to increase its members from 200 to 514 by packing it with pro-government figures, who had formed themselves into a coalition called the Left Wing (*Sayap Kiri*) in December 1946. Ratification was nevertheless not assured. But when it became clear that Hatta and Sukarno would resign if Linggajati were not accepted, the KNIP ratified it in February 1947. The expansion of the Left Wing coalition in the KNIP, however, spelled the end of Sjahrir’s dominance, for other leftist groups were now the equal of his followers within the Socialists. In June 1947 Amir Sjarifuddin and most of the Left Wing withdrew their support of Sjahrir, who now went abroad to represent the Republic at the UN. In July Amir became the new Prime Minister (1947–8), just in time to face the first major Dutch offensive against the

Republic.

By about May 1947 the Dutch had already decided that they must attack the Republic directly. The cost of keeping a largely inactive force of about 100,000 soldiers in Java was a serious financial drain which the war-torn Netherlands economy could ill afford. If they were to maintain this force, the Dutch needed access to the products of Java (especially sugar) and Sumatra (especially oil and rubber). The Dutch military believed that Republican-held cities could be conquered in two weeks and the whole of Republican territory in six months.

At midnight on 20 July 1947 the Dutch launched their first ‘police action’. Major columns swept out from Jakarta and Bandung to occupy West Java (excluding Bantěn), and from Surabaya to occupy Madura and the Eastern Salient. Smaller troop movements secured the Sěmarang area. The Dutch thus gained control of all the deep-water ports in Java. In Sumatra, plantations around Medan, oil and coal installations around Palembang, and the Padang area were secured. Republican forces retreated in some confusion, destroying what they could. In some areas last-minute acts of revenge took place: Chinese in West Java and imprisoned aristocrats in East Sumatra were murdered. Some Dutch, including van Mook, wished to carry on to conquer Yogyakarta and install a more malleable Republican government, but American and British dislike of the ‘police action’ led the Dutch to stop short of complete conquest of the Republic.

The United Nations now became directly involved in the conflict, an involvement which would eventually trap the Dutch in an impossible diplomatic position. India and Australia were particularly active in supporting the Republic’s cause in the United Nations (UN), where the Soviet Union also lent its support. But the most crucial role was eventually played by the United States. Those who determined Dutch policy, even the more progressive among them, were convinced that both history and common sense gave them the right to determine the development of Indonesia, but this right could only be exercised by first crushing the Republic. The Netherlands’ main allies – especially the British, Australians and Americans (upon whom the Dutch primarily relied for post-war reconstruction aid) – did not recognise such a right unless the people of Indonesia did, which was clearly not the case if the Dutch had to rely upon military conquest. They began to press the Netherlands to adopt a less rigid stance, and the UN became a public forum for examining Dutch actions. This only increased the Dutch inclination to seek a quick solution in Indonesia.

At the end of July 1947 the Dutch felt that they must accept a UN call for a ceasefire, which was ordered by the Dutch and Sukarno on 4 August. The UN then allowed Sjahrir to speak for the Republic, but refused admittance to representatives from Dutch-held areas. In October a UN Good Offices Committee with American, Australian and Belgian representatives was established to assist Dutch–Republican negotiations for a new ceasefire. Since August the Dutch had continued mopping-up operations behind their advance points where many Republican fighters remained. In particular, the Siliwangi Division was still behind Dutch lines in West Java.

In January 1948 a new agreement was reached aboard the American ship ***USS Renville*** in Jakarta harbour. This recognised a ceasefire along the so-called ‘Van Mook Line’, an artificial line which connected up the most advanced Dutch points despite the fact that many Republican-held areas remained in the rear. Although this looked like a

considerable Dutch negotiating victory, the apparent reasonableness of the Republicans in accepting it (a course dictated partly by shortages of ammunition on the Republican side) won them crucial American goodwill.

The humiliations of the first ‘police action’ and the subsequent *Renville* agreement led to the fall of Amir Sjarifuddin’s government. PNI and *Masyumi* members in his cabinet resigned when the *Renville* agreement was signed, and Amir then resigned as Prime Minister on 23 January 1948. He may have expected a new leftist cabinet to follow him, but Sukarno turned in another direction. He appointed Hatta to head an emergency ‘presidential cabinet’ (1948–9), responsible not to the KNIP but to Sukarno as President. Its membership was of a broadly centrist nature, consisting mainly of PNI, *Masyumi* and non-party individuals. Amir and the Left Wing now went into opposition. Sjahrir’s followers formalised their split with Amir’s by creating their own *Partai Sosialis Indonesia* (Indonesian Socialist Party, PSI) in February 1948 and giving their support to Hatta’s government.

The Dutch meanwhile pushed ahead with their federal solution in the conquered areas but with limited success, for what goodwill they had enjoyed was running out. In December 1947 they set up an East Sumatra state, in February 1948 a Madura state and a West Java state called Pasundan, in September 1948 a South Sumatra state, in November 1948 an East Java state and so on, until in all there were 15 federal units (of differing levels of autonomy) in the areas they had conquered. In January 1948 van Mook announced the creation of a provisional council for a federal Indonesia. In July the federal leaders themselves established an Assembly for Federal Consultation (*Bijeenkomst voor Federale Overleg*). The Dutch intended to create a federal United States of Indonesia, with or without the Republic’s agreement, by the end of the year. But within the federal units there was significant pro-Republican sentiment among the elite and little support for federalism among the masses. The Dutch were therefore pushed further towards the contemplation of some final military solution.

Conditions within the Republic in Java were chaotic in 1948. It was effectively reduced to the overpopulated and rice-deficient interior of Central Java, where hardship was increased by the Dutch blockade and an influx of perhaps as many as 6 million refugees and Republican soldiers. The Republican government printed more money to meet its costs and inflation soared. This was not, however, without beneficial effects. As inflation and rice prices rose, peasants’ incomes increased and many of their debts were wiped out, while wage-earners’ incomes fell. The result was a levelling effect which improved the relative lot of the peasantry and thereby also reduced pressures from below for major social change. Chaos also descended in Tapanuli (North Sumatra), where retreating Republican units gathered and a virtual civil war among rival Republican forces ensued.

The leftists who were out of the Republican government now began a fateful effort to regain power, under the leadership of Amir Sjarifuddin. In February 1948 the Left Wing coalition renamed itself People’s Democratic Front (*Front Demokrasi Rakyat*) and denounced the *Renville* agreement, which Amir’s government itself had negotiated. The Front attempted to build up peasants’ and workers’ organisations, but with only limited success. A strike at a state textile factory in Dĕlanggu (Central Java) began in May 1948, and in the violence that followed it became evident that the Front’s base in

the countryside was less a matter of social class or ideology than of communal identity. The *abangan* (nominal Muslim) workers who supported the Front found themselves under attack from *santri* (strict Muslim) followers of *Masyumi*, who were supported by *Hizbulah* units. In July the strike was settled on terms favourable to the strikers, but by then there was evidence that central political manoeuvres were becoming entangled in the communal tensions of Javanese villages.

A critical military move had meanwhile taken place. In accordance with the *Renville* agreement, Colonel Nasution led the 22,000 men of the Siliwangi Division out of Dutch-held West Java into Republican Central Java in February 1948. This had important consequences both in the region they left and in the one they entered.

In West Java there remained many militant Islamic guerrillas led by a Javanese mystic named S. M. Kartosuwirjo (1905–62). He had been expelled in 1927 from medical school for radical political ideas and had then lived with Tjokroaminoto, his foster father, until 1929. He then fell seriously ill and during his convalescence studied Islam with various mystical teachers. Thereafter he was active in *Partai Sarekat Islam Indonesia* until being expelled in 1939 over policy disagreements. In 1940 he set up the Suffah Institute in the Garut region of West Java, where young militants were given religious and general education and imbued with personal loyalty to Kartosuwirjo. The Japanese closed the Suffah Institute but Kartosuwirjo maintained his contacts in the area and became head of the local *Hizbulah* guerrillas. He expanded his forces in the early stages of the Revolution and became active in *Masyumi*. But by this time he disliked leftist ideas, and hence distrusted many of the Republican leaders.

When the Siliwangi Division withdrew, Kartosuwirjo felt that West Java had been abandoned by the Republic. His response was to launch what became the first regional rebellion against the Indonesian Republic, while continuing to fight against the Dutch in West Java. In May 1948 he proclaimed himself *imam* (head) of a new state called *Negara Islam Indonesia* (Indonesian Islamic State), more commonly referred to as *Darul Islam* (Arabic *dar al-Islam*, territory or house of Islam). *Darul Islam* government was based upon Islamic law and administered by *kyais*. Much of its local support came, however, from devotion to the charismatic Kartosuwirjo, whose followers ascribed supernatural powers to him. As the years passed, *Darul Islam* became progressively more difficult to distinguish from simple banditry, extortion and terrorism on a grand scale. It was to survive as a regional rebellion, controlling much of the countryside of West Java, until Kartosuwirjo was captured and executed in 1962. While the Revolution continued the Republican government could only ignore *Darul Islam*; some *Masyumi* leaders were in any case sympathetic towards it.

Siliwangi's march into Central Java had consequences there which were important to the final achievement of independence. Nasution and his largely Sundanese soldiers formed a force loyal to the Hatta government, and soon found themselves in opposition to local Javanese units who looked to Soedirman's leadership or to Amir Sjarifuddin's People's Democratic Front. The Hatta government wanted to reduce the massive armed forces for which it was responsible, roughly estimated at some 350,000 regular troops and 470,000 irregulars. Nasution, too, favoured a smaller army with higher professional standards, but the losers in such a rationalisation scheme would obviously be the fighters who supported the government's opponents. As the military split into factions

over the rationalisation proposals, kidnappings, murders and armed clashes began in the Yogyakarta–Surakarta area. By the end of August 1948 civil war again seemed possible. There was now an explosive mixture of elite political manoeuvres, military politics and communal tensions in Central Java, while Dutch forces stood in positions on the West, North and East.

Suddenly Musso, the PKI leader of the 1920s, arrived in Yogyakarta from the Soviet Union on 11 August 1948. Except for a secret visit in 1935 to establish an underground PKI organisation, Musso had not set foot in Indonesia since 1926. Amir and most of the other Central and East Java leaders of the People's Democratic Front immediately accepted his authority, and Amir announced that he had been a member of the underground PKI since 1935. Musso adhered to Stalinist thinking in insisting that there could be only a single party of the working class. By the beginning of September the major leftist parties in the Front had dissolved themselves to merge into PKI. A new PKI Politburo was formed on 1 September which included several younger men who were more eager to accept Musso's authority than the existing PKI leaders: these new figures included the future PKI leadership group of D. N. Aidit (1923–65), M. H. Lukman (1920–65), Njoto (1925–65) and Sudisman (1920–68).

PKI now encouraged demonstrations and strikes by workers and peasants. The peasantry were encouraged to take over their landlords' fields in the Surakarta area and then elsewhere. *Masyumi* denounced the Communist actions and *santri* peasants refused to support the strikes. Musso's pro-Soviet pronouncements meanwhile threatened the Republic's main diplomatic strategy of gaining the sympathy of the United States. Landlords (many of them *santri*), village headmen, bureaucrats, the central Republican leadership and pro-government military forces all realised that they faced a serious challenge. In September the government released Tan Malaka in the vain hope of winning leftists away from Musso.

By mid-September 1948 open warfare had broken out in Surakarta between pro-PKI and pro-government armed forces. On 17 September the Siliwangi Division drove PKI supporters out of the city. They withdrew to Madiun and were joined there by other pro-PKI units which left their positions along the Van Mook Line to face the expected government attack on Madiun.

On 18 September the PKI supporters took over strategic points in the Madiun area, killed pro-government officers, and announced over the radio that a new National Front government had been formed. Musso, Amir and other PKI leaders hastened to Madiun to take charge of this premature attempt at a coup. Soedirman was caught in a difficult position. He sympathised with the pro-PKI units' opposition to demobilisation and had little affection for the Republican government's actions, but he was equally opposed to any attempt by Musso and PKI to gain influence over the Republican government, which would lead to attempts to impose PKI control over the army. Nor did he want civil war. Soedirman hoped to negotiate a solution which would involve only the arrest of the Madiun ringleaders but Sukarno, Hatta and Nasution seized the initiative for a more drastic solution.

On 19 September about 200 PKI and other leftist leaders remaining in Yogyakarta were arrested. That evening Sukarno denounced the Madiun rebels over the radio and called upon Indonesians to rally to himself and Hatta rather than to Musso and his plans

for a Soviet-style government. Musso's lack of recent experience in Indonesia probably made him unable to gauge the power of such an appeal from Sukarno. He made the fatal error of replying over Madiun radio that he would fight to the finish. Faced with an irreconcilable choice between Musso and Sukarno, many military units that were basically sympathetic to the anti-government side decided to remain aloof. The People's Democratic Front organisations in Bantěn and Sumatra announced that they had nothing to do with Madiun.

Pro-government forces spearheaded by the Siliwangi Division now marched on Madiun, where there were some 5000–10,000 pro-PKI soldiers. As the rebels were pushed back they began killing **Masyumi** and PNI leaders and officials, and in the villages killings began along **santri-abangan** lines. On 30 September the rebels abandoned Madiun town and were pursued through the countryside by pro-government troops. Aidit and Lukman went into hiding. On 31 October Musso was killed while attempting to escape from captivity, ending his 80-day career as PKI leader. Amir and a body of 300 soldiers were caught by Siliwangi troops on 1 December; Amir was later to be killed along with other prominent PKI leaders. In the arrests which followed Madiun about 35,000 people were picked up. How many died during the affair is unknown, but is thought to have been at least 8000. In its aftermath, **santri** peasants in Surakarta turned upon and killed **abangan** supporters of PKI there.

Madiun was one of the crucial turning points of the Revolution. PKI was removed as a threat to the established Republican leaders until the 1950s, and was tainted for ever with treachery against the Revolution. The left in general was discredited and many of its leaders were imprisoned or dead. With the removal of the Stalinists, the 'national Communists', who followed Tan Malaka's thinking and opposed the PKI rebellion at Madiun, joined together to form **Partai Murba** (Proletarian Party) in October 1948; they were now the main leftist group among the revolutionaries. A tradition of army–PKI hostility was established by Madiun, and the antagonism between **Masyumi** and PKI was strengthened, as was the **santri-abangan** communal tension which it reflected. The alliance between the more professional army officers and the Hatta government was sealed. The army itself was more battle-hardened and unified, and a purge of the officer corps and demobilisation of many irregular units followed rapidly.

Perhaps most importantly, the Republic's defeat of a Communist rebellion turned vague American sympathy based upon anticolonial sentiments into diplomatic support based upon global strategy. The year 1948 saw the beginnings of the Berlin blockade by the Soviet Union, the Communist coup d'état in Czechoslovakia, the start of the Communist insurrection in Malaya, the rebellion of the Red Flag Communists in Burma (the White Flags had been in rebellion since 1946), continuing Communist insurrection in the Philippines, continuing advances by the Communist side in China, and evidence from elsewhere that contributed to an image of rapid political advances by Communism. American strategic thinking was now dominated by the idea that a 'cold war' was under way between an American-led 'free world' and a Soviet-led bloc. Within this framework, the Indonesian Republic had shown itself to be anti-Communist and hence worthy of American support. When the Dutch now made their last bid for conquest, they found the weight of the United States thrown onto the diplomatic scales

against them.

While the Dutch proceeded unilaterally with their federal solution, negotiations between them and the Republic were at a standstill. Hatta refused to accept the Dutch demands that they be responsible for internal security during the transition to independence or that the Republican army be integrated within a federal army. Minor hostilities meanwhile continued on the Dutch side of the Van Mook Line, and increased when part of the Siliwangi Division began to infiltrate back into West Java after the Madiun affair. In November–December 1948 the Dutch decided on a final military push to crush the Republic.

On 18 December 1948 the Dutch launched their second ‘police action’, which proved to be both a military and a political catastrophe for them despite the appearance of being an easy victory. On 19 December Yogyakarta was taken. The Republican government allowed itself to be captured in the hope that world opinion would be so offended that the Dutch military victory would be turned into a diplomatic defeat. Sukarno, Hatta, Agus Salim (Foreign Minister) and all the cabinet except for the few who were away were captured, as also was Sjahrir. The Republican army, however, was generally unable to understand the reason for the civilian politicians’ surrender to the Dutch while soldiers were laying down their lives for the Republic. The army now looked upon itself as the only saviour of the Revolution.

Republican forces withdrew to the countryside and began full-scale guerrilla war on both sides of the Van Mook Line. The army withdrew from Yogyakarta in the night of 19/20 December. As it did so, Amir Sjarifuddin and over 50 other leftists whom it had held were killed for fear that they might be set free by the Dutch. By the end of December all the major Republican towns of Java and Sumatra were in Dutch hands. The only region which remained under the sole control of the Republic was Aceh, where Daud Beureu’eh was in charge. The Dutch felt it was wiser not to touch Aceh.

In the UN Security Council there was the outrage which the Republican government had hoped for. The UN Good Offices Committee had actually been only a few miles from Yogyakarta at the hill resort of Kaliurang when the Dutch struck and the dignity, authority and good offices of the UN appeared to have been treated with contempt. American opinion was also angered. On 22 December the United States suspended further transfers of aid funds to the Netherlands which were intended for expenditure in Indonesia, while pressure mounted in the American Congress for the suspension of all economic aid to the Netherlands. Indonesian Republican leaders, however, still hoped for more decisive American support.

The Dutch soon discovered that their military advance merely created problems in the rear. Indonesian civilians gave them next to no cooperation and Republican guerrilla operations reduced many Dutch positions to virtual siege conditions. Nor could the Dutch get any Indonesian political support. Reflecting an extraordinary inability to understand how much circumstances had changed, they attempted to persuade Sultan Hamengkubuwana IX to become leader of a new Javanese state, but he refused to discuss their offer. He resigned as head of the Yogyakarta district in January 1949 and his court became a primary channel of communication between the city and Republican units in the countryside. The cabinets of both East Indonesia and Pasundan created major embarrassment for the Dutch by resigning in protest at the ‘police action’.

The Dutch accepted a UN call for a ceasefire on 31 December 1948 in Java and 5 January 1949 in Sumatra, but the guerrilla fighting continued. Soedirman was now dying of tuberculosis; although still the symbol of army unity he was hardly able to exercise command. Nasution was effectively in charge as deputy commander and on 22 December he proclaimed a military government for Java. In practice, most units operated autonomously during this guerrilla period. In addition to their many smaller victories against the Dutch, Republican forces under Lieutenant Colonel Soeharto struck a psychological blow when they infiltrated and then attacked Yogyakarta on 1 March 1949. In later years, after Soeharto became Indonesia's second President, this assault was elevated into a myth of Soeharto as a major national hero retaking Yogyakarta from the Dutch and holding it for six hours, which was, at best, a considerable exaggeration.

The only civilian politician of the first rank still alive and at large was Tan Malaka, who was in East Java when the Dutch struck. He issued a call for total resistance but he no longer had any large following of his own. In February 1949 he was with an army unit in East Java which was defeated in a clash with another Republican unit. Tan Malaka was captured and executed.

The UN and the United States began to adopt more resolute stances against the Dutch which, in conjunction with Republican military pressure, finally forced the Netherlands to abandon its final attempt at empire in Indonesia. Late in January 1949 the Security Council demanded the release of the Republican cabinet, the establishment of an interim government and a full transfer of sovereignty by 1 July 1950. The United States publicly condemned the Dutch in the UN and threatened to cut off the reconstruction aid upon which the Dutch domestic economy heavily depended. By April the Dutch accepted that they must give in, but insisted on preliminary talks with the Republican government. On 7 May it was agreed that Sukarno and Hatta would order a ceasefire upon their return to Yogyakarta, that the Dutch would accept the Republic at a Round Table conference and that they would create no more federal states.

On 6 July 1949 the Republican government was returned to Yogyakarta, which Dutch troops had already evacuated by the end of June. Soedirman and other army leaders were reluctant to accept the authority of the civilians who seemed to have deserted the Republic, but they did so when Sukarno threatened otherwise to resign. A conference was held in Yogyakarta and Jakarta in July, where the federal states proved to have many of the same interests as the Republic, largely because of their respect for the Republic's resistance and their disappointment at the failure of the Dutch to transfer any significant powers to them. The conference agreed that the Republican army would form the core of the military for a new Republic of the United States of Indonesia (RUSI) and that Sukarno and Hatta would be President and Vice-President of that state.

On 1 August a ceasefire was announced, to take effect in Java on 11 August and Sumatra on 15 August. Just before it was implemented, Republican forces recaptured most of Surakarta and held their gains for two days. Further isolated clashes continued into October. But gradually the handing over of military authority from Dutch and irregular forces to regular Republican units and the creation of an integrated military authority for the new RUSI state were arranged by Hamengkubuwana IX as

Coordinator of Security. There were, however, some turbulent areas such as South Sulawesi, East Sumatra, South Kalimantan and West Java where this process encountered resistance from local irregular forces.

From 23 August to 2 November 1949 a Round Table conference was held at The Hague. Hatta dominated the Indonesian side of the negotiations and won the admiration of all participants. A loose union of the Netherlands and RUSI was agreed, with the Dutch queen as symbolic head. Sukarno was to be President of RUSI and Hatta Prime Minister (1949–50) as well as Vice-President. Various guarantees were provided for Dutch investments in Indonesia and it was agreed that there would be consultations on some financial matters; many Indonesians saw these arrangements as unreasonable restrictions upon their sovereignty. On the two most difficult issues the Indonesians were obliged to make concessions. The Netherlands retained sovereignty over Papua until there could be further negotiations on the status of that area. And RUSI accepted responsibility for the Netherlands East Indies debt, a figure which after much haggling was fixed at f.4.3 billion; much of this in fact represented the costs of the Dutch attempt to crush the Revolution.

On 27 December 1949, the Netherlands formally transferred sovereignty over Indonesia, excluding Papua, to RUSI, a federal state which survived intact for only a few weeks. There was much pro-Republican sentiment in the federal states created by the Dutch, sentiment which had been strengthened by the release of some 12,000 Republican prisoners from Dutch jails between August and December 1949. Federalism was generally suspect because of its obvious origins as a Dutch stratagem; it was now finally discredited by ‘Turk’ Westerling’s last flamboyant effort to alter the course of events.

On 23 January 1950, Westerling and about 800 troops captured key points in Bandung but the Dutch High Commissioner and the commander of the Dutch garrison still in Bandung persuaded him to withdraw that same day. The following day it was discovered that Westerling planned to attack the RUSI cabinet and assassinate several ministers. Westerling’s troops had infiltrated Jakarta after leaving Bandung, but they were driven out and in February Westerling fled the country in disguise. There was widespread shock at these events.

The arrest of several Pasundan leaders for suspected complicity in Westerling’s plot led the parliament of that state to ask on 27 January 1950 that Pasundan be dissolved. By the end of March most of the smaller federal states had followed this precedent by deciding to dissolve themselves into the Republic. The Hatta cabinet found itself swept along in a unitarist tide and was forced to make hasty legislative arrangements to cope with it. Early in April Sultan Abdul Hamid II of Pontianak, head of state in West Kalimantan and Minister without Portfolio in the RUSI cabinet, was arrested as a major instigator of Westerling’s plot. Thereupon authority over West Kalimantan was taken over by the RUSI government.

The greatest opposition to the unitarist movement came from the East Sumatra and East Indonesia states. In the latter, many Ambonese who were Christian, pro-Dutch and had fought against the Revolution, resisted the demise of federalism. They looked upon the Republic as a state dominated by Javanese, Muslims and people whom they regarded as leftists. In April 1950 colonial soldiers (mostly Ambonese) and Republican

units clashed in Makassar, as a result of which the East Indonesia government was compromised. A new East Indonesia cabinet was formed in May with the intention of dissolving the state into a unitary Indonesia. On 25 April, however, the former Minister of Justice in the East Indonesia government, the Amboinese Dr Soumokil, proclaimed a Republic of South Maluku in Amboin. After tough campaigns from July to November this new state was crushed by Republican troops. Faced with the collapse of the other federal states, East Sumatra had little option but to go along.

Finally, on the occasion of the fifth anniversary of the declaration of independence, on 17 August 1950, the whole constitutional structure of the revolutionary years was formally swept away. The Republic of the United States of Indonesia, the Republic of Indonesia as a constituent element within it, and the states of East Sumatra and East Indonesia were replaced by a new Republic of Indonesia with a unitary (but provisional) constitution. Jakarta was made the capital of this new state.

The political revolution was now complete. Many questions remained, but the revolutionary years appeared to have resolved some issues. It seemed reasonable to suppose that Indonesia was not to be several things: neither a federal state, nor an Islamic state, nor a Communist state, nor above all a Dutch colony. But the coming years were to reveal that these things were not as certain as they seemed in 1950. Nor was it clear what the implications of independence would be for the many social, religious, communal, ethnic, cultural and economic questions that remained. There were still fundamental issues that, in the years of anticolonialism, war and revolution, Indonesians had not had the time or the opportunity to confront. As they now came to confront them, it became evident that – beyond victory over the Dutch – the Revolution had not resolved so many issues after all.

**VI**

---

## Independent Indonesia

## ***Chapter 19***

---

# **The First Democratic Experiment, 1950–7**

Indonesia was at last independent, at least in a formal legal sense, and now faced the prospect of shaping its own future. In a country still typified by poverty, low educational levels and authoritarian traditions, much depended upon the wisdom and good fortune of the Indonesian leadership. The history of the nation since 1950 has, however, been partly a story of the failure of successive leadership groups to meet the high expectations generated by the successful struggle for independence. In 1950 the older urban nationalists of the leading ‘secular’ and Islamic parties were in charge of governmental affairs. There was a general consensus that democracy was desirable and that these were the men to create a democratic state. But by 1957 this first democratic experiment had collapsed, corruption was widespread, the territorial unity of the nation was threatened, social justice had not been achieved, economic problems had not been solved, and the expectations generated by the Revolution were frustrated.

Given the circumstances facing Indonesian governments in the years 1950–7, it is not surprising that the democratic experiment foundered, for there were few foundations upon which representative democracy could be built. Indonesia inherited from the Dutch and Japanese the traditions, assumptions and legal structure of a police state. The Indonesian masses – mostly illiterate, poor, accustomed to authoritarian and paternalistic rule, and spread over an enormous archipelago – were hardly in a position to force politicians in Jakarta to account for their performance. The politically informed were only a tiny layer of urban society and the Jakarta politicians, while proclaiming their democratic ideals, were mostly elitists and self-conscious participants in a new urban super-culture. They were paternalistic towards those less fortunate than themselves and sometimes simply snobbish towards those who, for instance, could not speak fluent Dutch. They had little commitment to the grass-roots structure of representative democracy and managed to postpone elections for five more years. A plant as rare as representative democracy can hardly grow in such soil. It must be said, however, that because of the elite commitment to the idea of democracy, the years 1950–7 represented a period of remarkable freedom for the politically articulate.

The economic and social issues facing the nation after the Japanese occupation and the Revolution were enormous. Plantations and industrial installations throughout the nation had been badly damaged. Perhaps most fundamentally, population growth accelerated. In 1950 the population was estimated at 77.2 million, in 1955 at 85.4 million, and in the 1961 census it was 97.0 million. Food production increased, but not

enough. In Java, rice production per capita actually declined slightly from 1950 to 1960. So substantial food imports were still necessary. Agriculture absorbed much of the new labour force by dividing the work among an ever-increasing number of workers. But as the average size of land-holdings declined, many farming families no longer had sufficient land for their subsistence and had to find much or most of their income from wage labour. Many people flocked to the booming cities. In 1930 only 3.8 per cent of the population was classified as urban; in 1961 it was 14.8 per cent. Between 1945 and 1955 Jakarta's population doubled to 1.8 million and then grew further to 2.9 million by 1961. By that time two other cities were around one million (Surabaya and Bandung) and three were around half a million (Sĕmarang, Palembang and Medan). The cities and larger towns became the natural focus of political activity and the problems of rural areas were often ignored.

Since Java had the capital city, most of the other large cities, the vast majority of the civilian politicians and the majority of the nation's population (61 per cent in 1961), the outer islands in general tended to be neglected. In an effort to subsidise the net-importing economy of Java, the Indonesian Rupiah (a currency first introduced during the Revolution) was maintained at an artificially high exchange rate. This imposed difficulties on the netexporting economies of the outer islands and encouraged black markets and smuggling. Most commercial and industrial interests suffered. Although many of the civilian politicians believed that foreign enterprises were essential to economic development, it was never politically wise to support them too publicly. The locally domiciled middle class was politically weak and divided by antagonism between the Chinese, who had substantial commercial networks but no political support, and the largely Islamic Indonesian bourgeoisie, who had less extensive commercial networks and only limited political support.

Education was given high priority and the number of educational institutions expanded dramatically. Between 1953 and 1960 the number of entrants to primary schools rose from 1.7 million to 2.5 million, but around 60 per cent of these consistently dropped out before completing school. State and private (mostly religious) high schools and university-level institutions sprang up everywhere, but especially in Java, and many achieved high standards. Two substantial benefits from this educational expansion were soon evident. In 1930 the adult literacy rate had been 7.4 per cent, while by 1961 it was 46.7 per cent for those over the age of ten (56.6 per cent in Sumatra, 45.5 per cent in Java). For males between ten and nineteen the rate was over 76 per cent. These figures demonstrate the vast achievement since the Dutch period. And the use of the Indonesian language throughout the educational system, as well as in all official communications and the mass media, established it firmly as the national language. Increasing Indonesian literacy was reflected in daily newspaper circulation which, however, remained small for a nation of such size. Daily circulation nearly doubled from just under 500,000 in 1950 to over 933,000 in 1956, while other periodicals trebled to over 3.3 million in the same period. But by the time these hopeful developments were bearing fruit, the system of constitutional democracy which they might have supported was already discredited.

Many more people sought employment now, including those from the expanding educational institutions, former guerrilla fighters, and former federal and Republican

officials. The governments of the 1950s gave many of them positions in the bureaucracy and continued to swell its ranks by making government jobs one of the prime spoils of political power. In 1930 the colonial civil service totalled about 145,000, representing approximately one official for every 418 inhabitants. In 1950 the bureaucracies of the former federal states (approximately 180,000) and the Republic (approximately 240,000) were amalgamated. Then many former guerrillas were given office jobs, the students came in, and the politicians paid off their supporters. In the nation as a whole there were nearly 807,000 permanent civil servants in 1960, representing about one for every 118 inhabitants. Salaries were low and were badly affected by inflation. Inefficiency, maladministration and petty corruption became normal, and this cumbersome bureaucracy became increasingly incapable of doing much of anything.

The recovery of Indonesia's exports was slow. Oil, the second largest foreign-exchange earner after rubber, was the most hopeful for the long term. By 1957 oil production was twice the level of 1940, but part of this increase was consumed domestically. During 1950–6, domestic demand for petrol rose by 64.5 per cent and for kerosene by 200.5 per cent. In general, government infrastructure programmes which were essential to the export sector (such as roads, ports, flood control, irrigation, and forestry) deteriorated, and the artificial exchange rate discriminated against exporters.

In the economy generally non-Indonesian interests remained important. Shell and the American companies Stanvac and Caltex were strong in the oil industry, and most inter-island shipping was in the hands of the Dutch KPM line. Banking was dominated by Dutch, British and Chinese interests, and Chinese also controlled much of the rural credit. It was clear to informed observers that Indonesians were not independent economically, a fact which was to contribute to the radicalism of the late 1950s.

Given the slow economic recovery and the expansion of government expenditures, it is not surprising that the inflation of the war and revolutionary periods continued. The general cost of living rose by about 100 per cent over 1950–7, but this figure conceals larger fluctuations in particular areas, periods and commodities. All sectors of society suffered to some degree from erratically rising prices. Salaried officials and wage-labourers were particularly affected, while landowners, village officials who were given land in lieu of salaries, and peasant rice-producers gained relatively. Compared with the Japanese occupation period and the revolutionary years, conditions were better for most Indonesians in 1950–7, but independence did not bring the general prosperity many had expected.

Among the problems facing the new nation was what to do with the army. This was the source of issues which dominated much of Indonesian history after 1950: who controlled the army, how was it to be structured, and what was its role in the life of the nation? In 1950 the civilian politicians took the view that theirs was the right to determine military affairs. At independence the government had about 250,000–300,000 soldiers and an unknown number of irregulars to deal with, and had to absorb some 26,000 Dutch colonial army troops. By November 1950 the army was said already to be down to 200,000 men, a level which was to be maintained until about 1960. The army commanders were divided among themselves, uncertain of their own proper role, less educated than the leading politicians and for the most part at least ten years younger

than they. It was to be some time before the army found its feet in the swell of national politics.

The divisions within the army reflected its origins in the Dutch, Japanese and revolutionary periods. The central command was in the hands of Nasution, Simatupang and others who insisted on military professionalism, a stance favourable to men of their kind, and hierarchical structures which they could control. Against them were pitted regional commanders who favoured a revolutionary spirit, military decentralisation and minimum hierarchy. The army was, however, fairly coherent ideologically, having been shorn of its left wing at Madiun and of its Islamic elements by demobilisation and the **Darul Islam** rebellion. Its deepest commitment was to the spirit of the Revolution, although what this spirit entailed was not clearly defined beyond the idea that the army was somehow its supreme embodiment. The factions were also united in their suspicion of civilian politicians, whom they regarded as having made a minimal contribution to the winning of independence.

The civilian politicians created a large number of political parties, but only a few had real significance in Jakarta. Sjahrir still led the Socialist Party (PSI), backed by Jakarta intellectuals but with little popular support elsewhere. Sjahrir himself, however, never sat in a cabinet again. PSI was influential among higher civil servants and had supporters among the central army command. The ‘national Communists’ who had admired Tan Malaka were in **Partai Murba** (Proletarian Party); they were bitter opponents of the Communists for left-wing support, but had little strength outside Jakarta. Christians had both an Indonesian Christian (that is, Protestant) Party (**Parkindo: Partai Kristen Indonesia**) and a Catholic Party (**Partai Katholik**); their significance was increased by the substantial over-representation of Christians in higher levels of the civil service and the military because of their superior educational qualifications.

**Masyumi** represented Islamic political interests and was presumed to be the largest party in the country, although until elections were held this could only be a presumption. It was loosely organised, with a primary internal division between Orthodox and Modernist religious leaders. In 1952 these wings were to split. At the top **Masyumi** was led by the Modernist politicians Sukiman Wirjosandjojo and Mohammad Natsir. There was, however, some tension between the followers of these two men, with Sukiman’s support coming largely from Javanese and Natsir’s from non-Javanese. **Masyumi**’s political base consisted of committed Muslims, including a substantial part of the indigenous bourgeoisie, as well as religious teachers and scholars (**kyais** and **ulamas**) and demobilised **Hizbulah** and **Sabilillah** guerrillas. But the party never officially placed the idea of an Islamic state among its priorities in the 1950s. While its national leaders were devoted to God in their private lives, in politics their devotion was to Indonesia. They avoided doctrinaire stances which could threaten national unity or appear to associate the party with the **Darul Islam** rebellion. Those who were opposed to **Masyumi**, however, suspected it of latent religious fanaticism.

The Indonesian Nationalist Party (PNI) was presumed to be the second largest. Its primary base was in the bureaucracy and among white-collar workers. In the countryside of Java it had considerable appeal to the nominal Muslim (**abangan**) community, partly because it was thought of as the party of Sukarno (which formally it

was not, since the President joined or led no party) and partly because it was thought to be the main counterbalance to Islamic political pretensions. Similarly, PNI had much support in Christian areas of the outer islands and in Hindu Bali, where anti-Islamic feelings also existed.

Finally, the Indonesian Communist Party (PKI), which was decimated but not outlawed in 1948, was on the verge of making the most spectacular comeback of its chequered history. In an internal contest which ended in January 1951, the youthful leadership of Aidit, Lukman, Njoto and Sudisman took control of the Politburo from older survivors of Madiun. From the beginning Aidit insisted that Marxism was a guide to action, not an inflexible dogma. His leadership brought a new pragmatism to PKI which enabled it shortly to become one of the largest political parties. PKI's initial base was primarily among urban and agricultural estate workers, who were organised through the union federation SOBSI (*Sentral Organisasi Buruh Seluruh Indonesia*, All-Indonesia Workers' Organisation Centre), which was wholly controlled by PKI. Later the party was to expand to other sectors of society, including the peasantry, which led it to lose much of its proletarian character.

Audit argued that Indonesia was a semi-colonial and semi-feudal country, and that the first target of the party must be the remnants of colonialism. The party should therefore seek cooperation with non-Communist but anticolonial forces. In practice, he initially looked for support from PNI. The party's strategy was cloaked in Marxist-Leninist terminology which concealed a departure from conventional Marxist-Leninist theory. Rather than social class determining political orientation, in Audit's arguments political orientation became a determinant of social class. Thus, he argued that the Communists could collaborate with the petit bourgeoisie and national bourgeoisie against the compradore bourgeoisie and the feudal classes. But the main political party supported by the indigenous bourgeoisie was *Masyumi*, whose leaders were anti-Communist. *Masyumi* was therefore castigated, along with PSI, as a party of the compradore bourgeoisie. PNI, which was bureaucratic (and in some senses 'feudal') more than bourgeois, proved more amenable to PKI wooing and it was therefore PNI which Audit identified as the party of the national bourgeoisie. When *Nahdlatul Ulama* split from *Masyumi* in 1952, Audit was relieved to be able to regard NU as a bourgeois party, which in some senses it was. Audit's strategy of seeking allies among other political streams meant that in practice PKI adapted itself to a social structure in which cultural, religious and political allegiances were vertical or communal (the so-called *aliran*, currents or streams) rather than horizontal, as in a class-conscious society. By adapting itself in this way, PKI largely forestalled any attempt to stimulate a greater class-consciousness that would cut across existing communal and party loyalties.

Audit's strategy was defensive, for PKI was widely distrusted by many in the political elite and the military. His main aim was to protect the party from those who hoped for its destruction, whatever theoretical adjustments or political alliances this might require. Audit defended PKI with remarkable success for nearly fifteen years, but this endeavour took the party along strange paths. In the end, what was at stake was less the future of the working class or of Communism as a political ideology than the future of PKI as an organisation. Most of the party's opponents, however, viewed it in terms of its exclusive ideological positions and the threats which they believed Communism

posed to religion and the dominance of the established military and political elite. To be fair to these opponents, it must be admitted that no one can know what measures PKI would have imposed had it ever come to power.

It is important to note that the civilian politicians who dominated Indonesia in this period were still largely from the lesser *priyayi* class, the group that had taken the lead in the nationalist movement. They were an intelligentsia with backgrounds in political activism and government service. Few had business interests or landed wealth. Politics was what they knew and their only significant source of status and reward. Much the same was true of the military leadership, for whom the military life was all that they knew or could benefit from. These facts explain much of the bitterness of the conflicts of 1950–7, for the price of failure in politics was not only a loss of power but a loss of income and status as well. During the 1950s some politicians and military men began to acquire business interests, but it was only after 1957 that these circumstances changed significantly (see [Chapter 20](#)).

In 1950 the Jakarta politicians naturally constructed a parliamentary system like the one they knew best: the multiparty democracy of the Netherlands. The cabinet was responsible to a unicameral parliament (*Dewan Perwakilan Rakyat*, People's Representative Council) of 232 members which reflected what were presumed to be party strengths. *Masyumi* had 49 seats (21 per cent), PNI 36 seats (16 per cent), PSI 17 seats (7.3 per cent), PKI 13 seats (5.6 per cent), Catholic Party 9 seats (3.9 per cent), Christian Party 5 seats (2.2 per cent), and *Murba* 4 seats (1.7 per cent), while over 42 per cent of the seats were divided among the remaining parties or individuals, none of them with more than 17 seats. This was hardly a structure to support strong governments, but it was generally believed that the party structure would be simplified when elections were held. Sukarno as President had no real power except to appoint *formateurs* to construct new cabinets, a task which often involved complex negotiations.

The first cabinet (September 1950–March 1951) was formed by Natsir and based upon *Masyumi* with PSI support after an attempt at a *Masyumi*–PNI coalition failed. Natsir's foreign policy was independent and neutralist while remaining sympathetic to the Western powers. In September 1950 Indonesia was admitted to the United Nations. Natsir's government faced the most favourable economic circumstances of this period of constitutional democracy, for the Korean War boom in commodity prices increased export earnings and government export duties until mid-1951. As the scramble for spoils began in Jakarta, the Minister of Finance, *Masyumi*'s Sjafruddin Prawiranegara (1911–89), was criticised for refusing to use these revenues to dole out patronage.

Sjafruddin's policies were consistent with the Natsir cabinet's concentration on the sober necessities of reconstruction of the economy and restoration of security. The Ambonese rebellion was ended by November 1950, but no progress was made towards negotiations with Kartosuwirjo in West Java. Early in 1951 a solution was finally achieved for those Ambonese soldiers of the colonial army who refused to be demobilised in Indonesia. They and their families, a total of some 12,300 persons, were transported to the Netherlands where they found new problems of integration. But discussions with the Dutch about sovereignty over Papua produced no progress. Nor did the government succeed in its hopes of reducing the size of the bureaucracy. The

cabinet did, however, inspire the first signs of opposition to the infant political system. Natsir insisted, entirely correctly, that Sukarno confine himself to the role of figurehead President. Sukarno cared little for such a role and found himself increasingly in agreement with PNI and radical views that winning sovereignty over Papua should not be given low priority merely because of the needs of economic development. Natsir's cabinet resigned after less than seven months in office, having failed to move much in any direction or to build a base of support either in or outside the parliament.

The next Prime Minister (April 1951–February 1952) was Sukiman Wirjosandjojo, who succeeded in building the *Masyumi*–PNI coalition which many thought to be the natural form of government. Sukarno was happier with this arrangement, not least because the cabinet gave him a larger budget and a freer hand in speech-making. No one from Natsir's following within *Masyumi* was included, nor was any PSI leader, so the groups which had most sympathy with the central army command were excluded. The absence of Hamengkubuwana IX from a cabinet for the first time since 1946 particularly weakened army–cabinet relations.

Almost immediately a conflict with the army occurred. The non-party radical Muhammad Yamin was Minister of Justice in the new cabinet. At this point there were some 17,000 prisoners, many not yet charged, who had been arrested by the army since 1949 for involvement in rebellious or bandit groups. Early in June Yamin released 950, including several leading leftists. Immediately the army rearrested them except for those who went into hiding. Yamin resigned and an early skirmish between civilian government and the armed forces was thus won by the latter.

The Sukiman cabinet is most notable for the only serious attempt in this period to suppress PKI. The Communists had been angered by PNI's willingness to join in a coalition with *Masyumi*, since their strategy depended on these two parties remaining opposed to one another. In June–August 1951 a series of strikes broke out, a hand grenade was thrown into a crowd at Bogor, and an armed gang with hammer-and-sickle emblems attacked a police station. The government decided that PKI was to blame, a charge which the Aidit leadership denied to no avail. Without consulting the army, the government ordered large-scale arrests. On 11 August PKI leaders in Medan were arrested. A few days later there followed a major wave of arrests in Jakarta, including 16 members of parliament (among them Aidit's father who was a member of a minor party). It is unclear how many were arrested at this time, but in late October the government put the figure at 15,000. None was ever brought to trial and all were released by the later Wilopo cabinet. Aidit, Lukman and Njoto went into hiding and reconsidered their strategy.

PKI leaders concluded from this episode that the Jakarta politicians would not let them play politics on an equal footing with the other parties. Therefore they adopted a more long-term strategy to build an independent mass base so large that the party could neither be ignored nor immobilised by the arrest of its leaders, while at the same time working for at least the neutrality of non-Communist forces. Thus the policy of the 'national united front' was adopted and nationalist slogans took precedence over class demands. A membership drive now began, primarily in Java. By the end of 1952 claimed party membership rose from 100,000 (in May) to 126,671; by March 1954 it reached 165,206.

Being uncertain of PNI as an ally, PKI also began to court Sukarno's favour. For all their private dislike of the President, from this time on PKI leaders no longer called him a Japanese collaborator or fascist, and no longer blamed him for provoking Madiun; their rationalisation of that episode now laid all blame on Hatta, Sukiman and Natsir (all of them members of the cabinet at the time). In order to reassure potential allies, the party adopted a less partisan role, informing SOBSI in March 1952 that striking for higher pay was 'sectarianism' which threatened the national united front strategy. As will be seen below, PKI's subsequent growth was spectacular, but much of this growth was undoubtedly because the party abandoned its militancy in the interest of survival.

Security problems were meanwhile reviving, after considerable success in 1950–1 in several areas. In South Sulawesi delicate negotiations were in progress over the reduction and incorporation of army units commanded by Lieutenant Colonel Kahar Muzakkar (1921–65), a leading Republican commander in the Revolution. In July 1950 Kahar joined some 20,000 troops who refused to be demobilised. After further negotiations failed, in August 1951 he took to the mountains in open rebellion. In January 1952 Kahar contacted Kartosuwirjo and formally made his rebellion a part of the **Darul Islam** movement, which carried on unabated in its West Java homeland.

The impact of Kahar's rebellion reached into the Torajan highlands of South Sulawesi. His partisans employed violence to force conversions to Islam among both Christian and Aluk followers. Villages were burned, large numbers were killed and thousands became refugees. Negative local reaction against this threat of Islamisation was evidently a main cause of rapid Christianisation among Torajans down to 1965 and the victory of the Christian party **Parkindo** in the 1955 elections, when it won over half the votes. Not until the end of Kahar Muzakkar's rebellion in 1965 were the Torajan highlands relieved of the threat of Bugis-led forced Islamisation.

The Sukiman cabinet's failure to deal successfully with Kahar greatly weakened its authority but it was a foreign policy crisis that brought it down. It had followed a more actively pro-Western line and in January 1952 the **Masyumi** Foreign Minister secretly signed an aid agreement with the United States which committed Indonesia to the defence of the 'free world'. As soon as this commitment became known a political uproar resulted. In February the Foreign Minister and then the whole cabinet resigned. The following cabinet abandoned the American agreement and sought aid with fewer strings attached. Some people were already beginning to ask themselves whether the kind of politics seen in Jakarta was the cause for which the Revolution had been fought.

Another PNI–**Masyumi** coalition followed, this time with PNI's Wilopo (1908–81) as Prime Minister (April 1952–June 1953). The two parties were, however, unenthusiastic partners from the start. A general realignment of political forces was now under way. PNI was growing suspicious of the Islamic motivations of some **Masyumi** leaders and was looking for allies to help it postpone elections, which it feared might be won overwhelmingly by **Masyumi**. PKI, with its national united front strategy, was willing to offer PNI its support and did not denounce this cabinet as it had its predecessor. All those arrested in the anti-Communist sweep of 1951 were now released. Both PKI and PNI being parties with their main support among **abangan** Javanese, their alliance was perhaps a natural one, although it contained the seeds of competition.

Hatta and Sjahrir, who had been expelled from *Pérhimpunan Indonesia* in 1931 by Communists, saw PKI as a reviving threat. Their followers and admirers in *Masyumi* and PSI therefore became even more implacably anti-PKI and the two parties drew closer together, being united also by their similarity in having largely Dutch-educated Sumatran intellectuals as national leaders.

Meanwhile the Orthodox and Modernist Muslims within *Masyumi* split. There were many reasons for the schism, including basic doctrinal differences, but the immediate occasion was a dispute over the post of Minister of Religion, which went to a Modernist rather than to Wachid Hasjim for the first time since 1949. Between April and August 1952, *Nahdlatul Ulama* withdrew from *Masyumi* and turned itself into a separate political party led by Wachid Hasjim until his death in 1953. The split left great bitterness. It was soon evident that NU, primarily based in Central and especially East Java, found it easier to cooperate with the other Java-based parties, PNI and PKI, than with *Masyumi*. For their part, PNI and PKI were pleased that they could deal with an Islamic party without having to deal with *Masyumi*. A political divide was now emerging between the Java-based and outer-islands-based parties.

Economic conditions were worsening now, with the Korean War boom over. Between February 1951 and September 1952 the price of rubber, the leading national export, fell by 71 per cent. Government revenues of course fell. In an effort to correct the unfavourable balance of trade and the drain on gold and foreign-exchange reserves, the government imposed surcharges of 100 to 200 per cent on luxury imports, and cut expenditure. These measures did ameliorate the worst effects of the economic crisis, but they hit PNI's main supporters hardest. *Masyumi* supported the policies, thereby increasing PNI–*Masyumi* tension. The cabinet also planned reductions in the size of the bureaucracy and the military. PNI was unhappy about any attempt to cut the bureaucracy and the planned reductions in the military precipitated a crucial conflict within the army.

Sultan Haméngkubuwana IX was again Minister of Defence in the Wilopo cabinet and close cooperation with the 'professionals' of the army central command was restored. Although the Sultan, Nasution, Simatupang and most of their closest supporters in Jakarta were non-party individuals, they had strong informal links with Sjahrir and PSI. Nasution himself, however, was primarily committed to the army rather than to any civilian faction. These men now set about a centralisation and demobilisation scheme to reduce the army from 200,000 to 100,000 troops. These proposals pitted this central group against regional army commanders, many of whom were sympathetic to PNI and to Sukarno. Critics of the scheme claimed that PSI intended to reduce the army to an organisation loyal only to itself and then use it for a coup. Military coups took place in Thailand in November 1951 and Egypt in July 1952; some Indonesians wondered whether their country was next.

Regional commanders attempted to resist the scheme and were supported by their political allies in Jakarta. In parliament it was demanded that the central army leadership be dismissed and the Ministry of Defence reorganised. Faced with this challenge, the central army group attempted a show of force, fatally miscalculating the forces around them. On 17 October 1952 they brought army tanks and artillery and many civilian demonstrators, said to total about 30,000 in the end, to the presidential

palace to demand the dissolution of parliament. Sukarno himself cared little for the demobilisation scheme, which would remove many of the revolutionary leaders with whom he sympathised, and, although he shared Nasution's distaste for parliamentary politicking, he had no wish to be manipulated by the army high command. He spoke to the assembled crowd, who dispersed at his command; yet again Sukarno saw himself, and others were obliged to see him, as the man who could speak directly to the people. Then he received an army delegation and promised them vaguely that their interests would be satisfied. They, like the crowd, dispersed at Sukarno's word.

The show of force had come to nothing. Sukarno went on the radio to appeal for calm, making it clear that attempts to coerce the President were unacceptable. Now central army supporters were rapidly displaced. Throughout October and November commanders who had been newly installed by the central leadership over regional forces were overthrown by the former commanders. In December 1952 Nasution was suspended and for three years he remained on the inactive list. During this time he matured (he was 33 at the time of the '17 October affair', as it came to be called, whereas Sukarno was 51) and reconsidered his tactics, concluding that it was better to have Sukarno as an ally than an opponent. In January 1953 Hamengkubuwana IX resigned as Minister of Defence. In March the Secretary-General of the Ministry was replaced. In November Simatupang was removed when his post as armed forces chief of staff was abolished. None of these men was charged with an attempted coup, but the power of the central army command was broken.

The army was now left in a highly decentralised state and even more open to civilian interference. Its bargaining power in Jakarta was devastated, with the result that government budgeting for the military fell and regional commanders began to search for more unorthodox sources of funds. Eventually even they were forced to realise that there were advantages in a strong central command. As factional conflicts developed within the army, its effectiveness against rebels and bandits declined. The Wilopo cabinet, for its part, was discredited by the collapse of its demobilisation scheme. Sukarno was encouraged by his success in the affair and began to adopt a more assertive public role as a critic of the politicians.

The dissolution of parliament having been an issue in the 17 October affair, it was no longer easy for the politicians to postpone elections indefinitely. In April 1953 an election bill was finally passed. The date for parliamentary elections was later fixed for September 1955 and elections for a Constituent Assembly (*Konstituante*) to draft a permanent constitution were fixed for December 1955. The Jakarta politicians now began to work for the first time at building mass support which would deliver votes. In their search for popular support they used broad ideological appeals which contributed to communal tensions in the villages. Islamic party activists at lower levels called for a state based on Islamic law. The 'secular' parties, most notably PNI and PKI, attempted to associate *Masyumi* with *Darul Islam* and turned *Pancasila* into a partisan anti-Islamic slogan rather than the umbrella philosophy Sukarno thought it to be. For over two years political turbulence and violence increased, and all hopes rested upon the elections producing a clear mandate for the future.

The PNI–*Masyumi* coalition had never been very cordial and by the early months of 1953 there was little substance left to it. In March, police killed five peasants near

Medan while removing squatters from foreign-owned estate lands. PKI had been active among the squatters and now allied with PNI in parliament to demand that the cabinet resign. Before a vote of no confidence could be taken in parliament, the cabinet returned its mandate to Sukarno.

After over six weeks of bargaining, a PNI cabinet supported by NU and minor parties was formed by Ali Sastroamidjojo (July 1953–July 1955). **Masyumi** and PSI were excluded, while two figures sympathetic to PKI were included. Yamin was back as Minister of Education and he and several others, including Ali, were thought of as left-wingers. In fact, however, there was little change of policy. Indeed, policy was of declining importance to governments as more attention was directed to winning and holding power, and sharing its spoils. The Ali cabinet expanded the bureaucracy with more PNI supporters, partly because control of the bureaucracy was expected to be crucial in the coming elections. The cabinet also pressed for Indonesianisation of the economy, with encouragement for indigenous businessmen. In practice, however, many new firms were bogus fronts for arrangements between government supporters and Chinese – the so-called ‘Ali-Baba’ firms, in which an Indonesian ('Ali') was front man for a Chinese ('Baba') entrepreneur. Instances of corruption and scandals involving PNI figures became more common.

After relative price stability in 1952–3, inflation accelerated again. During the period of the Ali cabinet the money supply was increased by 75 per cent and the free market exchange rate fell from 44.7 per cent of the official rate to 24.6 per cent. Exporters, among them many **Masyumi** supporters in the outer islands, were badly affected and smuggling increased. Impoverished army units joined in the smuggling. As the price of PNI protection, PKI muted its criticisms of corruption and economic problems. In May 1955 SOBSI members even helped to break a strike by a PSI union. The economy, the political system and the country were falling apart while Jakarta politicians manoeuvred for advantage.

The militant Muslims of Aceh had had enough of high-living, irreligious, incompetent Jakarta politics. In 1949 Aceh had been made an autonomous province of the Republic, but in 1950 it was amalgamated with the province of North Sumatra. The membership of the All-Aceh Union of **Ulamas** (PUSA) included both Modernist Islamic teachers and scholars (*ulama*) and devout lay Muslims (*zuama*). The former grew dissatisfied with the course of national developments largely on religious grounds, while the latter were particularly concerned about Aceh's loss of provincial autonomy. This combination formed a potential base for resistance to Jakarta. In 1950 PUSA's leader Daud Beureu'eh, Aceh's strongman and bulwark of the Republic in the Revolution, refused to take a job in Jakarta and sat in Aceh watching developments. So long as **Masyumi** figures were prominent in the cabinets he took no action. In May 1953, however, evidence was found that he had been in contact with Kartosuwirjo of **Darul Islam**. When the Ali cabinet was formed Daud became suspicious; rumours spread that the cabinet intended to arrest prominent Acehnese.

On 19 September 1953, Daud and his followers in PUSA rebelled openly against Jakarta, with the support of many Acehnese civil servants and military men. Daud declared that there was no more **Pancasila** government in Aceh, which was now part of **Darul Islam**. The Ali government sent in troops to drive the rebels from the main

towns. PKI supported cabinet policy and denounced the Aceh rebellion as colonial, militarist, feudal and fascist, mostly epithets which the Acehnese thought more appropriately applied to Jakarta. Daud withdrew to the hills and a military stalemate ensued which lasted until 1959. In West Java, **Darul Islam** activity also increased during the Ali cabinet. **Darul Islam**, now comprising the hinterlands of Aceh, West Java and South Sulawesi, had become an even greater challenge to the government and a major drain upon its funds.

Public attention was temporarily diverted from domestic problems in 1955 by a grand diplomatic event, the Asian–African Conference at Bandung. Ali wished Indonesia to be an active leader of an Afro-Asian bloc of nations, an aim warmly endorsed by Sukarno. In April–May 1954 a meeting of the Prime Ministers of India, Pakistan, Ceylon (Sri Lanka), Burma and Indonesia – the so-called ‘Colombo Powers’ – was held in Colombo. There Ali proposed a large conference of Afro-Asian states; others soon began to endorse the idea, and a conference was scheduled for April 1955, by which time other diplomatic developments had occurred.

The People’s Republic of China was now abandoning its hostility to the non-Communist and neutralist states of Asia. Indonesia sent its first ambassador to China in May 1953. In December the Ali government signed the first small Chinese–Indonesian trade agreement. Relations between the two nations grew progressively more friendly, and culminated at the Bandung conference, where a dual nationality treaty was signed. China traditionally claimed that all overseas Chinese were citizens of China, which left this community with an ill-defined dual citizenship status in Indonesia. The 1955 dual nationality agreement obliged Indonesian Chinese to choose either Chinese or Indonesian citizenship, but under terms which made it difficult for them to choose the latter.

Diplomatic efforts towards the acquisition of Papua had meanwhile broken down again. Negotiations with the Dutch resulted in a protocol of August 1954 which envisaged the abolition of the Netherlands–Indonesian Union (a nonentity in any case) and some adjustment of the Round Table agreements, but there was no progress on the Papua issue. Indonesia failed to get a moderate resolution on Papua adopted by the UN in the same month. In the Indonesian parliament, **Masyumi** used these setbacks to propose a motion of no confidence in the government’s Papua policy in December. This vote failed, but it revealed that the opposition could muster so many votes that only the parliamentary cooperation of PKI guaranteed the government’s survival.

In April 1955 the Bandung conference was held and represented a triumph for the Ali government. Twenty-nine states were present. Of the major nations of Africa and Asia only the two Koreas, Israel, South Africa and Outer Mongolia had not been invited. Many of the major leaders of Asia attended, including Zhou Enlai (Chou En-lai), Nehru, Sihanouk, Pham Van Dong, U Nu, Mohammad Ali and Nasser. Sukarno and Ali Sastroamidjojo derived great satisfaction and domestic prestige from being seen as leaders of the Afro-Asian world, and the conference’s final communiqué endorsed Indonesia’s claim to Papua. It was clearly possible for Indonesia to play a leading role in the world and Sukarno began to make such a role his personal responsibility.

Once the Bandung conference was over, the politicians threw their energies into the coming elections. But the forces that would ultimately topple the whole parliamentary

system were already forming. The growth of PKI during Ali's cabinet, when it was free from repression, was spectacular. Between March and November 1954 claimed party membership trebled from 165,206 to 500,000, and by the end of 1955 it was 1 million. PKI was now beginning serious recruitment of peasant members. Its Indonesian Peasant Front (BTI: *Barisan Tani Indonesia*) claimed 360,000 members in September 1953 but over nine times that number (3.3 million) at the end of 1955, nearly 90 per cent of the membership in Java, and nearly 70 per cent in Central and East Java. *Pemuda Rakyat* (People's Youth), the successor to *Pesindo* of the Revolution, trebled from 202,605 members in July 1954 to 616,605 at the end of 1955, with 80 per cent of its members being peasant youths and the vast majority in Java. The PKI newspaper *Harian Rakjat* ('People's Daily') more than trebled in circulation between February 1954 (15,000) and January 1956 (55,000), by which time it had the largest circulation of any party-affiliated newspaper. PKI was also the wealthiest of the political parties, with income from membership fees (collection of which, however, was often erratic), fund-raising campaigns and other sources. Much of its money probably came from the Chinese business community, either willingly or through pressure from the Chinese Embassy.

But as PKI expanded into rural Central and East Java, its class identity and potential militancy were virtually submerged. Many poor peasants joined because PKI promised to defend their interests, but many joined for other reasons. PKI teams repaired bridges, schools, houses, dams, public lavatories, drains and roads; they eradicated pests and set up literacy courses, organised village sports and musical groups, and offered members support in times of hardship. As a community organisation PKI surpassed all others, and because it seemed non-violent and moderate, villagers flocked to it. Often it was led in the villages by teachers, headmen, middle and rich peasants, and even some landlords, who brought whole communities or groups of dependants into PKI with them. These communities were almost exclusively nominal Muslim (*abangan*). *Santri* villagers were largely NU supporters. This political distinction at village level thus reflected a communal distinction, and hardened it by politicising it.

As it grew in this way, PKI acquired a mass base which enabled it to pressure other political forces and shortly to make an impressive showing in the elections. It was unlikely, however, that this could ever be a base for revolution. The Aidit leadership was obliged to organise general literacy and basic education courses before it could think of exposing most of its rapidly expanding following to Marxist-Leninist ideas. The strategy of seeking a peaceful parliamentary path to power by building an enormous mass membership was now so successful that it would be difficult for PKI to contemplate any other path.

Meanwhile one of PKI's main enemies, the army, was putting its own house in order. Its factions were realising that they must settle their differences if they were to stand against the civilian politicians and PKI. In mid-1954 the two main factions from the 17 October affair began to reconcile themselves. In February 1955 a conference of 270 officers at Yogyakarta adopted a charter of unity and agreed to regard the affair as a thing of the past. The new unity of the officer corps was, however, very fragile. Nasution was not present, being inactive, and he still had many opponents within the army.

Then the army challenged the government over who should be installed as its chief

of staff. The officers refused to recognise the man installed by the cabinet on 27 June 1955 and the opposition parties supported them. The issue was not resolved until after the elections. As yet another political crisis loomed, Sukarno left (18 July) on a pilgrimage to Mecca and a state visit to Egypt. NU had long been dissatisfied with the cabinet's personnel, economic and security policies, and on 20 July decided that the government must resign. Having insufficient support left in parliament, Ali's government resigned four days later.

After more complex bargaining, Burhanuddin Harahap (b. 1917) of **Masyumi** put together a cabinet based on **Masyumi** with PSI and NU support (August 1955–March 1956). The army was not entirely happy since it believed many of the new cabinet members to be as corrupt as their predecessors. But it was pleased at the opportunity to arrest several PNI figures for corruption, as well as the Minister of Justice in the previous cabinet (who was convicted and sentenced to a year's imprisonment but then pardoned by Sukarno). As the political disputes in Jakarta became more acrimonious and tension grew in the villages, the long-awaited elections at last took place.

There was a high turnout in the September 1955 parliamentary elections. Over 39 million voted, representing 91.5 per cent of registered voters. Although many undoubtedly voted as they were told to vote by religious leaders, headmen, officials, landlords or other patrons, these were nevertheless the most important national elections in the first fifty years of Indonesian independence. They offered the freest choice among an unrestricted range of parties, all of which campaigned vigorously; the election results can therefore tell much about political allegiances at the time. The most important results are given below.

<i>Party</i>	<i>Valid votes</i>	<i>% Valid votes</i>	<i>Parliamentary seats</i>	<i>% Parliamentary seats</i>
PNI	8,434,653	22.3	57	22.2
<i>Masyumi</i>	7,903,886	20.9	57	22.2
NU	6,955,141	18.4	45	17.5
PKI	6,176,914	16.4	39	15.2
PSII	1,091,160	2.9	8	3.1
<i>Parkindo</i>	1,003,325	2.6	8	3.1
<i>Partai Katholik</i>	770,740	2.0	6	2.3
PSI	753,191	2.0	5	1.9
<i>Murba</i>	199,588	0.5	2	0.8
Others	4,496,701	12.0	30	11.7
<b>Total</b>	<b>37,785,299</b>	<b>100.0</b>	<b>257</b>	<b>100.0</b>

The elections produced several disappointments and surprises. The number of parties was increased rather than reduced, with 28 gaining seats whereas only 20 had seats before. But only four parties had more than eight seats: PNI, **Masyumi**, NU and PKI. Among these 'big four' parties there was nearly a stalemate. The largest could command only 22 per cent of the parliamentary seats. Some **Masyumi** leaders felt that Islam's progress to national power was now blocked and that their attention should turn to an intensification of Islam at grass-roots level. NU leaders, however, were elated at a result which increased their parliamentary seats from 8 to 45. The showing of PKI was

a considerable shock to the Jakarta elite, and increased PNI's worries about the potential threat posed by its junior partner.

Perhaps the most ominous pattern was the clear party split between Java and the outer islands. *Masyumi* was by far the strongest party in the outer islands, winning between a quarter and a half of the votes in all regions except Bali and Christian areas, and three-quarters in Aceh; it was also the largest party in strongly Islamic West Java, although there PNI was not far behind, whereas both PKI and NU were weak. In Central and East Java, there was a fairly even balance among PNI, NU and PKI. Looking only at the votes cast in Central and East Java for the 'big four', PNI won 32 per cent, NU 30 per cent (being the largest party in its heartland of East Java) and PKI 27 per cent, while *Masyumi* won only 12 per cent. Rather than resolving political issues, the elections merely helped to draw the battle-lines more precisely.

The elections had produced no solutions and thereby represented a further step in discrediting the whole parliamentary system. The Constituent Assembly elections in December were something of an anticlimax and produced similar overall results. The Assembly was not convened until November 1956 and, as will be seen in the following chapter, was dissolved almost three years later without having drafted a new constitution.

The Burhanuddin cabinet hung on as long as it could, resisting pressure to make way for the elected parliament and a new government. As rapidly as possible it promoted PNI bureaucrats upwards to powerless positions and put PSI and *Masyumi* supporters in their places. The cabinet also reached a settlement with the army. In August 1955 it accepted the army's proposal to forget about the 17 October affair, so that officers suspended then (among them Nasution) could return to active duty. After lengthy bargaining, Nasution emerged as the army's leading candidate for chief of staff, and the cabinet appointed him in October. Nasution took up his duties in November 1955 and was promoted to Major-General. The government also renewed negotiations with the Netherlands at the end of 1955, to no avail. In February 1956 it announced the unilateral dissolution of the meaningless Netherlands–Indonesian Union and promised further unilateral steps regarding the Round Table agreements. But the cabinet had no life left in it after NU withdrew its support in January 1956 and it finally resigned early in March.

Again Ali Sastroamidjojo formed a cabinet (March 1956–March 1957). He was determined to have a PNI–*Masyumi*–NU coalition so that he need not rely upon PKI. He succeeded, but at the price of a cabinet so internally divided that it could hardly function. On 26 March the new parliament was assembled, the first parliament in Indonesia's history that could claim to reflect a free choice by universal adult suffrage from a full range of parties (and the last such before the parliament elected in 1999). The parliament was to last four years before being dissolved. But neither the new parliament nor the new government displayed much authority, and by this time few Indonesians expected that they would. In his opening speech to the parliament, Sukarno expressed hopes for a truly Indonesian form of democracy, one based on consensus rather than the divisive '50 per cent plus one' democracy of the West with its parliamentary contest between government and opposition. He was now beginning to call for a 'guided democracy', echoing the views of his old friend Ki Hadjar Dewantara,

who described the governance of his *Taman Siswa* schools in these terms.

Relations with the Netherlands continued to worsen, primarily because of Dutch refusal to negotiate the surrender of Papua to Indonesian control. On 4 August 1956 the Ali cabinet unilaterally repudiated f.3.661 billion of the nation's debt under the Round Table agreements, 85 per cent of the figure agreed in 1949, on the grounds that this represented the costs of the Dutch war against the Revolution. This repudiation was warmly welcomed in Indonesia. But there were few other achievements credited to this government. It arranged for elections to regional assemblies to be held in 1957, but for the rest much of its attention went to handing out patronage. More and more scandals became public knowledge.

In the largest opposition party, PKI, Aidit's leadership weathered two internal problems in 1956 and emerged upon its same course. While Aidit was on a visit to the Soviet Union in March, his leadership was challenged by Alimin, who had twice seen the downfall of PKI and was now an elderly man in his late sixties. He circulated a statement that the Aidit leadership group was soft, opportunist and deviationist and was leading PKI to become an ordinary bourgeois party by stifling class-consciousness. He was largely correct, but it is hard to see how PKI could have survived in any other way. Alimin found no support, was forced to recant, and withdrew to a lonely and embittered old age. He died in 1964 before having to witness the third and bloodiest destruction of PKI.

The unilateral abrogation of the Netherlands–Indonesian Union in February 1956 and the repudiation of the Round Table debt agreement in August presented another minor problem by removing PKI's main evidence for Indonesia's semi-colonial status. Aidit changed course slightly and now emphasised the Dutch retention of Papua, which was an increasingly important public issue, and the presence of internal reactionaries (implying *Masyumi* above all) who were conniving with foreign imperialists to restrict the nation's independence. Increasingly, PKI's issues and enemies were Sukarno's issues and enemies.

The social and political fabric of the nation was now fraying at the edges. The Jakarta politicians who had shown how easily the rule of law could be ignored were obliged to watch in impotence as others followed their example in more violent ways. Economic problems tended to be blamed on the Chinese and soon mobs were attacking this community, particularly in the outer islands and more strongly Islamic areas of Java. Ethnic and regional sentiments became increasingly obvious, encouraged by the regional distinctions revealed in the 1955 elections. The Sundanese of West Java protested their irritation with the Javanese, who by weight of numbers dominated many aspects of national life. Outer islanders were also dissatisfied with the number of Javanese appointed to government posts. In East Sumatra the Toba Bataks were particularly objects of hostility, and there were some deaths in public brawls. In the outer islands generally the frustrations at the overvalued Rupiah (Rp.) and Jakarta's general neglect came to a head.

By now regional interests were closely linked to army affairs. In the years since 1952 many regional commanders had forged unorthodox links with outer island interests as a means of financing their units and their personal incomes. These circumstances held little appeal for Nasution and his supporters, who aimed for a

cohesive, centrally controlled army free of civilian entanglements. By late 1954 and early 1955 large-scale smuggling operations were under way from Sulawesi (especially Minahasa). In June 1956 the government ordered the main smuggling port of Minahasa to be closed, but local leaders returned an ultimatum that the order must be rescinded within seven days. Jakarta gave in. By early 1956 there had come to light a rubber-smuggling operation run by the commander in North Sumatra, Colonel Maludin Simbolon (b. 1916), a Toba Batak Christian, one of the army's most respected officers and a rival to Nasution. In July he came to an amicable agreement with Jakarta and was never charged.

Finally a protracted internal military crisis brought the political system crashing down. With the political parties increasingly polarised along a Java–outer islands division and the bureaucracy being so ineffectual, the army was virtually all that held the national administration together; as it divided, the nation divided. Upon becoming army chief of staff in November 1955, Nasution announced another plan for large-scale transfers of officers, many of whom were by now well entrenched in private business arrangements. As transfers began to be carried out in the face of procrastination by many officers in 1956, the army and civilian interests associated with it split into two main factions. But these groupings did not replicate those of the 17 October affair. Now Nasution and his army supporters worked in alliance with Sukarno, Ali and PNI; this faction included several officers who had opposed Nasution in 1952. Against them stood Simbolon and the deputy chief of staff Lieutenant Colonel Zulkifli Lubis (b. 1923), also an opponent of Nasution in 1952; they were allied to **Masyumi** and PSI figures and largely supported by non-Javanese, anti-Jakarta officers. As will be seen in the following chapter, this was the alignment of factions that underlay the Sumatran rebellion of 1958.

In August 1956 tensions mounted in Jakarta. One of Lubis's supporters attempted to arrest the PNI Foreign Minister Roeslan Abdulgani (1914– 2005) for alleged corruption, but the order was countermanded by Nasution. Then Lubis, who ceased to be deputy chief of staff on 20 August, plotted a coup with the support of officers of the Siliwangi Division of West Java, the best-equipped and best-trained division within the army. Sukarno was out of the country (28 August–16 October 1956) on a state visit to China, the Soviet Union and other Communist states, and the plotters hoped to be rid of Nasution and the cabinet before the President's return. They failed. On 11 October and again on 16 November pro-Lubis troops failed to enter Jakarta, on the first occasion being stopped by pro-Nasution units and on the second being thwarted by Nasution's superior organisational manoeuvres. There was no shooting, but the arrest of Lubis was ordered; he went into hiding, later to re-emerge in the Sumatran rebellion.

Nasution now rapidly arrested or transferred his opponents within the Siliwangi Division and turned it into his most reliable division. When Mochtar Lubis, a highly regarded journalist in Jakarta and a novelist of great moral courage, alleged corruption involving Foreign Minister Roeslan, he was arrested and brought to trial in December 1956 for libel. He was to remain in jail or under house arrest for nine years. Roeslan was ultimately found guilty of unintentional violation of exchange control regulations and fined Rp.5000 in April 1957.

A political impasse seemed to exist in Jakarta, with many people feeling that the

constitutional system could not survive but not knowing what should follow. Some called for a new Hatta cabinet, but by now the old cooperation between Hatta and Sukarno was dead. On 20 July 1956 Hatta submitted his resignation as Vice-President, to take effect on 1 December. This removed the most admired outer island figure from the centre of government. He made no flamboyant gestures, but was clearly discouraged by the nation's course. In his final speech he criticised the narrow self-interested behaviour of the parties. On this he and Sukarno were in agreement, but on little else. Hatta would have preferred to improve the parties; Sukarno wanted to be rid of them.

Sukarno increasingly took the initiative in public. Around him gathered a group of non-party radicals, several of whom had been admirers of Tan Malaka during the Revolution. In a speech on 28 October 1956 Sukarno called for the parties to be buried. Two days later he said that he had a notion, an idea (*kONSEPSI*), of a new system of 'guided democracy'. Natsir and other *Masyumi* leaders opposed any such ideas. *Murba*, with little possibility of access to power under the parliamentary system, praised them and tied itself increasingly closely to Sukarno. PNI and NU, attracted by Sukarno but with much to lose if the parliamentary system were abolished, were ambivalent. PKI, seeking protection before all things, supported the President but with the hope that political parties would not be abolished. Outer islanders worried about a Sukarno–*Murba*–PKI–PNI–NU government system, a government of Java and radicals against themselves and *Masyumi*. Within the army, outer island commanders saw a similar system forming, run by Jakarta against themselves.

In December 1956 army officers in Sumatra, many of them veterans of the former Banteng Division of the revolutionary period, decided to make their stand against Jakarta with local civilian support. On 20 December the regimental commander in West Sumatra took over civil government. On 22 December Simbolon announced a takeover in North Sumatra. Two days later the commander of South Sumatra forced the civilian governor there to begin introducing autonomy measures. The army councils in Sumatra rapidly acquired popular support by introducing reforms, repairing schools and roads and cutting down corruption. They appeared to have the sympathy of foreign enterprises in the island, including the American oil companies. They also began arresting members of PKI, which was therefore among the first to denounce the coups.

Jakarta could not ignore the loss of control over the richest island of the nation. The exports of North Sumatra (which included the former East Sumatra Residency of Dutch times) earned about half of the nation's foreign exchange in 1956. This encouraged Sumatran civilians to demand much greater autonomy from Jakarta. But the Sumatran military had less far-reaching ambitions, for their primary concern was the nature of their relationship to the central army command. Within the army, it was clear that no one desired civil war at this stage. Jakarta reacted by blockading Medan and then announcing new army appointments in North Sumatra, which precipitated complex internal moves. On 27 December Simbolon was overthrown in Medan by a group of Karo Batak officers and fled to Tapanuli.

The escalating political crisis in Sumatra had meanwhile impelled Jakarta to attempt to end the resistance in Aceh. The Ali cabinet decided to re-establish a province of Aceh, to which parliament agreed in October 1956. Sukarno was slow to approve this, however, only doing so after (and perhaps because) Simbolon's moves to detach North

Sumatra from Jakarta had become clear. With the re-establishment of a province of Aceh under an ethnic Acehnese governor, the grounds for Acehnese **zuama** (devout lay Muslims) to support resistance to Jakarta were greatly attenuated. They therefore pressed the **ulamas** to end hostilities. Eventually Daud Beureu'eh agreed to a ceasefire in April 1957 and talks then began with Jakarta for a permanent solution to Aceh's grievances.

The Sumatran crisis led to renewed calls for the Ali cabinet to step down for a non-parliamentary cabinet led by Hatta, who was thought to be the only man who could satisfy Sumatra. When PNI and NU refused to resign, **Masyumi** withdrew from the cabinet on 9 January 1957. While negotiations between the Sumatra and Jakarta army factions continued, more councils of officers sprang up in Kalimantan, North and South Sulawesi and Maluku to join the clamour for greater autonomy from Jakarta. In many cases they became linked to local leaders of **Masyumi**, the only one of the 'big four' parties to view regional dissatisfaction with sympathy.

Sukarno meanwhile kept the details of his **kONSEPSI** secret, if indeed he had worked them out. By early 1957 it was clear that the abolition of political parties was not essential, and PKI therefore gave Sukarno its full support. Aidit hoped to preserve some form of the parliamentary system within which PKI had done so well, but in the interests of the party's defence he stayed close to Sukarno. Sukarno himself was now happier with PKI than PNI, for the Communists were untainted by corruption scandals (never having had access to government and the means of corruption) and had adopted a revolutionary posture which appealed to him. Given the hostility of the army and the other parties to the Communists, Sukarno calculated that PKI would be dependent upon his protection and hence an amenable means of organising the mass support that he felt to be naturally his.

On 21 February 1957 Sukarno lifted the veil of secrecy. His new 'guided democracy' would, he proposed, be a form of government more suited to the national character. It would be based upon a 'mutual cooperation' (**gotong royong**) cabinet of the major parties, including PKI, advised by a National Council (**Dewan Nasional**) of functional groups (youth, workers, peasants, religions, regions and so on) rather than political parties. He did not, however, propose the abolition of parliament. The idea of a Hatta cabinet, the only step which might have mollified regionalist interests, was obviously not in Sukarno's mind. PNI, PKI, **Murba** and some other small parties approved the proposals. **Masyumi** and the Catholic Party did not. NU, PSI and the others appeared not to be in favour, as far as could be discerned from the qualifications and obscurities of their replies.

While mass demonstrations supported Sukarno's ideas, the regional crisis grew more serious. On 2 March 1957 the commander for East Indonesia, Lieutenant Colonel H. N. V. Sumual (b.1923), proclaimed martial law in the whole of his region from his headquarters in Makassar, thereby theoretically taking over all civil authority from Bali through Nusa Tenggara, Sulawesi and Maluku. Then a long 'Universal Struggle Charter' (**Permesta: Piagam Perjuangan Sembesta Alam**) was read out to Sumual's officers, who pledged themselves to complete the Indonesian Revolution. The **Permesta** rebellion had begun. On 8 March the South Sumatra regional assembly voted no confidence in the governor and the army took over authority in that region.

With the nation falling apart, Nasution seized the initiative to end parliamentary democracy. There were still many calls for a Hatta cabinet, a solution endorsed also by NU on 11 March 1957. Nasution attempted to arrange a meeting between Hatta and Sukarno but the latter refused. So he proposed that Sukarno should proclaim martial law over the entire nation. This would place the military in charge throughout the country and give it the means to deal with its own internal divisions, while technically removing the challenge posed by regional military coups by simply legalising them. The proposal was accepted. On 14 March the Ali cabinet resigned and Sukarno proclaimed martial law. Parliamentary democracy, such as it had been in Indonesia, was dead. No one yet knew how the regional challenge would be resolved. Nor was it known what new form of government would follow, except that it would not be the kind of multiparty democracy that was perceived as having failed the nation.

Despite the shortcomings of the political system up to 1957, however, the people of Indonesia had achieved one extraordinary victory. Indonesia was a single nation. Even the dissident regional movements and *Darul Islam* did not dispute this: they protested at the way the nation was structured and governed, not at its existence. It is never easy to see how such mass commitments emerge, but several elements appear to have encouraged a clearly Indonesian sense of identity. The fact of political independence, the rapid spread of the Indonesian language, the discrediting of regional political identities by the Dutch attempt at federalism during the Revolution, the growth of more cosmopolitan urban centres, Sukarno's constant hammering at the theme of national unity, the agitation over Papua, the political parties' insistence upon their role as national organisations, the symbolism of the national elections of 1955, the military's dedication to the spirit of the Revolution, the aspiration of all contenders to gain power at the centre rather than in some part of the country, and the widespread popular feeling that the sacrifices of the Revolution should not have been in vain – all contributed to this development.

The ultimate irony of the years 1950–7 was that as the nation fell apart, it also became one. Rarely was there more truth in the national motto *bhinneka tunggal ika* (officially but slightly inaccurately translated as 'unity in diversity'). There were still many divisions and conflicts within the nation, some of them ultimately irreconcilable. But now they were clearly divisions and conflicts within a single nation.

## ***Chapter 20***

---

# **Guided Democracy, 1957–65**

In the midst of the crisis of 1957, the first steps were taken towards a form of government which Sukarno called ‘guided democracy’. This was a fluid system, born of crisis and constantly changing through one of the most disturbed periods of Indonesian history. Guided democracy was dominated by the personality of Sukarno, although he shared the initiative for its introduction with the army leadership. At the time some observers saw Sukarno as a dictator and, as his posturing grew more flamboyant, some were inclined to see him as an ageing caricature. He was neither of these things. Sukarno was a skilled manipulator of men and of symbols. He could harangue a crowd or charm a potential adversary with equal ease, although he was also very adept at hating his enemies. He offered Indonesians something to believe in, something which many hoped would give them and their nation dignity and pride. Other powerful forces turned to him for guidance, legitimacy or protection. Having thrust himself forward in the crisis of 1957, he was joined by others in maintaining his central position. But this was all in support of a political balance which not even Sukarno could maintain, one which represented a compromise among irreconcilable interests and was therefore satisfactory to no one. Although Sukarno had a vision of his own future, he did not have one (or at least one which others could in the end accept) for the future of his nation and its people. The promise of guided democracy was an empty one.

Attempts have been made to characterise guided democracy as a system of government, a process rather similar to describing the shape of an amoeba. Some scholars accept Sukarno’s view that this was a return to something more in keeping with Indonesia’s, and specifically Java’s, past. Sometimes such analyses have the flavour of a psycho-cultural determinism, as if the spirit of Sultan Agung whispered in Sukarno’s ear. It is true that some aspects of guided democracy would have seemed familiar to Sultan Agung, for Sukarno was in some ways like a pre-colonial Javanese king. He represented a centre of legitimacy which others needed. Conspicuous display was the outward expression of legitimacy: stadiums, statues and great public occasions were perhaps similar in function to the court ceremonial and buildings of an older age. Sukarno had little organised power of his own and was obliged to manipulate, threaten and cajole other powerful men. Intrigue and conspiracy became the common fare of politics. The political elite became a complex of cliques around influential men. The financial and legal systems became increasingly arbitrary and irregular as bureaucratic norms disintegrated. Local government relied increasingly upon unpaid labour from the

peasantry.

Although these are interesting parallels with the pre-colonial past, they explain little, nor were they uniquely Indonesian. There can have been little conscious or even subconscious reliance upon genuine pre-colonial state principles. Javanese political traditions had been so severely distorted by Dutch colonialism that by the 1950s nothing remained but romanticised legends, the stylised images of the *wayang* theatre and the impotent establishments of the courts themselves. That villagers could understand Sukarno in terms of *wayang* models merely reflects the subtlety and richness of that art form and Sukarno's own love of *wayang* and skill in the manipulation of symbols. The personal military role of Indonesian kings was missing in guided democracy. Instead of small bodies of professional soldiers and vast armies of peasant levies, there was now a large standing army under its own commanders. Sukarno's lack of personal military experience and power was equalled only by his catastrophic ignorance of economics. He hated stability, order and predictability, the goals of any pre-colonial ruler. He wanted continuing revolution and mass mobilisation, and here one sees the impact of the nationalist movement, the Japanese occupation and the Revolution, influences more fundamental than what little Sukarno may have known about Javanese kingdoms.

The circumstances of the twentieth century had little that was comparable to the pre-colonial past. Indonesia was part of a competitive international order and was influenced by other nations in a way entirely unlike the ancient kingdoms. The population explosion and the revolution in communications and technology meant a much higher potential for an authoritarian domestic order. The population could be watched, informed, mobilised or coerced more successfully than in any of the old kingdoms. The Japanese, even more than the Dutch, had shown how these things could be done. As Sukarno and other political forces felt their way towards a more authoritarian order, they did in some ways return to something older. But they returned to the ideas of the Dutch and especially Japanese repressive states more than to those of the old Javanese kingdoms, of which they knew next to nothing. Dutch and Japanese colonialism represented forms of government with which the elite was familiar and which, for all their faults, seemed at least to have been more effective than the multiparty system of 1950–7.

The political parties were clearly on the defensive in 1957, but their mutual antagonisms were too great for them to work together in defence of the parliamentary system. In April 1957 Sukarno announced a 'business cabinet' (*Kabinet Karya*) under the non-party politician Djuanda Kartawidjaja (1911–63) as Prime Minister. Djuanda had been in almost every cabinet since 1945 and was respected as an able and sensible man with an understanding of economics. One of Sukarno's closest confidants, Chaerul Saleh (1916–67), entered the cabinet as Minister for Veterans' Affairs. He was among the youth leaders who had pressed Sukarno and Hatta to declare independence in 1945, and had followed Tan Malaka in the Revolution; he was arrested by the army, released by Yamin in June 1951 and then rearrested by the army. He went to the Netherlands in 1952 only to be expelled in 1953. After his return to Indonesia in 1955 he became one of Sukarno's circle of radical advisers and now began to build up his position at the head of an influential, and profitable, clique. The Minister for Foreign Affairs was Dr Subandrio (1914–2004), a former ambassador to London (1947–54) and Moscow

(1954–6). He, too, was to become a central figure in the intrigues and conflicts of these years. Three Deputy Prime Ministers were appointed: PNI's Hardi (b. 1918), NU's Kyai Haji Idham Chalid (b. 1921), and Dr Johannes Leimena (1905–77) of the Christian Party.

Although the cabinet was theoretically non-party, at heart it was a coalition of PNI and NU. There were no PSI or PKI members in it, but the Communists could count several sympathisers. Two *Masyumi* members joined, but the party expelled both for accepting their posts. Sukarno and Djuanda said that the cabinet was still responsible to parliament and the various parties in it added up to a parliamentary majority, but this was little more than a gesture to a dying system.

In May 1957 a National Council was created, consisting of 41 ‘functional group’ representatives (youth, peasants, workers, women, intellectuals, religions, regions and so on), plus various *ex officio* members. Most political parties, including PKI, were indirectly represented through functional group members, but *Masyumi* and the Catholic Party were not. Sukarno was chairman but the Council’s affairs were directly in the hands of its vice-chairman Roeslan Abdulgani, who emerged as an elaborator of guided democracy ideology.

As the new governmental system evolved, PKI and the army took steps to strengthen their positions. At least by 1957 (and perhaps as early as 1955) an undercover PKI member had begun infiltration of the military through contacts with intelligence officers who were themselves seeking to infiltrate PKI. This was the mysterious figure ‘Sjam’ (Kamarusaman bin Ahmad Mubaidah, d. 1986). He is said to have come from an Orthodox *santri* family of Arab descent on the north coast of Java and to have been born some time around 1924. His life and career are very unclear, however, as is his relationship with Aidit. While this work was beginning, PKI was also having its first real success among intellectuals. In October 1956 Pramoedya Ananta Toer was so impressed by a visit to Beijing (Peking) that he began to take up the PKI cause among intellectual circles. His favourable impressions of China were strengthened by a second visit in 1958–9, at the start of Mao’s Great Leap Forward. Pramoedya became a leading figure in the PKI artists’ and writers’ organisation *Lekra* (*Lembaga Kebudayaan Rakyat*, People’s Cultural Institute, established 1950), which was shortly to become a major instrument of intellectual repression. PKI members were also becoming influential within the *Taman Siswa* school system, where they were assisted by the close parallels between *Taman Siswa* and guided democracy ideology.

The army was working to ensure that the new fashion of relying upon functional groups would enhance the army’s role. The parties had various functional groups affiliated to them and in June 1957 Nasution began establishing army–civilian cooperation bodies to detach these from the parties. Over the next two years such bodies established links with NU’s youth wing *Ansor* (established 1934, named after *al-ansar*, ‘the helpers’ who supported the Prophet in Medina), PKI’s *Pemuda Rakyat*, PNI and *Masyumi* youth groups and so on. But for the most part the parties were able to resist these moves. Nasution was, however, successful in uniting all veterans’ organisations into a veterans’ league under army control in August 1959. PKI, which had had much success among veterans, was particularly affected by this for it thereby lost its only organised body of supporters with potential military value.

Sukarno was also groping for some new means of mass organisation. In June 1957 he praised the one-party system of the Soviet Union and said that he preferred such a structure. In August he revived an idea which the Japanese had failed to implement in July 1945 when their New People's Movement (*Gerakan Rakyat Baru*) had failed. He called for a New Life Movement (*Gerakan Hidup Baru*) which was supposed, in some vague way, to revitalise the nation. PKI pledged its support but nothing happened and the movement was soon the butt of political jokes. Sukarno continued to insist, however, that the corrupt rock-and-roll culture of the West must somehow be abandoned for a more truly Indonesian personality.

The cabinet, National Council and army were also attempting to solve the problems which had given rise to the governmental crisis. Under martial law, Nasution ordered a cleanup which led to the arrest of several politicians for alleged corruption, and the flight of others. In May 1957 the PSI economist and former Minister Professor Sumitro Djojohadikusumo (1917– 2001) was among the first to flee Jakarta for Sumatra. Regional commanders arrested many civilians and restricted party activities. PKI particularly suffered from such curtailment, and in July 1957 the PKI and SOBSI headquarters in Jakarta were attacked with hand grenades. The political parties began calling for an early end to martial law, but in the event it was to last for six years and by the time it was lifted the army was so well entrenched that this made little difference.

The cabinet contacted the dissident regional military councils and even provided them with some of Jakarta's limited funds under the guise of regional development. Djuanda organised a National Conference (*Musyawarah Nasional*) which was held in Jakarta between 10 and 14 September 1957, followed by a National Development Conference (*Musyawarah Nasional Pembangunan*) two months later. Hopes were high that the first conference in particular would lead to real solutions. The representatives of the regional councils seemed cooperative. But nothing was achieved and the regional stalemate continued. Renewed efforts to restore cooperation between Hatta and Sukarno foundered on their inability and unwillingness to work in partnership.

Elections for provincial councils were held in the latter half of 1957 and revealed major PKI gains. This increased the determination of the army and anti-Communist civilians that the old political system must go quickly. PKI was the only party with an active grass-roots organisation and it had campaigned for the implementation of Sukarno's guided democracy, land reform and an end to corruption. In Java its vote was 37.2 per cent higher than in 1955, most of its new support coming from former PNI voters. The 'big four' results for the Central and East Java elections in July gave PKI 34 per cent, NU 29 per cent, PNI 26 per cent and *Masyumi* 11 per cent. PNI was left with a majority in only one Regency (*kabupaten*) and its Central Java leaders began to urge that the party should end all cooperation with PKI. In East Java NU remained in first place, but its vote fell and PKI was less than 3 per cent behind. *Masyumi* still led in the West Java elections of August, but PKI replaced PNI in second place. These results clearly reinforced Sukarno's view that PKI could not be refused a role in government.

In September and October 1957 Colonel Simbolon and the other military dissidents of Sumatra, Colonel Sumual of the *Permesta* movement, and Colonel Lubis held several meetings in Sumatra to coordinate their activities. They condensed their aims

into a threefold objective: an election for a new President to end Sukarno's pro-PKI activities, the replacement of Nasution and his central staff and the outlawing of PKI. **Masyumi**, which glumly refused to have anything to do with guided democracy, meanwhile held an All-Indonesia Congress of Islamic Scholars (**Muktamar Ulama Sē-Indonesia**) in Palembang in September which proclaimed that Communism was forbidden to Muslims and that PKI must be outlawed. NU, seeking to defend Orthodox Islam within the emerging system, refused to send an official delegation to the Congress. In mid-November the Constituent Assembly began its deliberations in Jakarta and became bogged down in arguments between proponents of Islam or **Pancasila** as the philosophical basis of a new constitution.

At the end of November 1957 two events heightened political tension. On 29 November the UN failed to pass a resolution calling upon the Dutch to negotiate a settlement of the Papua issue; Sukarno had warned that Indonesia would take steps that would startle the world if the resolution failed. Then, while he was visiting his son's school in the Cikini district of Jakarta on the 30th, the first of several assassination attempts was made upon him. A group of Islamic zealots, thought to be protégés of Lubis and the regional dissidents, threw hand grenades which claimed several lives but left Sukarno unharmed. Nasution now felt that the reasonable limits of intrigue had been exceeded and that compromise with the dissidents was no longer possible.

The failure of the UN resolution led directly to an outburst of anti-Dutch radicalism encouraged by Sukarno. On 3 December PKI and PNI unions began taking over Dutch enterprises and business offices. Neither Djuanda nor Nasution could control these events. The Dutch-owned Royal Mail Steam Packet Company (KPM) was the first to be seized, but many of its ships were at sea and simply sailed out of Indonesian waters. At a stroke the nation thus lost much of its inter-island shipping and further exacerbated regional dissatisfaction with Jakarta's actions. Hatta and **Masyumi** leaders condemned the poor planning of the takeovers. One of the bastions of Anglo-Dutch economic power, Royal Dutch Shell, was not nationalised but on 5 December the Ministry of Justice ordered the expulsion of about 46,000 Dutch citizens in Indonesia.

Nasution took control of these events on 13 December 1957 by ordering that the army would manage the seized enterprises. PKI and SOBSI, anxious to avoid confrontation with the army, pledged their support in keeping these businesses at work. This was a crucial development, for the army now assumed the role of a major economic force: it gained independent sources of funding and resources to dispense to its members and supporters. This strengthened the position of Nasution and the central command against regional commanders, and the army as a whole against other services and civilian government. It aligned the army with those who favoured state rather than private enterprise, the latter being primarily **Masyumi** and NU supporters. The community of interests between outer island commanders and **Masyumi** was thus threatened.

But the effects upon the economy and the army were far from being entirely beneficial. There was much mismanagement and inefficiency, particularly as a result of Nasution's inclination to place older or less able officers in charge of enterprises while more able commanders were left in charge of troops. The army's attention was directed away from purely military functions and corruption of the officer corps accelerated;

neither of these developments was welcome to Nasution. But a crucial step had been taken towards a consolidation of political, military, administrative and economic power in army hands. A further step was taken on 10 December 1957 when Nasution placed his second deputy, Colonel Dr Ibnu Sutowo (1914–2001), in charge of a new oil company called **Perminta (Perusahaan Minyak Nasional**, National Oil Enterprise). This was the first stage of the army's move into the oil industry.

The radical surge continued throughout December 1957 and January 1958. In December, Natsir and other **Masyumi** figures fled Jakarta in the face of intimidation by youth groups. In the same month the regional elections in South Sumatra showed that **Masyumi** was still by far the largest party, but even there PKI pushed PNI out of second place. PKI was now emphasising continuing Dutch control of Papua as the main evidence of Indonesia's semi-colonial status. In January Nasution moved to capture this radicalism under army management by setting up a National Front for the Liberation of West Papua (**Front Nasional Pembebasan Papua Barat**) based upon the army–civilian cooperation bodies. The parties managed to obstruct its growth, however, and Sukarno gained much influence over it.

In January 1958 PSI and **Masyumi** demanded a new cabinet to deal with the nation's problems. PNI and NU of course defended the cabinet. Rumours now spread of impending rebellion. While Sukarno was out of the country (6 January–16 February) a meeting was held near Padang among Simbolon, Lubis, other Sumatra officers, the **Masyumi** leaders Natsir and Sjafruddin, and PSI's Sumitro Djojohadikusumo (one of the very few ethnic Javanese to join the dissidents). Nasution, the cabinet and PSI and **Masyumi** leaders still in Jakarta contacted their colleagues in Sumatra to try to prevent rebellion, but without success. The Sumatra figures were convinced that events in Jakarta were going in intolerably radical directions and that a stand must be made.

On 10 February 1958 the Padang dissidents sent a five-day ultimatum to the government: the cabinet must be dissolved, Hatta and Sultan Hamengkubuwana IX must be appointed to form a new business cabinet until elections were held, and Sukarno must return to his constitutional position as figurehead President (a position which Natsir had insisted upon during his premiership). The cabinet immediately rejected the ultimatum and the main army officers involved were dishonourably discharged for promoting rebellion and attempting to assassinate Sukarno at Cikini.

On 15 February a rebel government was announced in Sumatra, with its headquarters at Bukittinggi. This was known as PRRI (**Pemerintah Revolusioner Republik Indonesia**, Revolutionary Government of the Indonesian Republic). Sjafruddin was its Prime Minister (1958–61) and its cabinet included Natsir, Burhanuddin Harahap, Sumitro Djojohadikusumo and Simbolon. Two days later the **Pemesta** rebels in Sulawesi joined PRRI. By now the rebels were assured of clandestine support from the United States, which was equally worried by Sukarno and PKI. But from the start the rebels faced serious shortcomings. The South Sumatra commander did not join them, being uncomfortably close to Java and worried about the large number of Javanese labourers in the oilfields who were in PKI organisations. Nor was there significant support in North Sumatra or Kalimantan. The **Darul Islam** rebels in Aceh, West Java and South Sulawesi continued to go their own way, although late in 1959 tenuous links between **Darul Islam** and PRRI would be established. The oil

companies Caltex, Stanvac and Shell accepted Jakarta's assurances that their interests would be protected and maintained their payments of revenues to Jakarta. PRRI was thus reduced to a rebellion primarily based in two distant centres, West Sumatra and Sulawesi (especially North Sulawesi, which had by now become the centre of the *Permesta* movement).

On 16 February Sukarno returned and insisted on harsh treatment of the rebels. Djuanda, Nasution and most PNI and PKI leaders also wanted the rebellion crushed. Hatta, along with *Masyumi* and PSI leaders in Jakarta, urged a negotiated settlement, thus placing themselves in a compromised position. Hamengkubuwana IX, informally an ally of PSI, also favoured negotiation and refused to accept a post in a reshuffled cabinet in June 1958 because of the government's hard line against PRRI. Hereafter he played no significant public role until after October 1965. *Masyumi* was divided, demoralised and discredited. The Sukiman wing was willing to expel Natsir, Sjafruddin and Burhanuddin but was prevented from doing so by their supporters. Natsir in fact remained the party's chairman for over a year after the rebellion began.

The military acted decisively. The air force bombed PRRI installations in Padang, Bukittingi and Ménado in late February 1958. In early March the army began landing units from the Java-based Siliwangi and Diponégoro Divisions in Sumatra under the command of Colonel Achmad Yani (1922–65). The Americans were supplying the rebels with arms and had proposed landing a force of marines ostensibly to protect American citizens and property in the Sumatran oil fields. The Indonesian government rejected the proposal and by 12 March had secured the Caltex fields to prevent unilateral American action. The rebels were then driven out of Medan on 17 March and a month later Padang was taken with little resistance. On 5 May Bukittingi was taken and PRRI in Sumatra was reduced to guerrilla fighting in the countryside. Then attention turned to North Sulawesi, where the fighting was heavier. Here Jakarta relied upon the East Java Brawijaya Division. Gorontalo was taken by mid-May and Ménado by late June. Here, too, the rebellion was now reduced to guerrilla proportions. By the middle of 1958 the PRRI rebellion was already a lost cause, even if its final collapse was still three years away.

The outbreak and rapid reduction of PRRI had a significant effect upon Indonesia's foreign relations. Several thousand lives had been lost and no one could regard the affair as something simply to be forgotten. American sympathy and support for PRRI was obvious to Jakarta and seriously damaged Indonesia–United States relations. On 18 May an American civilian pilot was actually shot down over Ambon in a B-26 while on a bombing run in support of the rebels. The United States had already realised that it was supplying a losing cause. Within two days the American Secretary of State J. F. Dulles condemned intervention on behalf of PRRI in an effort to repair relations with Jakarta. But the episode left a sour taste and inclined Sukarno and many others to regard the United States with even greater suspicion than was usual between developing states and great powers. PKI was quick to capitalise on anti-American feelings.

Malaya, which had become independent in 1957 and was still fighting the remnants of its own Communist 'emergency', had also supported the PRRI rebels and had been a major channel for arms supplies, as had Singapore. The Philippines, Taiwan and South Korea also sympathised with PRRI. Thus, Indonesia's desire for a neutralist foreign

policy was becoming more difficult as the list of its enemies lengthened. In August 1958 the ***Guomindang (Kuomintang)*** was banned in Indonesia, shortly after which the army took over businesses of pro-Taiwan Chinese, thereby inadvertently giving PKI a monopoly of political support within the local Chinese community.

PRRI helped to simplify Indonesian military politics. Many dissident officers were now removed from army affairs, leaving Nasution as the unchallenged leader of the army. In July 1958 he was promoted to Lieutenant General, the first to hold that rank since Soedirman. Many of those removed were from the outer islands, leaving the officer corps more heavily Javanese; by the 1960s it was estimated that 60 to 80 per cent of army officers were Javanese, whereas that ethnic group formed about 45 per cent of the population.

The psychological impact of the rebellion was considerable. It stained ***Masyumi*** with the mark of treachery as Madiun had stained PKI. It was also a major step in the consolidation of the ascendancy of Java over the outer islands and the army over other political forces. Regional rebellion was now made more difficult by the stationing of Siliwangi, Diponégoro and Brawijaya Division officers and units in the outer islands. Nevertheless, regional commanders were still only tenuously controlled by the central command.

Success over PRRI did not make the army popular. Its heavy-handed rule under martial law was already earning it much criticism, which encouraged those who thought its power could be limited. Among these was Sukarno, whose old opponents and enemies among civilian politicians, men such as Hatta and Natsir, were now discredited. The emerging political system was becoming a competitive arrangement between Sukarno and the army. PKI, still very much in the wings, was anxious to attach itself as closely as possible to Sukarno. The President cared little for the PNI leaders Ali Sastroamidjojo and Hardi, and increasingly looked upon PKI as his primary ally against the army.

The Jakarta politicians, both civil and military, now turned to the question of how to complete the transition to guided democracy. ***Masyumi*** and PSI, who had cast themselves in the role of defenders of democracy, began to press for postponement of the parliamentary elections scheduled for 1959, for they presumed that PKI would be the victor. PNI and NU shared this view and in September 1958 Djuanda announced that elections would be postponed. But the existing political elite in Jakarta could reach no agreement on the next step to be taken. Rumours circulated that Sukarno would form a state party, or that there would be an army coup. The Constituent Assembly remained deadlocked over the philosophical basis for a new constitution.

Nasution proposed a solution in July 1958. Rather than writing a new constitution, he favoured simply restoring the constitution of 1945. This provided for a strong President responsible to an infrequently convened People's Consultative Assembly (***Majelis Permusyawaratan Rakyat***) but needing the consent of a lower house parliament (***Dewan Perwakilan Rakyat***, People's Representative Council). Some of its clauses could be read as authorising functional group representation, and although it did not recognise the existence of political parties they were not disallowed. The philosophical debate would be resolved by including the Jakarta Charter of June 1945, which obliged Muslims to observe Islamic law while leaving ***Pancasila*** as the

philosophical foundation of the nation. This proposal slowly began to attract support, but Sukarno was not eager to have the personal responsibility imposed on the President by this constitution. He also feared that this was a means to create a system which, in practice, the army would dominate. It was by now accepted that the armed services were themselves functional groups, so lengthy debates surrounded the issue of what proportion of any new representative bodies should consist of such groups.

Nasution wanted the army to be disenfranchised and thus freed of political party interference, but to be directly represented at all levels of government as a functional group. In November 1958 he formalised this as the doctrine of the middle way: the army should neither be aloof from political affairs nor take over government itself. Others nevertheless feared the possibility of a coup, fears which were enhanced by a wave of military takeovers in Third World countries in July–November 1958 (Iraq, Pakistan, Burma, Thailand and Sudan).

In September 1958 Nasution suddenly banned *Masyumi*, PSI, the Christian Party and an army front organisation which had favoured his opponents (*Ikatan Pendukung Kemerdekaan Indonesia*, IPKI, League of Supporters of Indonesian Independence, established 1954) in all regions where they had supported the rebels. He then arrested a leader from Natsir's wing of *Masyumi* for giving a speech sympathetic to PRRI. With Nasution so obviously seizing the initiative, the political parties began to feel that they must go along with whatever Sukarno proposed or face a takeover by the army. Sukarno now began favouring reintroduction of the 1945 constitution, partly in the hope that this would revive the spirit of optimism, dedication and revolution of which it had been a part. Only *Masyumi* maintained its inflexible opposition to guided democracy.

PNI and PKI leaders accepted the idea of reintroducing the 1945 constitution by early 1959. In February NU agreed, partly under the pressure of threats to prosecute several of its leaders for alleged corruption, but with the understanding that the Jakarta Charter formed part of the constitution and had legal force. The cabinet then decided to propose this to the Constituent Assembly. If NU voted in favour there, the proposal would receive the necessary two-thirds majority. But again everything became bogged down in intractable conflict between the Islamic and non-Islamic parties. While the army organised demonstrations in support of the 1945 constitution and PKI and Masyumi youth groups took to the streets of Bandung, where the Assembly met, Sukarno set off on a world tour (23 April–29 June 1959) and NU's chairman Idham Chalid went on the pilgrimage to Mecca. When in May the Assembly defeated a proposal to make the Jakarta Charter a part of the constitution with legal force, NU turned against reintroducing the old constitution. On 2 June 1959 the final Constituent Assembly vote was 56 per cent in favour of reintroducing the 1945 constitution – short of the necessary two-thirds. Yet again there was deadlock.

While Islamic sentiments remained the main barrier to constitutional change at the national level, the government reached a final settlement with the Acehnese segment of the *Darul Islam* rebellion. Since March 1957 a ceasefire had been agreed in Aceh, but its implementation had been difficult. In May 1959, while the Constituent Assembly wrangled, the government accepted the creation of what was virtually an Islamic state within the nation by giving Aceh the status of a Special District (*Daerah Istimewa*). The Acehnese were given virtual autonomy in matters of religion, customary law (*adat*)

and education. The fighting now stopped, although some guerrillas remained in the hills for two more years. Daud Beureu'eh was given a pension as a former governor and became active in the promotion of public works projects. Such a solution was acceptable in far-off Aceh, but clearly unacceptable for West Java or the nation as a whole.

Nasution now decided that the only solution to the deadlock at national level was reintroduction of the 1945 constitution by presidential decree. PKI and PNI agreed that this was the only way to bypass the intransigence of the Islamic parties and avoid an army takeover. NU also favoured this: its main interest was the defence and representation of Orthodox Islam in whatever regime was to emerge, but it could not be seen to vote in the Constituent Assembly for a constitution giving no special place to Islam. *Masyumi*'s inflexibility was clearly a dead end, so NU preferred a solution which would at least spare it acrimonious philosophical debates in public and the political impotence facing Modernist Islam. On 3 June Nasution ordered a temporary ban on all public political activities and told the press to stay calm. All now awaited the return of Sukarno.

On 29 June 1959 Sukarno returned to Jakarta, apprehensive of Nasution's growing power. He decided to adopt Nasution's proposal. On 5 July he dissolved the Constituent Assembly and restored the old constitution. The Jakarta Charter was, he said, a historical document which inspired the whole of the constitution but was not itself a legal part of it. According to this construction, the state was not obliged to oversee the implementation of Islamic law among those who called themselves Muslims, but Islamic leaders continued to take the view that it was. The decree was undoubtedly unconstitutional, but many were relieved that this part of the national impasse was ended.

On 9 July a new 'working cabinet' (*Kabinet Kerja*) was announced with Sukarno as Prime Minister and Djuanda as 'First Minister'. Leimena, Chaerul Saleh and Subandrio remained in the core of the cabinet; Idham Chalid did not, but another NU figure was Minister of Religion (the Ministry which NU most wanted to control). To emphasise the non-party nature of the new government, several ministers resigned from their parties, including Subandrio from PNI and Leimena from the Christian Party. There were no PKI members, but several ministers were regarded as Communist sympathisers. Sukarno wanted to weaken Nasution by bringing him into the cabinet and replacing him at the top of the army. He failed in the face of Nasution's determination, so Nasution became Minister of Defence and Security as well as army chief of staff. The chiefs of staff of the navy, air force and police also entered the cabinet as ex officio members. Several individual officers became ministers.

Further institutions of guided democracy were quickly announced. Later in July 1959 the National Council was abolished and the Supreme Advisory Council (*Dewan Pertimbangan Agung*) called for in the 1945 constitution was appointed, as was a new body called the National Planning Council (*Dewan Perancang Nasional*) of which Yamin was chairman. *Masyumi* and PSI were represented in neither of these; PNI, PKI, NU and the other parties were in both. Sukarno then ordered that higher civil servants and managers of state enterprises could not belong to political parties. In September 1959 regional heads were relieved of their responsibility to local elected councils,

which were replaced by appointed councils in 1960–1. The parties continued to exist, but only PKI showed much vitality. Political leaders increasingly exercised influence not through formal institutions or party structures but through access to Sukarno or the army.

On Independence Day, 17 August 1959, Sukarno's speech set out the ideology of guided democracy, which a few months later was named **Manipol** (from **Manifesto Politik**, Political Manifesto). He called for a revival of the spirit of the Revolution, for social justice and for 'retooling' of the institutions and organisations of the nation in the name of ongoing revolution. Early in 1960 this vague creed was elaborated by having the initials USDEK added, standing for the 1945 constitution, Indonesian socialism, guided democracy, guided economy and Indonesian identity (*Undang-undang dasar 1945, Sosialisme ala Indonesia, Demokrasi terpimpin, Ekonomi terpimpin, Képribadian Indonesia*).

**Manipol-USDEK** was now the official definition of ideological orthodoxy. What precisely it meant depended upon who precisely was claiming to endorse it. It was introduced into all levels of education and government, and the press was obliged to support it. Some pro-**Masyumi** and pro-PSI editors refused to do so and their papers were banned. Between 1959 and 1961 newspaper circulation was cut by about one-third, from 1,039,000 copies for 90 dailies to 710,000 copies for 65 dailies.

The economic chaos of the guided democracy period was now beginning. In an effort to restrain inflation, on 25 August 1959 the Rupiah was devalued by 75 per cent, a monetary purge was ordered by which all Rp.500 and Rp.1000 notes were reduced to one-tenth their face value and large bank deposits were frozen. This reduced the money supply from Rp.34 billion to Rp.21 billion at a stroke. Sukarno himself seems to have inspired these severely deflationary steps. The wealthy, the bureaucrats and especially the Chinese and indigenous businesspeople were badly affected. Some regional commanders, however, refused to implement the measures in full. The liquidity crisis was so severe that the government was obliged to allow an expansion of credit, and within six months the money supply was back to its former level and inflation again crept upwards. Economic affairs were given a tragic-comic flavour by the promulgation at the end of 1960 of an eight-year development plan. It was an elaborate ritual nonsense divided into 17 parts, 8 volumes and 1945 clauses to symbolise the date of the independence declaration.

Army interference in the economy and administration was also increasing. In May 1959 it had been decreed that, with effect from 1 January 1960, aliens would be banned from rural trade. While this affected Arab and Indian traders, it was mainly an army-instigated move to hurt the Chinese, weaken Jakarta's friendship with China and embarrass PKI. Late in 1959 the army began forcibly moving Chinese from rural areas to the cities. Eventually about 119,000 were actually repatriated to China. The Chinese government put very heavy diplomatic pressure upon Jakarta, while both PKI and Sukarno attempted to defend the Chinese and were at least able to prevent the army from taking even more severe measures. The exodus of Chinese from rural areas and from the country altogether, and the general fear within this crucial commercial community, led to serious economic dislocation, hoarding and a new surge of inflation. In the course of 1960 the army also increased its direct influence over civil

administration when five officers became provincial governors.

In competition for power with Nasution, Sukarno was following two main tactics. He sought the support of the Java-based political parties, especially PKI, and he courted the other armed services, especially the air force. The air force chief of staff, Air Commodore Surjadi Surjadarma (b. 1912), was close to Sukarno and had poor relations with Nasution. His wife was active in leftist and PKI causes and had been arrested for a time in 1948 on Nasution's order. The air force was jealous of the predominance of the army and was now becoming the closest thing Sukarno ever had to a military force he could rely upon. But no chief of staff could actually guarantee the behaviour of his own men. This was vividly illustrated in March 1960 when an air force pilot strafed the presidential palaces in Jakarta and Bogor while an army unit tried to move into Jakarta, apparently in some kind of abortive coup attempt. The parties, for their part, increasingly felt that they must adapt themselves to Sukarno's will or face complete abolition by the army.

PSI and **Masyumi** put up their last resistance to guided democracy in 1960, and were swept away. In March the elected parliament, the last governmental institution in which they were represented, rejected the government's budget in an unexpected display of authority. Sukarno endorsed the budget by decree and dissolved parliament. He then announced that he would appoint a Mutual Cooperation People's Representative Council (DPR-GR: **Dewan Perwakilan Rakyat-Gotong Royong**). PSI, **Masyumi** and some allies, with the encouragement of Hatta and some military figures, formed a Democratic League (**Liga Demokrasi**) to resist this move.

When Sukarno returned in June from another overseas trip the League quickly collapsed and the 'mutual-cooperation' parliament of 283 seats was appointed. **Masyumi** and PSI had no seats. Over half the seats (154) went to functional groups, but many of these appointees were also party members. PKI was variously estimated to have between 17 and 25 per cent of the members and Lukman was a deputy chairman. The armed services were represented as functional groups. Sukarno then also appointed a 616-member Provisional People's Consultative Assembly (MPRS: **Majelis Permusyawaratan Rakyat Sementara**), of which Aidit was a deputy chairman. PKI was now in every governmental institution except the cabinet; **Masyumi** and PSI were in none. Within Islamic circles, the political victory of Orthodoxy (NU) over Modernism (**Masyumi**) now seemed assured. In August 1960 **Masyumi** and PSI were finally banned, a formal sealing of the fate which they had ensured for themselves by their leaders' enmity towards Sukarno over many years, their opposition to guided democracy and their involvement in PRRI.

Sukarno now began emphasising a theme as old as his articles of 1926 which had argued for the unity of nationalism, Islam and Marxism. This was now called the doctrine of **Nasakom** (from **Nasionalismě, Agama, Komunismě**). What it apparently meant was that PNI (for nationalism), NU (for religion) and PKI (for Communism) should share a role in government at all levels, thus producing a system which, among other things, would rest upon a coalition of Java-based political forces. Since PNI and NU were already well represented, the only serious issue raised by **Nasakom** at this stage was the inclusion of PKI ministers in the cabinet. This the army was not prepared to allow.

The army acted to restrict PKI in the latter half of 1960. In July PKI launched criticisms of the cabinet, especially Subandrio who was accused of offending China, and of the army for failing to finish off the PRRI rebels. The army picked up the whole of the PKI Politburo for questioning but Sukarno successfully pressed Nasution to release them. Regional commanders in South Sumatra, South Sulawesi and South Kalimantan banned PKI and arrested local Communists in August. Sukarno also got these bans lifted in December, except in South Kalimantan where the ban lasted for a year. In these regions PKI continued to be watched, harassed and restricted by the army. At the end of October all seven of the Politburo's magazines were suspended permanently, and from this point onwards the daily *Harian Rakjat* was allowed only a reduced supply of newsprint. Those within PKI who doubted Aidit's strategy were forced now to concede that there was no alternative to the alliance with Sukarno. And Sukarno was forced to accept that he could not yet bring PKI ministers into the cabinet.

Indonesia was now lurching into the radicalism which was to give PKI its opportunity for growth, despite the army's hostility. The Dutch were trying to create an independent state in Papua with considerable local support. Early in 1960 they announced that elections would be held there for a representative council. In August 1960 Indonesia broke off diplomatic relations with the Netherlands. A year earlier the Supreme Advisory Council had created a National Front which Sukarno hoped would supersede the army's National Front for the Liberation of West Papua. In August 1960 the leadership of the new National Front was announced; Aidit and Njoto were members, as were leaders from PKI-affiliated organisations. Small-scale military infiltration of Papua now began and PKI's considerable capacity for mobilising mass demonstrations was enlisted in the cause of winning control of Papua.

The military requirements for a campaign to capture Papua pushed the army and the government towards the Soviet Union, which was working to increase its influence in Indonesia to the detriment of both the United States and China. In January 1960 Khrushchev had visited Jakarta and extended a US\$250 million credit to Indonesia. In January 1961 Nasution went to Moscow and got a Soviet loan of US\$450 million for arms. The army now began to grow in size for the first time since the Revolution, reaching about 300,000 men in 1961 and 330,000 by late 1962. An increasing amount of Indonesia's military hardware was of Soviet origin, including modern fighters and long-range bombers for the air force and new ships for the navy. Indeed, much of the new equipment went to the navy and air force, services which Sukarno found more cooperative than the army. But the Papua campaign still remained at a fairly low level of military activity. When John F. Kennedy assumed the American Presidency in January 1961, he set about countering Soviet influence in Indonesia by working for a negotiated settlement of the Papua issue.

As the military's attention was drawn increasingly towards the Papua campaign, army negotiations with the PRRI rebels since late 1958 at last bore fruit. By now the rebels were running out of ammunition and other supplies. In February–April 1961 a series of *Pěrnesta* groups surrendered in North Sulawesi. Then Sjafruddin ordered his forces to surrender and between June and October 1961 many did so. Simbolon, Zulkifli Lubis, Sumual, Sjafruddin, Natsir and the other leaders were returned to Jakarta. Sumitro Djojohadikusumo was abroad, where he remained until 1967. Many Acehnese

rebels, **Darul Islam** fighters in West Java and followers of Kahar Muzakkar also laid down their arms. But Kahar himself remained in the hills of South Sulawesi, increasingly isolated by government forces, until he was killed in February 1965. By October 1961 some 100,000 rebels had surrendered. Despite Sukarno's insistence upon harsh treatment of the leaders, the army merely placed Sjafruddin and the other leaders under loose house or city arrest and did not charge them. Although the army could not forgive rebellion, many of its leaders were sympathetic towards individuals who had joined PRRI.

Sukarno remained critical of the gentle treatment the army offered the PRRI leaders and finally won a victory over Nasution in this matter. The sense of domestic radicalism rose and the conspiratorial atmosphere was heightened by another assassination attempt on the President in January 1962 while he was visiting South Sulawesi. Sukarno now insisted that his enemies be punished. In January Sjafruddin, Natsir, Simbolon, Burhanuddin and many other senior leaders of **Masyumi** and PSI were imprisoned. The President's old antagonist Sjahrir, who was ill and had been little involved in politics since the Revolution, was also arrested; in 1965 he was allowed to go to Switzerland for medical treatment, too late to save his life. With the imprisonment of men who had been part of the central core of nationalist leaders since the Revolution and before, Indonesian politics were clearly growing more bitter.

The ending of PRRI freed the army to concentrate upon both its new objective in Papua and its old **Darul Islam** enemy in West Java. Late in 1961 a new offensive was launched against **Darul Islam**. Kartosuwirjo was wounded in April 1962, shattering his followers' faith in his invincibility. In June he was captured and tried both for rebellion and for an assassination attempt on Sukarno the month before. He was executed in September. Relative security was restored to the countryside of West Java for the first time since the Revolution.

The army and Nasution increasingly dominated affairs, despite Sukarno's efforts to gain the initiative and the army's own persistent unpopularity. Sukarno wanted the Papua campaign to be a means of galvanising Indonesia into the mass momentum that he felt to be essential to ongoing revolution and for which his leadership talents were uniquely suited. PKI also saw an opportunity to increase its national role. But there was a danger that the army would dominate events yet again. Both Sukarno and PKI therefore wanted to prevent the Papua campaign from becoming a wholly military operation.

As a basic precaution, Sukarno had to remain in control of the Papua campaign. In December 1961 a new Supreme Operations Command (**Koti: Komando Operasi Tertinggi**) for the liberation of Papua was established. Sukarno was its commander, Nasution his deputy and Major-General Yani his chief of staff. The fighting was to be in the hands of a Mandala Command headed by Major-General Soeharto. Sukarno also acted to reduce Nasution's predominance within the military. In January 1962 an Indonesian force suffered a serious defeat off Papua in which the deputy commander of the navy and 50 others died. The army insisted on the removal of Surjadarma from command of the air force for failure to provide adequate air support. Sukarno replaced him with Air Vice-Marshal Omar Dhani, who was at first thought to be less committed to the President. But Sukarno cultivated Omar Dhani's vanity and he soon became an

ally of the President and PKI against the army leaders. Sukarno also encouraged rivals to Nasution within the army. Nasution wanted to become commander of all the armed forces, but in June 1962 he was outmanoeuvred by Sukarno (with the support of Omar Dhani) and suffered a major political defeat. Sukarno made Nasution merely chief of staff of the armed forces (the first to fill this position since November 1953) with only coordinating and civil defence roles; he remained Minister of Defence and Security. He was replaced as army chief of staff by Yani, who was as implacably anti-PKI as Nasution but more amenable to Sukarno's influence.

PKI used the Papua campaign to increase its own influence and membership. In July 1962 PKI's peasant front (BTI) claimed 5.7 million members, said to be one-quarter of all adult peasants. Later in the year SOBSI claimed nearly 3.3 million members. Early in 1963 the youth front *Pemuda Rakyat* and *Gérwani (Gérakan Wanita Indonesia)*, Indonesian Women's Movement, established 1954) each claimed 1.5 million members. PKI itself claimed over 2 million members by the end of 1962, making it the largest Communist party in any non-Communist nation. The PKI intellectuals' front *Lekra* claimed 100,000 members in May 1963 and was by now promoting a bitter attack on the 'bourgeois' mentality of its opponents in intellectual circles. Pramoedya and the leftists of *Lekra* were supported by the PNI intellectuals' front LKN (*Lembaga Kebudayaan Nasional*, National Cultural Institute) under the leadership of Sitor Situmorang (b. 1924), a writer who staunchly endorsed Sukarno and his *Manipol-USDEK*. These intellectuals provided a kind of legitimacy for Sukarno's drive for orthodoxy and the repression of his opponents. In March 1962 Sukarno appointed Aidit and Njoto advisory Ministers without Portfolio. But this left them out of the inner cabinet and was a potential embarrassment for them since it carried the risk of responsibility without power. PKI was not any closer to power; it was merely more obvious and objectionable to its enemies.

As the economy settled into permanent hyperinflation (which remained around 100 per cent per annum from late 1961 to 1964) and the nation drifted into radicalism, as the military became increasingly dependent on the Soviet Union and PKI grew rapidly, the United States became more deeply worried about its influence in Indonesia. In something of a replay of the diplomacy of the Revolution, the Americans belatedly pressured the Netherlands to negotiate a Papua settlement. By now the Dutch realised that the price of retaining sovereignty over Papua would probably be serious and prolonged jungle warfare. The lesson of Nehru's military occupation of Goa and two other Portuguese enclaves in India in December 1961 after negotiations had failed was not lost on the Netherlands, although of course Papua was a military problem on a very different scale. In January 1962 the Dutch said that they were willing to negotiate. In February President Kennedy sent his brother, the Attorney General Robert F. Kennedy, to Indonesia and the Netherlands as mediator. This first series of negotiations broke down in March and Indonesian infiltration of Papua was increased, but new negotiations followed with American mediation.

On 15 August 1962 a settlement of the Papua issue was at last achieved. The Dutch agreed to transfer the territory on 1 October 1962 to an interim UN administration which would turn it over to Indonesia by 1 May 1963. Before the end of 1969 Jakarta would hold an 'act of free choice' in Papua to see whether its people wished to remain

within Indonesia. An exodus of Dutch citizens from Papua began immediately.

The Papua victory ushered in one of the most uncertain periods of guided democracy, one which pushed the nation on the road to chaos by making a return to stability seem even less attractive. The army feared that martial law would be lifted and military budgets cut; PKI feared that less frenetic politics would block its growth; Sukarno feared that the congenial mass emotionalism of the Papua campaign would come to an end, derailing his return to the revolutionary spirit. There was, thus, considerable ambivalence about the future.

The United States now attempted to draw Indonesia away from its apparently leftward course. After the Papua success the Americans enjoyed substantial goodwill among the non-Communist elite, but PKI understandably labelled the United States the nation's most dangerous enemy. In November 1962 a team of the International Monetary Fund visited Jakarta to consider economic reforms. Assistance from American sources would be impossible if PKI had power, so in early 1963 Sukarno told PKI that this was not the time to push for prominent places in the cabinet. After more study and discussion, the Indonesian government announced major new steps in May 1963. On the first of the month martial law was lifted. On 26 May drastic budget cuts (including military expenditures), tight credit, price increases, a de facto devaluation and a doubling of government salaries were announced. These measures were the price of American and International Monetary Fund aid. Urban consumers and small businesspeople were particularly badly affected and there was much public protest.

But already a new foreign policy issue was emerging. In the course of 1961 Malaya, Singapore and the British worked out a solution to several mutual problems: Singapore's desire for independence, Malaya's apprehension at the size of its Chinese minority and the racial implications of any merger with Singapore, and Britain's desire to make some arrangement for the future of its territories in Borneo (Sabah, Brunei and Sarawak). The solution seemed to be a merger of all of them into a new Federation of Malaysia.

Jakarta was not entirely pleased. Indonesia's relations with Malaya had been ambivalent since Malayan independence in 1957. Many Indonesian leaders regarded Malaya as somehow less truly independent since it had had no revolution, and were suspicious of the continuing British presence there, jealous of the economic successes of Malaya and deeply offended by Malayan and Singaporean support for PRRI. Now it looked as if Malaysia would be both neo-colonial, since British bases would remain, and an opening for the dynamic Chinese community of Singapore to dominate the new nation and thus (so some Indonesians reasoned) to promote Chinese influence and the growth of Communism in the region.

Nor were the Borneo territories enthusiastic about the Malaysia proposals. The strongest opposition arose in Brunei. In December 1962, Shaikh A. M. Azahari, the leader of the Brunei People's Party (**Partai Ra'ayat**), launched a short-lived rebellion against federation and in favour of an independent state of North Kalimantan. He had been in Indonesia during the Revolution and had maintained contact with Nasution, who sympathised with Azahari's aims. But contacts with the Brunei rebels were quickly monopolised by the Indonesian Central Intelligence Board (**Badan Pusat Intelijens**) directed by Subandrio. In January 1963 Sukarno said that the Malaysia proposal was

unacceptable to Indonesia and Subandrio defined the Indonesian attitude as one of 'confrontation'.

The Americans were as committed to the British and Malaysia as they were to restoring relations with Jakarta. Sukarno and many others in Indonesia wanted American aid and opposed Malaysia at the same time. For several months efforts were made to reconcile these interests. The Philippines government of President Diosdado Macapagal further complicated matters by putting forward its own claim to Sabah on the basis of historic links with the Sultanate of Sulu. Indonesian–Malayan–Filipino ministerial meetings and summit conferences among Sukarno, Macapagal and Malaya's Tunku Abdul Rahman were held in May–August 1963. For a time there was talk of a loose confederation of the three states to be called 'Maphilindo'. A compromise seemed possible in August when Malaya agreed to hold a test of opinion in Sarawak and Sabah before federation (in July the oil-rich state of Brunei had already announced that it would remain outside Malaysia). It seemed as if Sukarno and Subandrio were willing to compromise their anti-colonialism in the interest of economic stabilisation.

China was strongly opposed to Malaysia. The American commitment in South Vietnam was growing rapidly and the Chinese disliked the prospect of yet another pro-Western nation on their southern flanks, to be added to Thailand, South Vietnam, the Philippines and Taiwan. PKI was fearful of a general turn towards the United States in Indonesia itself. The Sino–Soviet split was now beyond reconciliation and the Soviet Union had clearly used the Papua campaign to increase its influence with the Indonesian government and military rather than to support PKI. When the Soviet Union signed the nuclear test ban treaty in August 1963, the Chinese feared that the Soviets were prepared to conspire with the Americans to contain China. China and PKI thus hoped for a radical anti-Malaysia policy which might frustrate the creation of Malaysia and perhaps tie down British troops there, while wrecking the economic stabilisation scheme and American influence in Jakarta. But neither desired a vast growth in a Soviet-supplied military.

There was thus a dangerous three-cornered competition of interests among the United States, the Soviet Union and China in the international sphere, and another among Sukarno, the army and PKI in the domestic sphere. The first step towards a resolution of these competitions occurred in September 1963.

Before the results of the test of opinion in Sarawak and Sabah were reported, it was announced that Malaysia would come into existence on 16 September 1963. This appeared to be a grave insult to Indonesia, whose leaders did not pause to consider that their questioning of Malaysia had seemed even greater effrontery across the Straits of Malacca. PKI brought its members onto the streets in mass demonstrations against Malaysia. The British Embassy and 21 staff houses in Jakarta were burned down. The Malayan Embassy was attacked and in retaliation the Indonesian Embassy in Kuala Lumpur was attacked. On 17 September Malaysia broke off diplomatic relations and within four days Indonesia severed all relations with Malaya and Singapore, which handled nearly half the nation's exports. On 25 September Sukarno announced that he would 'gobble Malaysia raw' (*ganyang Malaysia*, usually but less accurately translated as 'crush Malaysia'). The United States abandoned its hope of remaining friendly with both Malaysia and Indonesia at the same time and the economic reform scheme was

wrecked. China and the Soviet Union both praised Sukarno's policy.

Confrontation was now elevated to the prime issue of the day. Sukarno could again drive the revolutionary spirit onward, the military could look forward to increased budgets and PKI could take the lead in mass agitation. Indonesia moved rapidly into an anti-American diplomatic orbit, but the events within the nation were even more dramatic.

Sukarno was concerned that the Malaysia campaign should not become a vehicle for Nasution and the army to dominate affairs. He strengthened Yani's position in the army through a reorganisation of the Supreme Operations Command (**Koti**) in July 1963. Yani remained its chief of staff but Nasution ceased to be deputy commander. Two of its five sections were under army control, but its intelligence role was now placed under Suban drio, operations were put under an air force officer and mobilisation under a civilian. Soeharto had already been given a new and eventually crucial post in May 1963, at the end of the Papua campaign, when he was put in command of the new Army Strategic Reserve Command (**Kostrad: Komando Cadang an Strategis Angkatan Darat**), comprising airborne, infantry, armoured and artillery units. Soeharto was now gaining a reputation as an able leader of troops and – much less accurately – as a simple man who resisted the extravagant corruption of other top generals.

It was PKI, however, which took the most dramatic steps to gain the initiative. Given the many influences, contacts and intrigues, both domestic and international, surrounding Indonesian affairs by this time, the precise motivation for PKI's new assertiveness is not clear. For whatever combination of reasons, the Aidit leadership attempted to break out of its domestic restraints. Late in September 1963 Aidit returned from extended visits to the Soviet Union and China. On his return, for the first time he aligned PKI unequivocally with China against the Soviet Union. It is possible that Aidit had accepted Chinese advice to mount a domestic political offensive. But he also had his own reasons for believing that the anti-Malaysia campaign had only narrowly rescued Indonesia from a turn towards the United States. The possibility of a domestic anti-PKI move was clearly present. PKI thus attempted to push for greater power, since offence seemed now to be the best means of defence.

But the difficulties facing PKI soon became clear. China shortly became so confident of its influence in Jakarta at government-to-government level that its support of PKI rural policies may have been qualified. The Soviet Union looked to the Indonesian army and anti-PKI leftists for allies. The Americans almost certainly became involved in clandestine encouragement of anti-Communists. And, most importantly, PKI's actions completed the alienation of many PNI supporters and drove NU and crucial army officers into active opposition in Java. The national united front strategy was thus endangered by PKI itself. Its amorphous mass base was not strong enough to withstand such a combination of circumstances, although at the time many observers in Indonesia and abroad believed that PKI was on the threshold of power, with Sukarno as its mentor.

Late in 1963 PKI launched a 'unilateral action' campaign to carry out land reform laws of 1959–60, the implementation of which had hardly begun. As PKI villagers began seizing land – especially in Central and East Java but also in Bali, West Java and North Sumatra – they came into violent conflict with landlords (many of whom were

committed Muslims or PNI supporters), bureaucrats, army managers and, particularly in East Java, with *santri* supporters of NU. Brawls, burnings, kidnappings and killings spread, much of the violence upon communal lines as *abangan* supporters of PKI clashed with *santris*. In East Java, anti-PKI violence was spearheaded by the NU youth group *Ansor*. In some ways PKI was now reviving the assertive rural policies which followed Musso's return in August 1948, but with the crucial difference that it now had no military forces. Perhaps the Aidit leadership was as much misled by Communist membership figures and Sukarno's favour as were PKI's enemies into believing that PKI was now strong enough to withstand its opponents.

A respected voice of moderation in the cabinet was removed by the death of Djuanda in November 1963. Thereafter a triumvirate of Subandrio, Chaerul Saleh and Leimena took charge, with Subandrio increasingly the dominant figure. He now began to act as an ally of PKI, probably because he hoped to establish himself as Sukarno's ultimate successor and knew that the army would not support him. In return, the PKI leadership felt obliged to veil its dislike of Subandrio. PKI now increasingly demanded the wholesale 'retooling' of anti-PKI government officials.

On 17 August 1963 a group of intellectuals who were opposed to *Lekra* proclaimed a Cultural Manifesto (*Manikēbu: Manifes Kēbudayaan*) which, while necessarily endorsing *Pancasila*, failed to proclaim *Manipol-USDEK* or *Nasakom* and called for a national culture dominated by no particular political ideology. The distinguished literary critic H. B. Jassin (1917–2000) was among the inspirers of *Manikēbu*. PKI and *Lekra*, with the support of PNI's intellectual front (LKN), heatedly denounced this as a bourgeois, non-revolutionary and 'universal humanist' deviation, and Sukarno agreed. On 8 May 1964 he banned *Manikēbu* on the grounds that there was room for only one manifesto in Indonesia and that was *Manipol*. PKI and its student following now began hounding intellectual opponents even more actively in the name of 'retooling'. Shortly after, Jassin was dismissed from his lectureship at the University of Indonesia in Jakarta.

The Americans still had futile hopes of stopping the leftward swing in Indonesia. Their commitment in South Vietnam was increasingly heavy and difficult, especially after the Buddhist crisis of 1963 and the overthrow and assassination of Ngo Dinh Diem in November, and the Americans feared the prospect of Indonesia becoming a Communist or pro-Communist state. In January 1964 Robert F. Kennedy arranged a Malaysia–Indonesia ceasefire. But even as he was doing so PKI workers were taking over British plantations and businesses. Yet again the army stepped in to run them. Further efforts at Malaysia–Indonesia–Philippines negotiations followed, but broke down in March. In that same month Sukarno announced that the United States could 'go to hell' with its aid. Official American influence in Jakarta was now virtually dead. A final meeting among Sukarno, Abdul Rahman and Macapagal in Tokyo in June was a total failure.

Meanwhile the small-scale border war in the jungles of Kalimantan was clearly being won by the Malaysian and British forces. The Indonesian army was reluctant to commit too many troops in Kalimantan, for the prospect of a domestic crisis was increasing. In May 1964 Sukarno placed Air Marshal Omar Dhani in charge of a Vigilance Command (*Koga: Komando Siaga*) to pursue confrontation with Malaysia.

The army feared that the air force would now gain control of the campaign. In August and September 1964 small-scale Indonesian incursions into peninsular West Malaysia took place, apparently without Yani's approval. PKI meanwhile took the lead in mobilising mass support for confrontation and in March 1964 chairmen of the National Front committees at all levels of government, many of them PKI, were given a voice in administrative affairs. Domestic instability was increased by a bad rice harvest in February and rising inflation, which reached 134 per cent in 1964.

As its worries about the direction of events grew, the army leadership began to obstruct confrontation and established secret contacts with Malaysia. In June Yani persuaded Sukarno to limit *Koga*'s authority to retaliation in the event of a British attack. In October the army won an alteration in the *Koga* command structure. Omar Dhani remained in command, but his authority was restricted to Sumatra and Kalimantan, while army units assigned to the Malaysia campaign were first transferred to *Kostrad* under Soeharto, who kept many of the best troops available for action in Java.

By late 1964 the violence surrounding PKI's 'unilateral action' campaign had placed PKI on the defensive in Central and East Java and Bali, and the leadership seemed to be losing control of its cadres at lower levels. Its enemies began to conclude that PKI was not as powerful as it and Sukarno claimed. By now a domestic explosion was building up, but the conspiracies that lay behind it are naturally far from clear. In stages which have yet to be explained, an army group of which intelligence officers were crucial members apparently established links with NU and other Islamic leaders, and perhaps with anti-PKI radicals, other anti-Communists and Western intelligence agencies. Out of this emerged intrigues aimed primarily against PKI, Subandrio, Sukarno and those military officers who seemed unable or unwilling to stand against these three, either out of ideological conviction or because they found the prevalent corruption too congenial. Somewhere near the centre of these intrigues was an army intelligence organisation known as *Opsus (Opérasi Khusus)*, Special Operations) run by Lieutenant Colonel Ali Murtopo (1924–84) under the general direction of Soeharto, to whom Yani gave responsibility for the army's clandestine contacts with Malaysia. Other intrigues abounded, many of them ephemeral. Within the military there was growing dissatisfaction with the extravagant corruption of some of the Jakarta generals. Several intelligence officers were by now in well-established contact with PKI's underground agent Sjam; their relationship with anti-PKI intelligence networks is unknown.

The Soviet Union was apparently working to increase its influence with the military and the *Murba* party in 1964 in an effort to counteract Sukarno's and PKI's commitment to China. Although the Russians were a major source of economic and military aid to Indonesia, they could count on few committed friends within the army or government. Of those army officers who received training overseas, the vast majority (something like 4000 during 1958–65) went to the United States, although it must be said that many of these men were disillusioned by their personal observations of American life, especially its racism and urban slums. Some air force and navy officers had received technical training in the Soviet Union but they, too, often found daily life there unappealing. Several *Murba* leaders, however, were close to the Russians. This

was especially true of Adam Malik, who had been ambassador to Moscow in 1959.

In September 1964 a group of anti-PKI journalists led by Adam Malik formed a Body for the Supporters (or Spreaders) of Sukarnoism (**Badan Pendukung** – or **Penyebar – Sukarnoismě**). Chaerul Saleh and Yani supported this Body in an attempt to divorce Sukarno from PKI. Sukarno recognised the aim and banned the Body on 17 December 1964; he later claimed that it had been a plot by the American Central Intelligence Agency. The army then took other steps to coordinate its allies. In October 1964 it established a body called **Sekber Golkar** (**Sekretariat Bersama Golongan Karya**, Joint Secretariat of Functional Groups). The army–civilian cooperative bodies and some former affiliates of the banned PSI and **Masyumi** joined. But the army was not yet in a position to take positive action.

By now the unity of the military itself was in doubt. This both encouraged PKI and impelled anti-PKI officers to move quickly. The air force was already close to PKI and Sukarno, and opposed to the army. The navy tended to side with the army, but the allegiance of some of its junior officers was uncertain. In March 1965 a mutiny of ‘progressive’ naval officers (among them a son of Leimena) in Surabaya ended in the transfer or dismissal of 145 officers. The top army leadership was divisible into at least two factions, those who looked to Yani or to Nasution. Both were anti-PKI, but Yani found Sukarno too attractive and the Jakarta high-life too enjoyable for the liking of some officers. Soeharto was among the senior officers who worked to prevent these army factions becoming openly antagonistic.

Even more ominously, PKI was making inroads in the army, especially in the Diponégoro and Brawijaya Divisions of Central and East Java. According to the later testimony of Sjam, in November 1964 PKI established a Special Bureau (**Biro Khusus**) under his direction to coordinate its infiltration of the military. By mid-1965, again according to Sjam, PKI had regular contacts with some 450 sympathetic officers in Central and East Java and some 200–250 elsewhere. How much of this was known to anti-PKI officers at the time is not certain, but there is no doubt that the army was making its own efforts to infiltrate PKI. The conspiratorial complexities and possibilities of this period are suggested by the fact that the head of army intelligence, Major-General S. Parman (1918–1965), was a younger brother of the PKI Politburo member Sakirman (1911–?67).

As public anti-American feelings reached a frenzy in late 1964 and early 1965, partly in response to the rapid escalation of the American war in Vietnam, China opened a diplomatic offensive in Jakarta which is still surrounded by some mystery. On 16 October 1964 China exploded its first nuclear device. This coincided with the sudden removal of Khrushchev from power in the Soviet Union, initiating uncertainty about the new Russian leadership’s foreign policy aims. Three weeks later Sukarno met with Zhou Enlai in Shanghai for secret discussions. In mid-November the director of the Indonesian army arsenal said that Indonesia, too, would have an A-bomb in 1965. In late November the Chinese Foreign Minister Chen Yi (Ch'en Yi) visited Jakarta and it was announced that China and Indonesia would cooperate in foreign policy matters; reports also said that Chinese training in nuclear technology was promised. Further statements about an impending Indonesian nuclear explosion followed.

Some observers believe that China, which was increasingly confident of Indonesian

governmental cooperation, offered to explode a nuclear device in Indonesian territory and let Indonesia take credit for it in order to reduce the army's hostility and weaken Soviet influence. The Chinese could not match Soviet supplies of conventional armaments, but they may have hoped to capitalise on the uncertainty surrounding the new Soviet leadership. In March 1964 China had also offered to turn the assets of the Bank of China in Jakarta over to the Indonesian government, and did so in November. This move is still not entirely explained. The Bank was believed to be PKI's main source of Chinese financial aid. That this represented a further step in the Jakarta–Beijing alliance is clear. What is not clear is whether this was intended to give the Indonesian government leverage to restrain the adventuristic rural policies of PKI before they threatened the political balance which China seemed now to be exploiting with success.

By December 1964 PKI was trying to cool down its 'unilateral actions', which were revealing that its enormous membership could be neither entirely controlled nor used as a base for constructive revolutionary action. Over the next few months its peasants' front (BTI) activists were restrained, but NU continued its counteroffensive in East Java with the support of local PNI followers. The killings were still, however, on a small scale compared to what was to follow in late 1965 and 1966. PKI continued its verbal offensive against army 'bureaucratic capitalists' and others in need of 'retooling' and, like the Chinese government, began to turn its attention again to gaining more power at the top in Jakarta rather than in the countryside. The party was now rather like a tightrope walker losing his balance who tries to run the last few steps.

Jakarta's alliance with Beijing was sealed in January 1965 when Indonesia withdrew from the United Nations after Malaysia had been given a non-permanent seat in the Security Council. This also increased Indonesia's diplomatic isolation from other Afro-Asian nations. Subandrio then visited China to confirm the friendship. At his trial later he said that Zhou Enlai offered him weapons to arm a people's militia, the only form of military force which PKI might be able to organise. It was at this point that Aidit proposed to Sukarno the creation of a 'fifth force' of armed workers and peasants, to be added to the existing navy, army, police and air force, and the appointment of *Nasakom* advisers (that is, PKI cadres) to existing armed forces units. These proposals threatened the army directly, as Subandrio also appeared to do when he said in January that some former comrades in arms had become counter-revolutionaries and might have to be abandoned.

PKI's position in Jakarta was apparently strengthened in January 1965 when Sukarno banned the *Murba* party. This is evidence for those who argue that Sukarno genuinely wished PKI to come to power, for *Murba* leaders such as Adam Malik had had much influence with Sukarno, as did Chaerul Saleh who, although non-party, was thought of as a *Murba* man. *Murba* had long opposed PKI for leadership of the left, and was also apparently favoured by the Soviet Union. PKI now stepped up demands for the 'retooling' of Malik and Chaerul Saleh. They lost some power in a cabinet reshuffle in March but remained in the government.

In late February, 21 newspapers in Jakarta and Medan which opposed PKI were suspended. The army reacted by beginning to publish its own newspapers. In the same month, as anti-American sentiments increased still further in response to the bombings

of North Vietnam, PKI unions and other leftists seized American business enterprises. The army took over their management. Stanvac, Caltex and Shell were placed under government supervision in March and they found it increasingly difficult to carry on normal operations. The economy was now in a state of near chaos. In April the American Peace Corps was expelled, but discussions with the United States and other potential sources of economic aid apparently continued. Even at the height of anti-Western feelings, Indonesia's main trading partners remained the United States, Japan and West Germany.

Chinese delegations paid frequent visits to Jakarta. In April 1965 Zhou Enlai himself came. The Chinese publicly urged the creation of a 'fifth force' but the army dragged its feet. Nor did Sukarno order that a 'fifth force' be formed, which is evidence for those who believe that the President had no genuine intention of helping PKI to power but sought only to pressure the army leadership. In May the conspiratorial atmosphere was heightened by Sukarno's revelation of a telegram sent to London by the British ambassador in Jakarta – the so-called 'Gilchrist letter' – which in Sukarno's view confirmed the existence of army-British plots against the regime.

In May Yani saw Sukarno about the '*Nasakom*isation' of the army. It was never clear just what Sukarno thought this meant in practice. On this occasion he accepted the army interpretation that it amounted to a spirit of unity, linking nationalism, religion and Communism, rather than any formal structures which would give PKI a role in army affairs. Soon thereafter the army announced that it was already *Nasakom* in spirit, so that nothing further need be done.

But the 'fifth force' proposals were not dead. On 31 May 1965 Sukarno spoke of Zhou's offer to arm the people and told the four armed services to submit plans for doing so. Yani and Nasution continued to play for time by saying that all the people should be armed, not just the workers and peasants (the accepted euphemism for PKI's organised followers), and that the 'fifth force' should be controlled by the army. In June the navy appeared to give some support to the idea. The police force was factionalised, but some of its officers (especially in Central and East Java) were sympathetic to PKI. In June one such officer was appointed police commander in Jakarta. But it was the air force under Omar Dhani which acted to give substance to a 'fifth force'. On 5 July it began giving short training courses to civilians from PKI's mass organisations at Halim Pérدانакусумah air force base south-east of Jakarta. By late September over 2000 civilians had attended these courses.

PKI's apparent surge towards dominance in Jakarta continued. Early in August 1965, under pressure from Sukarno, PNI leaders who were opposed to cooperation with PKI and who had friends in anti-PKI army circles were purged. Hardi, Hadisubeno Sosrowerdojo (1912–71), and about 150 other PNI leaders were suspended. This left Ali Sastroamidjojo and his followers, who were at least willing to play at *Nasakomisation*, in charge. In the same month PKI released its last membership figures. Over 27 million Indonesians were claimed as members of PKI or its mass organisations. Allowing for multiple memberships this probably represented about 20 million individuals. How much was merely nominal or even fictitious is unclear. It is difficult to account for more than about one-quarter of this membership on the basis of the number who were later killed, imprisoned, disenfranchised for political reasons in the

1971 elections, or who would have died of natural causes by 1971. The experience of previous moves towards rural radicalism in Java suggests that PKI's rural base is more likely to have shrunk than expanded since 1963.

Much depended upon the President, for many Indonesians agreed with him in finding the idea of Indonesia without Sukarno almost unthinkable. Whom did he favour, what revolutionary step would he next announce, who could influence him? By early 1965 a new question was becoming prominent: who would succeed him? He had been suffering from a kidney complaint which some believed to be threatening his life, and the soothsayers of Indonesia increasingly predicted the fall or death of Sukarno. In the first week of August 1965 Sukarno suddenly vomited and collapsed while receiving a delegation. He soon recovered, but the intrigues now went into high gear as the President's mortality was forcibly impressed upon political leaders. Aedit hastened back from China and, according to later trial evidence (which is suspect), at this point he decided to encourage a group of 'progressive' army officers who were preparing to act against the army's top leadership. Anti-PKI forces were also drawing together.

In August 1965 Sukarno withdrew Indonesia from remaining links with the capitalist world (International Monetary Fund, Interpol, World Bank). When Lee Kuan Yew tearfully announced Singapore's separation from Malaysia on 9 August, Sukarno viewed this as confirmation of the righteousness of confrontation. But Singapore's separation also removed most of the basis for the army leaders' fears of Malaysia and increased their inclination to end confrontation.

In his Independence Day speech of 17 August Sukarno announced an anti-imperialist Jakarta–Pnom Penh–Hanoi–Beijing–Pyongyang axis, said that the people should be armed, intimated that the army generals were obstructing him in this and promised a decision soon. On 16–19 September Omar Dhani went secretly to China upon Sukarno's instructions to discuss, among other things, the Chinese offer of small arms, without prior notification having been given to Nasution as Defence Minister. By now China appears to have abandoned the idea of offering Indonesia a nuclear bomb (if, indeed, it had really intended to do so), probably for fear of appearing so irresponsible that the Americans or Soviets might feel justified in making a pre-emptive strike against China. But Chinese support of a 'fifth force' remained strong.

The social, political and economic structures of the nation were now near to collapse. Inflation was extreme, with prices rising at something like 500 per cent for the year. By the end of 1965 the price of rice was believed to be rising at an annual rate of 900 per cent. The black market rate for the Rupiah against the US dollar plunged from Rp.5100 at the beginning of 1965 to Rp.17,500 by the third quarter of the year and Rp.50,000 by the fourth. In the cities, towns and villages, Communists and anti-Communists believed stories of assassination squads being prepared and lists of victims being drawn up. Prophesies, omens and violence spread. By late September, with tens of thousands of troops gathering in Jakarta in preparation for Armed Forces Day on 5 October, expectations of a coup were high. On 27 September Yani finally announced that the army opposed the creation of a 'fifth force' or *Nasakomisation* of the military in any structural sense.

On the night of 30 September–1 October 1965 the tensions were released by an ill-planned coup attempt in Jakarta. What happened on that night and the following days is

reasonably clear. But complicated and sometimes partisan arguments continue over who masterminded the events and what manoeuvres lay behind them. The intricacies of the political scene, the contacts, friendships and hatreds that linked most of the major participants to one another, and the suspect nature of much of the evidence, make it unlikely that the full truth will ever be known. It seems improbable that there was a single mastermind controlling all the events, and interpretations which attempt to explain events solely in terms of a PKI, army, Sukarno or Soeharto plot must be treated with caution.

During the night of 30 September a battalion of the palace guard commanded by Lieutenant Colonel Untung (formerly of the Diponégoro Division), another from the Diponégoro Division, one from the Brawijaya Division, and civilians from PKI's **Pemuda Rakyat**, left Halim air base. They went to abduct Nasution, Yani, Parman and four other senior army generals from their houses in Jakarta. The leaders of the coup attempt included Brigadier General Supardjo of the Siliwangi Division and the Diponégoro Division's head of intelligence. Untung appears to have been a pawn. They had the support of Omar Dhani, who gave them Halim air base as their headquarters and was present there himself. They also had contacts with Sjam's PKI Special Bureau and some members of the PKI Politburo were at least vaguely aware of their plans. But Aidit was the only senior PKI leader present at Halim. Njoto and Lukman were both out of Jakarta, as were Subandrio, Chaerul Saleh and Ali Sastroamidjojo.

The attempted coup was typified by extraordinary incompetence and confusion. Yani and two other generals were killed at their houses when they resisted arrest. Nasution escaped and spent the rest of the night and part of the next day in hiding, but his five-year-old daughter was shot and later died on 6 October and one of his aides was captured. This aide, the three generals' bodies and the three taken alive were brought to Halim, where Parman and the three other living captives were murdered. **Gérwani** and **Pemuda Rakyat** members took part in these killings. All seven bodies were then thrown down a disused well. With the killings of this night a new threshold of violence was crossed. They also wiped out the Yani faction among the top generals and the army thus fell to those more willing to stand against Sukarno and the army's enemies. About 2000 troops of the coup group meanwhile occupied three sides of Medan Mérdeka commanding the presidential palace, the radio station and the telecommunications centre, but did not occupy the east side where the **Kostrad** headquarters was located.

Just before dawn on 1 October Soeharto, who was not on the coup group's abduction list, went to **Kostrad** upon being told of the disappearance of the generals and shooting at their houses. From there he could see soldiers occupying Medan Mérdeka. Nasution and Yani were missing, so Soeharto took command of the army with the agreement of those army generals he could contact, the police and the navy. He ordered all soldiers confined to barracks unless specifically ordered by him to move, and set about finding out what was happening. The army had been planning how it should respond to a contingency such as had now erupted, so as Soeharto and his supporters began taking control of the chaos they had this thinking to guide them. This sophisticated game planning included trapping the PKI in such a way as to justify destroying it, something that Soeharto was about to do.

Just after seven o'clock the insurgents announced over the radio that the '30

'September Movement' was a military group which had acted to safeguard Sukarno from a coup plotted by a council of corrupt, high-living Jakarta generals who were tools of the American Central Intelligence Agency. About two hours later Sukarno, who had headed for the presidential palace but turned away upon learning of the presence of unidentified troops, arrived at Halim; he later said that this was in order to be near an aircraft in case he needed to flee. What Sukarno had known about plans for a coup has never been clarified. At Halim he met with Omar Dhani and other coup figures, but apparently Aidit was in a separate building. The President summoned Leimena, the commanders of the navy and police and others to the air base for consultations. But Sukarno never publicly endorsed the coup attempt, perhaps because he learned that six generals were dead but Nasution had escaped, circumstances which placed the success of the coup gravely in doubt. His presence at Halim, however, compromised him in the view of many army officers.

The soldiers on Medan Mérdeka were meanwhile getting hot, tired, hungry and thirsty, and the coup leaders failed to send provisions. Soeharto persuaded the Brawijaya troops to come over to **Kostrad** headquarters about 4 p.m. Two hours later the Diponégoro troops withdrew to Halim. Soeharto thus regained control of the centre of Jakarta without a shot. By this time Nasution had joined him and the events of the previous night were becoming clearer, although it was still not known that the six generals were murdered. At 4 p.m. Sukarno sent word that he was assuming command of the army himself but Soeharto ignored this entirely, the first evidence of the determination of this man whom the coup group had not thought to abduct.

At 9 p.m. Soeharto announced over the radio that six generals had been kidnapped by counter-revolutionaries but that he was now in control of the army and would crush the 30 September Movement and safeguard Sukarno. He then sent an ultimatum to the coup group at Halim. About 10 p.m. Sukarno left by car for his palace at Bogor. Then the coup leaders departed in the face of the expected **Kostrad** attack. Aidit flew to Yogyakarta and Omar Dhani to Madiun. Before dawn on 2 October the elite army paracommando regiment (RPKAD: **Resimen Para Komando Angkatan Darat**) moved in on Halim. After some skirmishes, the air force commander there ordered a ceasefire. The coup was over in Jakarta.

The Diponégoro Division in Central Java was the base of the military conspirators. During 1 October a series of intra-army coups left five of the Diponégoro's seven infantry battalions in the hands of the 30 September Movement. The PKI mayor of Surakarta announced his support and on 2 October, by which time the coup had utterly collapsed in Jakarta, PKI turned out in Yogyakarta for a march in support of the Movement. Also on 2 October, PKI's Jakarta daily **Harian Rakjat** incredibly published an editorial in praise of the Movement, which it depicted as an internal army affair. These events, in conjunction with the role of **Gérwani** and **Pemuda Rakyat** in the killings at Halim, sealed PKI's fate. Anti-PKI army officers no longer wanted to restrict or ban PKI: they now saw reason and occasion to annihilate it. Anti-PKI civilians, especially Islamic activists, were in hearty agreement. The army's anti-PKI contingency planning was about to bear fruit, assisted by the deadly incompetence of the coup group and its supporters.

The collapse of the coup in Jakarta demoralised the leading military conspirators in

Central Java. During the night of 1–2 October they withdrew to the Mount Mĕrapi–Mĕrbabu area with two companies of soldiers. The officers they left behind realised that the cause was lost and begged forgiveness. Jakarta thus regained control in the region, but the loyalty of many of the soldiers was still doubtful. Only after more trustworthy troops were moved in after mid-October was Soeharto confident of the restoration of order.

Again Indonesia was at a crossroads; again an experimental political system had produced crisis. Sukarno and PKI, with the support of the air force, pursued a policy aimed at destroying the dominance of the army, which after the crisis of 1956–7 emerged as the single most powerful political, economic and administrative force in the nation, because it was the most powerful military force. In doing so, they ensured the army's enmity. The army leadership manipulated the chaotic system to its own advantage, but by 1965 it was clear that unless someone stood firm the army would face serious threats to its position. NU similarly tried to manipulate the system to defend its role, but was pushed into active and violent opposition even before the army, when PKI threatened the religious and economic interests of its supporters.

On the night of 30 September 1965 the house of cards came prematurely crashing down. It was months before the consequences were clear, but on that night the balance of hostile forces which underlay guided democracy came to an end. Many observers have seen tragedy in the period, especially the tragedy of Sukarno, the man who outlived his time and used his popular support to maintain a regime of extravagant corruption and hypocrisy. But a greater tragedy lay in the suffering of the Indonesian people.

## **Chapter 21**

---

# **Creating the New Order, 1965–75**

For some months after the attempted coup of 1965, Indonesia's political future was in doubt. In the end, Soeharto established what was known as Indonesia's 'new order', to contrast it from the 'old order' of Sukarno's days. The new order began with much popular support from those groups that were anxious to be freed from the troubles of the past. There was talk of a new generation of young leaders and a new age in intellectual life, of a 'Generation of 66' (**Angkatan 66**). But within a few years the new order elite – at its heart a military faction supported by a small group of civilians – had alienated many original allies.

The period 1965–75 attracted mixed judgements from observers both within and outside the country. Rightists admired the Soeharto government for destroying PKI and adopting pro-Western policies. Leftists despised it for doing the same. Among less committed observers, there were many who admired the government's achievements in stabilising the economy, but who condemned its human rights record and corruption.

Comparisons can be drawn between the new order's policies in its first decade and those of the Ethical period of colonial rule described in [Chapter 14](#). The new order, too, justified much of its claim to legitimacy on its promises of national economic development and of improvements to levels of education and welfare. It delivered much of the first but less of the second in the period discussed in this chapter. The government's style was at best paternalistic and at worst oppressive. It sought popular involvement as a token of legitimacy, but only in carefully controlled ways. Much of the nation's economic development was in the hands of foreign enterprises and there was little growth of indigenous industries. Snouck Hurgronje's ideas regarding Islam were also of continuing significance, for the new order, too, displayed respect for Islam as private religious practice but determination that it should not become a powerful political force, once the initial period of alliance between Islamic activists and the pro-Soeharto military had succeeded in destroying PKI and ousting Sukarno.

There were other parallels between the Ethical policy and Soeharto's new order government which, however, reveal significant differences of scale. Notably, both employed political imprisonment to remove opponents, but the latter did so on a far larger scale than the former, and furthermore allowed torture of its prisoners. And the centralisation of economic, political, administrative and military power in the hands of a small elite was probably greater under Soeharto than in Dutch times.

One of the most important differences between the social setting of the new order

and the colonial period concerned Islam. For many reasons, some of which will be discussed below, Indonesia experienced an intensification of religious commitment within Islam and other religions after 1965. This was not without its hazards. Because of the activities of Islamic reformers and the reactions of their opponents since the early twentieth century, Indonesian society had come to be more firmly structured along communal (*aliran*) than class lines, a pattern reinforced by the politicisation of *aliran* over the period 1950–65. As a consequence, the prospects of domestic communal conflict were greater than at the turn of the century, especially within Javanese society.

The religious environment was made more volatile by the changing perceptions of the senior generation of Modernist Islamic leaders. They had lost some of the self-confidence of the early years of the twentieth century. Rather than awaiting others' recognition of what they regarded as their natural right to lead the nation, they became bitterly accustomed to the role of political outsiders. They now saw leadership as something to be won rather than assumed. Their belief that anyone who was shown the true Islam would naturally embrace it had meanwhile been shaken by the limited (albeit very significant) progress of the Modernist interpretation of Islam and the hostile reaction it sometimes produced.

Many Modernists turned their attention from politics to mission work (*dakwah*; Arabic *da'wa*, the call to walk in God's ways), by which they hoped the Islamisation of Indonesian society would be perfected. Only in this way, they felt, would Islam one day truly govern the life of the nation. This led many devout Muslims to devote their energies to educational and welfare institutions. But this shift of attention was born partly of frustration. Modernists' political frustration was completed when they realised after 1965 that the destruction of PKI would not catapult Islam to power. To this was added religious frustration born of the unexpected growth of other religions after 1965, which is discussed below. Just when Modernists concluded that Islam's future lay in a deeper Islamisation of society, they were confronted with this new challenge in the religious field. Sometimes their frustration turned to anger.

Orthodox Islam, on the other hand, appeared to be more able to adapt itself to changing political circumstances and maintained its strength and vitality in the countryside. Meanwhile a new generation of Islamic leaders was emerging which was sometimes unhappy with the leadership its elders gave and was less concerned about old issues, about the schism between Orthodoxy and Modernism, or about the difficulties of living within an increasingly multireligious society. These younger Muslims found it easier to respect younger Christian leaders, and this generation from both religious communities came to be looked upon by many Indonesians as one of the main hopes for the nation's future.

The social problems that the new order had to confront were greater than those faced by the Ethical reformers. This was partly because the Dutch failed to solve these problems decades before, and partly because the passage of time and the turbulent events since the Japanese conquest had exacerbated them. The Dutch failed to meet the welfare needs of a nation of 60.7 million people in 1930. It is perhaps not surprising, given decades of neglect and the urgent need first to regain control of the nation's economy in the years after 1965, that the new order government was initially unable to make much contribution to the welfare needs of its population, which reached 119.2

million in the 1971 census and 147.3 million in 1980.



*Al-Azhar mosque, Kebayoran Baru, Jakarta, built after independence and reflecting Middle Eastern influences*

Health and education standards remained low, but significantly better than in Dutch times. By 1974 there were 6221 doctors. In Java there was one doctor for every 21.7 thousand inhabitants and in the outer islands one for every 17.9 thousand (which did not mean easier access to a doctor there, for the population was dispersed over greater distances). The 1971 census showed that for people over the age of ten, the literacy rate (in any script) was 72 per cent among males and 50.3 per cent among females. But the general quality of the school system had been declining since the 1950s, so these literacy figures should not be taken as evidence that there was adequate provision of formal education. By 1973, although 57 per cent (11.8 million) of 7–12-year-olds were in primary school, that still left about 8.9 million in this group without schooling. At tertiary education level, the Indonesian government continued to surpass the Dutch record. Yet in 1973, only about one-quarter of one per cent of the population (329,300) were enrolled in state and private tertiary institutions, of which 117,600 were at state universities or institutes of higher learning. These numbers were quite low, but nevertheless represented more graduates than the nation could absorb at its level of development, and there was a growing problem of graduate unemployment. The quality of education at this level also attracted criticism. Only from the mid-1970s was the government able to make substantial new progress in health and education.

The nation's social problems were complicated by continuing urbanisation. In 1971 as much as 17.3 per cent of the population was classified as urban, as opposed to 14.8 per cent in 1961 and 3.8 per cent in 1930. By 1971 Jakarta had surpassed 4.5 million inhabitants. Java continued to have the majority of the nation's population (60.4 per cent in 1971) and the new order failed as the Dutch had failed to move any significant proportion of the inhabitants of Java to the outer islands, a policy now called 'transmigration'.

At the very centre of the complex and violent events which led to the inauguration and stabilisation of the new order regime stood the previously little-known General Soeharto. He was, like Sukarno, of Javanese ethnic origin (from Central rather than East

Java). Indeed, in his personal life Soeharto was more truly a son of rural Java than Sukarno, and he was therefore explicable, even (as it proved) admirable, to many of the people whom Sukarno regarded as his own special constituency. As a young man Soeharto was never exposed to the urban anticolonialism or higher Western education which influenced Sukarno's views. He went no farther than a *Muhammadiyah* junior high (MULO level) in Yogyakarta, which he left in 1939. Nor was he exposed to the grander forms of Japanese fascism in Jakarta which Sukarno found congenial during the Second World War.

As a teenager Soeharto lived with and assisted a religious teacher (*kyai*) who was famed as a shaman (*dukun*). Here he lived in that world on the boundaries between the popular version of Orthodox Islam, with its *Qur'anic* recitations and mysticism, and the spirit realm of Java, with its spectres, folk remedies and magic. He became, and remained, devoted to the intense inner mysticism of rural Java, a mysticism where Islam exists only in its more esoteric form and religious legalism has little force. Here Soeharto found an inner peace which may partly explain his apparent cool-headedness throughout his years of rule. Soeharto admired Sultan Hamengkubuwana IX of Yogyakarta and desired the kind of supernatural legitimacy which Javanese rulers claimed. He is said to have brought some holy regalia (*pusaka*) from the court of Surakarta to surround him in Jakarta in 1966, and to have returned them hastily when severe floods in Surakarta were interpreted as supernatural retribution for their removal.

In addition to his Javanese roots and inner strengths, Soeharto was an able politician. By 1965 he already had a circle of close allies within the army. His support among other officers rested not only on personal respect, but also on his willingness to allow his followers to reap financial rewards for their loyalty with little regard for legality. Nasution's long opposition to the corruption of the officer corps, on the other hand, made him unpopular among those who saw changing political circumstances at least partly in terms of their potential cash payoff. Nasution in fact made no effort to seize the initiative from Soeharto.

Soeharto's circle of allies extended beyond the military. He had connections with the Chinese entrepreneur Liem Sioe Liong (b. 1916), also known as Sudomo Salim, who migrated from Fujian to Indonesia in 1936. As the new order became established, these connections of self-interest and mutual trust would propel Liem to the status of the richest person in Indonesia and one of Southeast Asia's most prominent billionaires. He and other Chinese entrepreneurs – known in common parlance as *cukongs* (from Hokkien words for 'boss' and 'grandfather') – became invaluable to the new order's indigenous Indonesian elite. The *cukongs* supplied capital, connections outside Indonesia and business acumen without threatening the Indonesian partners in these deals, for anti-Chinese feelings in Indonesia meant that *cukongs* could never build political support. The Indonesian elite provided them with protection, opportunities, licences, inside information, dubious financial arrangements and, if necessary, the coercive powers of government in return for liberal amounts of money. In the end, the new order elite led by Soeharto, his family and his close supporters created a form of government sometimes labelled kleptocracy: government by thieves. Only a few of the *cukongs* ever made the transition to independent, legitimate business empires.

For his part, Sukarno appears to have underestimated how formidable a contender

he faced in Soeharto. For many months Sukarno sought to prove that the coup attempt was a minor incident in the continuing revolution and that he was still in charge. But Soeharto proved to be an opponent too slippery and able for the ageing, ill and self-indulgent Sukarno. The President ultimately lost the struggle with his successor and his vision of ongoing revolution was lost with it.

During October 1965 the collapse of guided democracy began. On 2 October Soeharto accepted Sukarno's order, taking personal command of the army, but on condition that Soeharto himself have full authority to restore order and security. This authority was institutionalised with the creation of **Kopkamtib (Komando Operasi Pemulihan Keamanan dan Ketertiban**, Operational Command for Restoration of Security and Order). On 3 October the murdered generals' bodies were discovered at Halim and Armed Forces Day on 5 October became a massive public funeral for them. The army began publicly blaming PKI for the coup attempt, which was now called **Gestapu** (from **Gerakan September Tigapuluhan**, 30th September Movement) with clear allusion to the Gestapo of Nazi Germany. PKI denials of involvement had no effect.

Anti-Communist youths now took to the streets, burning the PKI headquarters in Jakarta on 8 October. In late October anti-PKI university students formed KAMI (**Kesatuan Aksi Mahasiswa Indonesia**, Indonesian Students' Action Front), with army encouragement and protection. Its core consisted of Islamic, Catholic and former PSI youth groups. A similar high school students' front called KAPPI (**Kesatuan Aksi Pelajar Pemuda Indonesia**, Indonesian Youth and Students' Action Front) and a university graduates' front KASI (**Kesatuan Aksi Sarjana Indonesia**, Indonesian Graduates' Action Front) were formed early in 1966, both with a **Masyumi**-PSI core. Meanwhile arrests were under way, over 10,000 PKI activists and leaders having been picked up in Jakarta and West Java by December 1965; among them was Pramoedya Ananta Toer.

In October 1965 the killings started. Violence against people associated with PKI took place across the country, but the worst massacres were in Java and Bali. The conflict in East Java between PKI and NU which had begun in 1963 turned into full-scale slaughter from the second week of October 1965. In mid-October Soeharto sent reliable para-commando units into Central Java; he ordered out troops whose loyalty was suspect and they went rather than resist the para-commandos. Anti-PKI slaughters were then triggered there, with the army assisting youths in finding Communists. In Bali, with no Islamic forces involved, upper-caste PNI landlords took the lead in urging the extermination of PKI members. PKI's top national leadership was also being found and killed. Njoto was shot about 6 November and Aidit on 22 November; Lukman fell soon thereafter.

At a meeting in Jakarta on 9–11 November 1965, **Muhammadiyah** proclaimed that the extermination of '**Gestapu/PKI**' constituted holy war. Other Islamic groups endorsed this view. Whatever Islamic leaders may have meant by this, such pronouncements appeared to make the killing of Communists a religious duty and a passport to paradise for any Muslim who lost his own life in the violence. Indonesians who suspected Islam of latent fanaticism felt their suspicions to be confirmed.

Since political allegiances of the 1950–65 period had increasingly corresponded with **aliran** loyalties in Java, so did much of the killing. The army encouraged and

supported zealots from the *santri* side of Javanese society in finding PKI targets among their *abangan* brothers; the gulf between *santri* and *abangan* at village level thus widened in a bloody fashion. Not only PKI supporters fell. In Java, many who were thought of as ‘left PNI’ were also killed. Sometimes old feuds were settled which had little or nothing to do with political conflicts. There were stories of landlords ridding themselves of squatters by simply killing them.

The killings came to an end in the first months of 1966, leaving a death toll which is never likely to be known with certainty. Most scholars accept that at least half a million died, but no one really knows, for no one counted. Indonesia had not seen domestic slaughter on such a scale in its history. These killings left an indelible mark upon many Indonesians. Some remained proud of having helped to exterminate PKI. Others felt that this was the nation’s most shameful and unforgivable episode, an exercise in collective madness. Many people were also arrested, interrogated (often under torture) and held without trial. The number of these is similarly uncertain. Perhaps as many as 100,000 people were still imprisoned without trial a decade after the dreadful events of 1965–6.

Sukarno was distressed by the massacres and the collapse of his thread-bare revolution. In November 1965 he pathetically appealed to Muslims at least to bury the dead. In December he distorted history and offended even army officers who were sympathetic to him by praising PKI’s role in the Revolution. But by this time PKI was destroyed. PKI supporters who had escaped death or arrest were now in hiding or attempting to conceal their past. The army was well on its way to unchallenged power, although Islamic political forces were still deceiving themselves that they would share in this power.

Sukarno still tried to hold centre stage, but his old magic no longer worked. In January 1966 he broadcast an appeal for all to follow him, while Subandrio called for the creation of a Sukarnoist column (*Barisan Sukarno*). Soeharto neutralised the latter by pledging his own loyalty to Sukarno and telling all of the President’s loyal supporters to register their allegiance with the army. Although Soeharto would perhaps have preferred Sukarno to act as a legitimating figurehead for army dominance, it was becoming clear that the old President would have to be removed.

In February 1966 Sukarno made his final fumbling effort to save guided democracy. On 21 February he reshuffled his cabinet. He removed Nasution as Defence Minister and abolished his post as armed forces chief of staff; Nasution simply refused to recognise his dismissal. Omar Dhani and Subandrio – two men whom the army much wanted in its hands – were retained as ministers. Sukarno appointed as State Minister for Security Affairs Lieutenant Colonel Imam Sjafei, a boss of the Jakarta underworld. Anti-KAMI thugs soon began to be organised.

Soeharto’s policy appears now to have been to encourage such violence in Jakarta that in the end Sukarno would have to hand power to him to restore order. Pro-Sukarnoist and anti-Sukarnoist youths now fought it out in the capital’s streets. The American Embassy was attacked by the Sukarnoists on 23 February. Sukarno then banned KAMI, but the students and their army mentors ignored this. Sukarno ordered the University of Indonesia closed on 3 March but the anti-Sukarnoist students occupied the campus while their army allies guarded the perimeter.

Meanwhile Extraordinary Military Courts (*Mahmillub: Mahkamah Militer Luar Biasa*, established in December 1965) were holding trials which both corroborated the view that PKI had masterminded the coup attempt of 30 September 1965 and raised questions about Sukarno's role. In February 1966 the former SOBSI Secretary-General Njono Prawiro was sentenced to death. On 7 March Untung received the same sentence.

The army encouraged students to demonstrate for the banning of PKI (which by this stage would be merely a reproach to Sukarno, since there was little of PKI left to ban) and for a new cabinet and economic reforms. The economy was still running wild, the cost of living index for December 1965–January 1966 having recorded a 50 per cent increase. On 5 March Soeharto presented Sukarno with a list of cabinet ministers who should be dismissed, which Sukarno rejected.

On 11 March 1966 the subtle game of manoeuvre between Sukarno and Soeharto – its subtlety backed by bloody violence in the capital – was resolved decisively in favour of Soeharto. Sukarno opened a cabinet meeting in Jakarta, with student demonstrators filling the streets. He was informed that unidentified troops (in fact para-commandos) were surrounding the palace, so he hurriedly boarded a helicopter for Bogor, taking Subandrio and Chaerul Saleh with him. That evening, three generals acting as Soeharto's emissaries went to Bogor and persuaded Sukarno to sign a document giving Soeharto full authority to restore order, to facilitate the functioning of government and to protect the President in the name of the Revolution. With allusion to Sēmar, the most powerful god-clown of the Javanese *wayang* theatre, this document was called *Supersēmar* (from *Surat Pērintah Sēbēlas Maret*, 11 March letter of instruction).

On the authority of *Supersēmar*, Soeharto and his supporters now overturned the remnants of guided democracy, in the face of Sukarno's impotent fury. On 12 March PKI and all its mass organisations were banned. On 18 March, Subandrio, Chaerul Saleh, Imam Sjafei and 11 other cabinet ministers were arrested; one of the army's cabinet targets, Surachman, escaped but was killed in South Blitar in 1968. Chaerul Saleh died in prison in 1967. Those who were thought of as moderate Sukarnoists were not arrested, men like Idham Chalid, Leimena and Roeslan Abdulgani, who remained in the new cabinet installed on 27 March. This was led by a triumvirate of Soeharto, Sultan Hamēngkubuwana IX and Adam Malik. The latter two were emerging as the new order's most prominent civilian supporters.

Purges of the military and bureaucracy now began. About 2600 Diponēgoro Division soldiers were discharged, suspended, retired or disciplined, and many others were arrested. By the middle of April over 300 air force officers had been arrested. Some anti-PKI but pro-Sukarno army officers were transferred from sensitive commands in May.



*General Soeharto, 1966*

Guided democracy foreign policy was abandoned under Adam Malik as the new Foreign Minister. The Jakarta–Beijing axis was quickly destroyed. Chinese diplomatic and private property was attacked by anti-PKI activists from the opening stages of conflict. By early 1966 Beijing knew that there was no point in attempting to maintain its operations in Indonesia. In March it closed its *Xinhua (Hsin Hua)* news agency in Jakarta and then its three consulates, and in May recalled its ambassador. Diplomatic relations with the People's Republic were formally 'frozen' by Jakarta on 31 October 1967, after another wave of anti-Chinese riots.

One aim of the new foreign policy stances was to meet Western nations' requirements for urgently needed economic aid, requirements which included the ending of confrontation with Malaysia. In April 1966 Indonesia rejoined the United Nations (UN) and in May Malik announced it would rejoin the International Monetary Fund (IMF). Hamengkubuwana IX was in charge of economic, financial and development affairs; he announced the first economic reform measures in April. The ending of confrontation was, however, somewhat complicated by the insistence of some military men that it should not be done in a humiliating fashion, so Malik found his efforts to negotiate a settlement interfered with by Ali Murtopo and his *Opsus* organisation, which already had clandestine links with Malaysia.

In May 1966 Soeharto endorsed the ending of confrontation and a delegation of senior officers paid a goodwill visit to Kuala Lumpur. Within days Japan led the non-Communist embrace of the new order by offering US\$30 million emergency credits. On

29 May Malik met Malaysia's Deputy Prime Minister Tun Abdul Razak in Tokyo and confrontation at last ended. This was confirmed in a treaty of 11 December, full diplomatic relations being restored in August 1967.

The domestic political scene was not, however, fully under the new order's control. A backlash by pro-Sukarnoist forces still seemed possible, perhaps relying upon PNI as a political base. Anti-Sukarno zealots among the military and Islamic groups wanted PNI banned, but Soeharto was concerned by what he regarded as Islamic fanaticism and wanted PNI as a counterweight to it. So instead of banning PNI he purged it. In April 1966 he arranged a PNI congress which removed the Sukarnoist leadership under Ali Sastroamidjojo installed the previous August. Hardi and Soeharto's old friend Hadisubeno now took charge of PNI.

Under the 1945 constitution, the President was responsible to the Provisional People's Consultative Assembly (MPRS). This was now reduced in size by the arrest of about 180 of its members, and anti-Sukarno feeling was increasing among its remaining members. Soeharto judged that it was safe to convene the Assembly in June–July 1966. The Assembly ratified *Supersēmar* and the banning of PKI, outlawed Marxism as a political doctrine, called for elections to be held in 1968 and demanded that Sukarno give an explanation of the immorality, corruption and economic mismanagement of guided democracy and of his own role in the 1965 coup attempt. He was stripped of the title of President for Life which the Assembly had conferred on him in May 1963 and was forbidden to issue presidential decisions. Sukarno refused to respond to the MPRS demands for explanations, but it was clear to everyone that the Sukarno era was drawing to a definitive end. Only in January 1967 did he finally tell the MPRS that he had no prior knowledge of the coup attempt; perhaps it was true.

The break with guided democracy was confirmed in mid-1966 by the release of those who had been arrested for their roles in the PRRI and *Pěrnesta* rebellions. Sumual, Simbolon and other military men who were released found new careers in the business world. Sjafruddin, Natsir and the other civilians who had been involved found far fewer opportunities awaiting them, for they were hardly more trusted by the new order elite than they had been by the Sukarno regime.

As the new order demonstrated its increasing control of the nation and the chances of a Sukarnoist revival receded, Soeharto's prospects of winning the massive financial support which he needed from the Western world continued to improve. One of his first problems was the heavy external debt inherited from guided democracy. At the end of 1965 this amounted to US\$2.36 billion, of which 59.5 per cent was owed to Communist states (42 per cent to the Soviet Union), 24.9 per cent to Western nations, and the rest to other non-Communist sources. Japan was the largest creditor outside the Communist world (9.8 per cent of the total debt). Although this was a very large debt, it should be noted that it was much less than that subsequently acquired by the new order. Indonesia's non-Communist creditors agreed to act in concert and eventually formed themselves into IGGI (Inter-Governmental Group on Indonesia) in 1967. From July 1966 they began making arrangements to reschedule Indonesia's debt repayments. In October Adam Malik, who had long had cordial relations with the Soviet Union, also arranged the rescheduling of some of the debts owed to Moscow.

In return for Western economic assistance, the Soeharto government adopted reform

measures of the kind consistently favoured by the World Bank and IMF, measures which dominated economic policy into the 1970s. Open-door, laissez-faire strategies to encourage foreign investment and maximum economic growth were coupled with strict internal economic controls. Crucial to these new policies was a group of academically trained Indonesian economists, technocrats loosely known as the ‘Berkeley mafia’ after the university from which several held degrees. Because they could speak the language of international economics, they gave the Soeharto government credibility with Western nations and exercised an influence over the military-dominated regime which was sometimes challenged by those who favoured greater economic nationalism, but which was to remain central to new order policymaking.

Indonesia’s September 1966 report to its non-Communist creditors revealed the scale of economic disaster facing the new regime. Annual inflation was calculated to be in excess of 600 per cent, the money supply was over 800 times the 1955 figure and the government deficit was over 780 times that of 1961 (and 1.8 times the total money supply). In consultation with the IMF, the technocrats introduced budgetary restraints, high interest rates, stricter export controls and anti-corruption measures beginning in October. Confiscated British and American firms were soon restored to their owners and in February 1967 a new investment law was promulgated to encourage foreign investment.

But the technocrats were in fact in control of only a part of the economy. Drastic cuts in official military budgets were of little concern to the army, for by now its own private economy was well developed. In fact, the army’s official budget probably covered no more than half of its expenditure, the rest coming from army-run businesses. Its oil enterprise was of particular importance. Since 1963 *Pérmina* had had profit-sharing agreements with Caltex and Stanvac, and at the end of 1965 Shell sold out altogether to *Pérmina*. Another major earner was *Bulog* (*Badan Urusan Logistik*, Logistics Affairs Board) set up in 1966 primarily to deal in rice.

Business empires run by Chaerul Saleh and other leaders of the old order were taken over by the new order elite, both the military and their bureaucratic supporters. Ever closer connections were forged between the new Indonesian leadership and the world of private capital. The elite found it useful to work with Chinese *cukongs*, who were attractive because of their access to capital, business acumen and political impotence. Over the years, the wealth which flowed into the hands of the Indonesian elite would create a new upper class, the primary social foundation of the Soeharto regime, while some *cukong* families would grow fabulously rich.

While economic reform was being pursued, domestic political tensions were nearing their final stages. Testimony at several *Mahmillub* trials implicated Sukarno in the 1965 coup attempt. Subandrio and Omar Dhani were sentenced to death in October and December 1966 respectively (neither sentence was carried out and both were released in 1995). In December 1966 Sudisman was captured; he was sentenced to death in July 1967 and executed in 1968. In January 1967 the highest military officer involved in the coup attempt, Brigadier General Supardjo, was found; in March he was sentenced to death. In that month Sjam was captured and the new order gained its most useful source on the coup plot; he was reportedly held and pumped for information regularly until finally being executed in 1986. Students, lawyers and judges now began calling for

Sukarno also to be put on trial.

In November 1966, Sukarnoist officers in the East Java Brawijaya Division of the army, the East Java police and the navy plotted to kidnap Sukarno during a planned visit to East Java, intending to encourage him to make a stand against Soeharto, but their plans fell through. Sukarno, to his credit, refused to cooperate with a plot which would probably have meant civil war. Soeharto cancelled the visit and began buying off leading Sukarnoist officers with ambassadorships or other lucrative jobs.

Soeharto now took his final steps to victory in domestic politics, believing that it had become possible to dismiss the old President altogether. He appointed new members of parliament (DPR-GR) to replace purged members, and then convened the MPRS in March 1967. Amidst rumours that the navy's marine corps (KKO: **Korps Komando**), the police and the Brawijaya Division would defend Sukarno, and with 80,000 troops occupying Jakarta, on 12 March the MPRS stripped Sukarno of all powers and titles and named Soeharto Acting President. Sukarno's various ideological pronouncements were declared no longer to be the ideology of the state, which was reduced to **Pancasila** alone. Soeharto was authorised to decide whether Sukarno should stand trial, but he never submitted his discredited predecessor to this indignity or ran the risk of thereby mobilising Sukarno's remaining defenders. The nation's first President retired to de facto house arrest and embittered isolation in Bogor, where he remained until his death in June 1970. Soeharto's political dominance was firmly established.

Economic changes were occurring rapidly, with domestic political consequences. Inflation was cut back to about 100 per cent in 1967, still a very high figure but a great improvement over the preceding chaos. The foreign exchange regime was liberalised. From 1966 to the end of 1968 the Rupiah was allowed to float (that is, devalue) freely. This cut down export smuggling and foreign imports and encouraged foreign aid donors and investors. Naturally overseas entrepreneurs and **cukongs** with access to overseas funds sought the quickest and highest rates of return, leaving less profitable fields for Indonesian (**pribumi**) investors. The government's reliance on high interest rates to restrain inflation put **pribumi** entrepreneurs without access to foreign capital at a great disadvantage. They found themselves pushed out even of businesses which had traditionally been theirs (for example, textiles, beverages and **kretek** cigarettes) by Chinese and foreign competitors with access to cheaper money. So **pribumi** businessmen, who tended to be anti-Communist and linked to devout Islamic circles and had thus formed part of the initial coalition supporting Soeharto, began to wonder whether their interests would be served by the new order. Meanwhile unemployment and underemployment continued to grow, and knowledge spread of the corrupt use of power for personal gain by the regime's leaders. By 1967 even the students – the staunchest allies of the new order in 1965–6 – began to demonstrate against it, demanding lower prices and an end to corruption.

A new and explosive religious issue was also emerging. Throughout the twentieth century, Islamic reformers had pressed for greater adherence to the tenets of their faith. After 1965, Islam's increased assertiveness was evident in the role of Islamic activists in the 1965–6 killings, in the call to prayer being broadcast at full volume over public address systems and in repeated admonitions to believers to perfect their faith. Very many Muslims responded positively to this atmosphere of heightened religious

awareness. But some Indonesians found Islam in its new, more dynamic style to be unattractive. Some even turned their backs upon Islam and embraced other faiths. Many Javanese *abangan* (nominal Muslims) turned to *Kebatinan* (literally, inwardness), a term used for indigenous mystical sects with hybrid theologies. Even more remarkably, throughout Indonesia, but especially in the cities of East and Central Java, there began an unexpected and unprecedented wave of conversion to Christianity. Conversions to Hinduism and Buddhism also took place, although on a smaller scale. Such conversions were partly for religious and partly for political reasons. In the wake of the events of 1965, not to be an adherent of an officially recognised world religion was to run the risk of being labelled an atheist and hence a Communist. Some Indonesians who were unwilling to call themselves Muslims therefore proclaimed themselves Christians, sometimes without having had prior contact with Christian proselytisers. Anecdotal evidence suggested that this was particularly true of former PKI villages, but Christianity's less onerous ritual obligations and food laws doubtless played a role alongside political considerations. Christian missionaries were, of course, present, and the proselytisation practices of some churches, notably the Jehovah's Witnesses and Seventh Day Adventists, attracted much criticism from the Islamic side.

The 1971 census revealed major religious changes since the last figures of the 1930s, but perhaps they were less dramatic than some Muslims had feared. In 1933 only 2.8 per cent of all Indonesians were Christians (under 2 million people) whereas in 1971 the figure had grown to 7.5 per cent (nearly 9 million people). In Central and East Java the scale of increase was more dramatic. In the 1930s only 0.1 per cent of the population in Central Java and 0.4 per cent in East Java were Christians; in 1971 these figures were 2.1 per cent and 1.7 per cent respectively. These are of course small percentages, but the Christians were particularly visible because of the prominence of Christian schools and because conversions were heaviest in urban areas. In 1971 Christians constituted 11.6 per cent of the population of urban Central Java as a whole; they were 14.9 per cent in Yogyakarta and 15.1 per cent in both Surakarta and Magélang. Some of these new Christians were Chinese, but most were Javanese.

Indonesia had always been a multireligious society, but in the past different religious communities had for the most part been based in different geographical areas or ethnic groups. Now adherents of different religions lived in proximity to one another, indeed were often from the same ethnic groups or even families. In the wake of a period of extraordinary political conflict and violence, it is not surprising that Indonesia's transition to this new form of multireligiosity was not entirely smooth. In April 1967 a series of violent incidents began when Muslims attacked Christian churches in Aceh. In October serious anti-Christian riots broke out in Makassar and religious violence was reported from Java and Sumatra.

In October 1967 Soeharto denounced religious violence and set in motion a governmental effort to stop it. The government convened an inter-religious dialogue in Jakarta in November, where Christian and Islamic leaders came to the conclusion that there was no basis for compromise. Since both Islam and Christianity are missionary religions, anxious to bring their universal message to all people, to expect either to restrain its mission work is to ask it to be untrue to itself. But Christian and Muslim leaders did at least recognise in each other a genuine devotion to God. Younger

Christian and Islamic leaders were more inclined to mutual respect than their elders, perhaps because many had worked together in the political tumult of 1965–6 and because younger Muslim leaders lacked their elders' personal experience of a lifetime of frequent frustration. Furthermore, both sides had acquired a more sober view of the dangers of religious violence, although they did not always seem able or willing to reduce bitterness between their followers. Yet religious violence did decline after 1967, not least because the military made it clear that it was prepared to use force to stop it.

Political party conflicts of the Sukarno era still had resonances in the late 1960s, but the political framework was changing rapidly. In April–May 1967 an attempt was made by Modernist Islamic politicians to revive *Masyumi* under a different name. Soeharto refused to approve this, for to him the urban Modernist politicians were tainted with the marks of both rebellion and fanaticism. In May 1967 the *Dewan Da'wah Islamiyah Indonesia* (Indonesian Islamic Mission Council) was founded to promote the further Islamisation of Indonesian society, with Natsir as its chairman. The new order military elite saw this as a proper role for Natsir and for religion; politics was regarded as proper for neither. Leading Muslims suspected the government of a secret anti-Islamic bias. They noted that some senior military men were Christians and that the personal religion of others – notably of the President – seemed to be close to *Kebatinan*.

PNI and NU came under further pressure from the government in 1967, as did parts of the military. Many military men wanted to be rid of everything connected with the old order and therefore still hoped to destroy PNI. But Soeharto preferred to preserve it in a weakened, controlled form. Sitor Situmorang, PNI's leading intellectual and former ally of *Lekra*, was imprisoned in 1967 and held without trial until 1975. Regional commanders in Sumatra, East Java and South Sulawesi subjected PNI to temporary bans and purge orders, but the party survived because Soeharto wished it to. The NU leadership was also subject to adverse criticism, but had less need of Soeharto's protection, for it had a stronger social base in the countryside. Many of the new order elite believed in any case that NU was unlikely to cause trouble so long as its religious interests were not threatened. An attachment to Sukarno remained in parts of the police, navy, air force and army, especially in the Brawijaya Division. In the course of 1967, further purges removed many of these Sukarnoist elements without significant resistance, except for some shooting in June between army and marine units in East Java.

In August 1967 Soeharto abolished the four separate armed forces ministries and placed all services directly under his authority. The Sukarno style of encouraging inter-service rivalry was thus replaced by Soeharto's policy of centralisation. This more centralised military was also taking over regional government. By 1968, 17 out of 25 provinces were governed by military officers and by 1969 over half of all *bupatis* and mayors were military men. Centralisation of power within a tight circle of military men around Soeharto was now well advanced.

In March 1968 the Provisional People's Consultative Assembly (MPRS) convened again and elected Soeharto to the Presidency for a five-year term, confirming the success and durability of his control. He installed a new cabinet in June in which civilian technocrats received more places and the military fewer. Sumitro Djojohadikusumo was made Minister of Trade, over the objections of those who

disapproved of him for having joined PRRI. The technocrats' influence over policy was considerable, for Indonesia still desperately needed the economic support of non-Communist donors, whose language and policies the technocrats shared. In a later cabinet of 1971 there were ten university professors, the most prominent being the economist Widjojo Nitisastro (b. 1927). But strategy decisions remained firmly in the hands of the inner military circle.

Security problems still arose for the new regime but they were few and quickly dealt with. In 1967 South Blora (North-Central Java) witnessed a revival of the Saminist movement led in the early years of the twentieth century by Surantiko Samin. A local holy man named Mbah (grandfather) Suro (1921–67) attracted a large peasant following. The government regarded this as a revival of Communism and sent in troops who killed Mbah Suro and an unknown number of his followers. A more unequivocally Communist underground organisation was discovered in South Blitar (southern East Java) in mid-1968. Surviving PKI leaders had gone into hiding there to prepare for guerrilla resistance. They lost control of their *abangan* peasant supporters, who began revenge killings of NU leaders. This revealed the existence of this PKI remnant. In July and August the organisation was wiped out, most of its leaders and 800 followers being taken prisoner. Interrogation of these people led to further purges of several hundred military men with clandestine PKI connections. In West Kalimantan, Indonesian and Chinese Communists continued to exist in jungle hideouts but were of little consequence. Joint Malaysian–Indonesian security operations were later mounted against them along the Sarawak border. By the end of 1968 there was no longer a credible PKI threat. Despite this, the regime's principal security organisation *Kopkamtib* continued its surveillance of the citizenry, hampered only by the general inefficiency of the nation's administrative apparatus.

In February 1968 a Modernist Islamic political party called *Parmusi (Partai Muslimin Indonesia)*, Indonesian Muslims' Party) was established. Along with NU, in the MPRS session of 1968 *Parmusi* urged that the Jakarta Charter should be recognised as having legal force, thereby giving constitutional authority to the implementation of Islamic law among Muslims; this proposal was defeated. Then in November *Parmusi* elected a new leadership which included former *Masyumi* figures, although not Natsir or Sjafruddin. The government refused to approve this new leadership and thus left *Parmusi* in something like suspended animation for two years. The government did, however, permit the revival of some formerly banned anti-Communist newspapers in 1968, including Mochtar Lubis' *Indonesia Raya* ('Greater Indonesia'), the former *Masyumi* and now *Parmusi* paper *Abadi* ('Eternal') and the former PSI paper *Pědoman* ('Guide').

Just as internal politics was now well under control, so foreign policy directions were fixed, with a new Association of South East Asian Nations (ASEAN) as the regional cornerstone. ASEAN was formed in August 1967 by Indonesia, Malaysia, Singapore, Thailand and the Philippines to promote economic and cultural cooperation among the anti-Communist states of the region. Down to the mid-1970s, however, ASEAN could find little to do. Its main function was symbolic: it did not exist to promote various projects, rather its meetings and projects existed to justify ASEAN, the central purpose of which was to symbolise regional cooperation and in particular the

rehabilitation of Indonesia as a constructive regional actor, free of the Sukarno era's flamboyant and aggressive stances. Adam Malik and the new order elite also hoped that regional cooperation might act as a counterbalance to the otherwise overwhelming influence of Japan and the United States over Indonesia.

Economic structures were also well established by 1968. Oil was the central focus of government economic policy, although other capital-intensive and high-technology extractive industries in minerals and timber were also expanding rapidly. Offshore drilling began in 1966 and was intense by 1968. In August 1968 the army's role was strengthened by the merger of its oil companies **Pertamin** (established 1961) and **Permina** into **Pertamina** (*Perusahaan Pertambangan Minyak dan Gas Bumi Negera*, State Oil and Natural Gas Mining Enterprise). This was run as a personal empire by Ibnu Sutowo, who soon gained an international reputation for aggressive and visionary management, a reputation which was to be shattered in 1975. **Pertamina** did little drilling itself; instead it (not the government) had production-sharing agreements with the foreign companies. Oil production grew at about 15 per cent per annum in 1968–9 and nearly 20 per cent in 1970. Meanwhile the technocrats' battle against inflation continued to make progress. Inflation was reduced to about 85 per cent in 1968, but there were pointed questions being asked about when the population at large would see the prosperity which the new order promised.

The year 1969 can be said to mark the end of the transition from the old to the new order. The battle against inflation was at last won, price rises being held to about 10 per cent for the year. On 1 April the government symbolised the turning of its primary attention from economic stabilisation to development, with the inauguration of its first Five-Year Development Plan (*Répelita I: Rencana Pembangunan Lima Tahun*) for 1969–74. This gave priority to the areas where government investment was expected to produce the highest returns: agriculture, economic infrastructure, expansion of exports and import-substitution industries. Three-quarters of the expenditure under **Répelita I** was to be financed by foreign loans, which grew to US\$877 million for its last year. By 1972 the new foreign debts acquired since 1966 would already exceed those inherited from Sukarno's years. In 1969 Indonesia's rehabilitations which were taking place within the anti-Communist world were symbolised by visits from several heads of state, including the American President Richard Nixon. Following Nixon's visit, US military aid to Jakarta increased dramatically, reaching US\$40 million in 1976.

Indonesia also settled an old issue in 1969 by the incorporation of Papua as its 26th province. This followed an 'act of free choice' as called for in the UN-sponsored transfer arrangements, the outcome of which was never in doubt. The Indonesians hand-picked 1022 Papuan leaders all of whom, hardly surprisingly, did as they were supposed to do and voted for incorporation. With Papua, Jakarta acquired considerable cultural and administrative challenges, as well as a nagging security problem in the form of a resistance movement called **Organisasi Papua Merdeka** (Free Papua Organisation).

The government was now preparing a final solution to one of its lingering administrative and security headaches, the problem of political prisoners. Throughout the archipelago, jails were bursting with people held without trial since 1965. The numbers of such prisoners is not known with confidence. As late as 1977, Amnesty International estimated that between 55,000 and 100,000 Indonesians were political

prisoners. These people were divided into three categories reflecting alleged proximity to the coup attempt of 1965. Category A was for those directly involved, category B for those indirectly involved (that is, members of PKI or its mass organisations or sympathisers) and category C for those whose connection was more remote than category B (the distinction was often arbitrary). In July 1969 the government announced that it had opened a penal colony for the large number of category B prisoners on the island of Buru in South Maluku. A release programme was announced for category C prisoners, but Islamic and other anti-PKI groups made it clear that they were not prepared to accept these prisoners back into society. It seems, however, that category C prisoners were released quietly over subsequent years. For category B the future was to be permanent imprisonment, either on Buru or in prisons elsewhere. By 1977 there were about 14,000 prisoners on Buru. Among them was Pramoedya Ananta Toer, who wrote there his tetralogy of historical novels *Bumi manusia*, *Anak sémua bangsa*, *Jéjak langkah* and *Rumah kaca* ('This earth of mankind', 'Child of all nations', 'Footsteps' and 'Glass house') which would win him renewed international recognition in the 1980s. Category A prisoners alone were brought to trial, very slowly, always ending in conviction and almost always in a death sentence.

The final stages in Soeharto's reorganisation of the military also took place in 1969–70. The commanders of the four services were replaced by chiefs of staff and the authority of the Department of Defence and Security (*Hankam: Departemen Pertahanan – Kéamanan*) over regional commanders and all the armed forces was increased. Soeharto loyalists dominated the army while the new navy chief of staff was Soeharto's old colleague Rear Admiral Sudomo (b. 1926). A final purge of the navy followed. Some army officers were also arrested in 1970 for alleged links with PKI, a few among them being quite senior. In October 1970 Soeharto lowered the retirement age for officers to 48 and announced that 86 generals would be retired over the next two years. From this time on, the military was so effectively centralised that factional disputes were virtually invisible to outside observers.

The government was ready for the postponed elections. In November 1969 parliament (DPR-GR) passed an election law which fixed the membership of a new parliament (DPR) at 360 elected plus 100 appointed members. The whole of this parliament would be incorporated within a 920-seat People's Consultative Assembly (MPR) along with 207 military and functional group members appointed by the President, 131 members elected by provincial parliaments, 112 selected according to party strengths in the election, and 10 appointed from the less successful parties. Thus, the government would directly appoint 22 per cent of the parliament and 33 per cent of the Assembly, sufficient to block constitutional amendment. In February 1970 the government announced that all government employees must observe 'monoloyalty' towards the government. They were not allowed to join any political party and were pressured to join *Golkar* (*Sekber Golkar*, Joint Secretariat of Functional Groups), the body established by the army in 1964 to coordinate army–civilian cooperative bodies. At a stroke the government thus undercut whatever remained of PNI's traditional constituency within the bureaucracy. The new order was about to turn *Golkar* into its vehicle for establishing a military–bureaucratic condominium over the nation.

The government was not certain that it had sufficiently weakened the political

parties. So Ali Murtopo interfered in PNI leadership issues and Soeharto imposed a politically reliable chairman upon *Parmusi* in the person of H. Mohamed Safaat Mintaredja (b. 1921). NU alone among the 'big four' parties of the last national election, that of 1955, still existed in its original state.

There were some doubts about the likely outcome of the election, for public criticism of the regime and particularly of the President's family was increasing. Although many people thought Soeharto himself admirable, his wife Siti Hartinah Soeharto (1923–96), better known as Ibu (mother) Tien, was widely believed to benefit financially from her husband's position. She chaired several foundations with extensive business investments. The President's brother Probosutedjo (b. 1930) and foster-brother Sudwikatmono (b. 1934) were also pursuing business careers the profitability of which was widely thought to owe less to their entrepreneurial talents than to presidential influence. Student demonstrations against price rises and corruption now led the students into direct opposition to the regime. In June 1970 an anti-corruption team under former Prime Minister Wilopo, with Hatta as a member, reported that there was corruption everywhere. The team then dissolved and nothing of significance was done.

Ali Murtopo, Amir Mahmud (Minister of Home Affairs and hence in charge of the bureaucracy) and *Kopkamtib* were given the task of ensuring the victory of *Golkar* in the elections. *Kopkamtib* screened candidates for all parties and disqualified about 20 per cent for political unreliability. Military officers and officials down to village level were given quotas of votes to deliver. Intimidation was widespread, but it should not be thought that this alone explained the election outcome. Electors who saw the contest as one between Islamic power and the 'secular' (or anti-Islamic) developmental outlook of the government and who distrusted Islam would have supported *Golkar* willingly; it thereby, ironically, captured much of the former PKI and PNI electoral base.

The scale of *Golkar*'s victory in the July 1971 elections surprised even the government. It captured 62.8 per cent of the votes, winning 236 (65.6 per cent) of the 360 contested seats. PNI won only 6.9 per cent of the votes, its best result being 19.5 per cent in Central Java. NU did the best of the non-governmental parties with 18.7 per cent overall and 35.2 per cent in its heartland of East Java (but even there *Golkar* beat it with 54.9 per cent). *Golkar* won absolute majorities in every province except Aceh, Jakarta and Maluku, where it won pluralities. When the appointed seats were added to the elected seats, the government controlled 73 per cent of parliament, the Islamic parties 20.4 per cent and the non-Islamic parties 6.5 per cent. The Assembly would have a government majority of about 82 per cent.

The government did not see this election victory as a sign that political controls could be relaxed, but rather as a justification for completing the destruction of the old political parties. The government pressured them to fuse into two groups. In January 1973 PPP (*Partai Persatuan Pembangunan*, United Development Party) was created out of the Islamic parties, of which NU and *Parmusi* were the most important. From the non-Islamic parties (*Murba*, PNI, Catholic, Christian and the minor IPKI) was created PDI (*Partai Demokrasi Indonesia*, Indonesian Democracy Party). Except at election time, these parties were not to have organisations below *kabupaten* level, a restriction which did not apply to *Golkar* since it was permanently represented by the bureaucracy and, in any case, pretended not to be a political party. From this point onwards the

political parties were rarely more than a minor nuisance to the government.

In March 1973 the newly formed People's Consultative Assembly (MPR) met and re-elected Soeharto to a second five-year term. The office of Vice-President which exists under the 1945 constitution was now filled (1973–8) for the first time since Hatta's Vice-Presidency by Sultan Hamengkubuwana IX. He was a man much admired by Soeharto and the Indonesian public. Many hoped that he might restrain some of the less acceptable features of the regime. But in the end, his presence seems to have brought few changes. The only serious trouble in the 1973 Assembly concerned *Kebatinan*. Since 1957 *Kebatinan* groups had sought recognition as the equal of other religions, which would give them access to Ministry of Religion funds and shield them from persecution. Islamic groups feared that the Soeharto government would finally approve this. But in the end the government made use of a terminological nicety in the 1945 constitution by recognising *Kebatinan* only as 'belief' (*kēpercayaan*), which the constitution appears to recognise as, in effect, a cultural phenomenon but not a religion (*agama*), without a section in the Ministry of Religion.

Yet the governing elite was not as firmly in power as it and its external supporters believed and hoped. By the early 1970s the extravagant wealth of some of the elite and of their Chinese *cukong* allies produced responses ranging from widespread grumbling and black political humour at one extreme to student demonstrations and anti-Chinese violence at the other. Heightened Islamic moral sensibilities and the anger of *pribumi* entrepreneurs from devout Islamic circles coalesced to make religious questions a potential flashpoint. Ali Murtopo was regarded as one of the regime's main anti-Islamic figures. When he supported the idea of a new marriage law which would allow Muslim women to marry non-Muslims and would recognise civil marriages, devout Muslims were furious. In September 1973 Islamic students invaded a sitting of parliament and obliged the government to withdraw the proposal. A revised marriage law was subsequently passed in December, Ali Murtopo and the government having accepted that compromise was unavoidable. The overthrow of the Thai government of Thamom Kittikachorn by student demonstrations in October 1973 both emboldened critics of the Soeharto government and inclined its supporters to contemplate moderation and compromise.

Factional competition within the regime became entangled in public issues, especially regarding the role of Japan. Japan took 53 per cent of Indonesia's exports by 1973 (71 per cent of its oil) and supplied 29 per cent of its imports. Moreover the Japanese were more evident because of their increasing investment in manufacturing industries in Java itself, which put still greater pressure on indigenous entrepreneurs. The Japanese were widely perceived as unprincipled exploiters of the Indonesian economy, aided by people close to the presidential palace. There was criticism particularly of Ali Murtopo and of another of Soeharto's closest colleagues, Major-General Sudjono Humardani (1919–86), who was reputed to be the President's mystical guide as well as a broker for foreign (especially Japanese) investors seeking governmental favour. They found themselves facing the head of *Kopkamtib*, General Soemitro (1927–98), who presented himself as a man open to dialogue with the regime's critics.

A visit by the Japanese Prime Minister Tanaka Kakuei to Jakarta in January 1974

precipitated the capital's worst riots since the fall of Sukarno, an episode known as *Malari* (from *Malapētaka Januari*, January Disaster). Students and poor urban youths burned about 800 cars and 100 buildings, and looted many shops selling Japanese goods. At one point an estimated crowd of 20,000 surrounded Tanaka's guest house while 5000 surrounded the presidential palace. Not until the second day of this episode did *Kopkamtib* step in, a delay which increased suspicions that Soemitro favoured the demonstrators or sought to use the crisis to his political advantage.

The regime clamped down harshly. By 17 January the rioting was suppressed. Eleven people had died and nearly 200 were seriously injured. For the first time, instead of saying that Communists were responsible for the trouble, the government blamed former *Masyumi* and PSI activists. *Kopkamtib* arrested 770 people, almost all of whom were released by May 1976. Three student leaders were, however, sentenced to prison terms upon doubtful evidence. Among those arrested was Mochtar Lubis. His newspaper *Indonesia Raya* was closed down, as were *Pēdoman*, *Abadi* and eight other publications. Soemitro was removed from *Kopkamtib*, which Soeharto again took charge of with Admiral Sudomo as its chief of staff.

The regime was now operating within a rapidly changing world economic environment, which would make it less dependent upon outside funds and advice. The Arab–Israeli War of October 1973 produced a revolution in oil prices. Indonesia's export price for crude oil rose from US\$2.96 per barrel in April 1973 to \$12.60 in July 1974. In 1966 oil represented 30 per cent of the value of Indonesia's exports but in 1974 it represented 74 per cent. Under the second Five-Year Development Plan (*Rēpēlita* II, 1974–9), 72 per cent of expenditure could be financed out of domestic rather than foreign sources. This vast rise in oil prices did not make Indonesia a rich nation. It was by far the most populous and poorest member of the Organisation of Petroleum Exporting Countries (OPEC), with a per capita GNP less than half that of the next poorest member, Nigeria. But economic policy could now swing towards an economic nationalism which was never far below the surface of the regime. The influence of IMF and IGGI policies, and of the Indonesian technocrats who supported them, was thus somewhat weakened for a time.

The government's economic plans depended upon having control of oil revenues, which meant gaining control of *Pērtamina*. Under Ibnu Sutowo's directorship, *Pērtamina* had grown to be one of the largest corporations in the world. It directly produced 28.2 per cent of the nation's oil at the end of 1973 and had production-sharing agreements with Caltex (producing 67.8 per cent of the oil) and Stanvac (producing 3.6 per cent). It owned Indonesia's seven oil refineries, oil terminals, 116 tankers, 102 other vessels and an airline, was investing in cement, fertiliser, liquid natural gas, steel, hospitals, real estate, a rice estate and telecommunications, and built the presidential executive office building (*Bina Graha*) in Jakarta. It was almost entirely free of government control and stood shakily on a foundation of excessive debt, chaotic management and corruption.

In 1973 the government tightened up the conditions under which Ibnu Sutowo could borrow money overseas. In February 1975 *Pērtamina* found itself unable to repay loans from American and Canadian banks. The ensuing revelations did much to discredit elite circles in the eyes of both Indonesians and foreigners. The government took over the

running of **Pertamina** and undertook to meet its debts, which were subsequently said to exceed US\$10 billion. **Pertamina** was under government control, but at a heavy price.

Just as the world economic climate was rapidly changing, so was the international political stage. Nixon's trip to China in 1972 signalled the beginnings of Chinese-American détente, while Soviet-American détente had been a topic of discussion for some time. The 1973 Paris Accord began the American withdrawal from Vietnam, following which US military aid to Indonesia increased. In 1975 the warfare in Indochina ended in Communist victories. The Indonesian military elite was now somewhat uncertain of the external political context and concerned about potential transformations closer to home.

The military's worst fears were confirmed when the sleepy colonial backwater of Portuguese (East) Timor produced a major crisis. The 1974 revolution in Portugal signalled the end of Portugal's decrepit colonial empire. Three political parties sprang up in East Timor. **Fretelin** (*Frente Revolucionária Timor Leste Independente*, Revolutionary Front of Independent East Timor) was radical and sought immediate independence. UDT (*União Democrática Timorense*, Timorese Democratic Union) desired gradual independence. **Apodeti** (*Associação Popular Democrática Timorense*, Timorese Popular Democratic Association), the smallest of the three, favoured incorporation within Indonesia. By mid-1975 **Fretelin** appeared to be gaining the upper hand. Then in August 1975 civil war broke out, as UDT attempted a coup which **Fretelin** resisted with the support of the local Portuguese military.

Jakarta had no intention of tolerating an independent, and certainly not a leftist, state within its own archipelago, but how far it was prepared to go to prevent this was not clear until Indonesia invaded East Timor on 7 December 1975. The invasion took place immediately after a visit to Jakarta by US President Gerald Ford and Secretary of State Henry Kissinger, who indicated that they understood Jakarta's position. Indonesia's troops had so little training or experience in anything but internal security operations against civilians that they appear to have performed badly. The government denied reports of torture, rape and looting by its soldiers, who were said to have made Chinese a particular target. Five Australian journalists were killed during the invasion, but Jakarta denied responsibility for their deaths. Some estimates put civilian casualties at 60,000, which would be 10 per cent of the population. By April 1976 some 30,000–35,000 Indonesian troops were there, and about 500 had died in the fighting. **Fretelin** was driven into the hills, whence it maintained desultory resistance. In July 1976 East Timor was incorporated as Indonesia's 27th province. Indonesia's Western supporters and neighbours gave greater priority to their relations with Jakarta than to the rights of East Timorese, and accepted the de facto conquest of East Timor. Eventually Australia accorded *de jure* recognition. The United States had no intention of challenging Indonesian control of the territory, thereby rendering meaningless the UN's continuing recognition of Portugal as the legitimate administering power there. In 1976 IGGI increased its aid, pledging US\$990 million in project aid and over \$1 billion in supplementary credits. Major investments were promised by Japan, the Soviet Union and Shell.

The conquest of East Timor rounded off Indonesia's territorial boundaries but also gave Jakarta ongoing and serious problems. Integrating the East Timorese, with their

very different historical experience, into the Indonesian nation presented major cultural problems, developing their territory presented economic and administrative difficulties and their continuing distaste for Indonesian rule presented political and security challenges. **Fretelin** resistance meant low-level but nonetheless persistent problems for the military. From the initial conquest on, Amnesty International and other human rights organisations condemned the brutalities which accompanied Jakarta's rule over East Timor. But for nearly a quarter-century, Indonesia refused to bend to international criticism and did its best to prevent outside scrutiny.

By the beginning of 1976 the new order had achieved a stable, definable form. Here was a regime resting upon the tight centralisation of power in the hands of President Soeharto and a circle of loyal followers. Political expression was repressed by physical violence, arrests and the banning of publications, or by subtle threats of such action. Parties were rendered impotent to change the political order but played their part in the carefully controlled election process which lent the government legitimacy. The military took the main decisions, but shared economic decision-making with technocrats and the administration of the country with the bureaucracy. **Golkar** was the organisational vehicle for this military–bureaucratic dominion. Economic policy was fixed in favour of capitalist-style development and produced impressive results. The regime's promise to employ development to promote the health and welfare of its citizenry was, however, still little more than a promise. On the other hand, the evidence of the governing elite employing economic development to enrich itself and its business partners was clear. Oil was the crucial element in all economic calculations; the revolution in oil prices after 1973 would make significant new developments possible, as will be seen in the following chapter. Foreign political and economic policy rested on cooperation with Western powers but Indonesia refused, as it had since independence, to join formal military pacts. ASEAN was the regional cornerstone of foreign policy. The nation's boundaries were fixed by the inclusion of Papua and East Timor, both of which regions brought major problems for the regime. Society was changing; it was becoming more multireligious yet **aliran** seemed to be of decreasing significance because of the demise of the political parties which had previously hardened **aliran** boundaries. Major transformation had taken place since the mid-1960s. It is worth noting that this had occurred without any serious challenge to the unity of the nation, but also that it had occurred at unprecedented cost: not since the Dutch colonial conquest had so many Indonesians died or lost their freedom in the name of creating a new political order.

## ***Chapter 22***

---

# **The New Order at its Peak, 1976–881**

For about a dozen years Soeharto's 'new order' enjoyed remarkable success. Its economic development plans were catapulted forward by the revolution in oil prices of the 1970s. As Jakarta became a metropolis of gleaming skyscrapers (alongside fetid slums), a new middle class emerged. That middle class was prepared to tolerate much of the corruption and some of the oppression exercised by the regime because the benefits to itself and to future generations seemed so great. The gains of economic development began to flow also to the poor and to rural villages. Internationally, Indonesia retained the favour of its Western-oriented donors and trading partners, while also exploiting some opportunities for collaboration with Communist states. Indonesia's military and bureaucracy worked productively with the President and his ruling clique to the advantage both of the public commonwealth and their own private interests. Public religious devotion became much more common. Many religious leaders came to see the regime either as no threat or even as a support to their idea of God's work: Muslims because the regime became less inclined to treat Islam as a danger and more ready to support religious activities, non-Muslims because the regime protected them from the imagined threats of an Islamic state. From time to time there were hopes of progress to a more open society. These years give a sense of what Indonesia's future might have been, had the regime itself been less avaricious, less corrupt, less brutal, less dominated by one man than in fact it was.

Until the early 1980s Indonesia experienced a period of rapid economic growth. From 1971 to 1981 the real GDP annual rate of growth averaged 7.7 per cent. In no year did it fall below 5 per cent. Much of this rested on oil revenues, which remained high until 1982, being given another fillip in 1979 by the Iran–Iraq War. By 1981 Indonesia had also become the world's largest producer of liquefied natural gas. Economic nationalists took advantage of Indonesia's consequently reduced dependence on external aid donors to press for greater state enterprise, encouragement of local entrepreneurs and restrictions on foreign enterprises.

The **Pertamina** débâcle of 1975 took some time to work out. The government retained **Pertamina**'s Krakatau Steel enterprise and its development of Batam Island but on a reduced scale. Both Caltex and Stanvac were required to accept a reduction in their profits. Eventually the crisis was under control, having provided the unintended benefit of soaking up so much liquidity that the inflationary pressures caused by the rise in oil prices were restrained. Whereas the annual rate of inflation reached 41 per cent in 1974,

for the rest of the decade it was held between 10 and 20 per cent – still too high in the judgement of most economists.

The political prospects of the regime seemed on the whole secure in the later 1970s. The next formal test of its support was the general election for members of parliament (DPR) held in May 1977. The forcible 1973 fusion of political parties had ruled out the possibility of any real competition for the government's vehicle **Golkar**. Yet there remained the possibility of a protest vote being registered.

Alone of all the old political parties, only NU – now fused within PPP – had most of its traditional constituency still behind it. Many *kyais* of Java (especially East Java), with their networks of religious schools, pupils and village followers, were resistant to government pressure. They tended to be suspicious of government and the military, contemptuous of the government's bureaucracy and independent of its patronage. Already some *kyais*, however, were discovering advantages in collaboration with government. Some East Java *kyais* set up *tarekat*-like organisations which were approved neither by the urban Modernists nor by NU's leadership. These groups were successful in attracting *abangan* followers and leading them towards greater devotion to Islam. They were among the first Islamic bodies to affiliate with **Golkar**. The government, in return, proved willing to assist with such non-political activities as mosque-building. The NU mainstream, however, still stood at some distance from government and at times was clearly in opposition. The government suspiciously regarded NU or any other explicitly Islamic political body as an opposition force.

The 1977 election gave **Golkar** 62.1 per cent of the vote, while PDI got only 8.6 per cent. Because of the presence of NU within it, PPP got 29.3 per cent. Thus **Golkar** had a clear majority of the elected seats in the DPR and, of course, controlled the nominated seats and the People's Consultative Assembly (MPR). In 1978 the latter body predictably elected Soeharto to his third five-year term as President. Soeharto seemed fully in charge yet it was clear that, with nearly 30 per cent of the vote, Islam was still a political force the government could not ignore.

Alongside the evident political momentum of the regime, there continued criticism of its corruption. At this stage, public criticism was largely in the hands of students and a few prominent eccentrics. In September 1976 a mystic and former public servant named Sawito Kartowibowo was arrested. He had been fired from the bureaucracy in 1968 because of connections with the left wing of PNI. In 1972 he had visions which led him to conclude that he was to become President of Indonesia. In 1976 Sawito accused Soeharto and his cronies of corruption. He prepared a document called 'towards salvation', which he persuaded several prominent religious leaders (including T. B. Simatupang, then head of the Indonesian Council of Churches) and the elderly former Vice-President Hatta to sign. Soeharto was upset by this, perhaps because prominent Indonesians seemed to have been taken in by a political eccentric, but probably also because Sawito's claim to authority rested on Javano-Islamic mystical powers of the kind Soeharto himself relied upon. Sawito's trial in 1977–8 became a public forum for denouncing regime corruption – which did not, of course, prevent Sawito going to jail.

Student demonstrations against Soeharto and the corruption of his regime were regular campus occasions. The scale of corruption was indeed very great. Even though

it is in the nature of high-level dishonesty that its perpetrators often have means of concealing both its occurrence and its scale, various episodes became public knowledge. In 1977, *The New York Times* reported that an official of the Indonesian Department of Communications had demanded a kickback of US\$40 million on a telecommunications satellite contract. By this time it was commonly being estimated (on the basis of no firm evidence, it must be said) that corruption consumed 30 per cent of overseas aid and government expenditures. In November 1976 *Newsweek* was banned for a story discussing corruption in the presidential palace, specifically naming Soeharto, Ibu Tien and their eldest son Sigit Haryoyudanto (b. 1951). As the Soehartos' six children matured they would all discover extraordinarily lucrative business opportunities. They routinely denied that this had anything to do with their father's status as President. As will be seen in the following chapter, these children would eventually play a significant role in the downfall of Soeharto's regime.

The government's human rights record was dismal, with the blood of 1965–6 still on its hands. Amnesty International reckoned that there were still 55,000–100,000 political prisoners in Indonesia in 1977, held without trial since the coup attempt of 1965. Jimmy Carter was elected President of the United States in November 1976 after a campaign which emphasised human rights issues. So Jakarta, still heavily dependent on US aid and support, reluctantly decided that something must be done about these prisoners. At first Indonesia attempted sham release programmes which involved 'transmigrating' prisoners to what were, in effect, permanent detention and labour camps in the outer islands. But this was a transparent ruse, so by December 1977 the government decided that it must actually release those it could not bring to trial. By the end of 1980 all category B and C prisoners had apparently been released. The prominent writer Pramoedya Ananta Toer was among them. He and his fellow political prisoners faced restrictions in employment, could not take any role in public political life and often faced severe difficulties in rejoining their families and communities.

The government did not, however, refrain from further political imprisonment. As late as 1978 there were something over 100 arrests of people who were suspected of involvement in the events of 1965 but who had successfully hidden in the outer islands. They had returned to Java on the presumption that it was now safe to do so and were picked up there.

The regime was less inclined as the years went by to identify Communism as the greatest threat to the nation's security but rather spoke of 'imported ideologies', by which radical Islam was meant. Prior to the election of 1977, the regime became apprehensive that PPP might gain a substantial vote from disaffected citizens, for whom the party's Islamic character could be attractive. Evidently Ali Murtopo was authorized to diminish this threat. His first step was covertly to encourage old *Darul Islam* activists to regroup. When a significant number unwisely did so, in February 1977 the government swooped on them. By mid-year it had arrested 185 people whom it said belonged to a terrorist organisation called *Komando Jihad* (Holy War Command), committed to implementing Kartosuwirjo's plans for an Islamic state. The regime had thus created a terrorist organisation in order to crush it. Its evident intention to discredit Islam-based politics, however, had limited success. As noted above, PPP in fact got 29.3 percent of the vote in 1977, its best result throughout the Soeharto period.

Unknown numbers (but certainly hundreds) of Islamic activists were picked up by the government over the years and held for long periods without trial. But Soeharto was also softening his own image as an anti-Islamic Javanist mystic. In 1977 he and Ibu Tien undertook the minor pilgrimage (*usroh*) to Mecca. Thereafter he also began subsidising mosque construction.

Indonesia's external environment was one which generally favoured its developmentalist, repressive, anti-Communist, anti-radical-Islamist stance. The Communist victories in Indochina in 1975 left a legacy of concern about left-wing threats in Southeast Asia, just as the later Iranian Revolution of 1979 heightened Western anxieties about Islamic radicalism. The first summit of ASEAN's anti-Communist heads of governments was held in Bali in February 1976. This enhanced personal links among the ASEAN leaders and was an important step towards coordination of the members' external policies. ASEAN also decided to establish a permanent secretariat in Jakarta. The first ASEAN Secretary-General was the former Siliwangi Division commander Lieutenant General Hartono Dharsono. Indonesia's centrality to ASEAN was reflected in these developments.

As noted in the preceding chapter, anti-Communism had been an important element in Indonesia's decision to invade East Timor in December 1975. By 1976 *Fretelin* resistance was reduced to desultory fighting in the hills, and by 1979 it was effectively defeated even as a guerrilla force. Most of its leaders were dead or captured, its communications were destroyed and most of its weapons had been lost. Of the 4000 men in its armed force, *Falintil (Forças Armadas de Libertação Nacional de Timor-Leste*, Armed Forces of National Liberation of East Timor), 80 per cent were lost. In July 1976, East Timor was made Indonesia's 27th province, a status it was to hold for 23 unhappy years. Jakarta was now in a position to control, develop and exploit this new territory. East Timor remained sealed off from external scrutiny for many years to minimise reporting of what went on there. But incidences of exploitation, human rights abuses and resistance continued to be reported by the East Timor independence movement abroad led by José Ramos-Horta (b. 1949), by human rights non-governmental organisations (NGOs), and by some governments, notably that of Portugal.

Being anti-Communist, suspicious of radical Islam and in favour of capitalist-style development, Indonesia in the late 1970s was well placed to maintain the support of the United States and therefore that of other Western powers. Successive governments of Indonesia's nearest developed democracy, Australia, were equally supportive. Concern about human rights abuses, corruption and the conquest of East Timor bothered Western governments but did not deflect them from the larger geopolitical issues which determined how the world divided into Cold War camps, and which made Indonesia a state to be cultivated by the West. There is no doubt that the Indonesian policy elite was aware of its bargaining power in such matters and knew that, at least up to certain limits, abuses would be tolerated by their powerful Western allies. Once the major issue of the tens of thousands of post-1965 political prisoners had been dealt with, for about a decade Indonesia had a Cold War-defined freedom in internal affairs which its elite readily exploited. Meanwhile, Western governments and entrepreneurs sought opportunities to share profitably in Indonesia's development, from forestry to

manufacturing to arms sales.

For most of Indonesia's citizens, the windfalls generated from 1970s oil prices produced real improvements in standards of living. Now the government could fulfil its promise to improve the welfare of the Indonesian masses, a promise upon which much of its claim to legitimacy rested. Its achievements in agriculture, education and health were impressive, especially when compared to the record of the Dutch colonial regime or the Sukarno years.

Investment in irrigation, new seed strains, fertilisers and pesticides produced dramatic increases in the production of rice and other foodstuffs. In the 1960s, average rice availability was calculated to be less than 100 kg per capita but by 1983 the figure was 146 kg. Rice imports were reduced to nearly zero and Jakarta claimed to have achieved self-sufficiency in rice by the mid-1980s. Pessimistic predictions that Indonesia must face a food catastrophe gave way to cautious optimism. This remarkable achievement was a result of technological advances, government policies and the initiative and hard work of ordinary Indonesian farmers.

In education there were rapid advances. Over 100,000 new schools were built, especially in rural areas, and over 500,000 new teachers employed. By 1984 it was reported that 97 per cent of 7–12-year-olds were attending school, as opposed to 57 per cent in 1973. Literacy rates continued to rise. The 1980 census reported 80.4 per cent of males over the age of ten and 63.6 per cent of females to be literate. In the 1990 census the figures were 89.6 and 78.7 per cent respectively. There were, not surprisingly, differences in educational attainment between urban and rural areas. At the extremes, in 1990 the literacy rate of urban males over the age of ten was 95.9 per cent while for rural females was 74.1 per cent.

The benefits of public education in the Indonesian language were seen not only in the rising literacy figures, but also in the growth of the proportion of the population able to use the national language. In 1971 this was reported to be 40.8 per cent. The 1980 census gave it as 61.4 per cent and in 1990 it was reported that it had surpassed 80 per cent for Indonesians over the age of five. This rise reflected also the impact of newspapers and magazines and, perhaps even more, of radio and television employing the national language. The spread of **Bahasa Indonesia** continued to be a powerful instrument for enhancing the sense of national identity across Indonesia's sprawling archipelago.

Other welfare measures also indicated great strides forward, but when the results were compared with those of other Asian nations, Indonesia's relative poverty remained clear. The 1971 census reported one doctor for every 20.9 thousand inhabitants throughout the archipelago. The 1980 census showed a population of 147.3 million, with 12,931 doctors available: one for every 11.4 thousand. The 1990 census recorded 179.2 million inhabitants. In 1992 there were reported to be 25,125 general practitioners, specialists and dentists, giving a ratio of one for every 7.1 thousand inhabitants. Yet this level of medical provision still left Indonesia behind its ASEAN neighbours Malaysia, Thailand and the Philippines.

One of Indonesia's greatest successes was in its family planning programme. For the most part, sterilisation and abortion were culturally and religiously unacceptable in Indonesia, so its family planning relied heavily on contraceptive pills and intra-uterine

contraceptive devices. The government put substantial resources into the family planning programme, Islamic organisations did not oppose these measures, and impressive results were achieved. In the early 1950s the total fertility rate (average lifetime births per woman) in Indonesia was 6.4 but by 1995 it was down to 2.8, below that of the Philippines, Malaysia or India but still above that of Thailand. The rate of annual population growth fell from 2.32 per cent in the 1960s to 2.10 per cent in the 1970s and 1.97 per cent in the 1980s. This was one of the most successful family planning programmes in the world, which both ameliorated fears that Indonesia must one day face an unmanageable population crisis and attracted the attention of other nations eager to match Indonesia's success.

Much of the regime's education and welfare improvements, like much of its economic development, was concentrated in western Indonesia generally, and particularly on the island of Java. Sixty per cent of the population was living there in 1990, down from 61.9 per cent in 1980 and nearly 70 per cent in 1930. Java remained the location of Indonesia's capital city, the focus of much of the nation's development, the home of the majority of the population and consequently the focus of its politics. For the Indonesian elite, the outer islands were often well down their list of priorities.

Economic development, with its concentration of manufacturing in West Java, nevertheless brought about a significant reversal of the colonial-era restructuring noted in [Chapter 14](#), when the redirection of Indonesian products to overseas markets undermined the pre-colonial web of trade connecting archipelago communities to each other. Now, for the first time in at least a century, a national economy began to form as Indonesia experienced what Howard Dick has called 'a belated industrial revolution based on the resource of cheap labour' (Dick et al., *Emergence of a national economy*, p. 31). Raw materials from the outer islands were traded to the manufacturing centres of Java, where they were turned into finished products and traded across Indonesia, as well as in overseas markets. Once again it became possible that the Indonesian archipelago could be held together by economic advantage and self-interest.

Economic development and government investment in health, education and welfare brought significant transformations to Indonesia, including continuing rapid urbanisation. By 1990 as much as 30.9 per cent of the population was classed as urban. Jakarta's population had reached 8.3 million, while Bandung and Surabaya had both surpassed 2 million and Sēmarang had over one million inhabitants. In the countryside, electricity, schools, motorbikes and televised images of national affairs and urban lifestyles changed perceptions irrevocably. While the rich of the cities were certainly getting richer, so were many villagers. There were politically potent perceptions of a widening gap between rich and poor in the countryside, but there is little evidence to confirm that this was actually so, and some to suggest the contrary.

The central pillar of the Soeharto regime was the military, known in Indonesia as ABRI (*Angkatan Bersenjata Republik Indonesia*, Armed forces of the Republic of Indonesia). ABRI consisted of four services: army, navy, air force and police. Soeharto brought to the Presidency an understanding of military personnel and politics which he employed throughout his time. As the years passed, however, some ABRI officers grew uncomfortable with the military's subservience to an increasingly corrupt regime. Reform-minded officers sought to save ABRI from the taint of abuse and corruption,

and the interference and politicisation which attended close involvement with the presidential palace. They hoped to restore military professionalism, discipline and honour by distancing ABRI somewhat from Soeharto. Retired army officers in particular were sometimes prominent critics of the regime. But none of these efforts succeeded. ABRI's deeply rooted contempt for civilian bureaucracy and politics, its self-interest and Soeharto's successful manipulations ensured that ABRI remained at the very centre of the regime.



*Modern Jakarta, 1998*

Student demonstrations against Soeharto and the circus atmosphere of Sawito's trial continued into 1978. This led to a nationwide clamp-down on student activity, dubbed campus 'normalisation'. During 1978, student leaders and activist academic staff were arrested, student unions were closed and Islamic organisations were barred from campus activities. Ironically, this meant that campus mosques and underground Islamic study circles became the main venues where student activists could meet, out of sight of the authorities, thereby facilitating future religiously inspired activism.

Religion was always a sensitive issue for the regime. In the MPR session of March 1978, the principal point of conflict was what status to assign to home-grown mystical sects, which the 1973 MPR session had defined as *kēpērcayaan* (belief) rather than *agama* (religion). Government protection and funding for such groups was at stake here. Islamic interests fused in PPP rigorously opposed any further endorsement of *kēpērcayaan* and in the end the government gave in, omitting any measures regarding *kēpērcayaan* from the broad outlines of state policy for the next five years. Student protests decreased after this, but the government seems to have concluded that a campaign for the minds of Indonesians was needed.

To encourage ideological homogeneity, in 1978 the government began a process of compulsory indoctrination for all citizens in the state ideology *Pancasila*. The central figure in arranging this was Roeslan Abdulgani, formerly an active promoter of Sukarno's guided democracy ideology. Courses called P4 (*Pēdoman Pēnghayatan dan Pēngalaman Pancasila*, Guidelines for the implementation and experiencing of *Pancasila*) were introduced into government departments, workplaces, schools and

elsewhere. From the beginning the crude ideology of P4 attracted criticism and ridicule from intellectuals. But the idea that **Pancasila** was a uniquely Indonesian ideology which could guide the state and its citizens, protecting them from threats both from the left and the right, no doubt had considerable impact on many people. Like so much else done by the Soeharto regime, it was the corruption and abuse of the concept by Soeharto, his family and his cronies themselves which in the end did most to discredit it. Increasingly Soeharto seems to have regarded himself as the embodiment of **Pancasila** and his personal interests as its proper fruits.

The regime also sought greater administrative homogeneity. The Village Law of 1979 standardised Javanese terminology for villages and hamlets, much to the irritation of non-Javanese. It also decreed that, while village communities would submit a list of names for the village headship, higher administrative levels would select the successful candidate. These headmen now became salaried members of the government bureaucracy. Thus a structure of centralised hierarchical government control was progressively imposed on villages across the nation. Repeating the clumsy bureaucratic approach of the Dutch Village Regulation of 1906, the 1979 law sometimes amalgamated communities with differing social and religious traditions into units lacking a natural foundation of social cohesion, thereby increasing social tensions at the base of the administrative structure. These centralised efforts to make Indonesia a cohesive, **Pancasila**-minded bureaucratic unity from top to bottom had limited success in the face of the nation's ethnic, religious, linguistic and cultural variety. The strains which such diversity sometimes produced were exemplified by anti-Chinese riots in Surakarta in November 1980. These left no Chinese but eight Javanese dead; 240 Chinese shops, 230 homes, 23 factories, 32 office buildings and one school destroyed; and 680 people under arrest.

From 1980 ABRI sought a central role in village development by adopting a policy known as 'ABRI enters the village' (**ABRI masuk desa**). This was a civic action programme intended to promote development, to cement ABRI's role at its centre, and to win village-level esteem for the military. Teams of soldiers repaired bridges and wells, fixed roads, built places of worship and health clinics and, of course, carried out **Pancasila** indoctrinations. The military progressively defined a role for itself which focused on domestic issues, given that there was no longer any credible source of external threat to Indonesia. It could help to develop the economy, instruct the citizenry and assert military dominance over the broad direction of national affairs. When local people displayed interests or aspirations at variance with ABRI's priorities, it was prepared to use its manpower and firearms to crush dissidence mercilessly. Behind ABRI's approach lay a contempt for 'backward' villagers and for civilians in general which was an entrenched part of ABRI culture.

The regime was now routinely the target of criticism by retired military officers as well as students. In May 1980 there appeared a 'Petition of Fifty', signed by 50 leading citizens, including former ABRI figures such as Nasution, the former reforming governor of Jakarta Ali Sadikin (b. 1927), Hartono Dharsono and others who had played major roles in the early years of Soeharto's new order. This petition accused the President of misinterpreting **Pancasila** as if he were its embodiment and of abusing ABRI by requiring it to take sides in political affairs, as evidenced by its heavy-handed

measures to mobilise the **Golkar** vote in 1977. The petition was soon in circulation on the streets, but Jakarta's newspapers were too nervous to publish it for over two months. It had been preceded by public debate about the government's new election law, which prompted calls for truly free elections and a walkout of the parliament by NU in March. The law passed nevertheless. The Petition of Fifty was an important symbolic measure which echoed for many years, but it had little effect on the regime.

The NU walkout of parliament in March 1980 strengthened the government's concern about Islam as a source of political opposition. This was enhanced by the hijacking of a Garuda flight by five Islamic extremists in March 1981. In Bangkok an Indonesian anti-terrorist squad killed all but one of the hijackers and released all the hostages. PPP had no links to the hijacking, but as the embodiment of officially allowed Islamic politics it became even more the target of government manipulation and interference. This was especially true of PPP's core element NU.

Since 1971 no one from the Orthodox wing of Indonesian Islam had been appointed as Minister of Religion. Consequently NU's role in the Department of Religion – long its bureaucratic bastion and richest source of patronage – was being rapidly reduced. As they prepared for the coming 1982 general elections, NU and the Modernist wing of PPP were unable to agree on a list of candidates. The government's General Elections Institute ruled that the NU list was invalid. The competing list which was approved greatly favoured Modernist over NU candidates. NU's position as political opposition to the government and now a nascent opposition within PPP itself did nothing to ameliorate the hostility with which all levels of government regarded it. Many of the *kyais* who were the heart of NU had never been much enamoured of Jakarta politics and concluded that the interests of Orthodox Islam would be better served by withdrawing from party politics altogether. They gave higher priority to their local roles as teachers, spiritual guides and community leaders, roles which were being hampered by NU's oppositionist position. Thus NU's enthusiasm for party politics was rapidly waning.

The 1982 election campaign was marked by significant campaign violence. The Islamic daily newspaper **Pélita** was banned for publishing reports of the violence, as was Indonesia's most respected news weekly **Tempo**, founded in 1971 by one of the nation's leading intellectuals Goenawan Mohamad (b. 1941). **Golkar**'s percentage of the vote was the best result yet at 64.3 per cent. It reclaimed victory in Jakarta, which it had lost to PPP in 1977, and came out ahead in every province except Aceh. PDI fell to 7.9 per cent and PPP to 27.8 per cent.

In many ways Soeharto and his structures of governance seemed invincible, but there were significant changes taking place around him. From 1982 to 1986, Indonesia had to adjust to falling oil prices; the windfall days were over. There was excess world oil production and a recession in developed economies. Indonesia's exports and revenues fell. Development so far was impressive and annual growth continued at around 4 per cent. By 1982 annual per capita income had risen to nearly US\$600, which led the World Bank to reclassify Indonesia as a middle-income country. But development had also brought high levels of external debt, much of it denominated in Japanese yen and American dollars. External debt totalled US\$20,944 million by 1982, US\$40,071 million by 1986 and US\$51,415 million by 1988. This represented, respectively, 29.2, 52.2 and 64.1 per cent of GDP or a debt service ratio (debt as a

percentage of exports) of 18.1, 37.3 and 40.2 per cent respectively. These were figures sufficient to ring alarm bells in many quarters. Rice production continued to grow, however, according to official figures, and this was crucial to Indonesian welfare. Over the five years to 1982 rice production rose 36 per cent and national self-sufficiency was nearly achieved. Bumper harvests followed in 1983–5.

Indonesia was now playing a larger role on the world stage, appropriate to the regime's self-image as one of the development successes of what was then called the 'Third World'. In 1982 Soeharto made state visits to Washington and Tokyo, and received several heads of state in Jakarta: India's Indira Gandhi, Pakistan's Zia Ul-Haq and Nicolae Ceaușescu of Romania, the first Communist head of state to visit under Soeharto's new order regime. In 1983 the Japanese Prime Minister Nakasone Yasuhiro came to Jakarta and promised more aid and oil purchases.

A major generational change took place within ABRI in the early 1980s. Men of Soeharto's own 'Generation of 45' (*Angkatan 45*) were retiring and being replaced by younger officers at the top of the structure. This was symbolised particularly by Soeharto's appointment of General L. B. (Benny) Murdani (1932–2004) as ABRI commander in 1983. Murdani was a Javanese Catholic, whose ethnicity and career experience had won him Soeharto's trust and whose religion meant that he could never contemplate the Presidency for himself. Under new arrangements introduced by Soeharto, the Minister of Defence and Security was no longer commander of ABRI. Rather, the commander's post was now separate from the Minister and reported directly to the President.

ABRI had around 350,000 personnel at this stage. The official defence budget was under 10 per cent of government expenditure but this gives a false impression of ABRI's financial significance. The military owned multiple companies and foundations producing income for it and received special allocations which did not figure in regular government budget figures. These other sources of revenue must have been as great as ABRI's official budget. The military also had a role in a local arms industry operating under licences from foreign manufacturers, producing small arms, ammunition, helicopters, small patrol boats and small passenger aircraft. But ABRI's financial independence was curtailed by Soeharto from the early 1980s by requiring the approval of the Cabinet Secretariat for capital purchases over US\$250,000. This cut into ABRI kickbacks and brought ABRI business under more centralised scrutiny.

The 1980s also saw the rise to prominence of another, even younger, player in ABRI politics, Soeharto's son-in-law Major-General Prabowo Subianto (b. 1951). He was the son of the distinguished economist and former PSI politician Sumitro Djojohadikusumo and was married to Soeharto's daughter Siti Hediati Hariyadi (nicknamed Titiek, b. 1959). Prabowo was brilliant, highly educated, and, in the eyes of his opponents, a man of unbridled ruthlessness and ambition. In 1983 he was named deputy commander of the army's special forces – once called RPKAD and after 1986 known as **Kopassus** (*Komando Pasukan Khusus*, Special Forces Command). This consisted of para-commandos and covert warfare elements. Under Prabowo's leadership, the special forces fought separatist movements in Papua, East Timor and Aceh. Their record of using terror against civilians was probably the worst of any element in ABRI. As Prabowo pursued his meteoric rise through the military, he won

both admirers and bitter enemies. Some suspected for a time that here, at last, was Soeharto's successor, others that Prabowo represented the ultimate corruption of ABRI by presidential favouritism.

As Soeharto manoeuvred trusted men into crucial ABRI positions, he also diminished ABRI influence over **Golkar**. He thus continued to ensure that he was the central arbiter of national affairs and was in a position to play potentially competing forces off against each other. In 1983 he appointed as chairman of **Golkar** his trusted assistant Sudharmono (1927–2006), who had held the powerful ministerial post of State Secretary since 1973. Although Sudharmono was a former ABRI general, his background was as a military lawyer and not a combat officer, and in fact ABRI was hostile to him. Under his chairmanship (1983–8), civilians were promoted within **Golkar**. Attempts were made to reduce ABRI's dominance of the organisation and to make it potentially a civilian political party ready to shape Indonesia's future. In the end, this would prove too much for Soeharto himself to accept.

These transitions did nothing to lessen the regime's disregard for the rule of law in security matters. In 1983–5 a crime wave was met with state-sanctioned murders without trial of perhaps 5000 alleged criminals across the country. These so-called **Petrus** killings (from *pénembakan misterius*, mysterious shootings) were carried out by the police and military, with bodies being dumped in public places as warnings to others. Although the government denied knowledge of the killings at the time, in his 1989 autobiography Soeharto made it clear that the killings were state-sponsored 'shock therapy'.

Economic nationalism was encouraged by Indonesia's rising pride in its achievements. When a Stanvac contract on Sumatran oil fields expired in November 1983, **Pertamina** itself took over. The government required foreign firms to train local people and sought to develop local industry as far as possible and in particular to promote non-oil exports. Tourism was becoming a major source of foreign exchange and boomed from the mid-1980s, especially in Bali. Devaluation of the Rupiah by 28 per cent in March 1983 assisted tourism growth, as did visa-free entry for tourists from most countries, which began in that year.

The regime's self-confidence and its concern to prevent rising Islamic sensibilities from coalescing into a threatening political movement led it to push for still greater ideological homogeneity across the political and social spectrum. In 1983 the government decided that all organisations must adopt **Pancasila** as their sole ideological foundation. A bill was presented to parliament which ultimately passed in February 1985. This directly and intentionally challenged Islamic organisations which were hereby being told that their sole foundation must be other than Islam. The most politically significant Islamic organisation was NU, still a component within PPP (which accepted **Pancasila** as its sole foundation in August 1984). Many of NU's senior figures were already sceptical that political party activity and involvement in PPP brought NU and its constituency any real benefits. The demand that **Pancasila** be NU's sole foundation came at an opportune time for the organisation to rethink its role fundamentally.

A new leadership generation was emerging in NU, led by Abdurrahman Wahid (b. 1940), who was to become Indonesia's fourth President. He was the son of the former

NU leader Wachid Hasjim and grandson of NU's founder Hasjim Asjari, so his pedigree as an NU leader was impeccable. He was educated at state schools in Jakarta and Yogyakarta and at a famous *pésantren* in East Java, NU's heartland. In 1963 he travelled to the Middle East to study at Al-Azhar University in Cairo, where he was dissatisfied with the standard of study, so he then moved to the University of Baghdad (1968–70). He was thus at a distance from the tumultuous and bloody events in Indonesia which ushered in Soeharto's new order. Abdurrahman then returned to Indonesia and taught at Tébuiréng *pésantren* in Jombang, the school of his father and grandfather. He moved to Jakarta in 1971, where his broad experience, wide reading, openness of mind and charismatic individuality propelled him to a leading position in the city's intellectual and cultural life. He was popularly known as Gus Dur, *gus* being a Javanese term for a scion of an elite family and Dur being an abbreviation of Abdurrahman. His thinking, public speaking and writing emphasised Islam as a religion founded on rationality, with a commitment to tolerance and social pluralism. He also had a deep understanding of the mystical thinking which was so powerful within NU. In the crises faced by NU since the run-up to the 1982 election, Abdurrahman began to emerge as a leading figure.

In December 1983 a national meeting of NU's senior religious scholars held at Situbondo in East Java decided that the organisation should withdraw from PPP, abandon party politics altogether and accept *Pancasila* as its sole foundation. The constant harassment and pressure which NU had felt from government at all levels and the difficulties it had experienced within PPP had finally taken their toll. In any case, many senior *kyais* regarded NU as their organisation, not that of the politicians who acted in Jakarta in their name, and they felt it was time to regain control. This was a loss for the Jakarta political faction led by Idham Chalid, who had been pressured by senior *kyais* to step down in 1982, ostensibly on health grounds. It was widely believed that the young reformers' faction led by Abdurrahman Wahid was behind this reversal of fortunes.

These steps created rival factions within NU. The *pésantren* leaders and young reformers were now challenged by Idham's Jakarta-based supporters. Many *tarekat* leaders and Madurese *kyais* – both having significant influence within NU – were also opposed to the break with PPP. But late in 1983 the government refused the Idham faction authority to hold a rival NU congress in Jakarta. The alliance of young reformers and senior *kyais* was near to final victory.

These events were taking place in the context of increasing affirmation of religious identity and piety across the nation. Mosque attendance was rising and mosques and prayer houses were being built rapidly. In East Java there were 15.6 thousand mosques in 1973 and 25.7 thousand in 1990. This was a 65 per cent increase, whereas the rate of population growth was about 50 per cent over that period. Other forms of religiosity were also on the rise. In the same period, Catholic churches in East Java grew from 206 to 324, an increase of 57 per cent while Protestant churches and meeting halls rose from 1.2 thousand in 1973 to 2.3 thousand in 1984, a rate of growth well ahead of population. In Central Java, the number of mosques grew from 15.7 thousand in 1980 to 28.7 thousand in 1992, a growth of 83 per cent over only twelve years. Sufi *tarekats* were also growing rapidly. Javanist or *abangan* modes of religiosity appeared to be on the

wane and it was being confidently asserted in some quarters that the old *aliran* politics of the 1950s and 1960s could no longer exist in a more piously Islamic Indonesia.

The 1990 census recorded 156.3 million Muslims in Indonesia, 87.2 per cent of the population and the largest Muslim population of any nation in the world. This was a steady percentage, having been 87.1 per cent in 1980. Christians (Catholics and Protestants) totalled 17.2 million, 9.6 per cent of the population, whereas in 1971 the figure was 7.5 per cent and in 1980 it was 8.8 per cent. So Christianity was still growing. In the large cities of Central Java in particular, Christians constituted nearly 20 per cent of the population. The rising tide of religiosity was also reflected in the much smaller communities of Hindus (3.3 million, 1.8 per cent of the population in 1990) and Buddhists (1.8 million, 1.0 per cent of population).

Abdurrahman Wahid was one of the intellectual leaders of this tide of Islamisation. Another was the moderate intellectual Dr Nurcholish Madjid (1939–2005), who was the source of much controversial new thinking about flexible interpretations of Islam. In 1986 he established the organisation Paramadina to proselytise among urbanites. The Salman mosque at the Bandung Institute of Technology was a leading centre of campus revivalism, led by the charismatic Imaduddin Abdulrahim.

The network of IAINs (*Institute Agama Islam Negeri*, State Institute for Islamic Studies) played a very important role in this Islamisation. These were tertiary-level educational institutions under the Department of Religion rather than the Department of Education. They grew rapidly in the new order period. The two leading IAINs in Jakarta and Yogyakarta were particularly important in producing a steady stream of well-educated and committed Muslim intellectuals. Throughout Indonesia, people of all generations and backgrounds were committing themselves more fully to Islam. There was no visible sceptical or secularist movement to restrain this growing religiosity. The government and ABRI leadership were clearly concerned about its potential implications for political stability.

The NU congress at Situbondo in December 1984 ended NU's role as a political party. It accepted the decision of the *kyais'* meeting of a year before and decided to return to the *Khittah* 1926 (the spirit of 1926), that is, to NU's roots as a religious, educational, cultural, social and economic organisation. The leading figures in bringing about this transformation were Abdurrahman Wahid and Kyai Achmad Siddiq (1926–91), a senior leader known for his vigorous anti-Communism who had long been coordinator of NU's religious advisory board, the *Syuriyah*. Abdurrahman had his enemies among NU leaders, some of whom found him too provocative, idiosyncratic and mercurial for their taste. Achmad Siddiq resolved these concerns by reporting a dream he had had of Wachid Hasjim, which was interpreted as a sign that Wachid Hasjim's spirit wished his son to lead NU. Achmad Siddiq and Abdurrahman Wahid were now propelled to NU's leadership. Abdurrahman was elected general secretary of the executive board (*Tanfidziyah*) and Achmad Siddiq became the senior religious leader (*Rois Aam*).

NU was thus depoliticised and deradicalised in the eyes of government. In adopting *Pancasila*, however, the organisation contrived a formula which also reconfirmed its religious identity. Its new statutes proclaimed that '*Nah-dlatul Ulama*' is founded upon *Pancasila*' but also defined NU as an Islamic religious organisation which followed one

of the four Orthodox schools of law. The statutes also said that NU carried out its objectives in the context of the unitary Republic of Indonesia based upon **Pancasila** and the constitution of 1945, a specific denial that there was any need for an Islamic state.

With NU presenting itself as no longer part of a political opposition, the young reformers made conciliatory gestures towards government. For example, Benny Murdani, the Catholic ABRI commander, was invited to visit East Java **pésantrens** in 1984. From this time on, NU would exploit its formally non-political status to forge cooperative links wherever possible with government at all levels. Its **pésantrens** became engines of economic and social development. Thereby the Islamisation of Indonesian society was further accelerated.

The non-political Modernist organisation **Muhammadiyah** accommodated itself to **Pancasila** at its 1985 congress. In adopting **Pancasila** as its sole foundation, **Muhammadiyah** also asserted its identity as a movement of the Islamic faith based upon the *Qur'an* and *Sunnah*. But **Muhammadiyah** was not as successful as NU in subsequent years in pursuing its aims in collaboration with the regime. Modernism was more scripturalist and tended to be more inflexible than NU's Orthodox Islam and many of the nation's authorities were more nervous of it.

Some Islamic leaders and groups responded less positively than **Muhammadiyah** and NU to the **Pancasila** issue and other points of complaint, including two who were accused of being core inspirers of Islamic terrorism: Abdullah Sungkar (1937–99) and Abu Bakar Ba'asyir (b. 1938). They were both Java-born of Arabic ancestry. In 1972 these two, with others, founded the fundamentalist religious school (**pésantren**) Al Mukmin, located in the village of Ngruki, near Surakarta. It is believed that both were inducted into **Darul Islam** in 1976. Two years later they were arrested, charged with subversion and held in connection with **Komando Jihad**. They were accused of inciting others to reject **Pancasila** as the sole foundation and preventing their students from honouring the national flag on the grounds that this constituted **shirk** (polytheism, idolatry). Various legal manoeuvres gave them a period of freedom in the mid-1980s, which enabled them to flee to Johor, Malaysia, in 1985, where they remained until 1999. In 1993, Abdullah Sungkar broke from **Darul Islam** to form a clandestine organisation called **Jemaah Islamiyah** – modelled after the Egyptian organisation of the same name – to struggle via **jihad** (holy war) for an Islamic state. Recruits for this **jihad** were found particularly among Indonesian veterans of the international Islamic **jihad** against the Soviet occupation of Afghanistan (1979–89). These two leaders had to await the fall of Soeharto, however, before being able to return to Indonesia to pursue their objectives.

The government, its cronies and its **cukongs** were increasingly unacceptable in the eyes of many devout Islamic leaders and especially to their impoverished followers. The elite's wealthy extravagance and corruption, and the offences against Islamic morality which the elite seemed to commit, served to deepen mass animosity and to give it religious justification. In the first five months of 1984 the government suspended or shut down three magazines for publishing articles on the wealthy Indonesian elite and their **cukong** colleagues.

On 12 September 1984, the worst violence since the **Malari** riots a decade before was sparked by an incident in Jakarta's Tanjung Priok port district. There occurred a

demonstration by a mosque-inspired crowd, employing anti-government and anti-*cukong* slogans, denouncing *Pancasila* as the sole foundation, accusing ABRI soldiers of having defiled the mosque and chanting '*Allahu akbar*' (God is great). ABRI opened fire on the advancing crowd and killed at least 28 people, and perhaps several hundred. In the wake of Tanjung Priok, anti-government pamphlets spread across Java calling upon Muslims to defend the faith. Bombings and arson attacks followed in Jakarta. Liem Sioe Liang's Bank Central Asia was the first target. The ancient Buddhist temple of Barabudur (Borobudur) in Central Java was bombed in January 1985. In an attempt to calm Islamic sentiments, the Catholic ABRI commander Murdani visited mosques and religious schools, reassuring Muslims of their centrality to the nation. But the violence continued. In July 1985 fires destroyed a major shopping mall in Jakarta's Chinatown business district and the headquarters of *Radio Republik Indonesia*. A few weeks later, 60 buildings were burned in a Jakarta business district.

The government swiftly dealt with those it blamed for this wave of violence. About thirty people were gaoled for up to three years for the Tanjung Priok incident. Ten people were tried for the Bank Central Asia bombing. An Islamic preacher was given a life sentence. Then people with significant standing were convicted and jailed. The former Minister of Industries H. Mohamad Sanusi (b. 1920) was sentenced to 19 years. Most remarkably, the former Siliwangi Division commander and first ASEAN Secretary-General Dharsono was sentenced to ten years, later reduced to seven. It seemed that others among his fellow signatories of the 'Petition of Fifty' might also be tried, but in fact they were not.

A general crackdown on dissent and an attempt to stop reporting of corruption followed. In 1986, nine old PKI followers who had been imprisoned for years were executed, including (it seems) Sjam. Two thousand oil industry workers were fired for alleged involvement with PKI over twenty years before. Pramoedya's works were declared illegal. In October 1986, when the much-respected and widely read Protestant daily *Sinar Harapan* ('Ray of hope') published articles on the presidential succession and the shadier side of Indonesian business, the government shut it down, ending 23 years of publication. After some months, it resurfaced as *Suara Pembaruan* ('The voice of renewal'). But this repression did little to attenuate Western governments' positive view of the Soeharto regime. In April 1986 the American President Ronald Reagan came personally to Bali to meet with Soeharto and other ASEAN leaders.

The general election campaign of 1987 was the first serious test of what the depoliticisation of NU really meant. The nascent grass-roots alliance between NU *kyais* and the bureaucracy bore fruit as *kyais* urged their followers to support *Golkar*. Abdurrahman Wahid himself attended *Golkar* campaign functions. Bureaucrats no longer perceived political barriers to cooperation with NU in the name of development, and often readily embraced more devout Islam, which no longer seemed a political and career liability.

The shift of NU's supporters from PPP to *Golkar* was clear in the April 1987 election outcomes. *Golkar*'s share of the vote soared from its 1982 level of 64.3 per cent to 73.2 per cent while PPP's dropped from 27.8 to 16.0 per cent. PDI rose from 7.9 per cent in 1982 to 10.9 per cent. So 11.8 per cent of votes had abandoned PPP, 8.9 per cent going to *Golkar* and the rest to PDI. *Golkar* even came out on top in Aceh, where

it won 51.8 per cent of the vote, ahead of PPP at 42.8 per cent and PDI at 5.4 per cent. Regime confidence rose with the Golkar vote, for it seemed that Islam was under reasonable control. NU was evidently co-opted, PPP emasculated and the activists responsible for Tanjung Priok and its aftermath were dead or jailed.

Soeharto's government had also successfully weathered five years of economic difficulty. Careful economic planning, fiscal austerity and devaluation of the Rupiah had led to economic recovery. In order to break a major bottleneck in Indonesia's trade, Soeharto issued a Presidential Instruction in 1985 which abolished the notoriously corrupt and incompetent Indonesian customs service and contracted its responsibilities to the Swiss Société Général de Surveillance, which brought dramatic reforms. Major reductions in tariffs were introduced in 1986, although the self-interest of cronies in the steel, plastics and cotton industries were protected from these changes. The *Asian Wall Street Journal* estimated that steel in Indonesia was 25–45 per cent above the international market price and plastics 15–20 per cent. From 1987 to 1992 annual average economic growth was 6.7 per cent, despite the absence of high oil revenues. Manufacturing and other non-oil exports were becoming a major feature of the Indonesian economy. In the early 1990s the reported proportion of the workforce in agriculture fell below 50 per cent for the first time. Poverty was declining and there was little evidence to support suspicions of a widening gap between rich and poor.

There was, however, evidence of a major regional development gap, which had ominous implications for the future. But the main distinction now was not the long-standing one between Java and the outer islands, for Java now contributed significantly to Indonesia's exports. In 1990 Java produced 62 per cent of non-oil GDP. There had also been considerable development in Sumatra and much tourist wealth in Bali. Thus, it was more a growing difference between a rapidly developing western Indonesia and the eastern islands, which were lagging far behind. Indonesia was everywhere still a poor country, despite the real progress in development and the soaring skyscrapers of Jakarta, but it was poorer in the east than in the west.

The regime's management of economic and political challenges went along with greater diplomatic prominence. At the October 1985 meeting in Rome of the UN Food and Agriculture Organisation, a 'North–South dialogue' took place with Soeharto appearing as spokesman for the South and François Mitterrand for the North. Soeharto went on to visit Eastern Europe and in October the USSR's Deputy Prime Minister visited Jakarta. At the observances of the 30th anniversary of the Bandung Asian–African Conference earlier that year, Indonesia presented itself as again a leader of non-aligned nations.

Jakarta's most prominent international initiatives took place within Southeast Asia. ASEAN faced its first major regional diplomatic issue as a consequence of Vietnam's invasion of Cambodia at the end of 1978. In defence of the principle of non-intervention, the ASEAN states became supporters of the deposed, murderous Khmer Rouge regime of Pol Pot. This posed a dilemma for Indonesia, as both Indonesia's governments and its military had long had friendly relations with their Vietnamese counterparts. Communism was a less important consideration to Indonesia than the fact that Vietnam was the only other state in Southeast Asia – indeed in all of Asia – which had won its independence from colonial rule through armed revolution. Furthermore,

Indonesia repeatedly found itself being admonished alongside Vietnam by the UN General Assembly to withdraw from conquered territories: Vietnam from Cambodia and Indonesia from East Timor. While Indonesia tended to defer to Thailand as the ‘front line’ state within ASEAN, it remained reluctant to embrace ASEAN’s anti-Vietnam position. In doing so, it also distanced itself from Washington’s stance.

Indonesia tried to use its links with Vietnam to resolve the Cambodia impasse. Benny Murdani visited Hanoi to this end in 1984, while Foreign Minister Mochtar Kusumaatmadja (b. 1929) went to Moscow in 1984 and to Hanoi in 1985. Vietnam’s Foreign Minister Nguyen Co Thach and Minister of Defence General Van Tien Dung visited Jakarta separately in that year. But these efforts produced no breakthrough at this stage.

In 1988 Ali Alatas (b. 1932) became Foreign Minister and launched initiatives which produced a settlement in Cambodia. In July the first Jakarta Informal Meeting took place among the four warring Cambodia factions, all ASEAN governments, Vietnam and Laos. This process led to an international conference in Paris which opened in 1989, co-chaired by France and Indonesia, represented by Alatas. A comprehensive agreement was eventually signed in October 1991 in Paris. Indonesian troops took part in the subsequent UN Transitional Authority for Cambodia, which oversaw the transition from active conflict to somewhat less bloody forms of politics. Indonesia’s regional leadership over Cambodia earned it much international respect.

Indonesia began to campaign now for the presidency of the Non-Aligned Movement, but its standing in this group was still being undermined by its manifestly colonial conquest and rule of East Timor. In 1988 Yugoslavia was elected to the presidency of the Movement but international interest in the fate of the East Timorese was waning. No foreign government with any significant influence in Jakarta seriously thought Indonesia would ever withdraw and therefore saw any point in pressing for East Timorese self-determination, although Indonesia was often urged quietly to improve its treatment of the East Timorese. In 1985 Australian Prime Minister Bob Hawke recognised Indonesia’s sovereignty over East Timor and shut down *Fretelin*’s external radio link with Australia. The anti-Indonesian vote in the UN was weaker each year. In 1991 Indonesia succeeded in winning the Non-Aligned Movement presidency, reflecting the nation’s international standing and a general – if often uncomfortable – acquiescence in its absorption of East Timor.

In March 1988 Soeharto was re-elected by the MPR to his fifth five-year term as President. With all the confidence of a man who had risen from village childhood to world statesman, surrounded by ever-richer family, cronies and sycophants who heaped adulation upon him, Soeharto acted to make sure that no one could challenge his power. Benny Murdani seemed to be too powerful and independent as ABRI commander. It was widely reported that his greatest failing in Soeharto’s eyes had been to try, presumptuously, to advise the President to curtail his children’s business activities. So in February 1988 Murdani was replaced by Try Sutrisno (b. 1935), while Murdani was made Minister of Defence. Soeharto began a process known as the ‘de-Bennyisation’ of ABRI, as officers who admired and were loyal to Murdani were replaced by men whom Soeharto felt he could trust more fully. In the March MPR session Soeharto selected as his new Vice-President (1988–93) Sudharmono, regarded by ABRI as its archenemy.

**Kopkamtib** had also become too powerful, overriding other agencies, generally acting as a law unto itself, and too much a tool of Murdani in Soeharto's estimation. So it was shut down in September 1988 and replaced by a new National Stability Maintenance Coordinating Body (**Bakorstanas, Badan Kordinasi Pemantapan Stabilitas Nasional**), directly under the authority of the President and ABRI commander.

ABRI was concerned at the increasing signs of independence and civilian influence in **Golkar**, which now claimed 25 million members. Soeharto, too, seems to have been uncomfortable about **Golkar**'s directions. A **Golkar** congress was held in October 1988. ABRI reasserted its influence, having gained two-thirds of the seats on **Golkar**'s provincial boards and thereby controlling the congress. ABRI spread rumours that Sudharmono had old PKI links, making it easier to dump him as **Golkar** chair. He was replaced by a retired general. Whether this represented reassertion of control by ABRI or by Soeharto was not clear, but the nascent independence of **Golkar** was nipped in the bud.

Soeharto, ABRI and the rest of Indonesia's top elite knew that economic development and social change across Asia were producing demands for political reform elsewhere. In the Philippines, Taiwan, South Korea and other states democratic change was under way. The overthrow of Philippines dictator Ferdinand Marcos in February 1986 by a 'people's power' revolution was particularly ominous for Soeharto, for there were many parallels and personal links between the two corrupt and oppressive regimes. In ABRI, doctrinal thinking was now dominated by the concept of vigilance (**kewaspadaan**). In ABRI's view, vigilance was needed to prevent the emergence of threats to stability and development. Such vigilance seemed to be succeeding. Islam was now reasonably domesticated by a combination of co-option and repression. And **Golkar**'s nascent independence was undermined.

Both domestic and international circumstances remained supportive of the Soeharto regime. Domestically, an educated, urban, cosmopolitan middle class was emerging which was increasingly Islamic in its personal identity and behaviour. Efforts to define and measure the size of this class were frustratingly vague and contradictory, but there was no doubt that significant social change was taking place. This middle class recognised that it benefited from Soeharto's developmental policies and that it was surrounded by millions of Indonesians who were still very poor. So middle-class Indonesians hoped for reform of the regime but were generally uninterested in a 'people's power' revolution in Indonesia. They knew that if the poor were mobilised politically, their first target would be the top elite and the **cukongs**, but the second was likely to be the wealth of the middle class. So compromises were made, illegality tolerated and ABRI's abusive security approach accepted by the middle class as the price of development.

It was not only the emerging middle class who tolerated the regime's abuses as the price to be paid for its benefits. Rural villagers suffered extortion from those above them, but they also saw real benefits from the Soeharto regime: electricity in villages, more schools and clinics, more rice, more money, moderate inflation and the possibility of better times for their children. The urban poor found opportunities in the informal sector, in construction work, in other interstices of the urban economy and in the developing industries. Devout Muslims could see their society becoming more Islamic.

NU and **Muhammadiyah** seemed to have made peace with the regime in ways which were supportive of the further Islamisation of Indonesian society. While there was a significant gap in development between eastern and western Indonesia, for most people throughout the country there were reasons to believe life was improving.

Externally, Western states saw Indonesia as a conservative development-minded country. It was a remarkably successful rescue of what had once been an economic, social and political disaster. Its development brought multiple opportunities for Western governments, businesses and individuals to profit from Indonesia's growth. Politically, Jakarta would not join any military alliances and saw itself increasingly as a leader of non-aligned states. In the competitive Cold War world, this made it even more important for the West to court Indonesia's friendship. That it was the most populous nation of the Islamic world also made Western governments eager to support the Soeharto regime, which had shown it could domesticate Islam's political potential. So Western powers, too, were willing to tolerate what in other circumstances would have been unacceptable aspects of the regime in the interest of larger issues.

In the next decade, changes in the regime, in its domestic, social and political setting and in its international environment would pull apart the strands of self-interest which gave it such stability from the mid-1970s to the late 1980s. Then it would become a question of when, in response to what triggers and at what cost the regime would fall.

## ***Chapter 23***

---

# **The Challenge, Crisis and Collapse of the New Order, 1989–98**

Indonesia and its international context changed rapidly from the late 1980s. The end of the Cold War and the collapse and disintegration of the Soviet Union meant that Western democratic governments had less reason to collaborate with objectionable Third World regimes. At the same time, they led the Indonesian government and military to step up suppression, for fear of a Soviet-style collapse with attendant ethnic violence in Indonesia. They did this just as the Indonesian middle class grew less tolerant of the regime's abuses and rising Islamic sensibilities demanded greater justice and morality. In these challenging circumstances, Soeharto's family and ruling clique pushed their corruption and abuses of power to new heights. Then Asia's financial crisis plunged Indonesia into economic disaster, removing the underlying reason why many citizens supported the government. In 1998 Soeharto's regime disintegrated as it had been born in 1965–6, in the midst of economic collapse, violence and bloodshed in the streets.

The demise of the Soviet empire and then of the Soviet state itself was an unpleasant shock to the government of Indonesia. Like its Soviet counterpart, the Soeharto regime ruled a vast nation of multiple ethnic and religious identities, with difficulties in communications and general infrastructure, much poverty and regional disparities in development. The Soviet breakup began in 1988. There was ethnic violence between the mainly Islamic Azerbaijan and mainly Christian Armenian Soviet Republics and demands for cultural and political independence from the Baltic Republics. In 1989 Poland and Hungary moved towards multiparty democracy and the government of East Germany began to disintegrate. The Berlin Wall was torn down in November 1989. In December Nicolae Ceaușescu – Soeharto's state guest seven years before – was overthrown in Romania and killed. The following year Lithuania declared its independence from the USSR and ethnic violence broke out in the mainly Islamic Kirghiz Soviet Republic. In 1991 Yugoslavia started breaking up. In December of that year the USSR was formally dissolved. As if to remind the world that ethnic and religious divisions and violence were not a monopoly of the former Soviet sphere of influence, in December 1992 Hindu–Islamic violence flared over the mosque at Ayodhya in India. In subsequent weeks over 1200 people died. The Soviet break-up was interpreted in some quarters as the consequence of Mikhael Gorbachev's policies

of reform (*perestroika*) and openness (*glasnost*). By contrast, in May 1989 at Tiananmen Square the Chinese government showed that a student-led democracy movement could be bloodily put down by military force.

Soeharto, ABRI and Indonesia's government elite evidently saw these events as warnings of the risks inherent in ethnic and religious differences and the dangers of democratic concessions. They do not appear to have foreseen how the Cold War's end would change their global context. The United States remained as the world's sole superpower, no longer needing to bargain or compromise with odious regimes to keep them in the American 'camp'. The spreading tide of democracy also facilitated demands across the globe for greater human freedom and dignity and for the isolation and punishment of oppressive regimes. The horrific Tiananmen Square episode particularly increased popular pressure on Washington and its European allies to lend no further support to oppressive dictatorships.

In Aceh, the Soeharto regime could observe ethnically and religiously inspired separatism again rising. Aceh had been quiet since a period of rebel activity in 1976–82 (including a declaration of independence on 4 December 1976), but separatist rebel activity resumed in May 1988. It became serious in 1989 when fighters of GAM (*Gerakan Aceh Merdeka*, Independent Aceh Movement) attacked ABRI posts and captured weapons. The rebels had significant links with outside supporters. Several hundred received guerrilla training in Libya. GAM had funding from the generally quite wealthy Acehnese community resident in Malaysia. Indonesia claimed that Malaysian identity cards were found on rebel bodies and GAM fugitives were able to take refuge in Malaysia.

GAM was not led by *ulama* but rather by local lay people who were fed up with the way Jakarta ran the province. In particular, the boom in liquefied natural gas produced large revenues from local oil and gas fields, but only a small proportion remained in Aceh. The development of the Lhokseumawe industrial zone did, however, bring changes which many Acehnese found unacceptable, including dispossession of local farmers, prostitution, gambling, alcohol, drugs and strong-arm thugs linked to ABRI. It was soon clear that GAM had significant popular support, especially in Pidie, North Aceh and East Aceh.

In mid-1990, with rebel incidents at their peak, Jakarta sent *Kostrad* troops into Aceh under Prabowo. From that time until 1998, Aceh was designated as a 'Military Operations Area' (DOM, *Daerah Operasi Militer*), in effect a declaration of local martial law. Jakarta's main response to Acehnese protest was thus to remain military in character. Terror was a standard tactic. Suspected GAM sympathisers were captured, tortured and executed without trial. Bodies were left in public places to intimidate the populace. ABRI successfully reduced the level of GAM activity, but at a high cost to its own reputation and to Acehnese feelings of commitment to Indonesia. From this time onward, local animosity towards ABRI and Jakarta was the rebels' most powerful recruiting tool.

Few of Aceh's *ulama* supported GAM and most were enrolled in the government's counter-insurgency and propaganda campaigns: another apparently successful co-optation of Islamic political forces. This reflected the extent to which Aceh's *ulama*, as the local elite, had benefited from Jakarta's development policies. They were now to a

large extent part of the national middle class with a stake in the status quo.

Islamic leaders were not always co-opted by the regime. In Lampung, South Sumatra, ABRI encountered a potent movement in early 1989 led by local religious figures. The military response was brutal. About a hundred villagers were killed. ABRI at first said that this had been a group of religious fanatics but later conceded that complaints over land rights sparked the protest.

East Timor was also reviving as a trouble spot for Jakarta. Until 1989 the province had been closed to outside scrutiny and ABRI had a free hand there, but then it was opened again. This allowed greater external scrutiny of the fruits of Indonesian rule over East Timor. These were a combination of development investment (although it remained the province with the lowest GDP per capita in the country) along with attempts to suppress East Timorese political identity, exploitation of local resources (mainly coffee, sandalwood and marble) by senior ABRI figures and ABRI brutality. In subsequent years new problems arose because of the growing domination of local economic development by Indonesian settlers from outside East Timor (especially Bugis and Makassarese).

The Catholic Church became a powerful tool of identity for the East Timorese, an organisational network and an international political force supporting their cause, but it had not always been so. In 1952 only 13 per cent of the population of East Timor was Catholic, most of the highland Timorese still being animists. By 1973, two years before the Indonesian invasion, Catholicism claimed the adherence of 29 per cent of the population. Under Indonesian rule, large numbers of East Timorese joined the Catholic Church. By 1990 Catholics represented over 80 per cent of the population and by 1994 they were nearly 90 per cent. Catholicism was a means for East Timorese to distinguish themselves from the mainly Islamic Indonesian troops and non-Timorese settlers who dominated their land. But conversion also reflected the leadership of local Catholic religious leaders in defending East Timorese. The leading Church figure was the head of the hierarchy in East Timor, Monsignor Carlos Filipe Ximenes Belo (b. 1948), who was Apostolic Administrator (1983–8) and then Bishop from June 1988. When the Indonesian government outlawed the use of the Portuguese language in East Timor in 1981, the Church decided to use one of the local languages, Tetun, rather than Indonesian as the language of church services. It thereby supported the development of Tetun as a tool of East Timorese identity. Tetun faced tough competition from Indonesian, which was used in the educational system and all public media, but Tetun nevertheless succeeded in becoming the leading local language of East Timor.

In October 1989 Pope John Paul II visited Dili. There he consecrated the cathedral and held an open-air mass before a crowd of 10,000. A pro-independence demonstration took place after the mass. The police beat the demonstrators before the cameras of international journalists covering the Pope's visit. Then they arrested 140 young activists, several of whom claimed that they were tortured. From this time onwards, international interest in East Timor increased, but the Jakarta authorities and local ABRI were determined to resist any fundamental change there.

Foreign governments continued to support the Soeharto regime and regarded East Timor as a minor irritant to which Jakarta should be wise enough to find a solution. In December 1989, shortly after the well-publicised incidents surrounding the Pope's visit,

Australia signed a treaty with Indonesia to exploit jointly the ‘Timor Gap’ zone between the two nations. Neither government imagined that ten years later a separate East Timorese political entity would find itself the successor to Indonesia as Australia’s partner to the treaty. The United States carried through with a sale of F-16 aircraft to Jakarta late in that year. In June 1990 the IGGI consortium of aid donors committed itself to increased aid to Indonesia, up 4.6 per cent over the 1989 figure to US\$4.5 billion.

Some of the elite of the new order were nevertheless growing concerned about the impact of globalisation. They could see the implications of improving world communications in the coverage of East Timor and the protests it produced, and in Indonesian demands for greater ‘openness’ – Indonesian *keterbukaan* being the local variant of Gorbachev’s *glasnost*. When the American ambassador left Jakarta in May 1989 he provoked considerable public debate by calling for greater openness in political affairs. The government seemed at times to embrace the idea, but in fact sought always to limit it. ABRI regarded the increasingly vocal Indonesian and international networks of activists, protesters and NGOs involved in issues such as Aceh, East Timor, anti-corruption, environmental protection and legal aid as threats to regime stability, to economic development, and to ABRI’s own centrality in national affairs. ABRI’s response was to become more repressive. So the diverging trajectories of Indonesian society and the regime – the former seeking greater freedom and the latter intending to concede less – began to gather momentum.

There was considerable discussion of the succession to Soeharto in 1990, but it had no impact on political reality. By 1990 he had been President of Indonesia longer than Sukarno. He was firmly entrenched and determined to remain so. When Soeharto published his autobiography in 1989 under the title *Pikiran, ucapan dan tindakan saya* (‘My thoughts, statements and actions’), many were surprised at the degree of arrogance it revealed.

Soeharto was now a statesman on the world stage. In 1989 he made a state visit to the USSR, already teetering on the brink of collapse. What he saw there presumably enhanced his determination to avoid similar events in Indonesia. He also normalised Indonesia’s relations with China that year. He and Chinese Premier Li Peng exchanged visits in 1990 and Jakarta received the first Palestinian ambassador to Jakarta, all steps enhancing Indonesia’s standing in the Non-Aligned Movement. In September 1991 Indonesia was elected to the Movement’s presidency and the following year its summit meeting was held in Jakarta.

The regime’s domestic political environment still seemed manageable. Both PPP and PDI were entangled in leadership conflicts which the government encouraged. Nevertheless, this was not a regime ever prepared to relax its vigilance against potential threats. As a reminder of the costs of radical politics, in 1990 four old men held since 1965 were executed. Students were sentenced. *The New York Times* was denied access to the country after an article about the Soeharto family’s shady business dealings. And a political musical show entitled ‘Succession’ was banned. The following year the *International Herald Tribune* was banned for four months, 50 dissident intellectuals were forbidden to travel abroad, two press licences were withdrawn and several plays and poetry readings were not allowed to proceed.

ABRI remained the regime's central tool for repressing dissent. Soeharto was committed to 'de-Bennyisation'. Promotion in the military now depended heavily upon closeness to Soeharto, even more than professional competence. In 1990 Soeharto appointed his brother-in-law Major-General Wismoyo Arismunandar (b. 1940) as head of *Kostrad*.

In the increasingly religious environment of Indonesia, Soeharto moved to co-opt and win the support of Islamic sentiments. In 1989, 21 prominent Islamic figures from NU and *Muhammadiyah* secretly endorsed Soeharto continuing as President, an endorsement which became public knowledge the following year. In 1991 Soeharto went on the major pilgrimage (*hajj*) to Mecca. Thereafter he adopted the name *haji* Muhammad Soeharto. He sought the favour of indigenous *pribumi* business leaders, among whom strong senses of Islamic identity were common. In 1990–1 Soeharto urged *cukongs* and large enterprises to make shares available to *pribumi* entrepreneurs. These efforts had little effect and probably served only to highlight still further the role of the *cukongs* and to make Chinese Indonesians in general a more prominent object of popular criticism.

The most dramatic steps in associating the regime and Islamic circles involved Soeharto's protégé Dr Bacharuddin Jusuf Habibie (b. 1936), who was to become Indonesia's third President before the decade was out. Habibie was born in Sulawesi of mixed Bugis and Javanese parenthood. His father died when he was a boy of 14 in 1950. In that same year he acquired a new and eventually powerful mentor when Soeharto arrived as a young military commander, with his headquarters across the street from Habibie's house in Makassar. Soeharto took the fatherless youngster under his wing. Habibie distinguished himself at school. He has been described by his admirers as a genius. He, in turn, later deferentially described Soeharto as a 'super genius'. Habibie's secondary schooling took place in Bandung, where he went on to study engineering at the Institute of Technology. He then proceeded to West Germany to study aircraft construction engineering. He finished a Diploma of Engineering at the *Technische Hochschule* in Aachen in 1960, followed by a doctorate in 1965. He went to work as an aeronautical engineer in a West German firm which was later merged into the Messerschmitt enterprise. In 1974, just as his years with Messerschmitt were about to end, Habibie was appointed its Vice-President and Director of Technology.

In late 1973 Ibnu Sutowo of Pertamina visited West Germany and passed to Habibie a call from Soeharto to return home. In 1974 he arrived back in Jakarta, where the President told him to set up a local aircraft construction industry. From this was born IPTN (*Industri Pesawat Terbang Nusantara*, Indonesian Archipelago Aircraft Industry), the centrepiece of what became Habibie's vast empire of high-technology state enterprises, including aviation, ammunition, electronics and ship-building. In 1978 he was appointed Minister for Research and Technology. He was subsequently elected to learned academies of engineering and aeronautics in Germany, the United States, Great Britain, France, Sweden, Japan and Malaysia, and received awards from international agencies. To his followers he was a technological genius, carving a high-tech future for Indonesia. To his enemies he was an irresponsible and possibly mad careerist who used his closeness to Soeharto to pump billions of dollars into loss-making quixotic enterprises, concealing the scale of losses by not releasing full

accounts. ABRI particularly disliked his interference in fields of military technology which it saw no reason to surrender to the control of a civilian.

Habibie identified himself as a devout Muslim. He made the off-season pilgrimage to Mecca (*umroh*) in 1982 and the major pilgrimage, the *hajj* itself, in 1984 as a guest of the government of Saudi Arabia. As is true of many Muslims, Habibie said that his experience of the pilgrimage deepened his religiosity. He adopted the practice known among the most pious circles of fasting on Monday and Thursday of every week as a religious discipline.

Habibie was a unique combination of civilian background, academic ability, Islamic piety and closeness to Soeharto, which made him seem a key to the future for many devoutly Islamic middle-class intellectuals. When such a group decided to establish a new organisation, they turned to Habibie to head it. Soeharto approved the creation of ICMI (*Ikatan Cendekiawan Muslim se-Indonesia*, All-Indonesia Union of Muslim Intellectuals) in December 1990.

ICMI changed the political and religious context in Indonesia for a decade. It represented a reconciliation between the state and Modernist Islam which would have been unthinkable a decade before. But there was ongoing debate about who had successfully co-opted whom by its creation. Muslim middle-class intellectuals could see a ladder to opportunity and influence before them. By August 1992 ICMI had 11,000 members and seven months later 40,000. It began to publish its own newspaper, *Republika*, and set up a think-tank and research organisation called CIDES (Centre for Information and Development Studies). Most of Jakarta's leading Islamic intellectuals joined ICMI from the start. Abdurrahman Wahid, however, refused to join and consistently condemned ICMI as an elitist and sectarian organisation which posed a threat to a pluralist Indonesia.

Soeharto's courting of Islamic support produced a series of concessions over the late 1980s and early 1990s. Girls were allowed to wear the *jilbab* (a tight headscarf around the face) and Islamic education for Muslim students was strengthened in state schools. The nation's Islamic courts won increased powers, and harsh sentences were imposed on journalists and others who were accused of publicly slandering Islam. This was in a social environment of increasing segregation of the sexes at some universities and pressure from Islamic conservatives for women to restrict themselves to the role of spouses, mothers and housewives.

Strengthening Islamic sensibilities were fed in part by elite corruption and the offensive displays of wealth that it made possible. By the early 1990s the regime's corruption had reached extravagant proportions and was widely known throughout the country and abroad. Internationally, Indonesia was generally thought to be the most corrupt nation in the world. All of Soeharto's children were now making fortunes: his daughters Siti Hardiyanti Rukmana (Tutut, b. 1949), Siti Hediyyati Hariyadi (Titiek, b. 1959) and Siti Endang Adiningsih (Mamiek, b. 1964) and his sons Sigit Haryoyudanto (b. 1951), Bambang Trihatmojo (b. 1953) and Hutomo Mandala Putra (Tommy, b. 1962). They ran large-scale money-gathering enterprises. Tommy's companies were thought to have revenues in excess of US\$500 million in 1992. The Soeharto children had special deals on toll roads, the importation of strategic commodities, the exploration of natural resources and in many other areas. Some of the *cukongs* who had made

shady fortunes in collaboration with Soeharto were now successfully making the transition to legitimate business. It was estimated that around 70 per cent of all private economic activity was in Chinese hands in the 1990s. Aburizal Bakrie (b. 1946) was the sole large-scale *pribumi* entrepreneur who could operate legitimately at the level of the *cukong* Salim, Astra and Dharmala groups. Many others were gathering fortunes in a manner that was blatantly dishonest. After a quarter-century of Soeharto's rule, the judiciary and police were so thoroughly corrupted that there were no effective checks on the unscrupulous greed of palace-connected wheeler-dealers.

Some of the worst scandals concerned the nation's precious tropical forests. It was estimated that in 1950 Indonesia had 152 million hectares (587,000 square miles) of forest, but by 1989 this was down by nearly 30 per cent to an estimated 109 million hectares (421,000 sq. m.) of which less than 92 million hectares (355,000 sq. m.) was in good condition. In the first decade of Soeharto's new order, logging concessions were handed out at very low cost to *cukong* and ABRI companies which subcontracted to Malaysian and Filipino loggers.

By the end of the 1970s, over 65 million hectares (250,000 sq. m.) of forest – about 30 per cent of Indonesia's total land area – had been conceded. The leading figure in forest exploitation was Soeharto's *cukong* crony, the 'timber king' Bob Hasan (b. 1931). By 1980 Indonesia was the world's largest exporter of tropical hardwoods. In the mid-1980s, about half of Indonesia's manufactured exports consisted of plywood, which went from a value of US\$68 million in 1980 to US\$3.5 billion in 1992. When world demand for plywood declined in the mid-1990s, the timber kings turned to the government to subsidise their transition to fibreboard production.

Vast areas were devastated, particularly in Kalimantan. Perhaps 2.5 million Dayaks were displaced from their traditional homes there. Clearing for firewood and agriculture to support Indonesia's growing population also contributed to the depletion of Indonesia's forests. In 1981 there broke out in Kalimantan the worst forest fire in recorded human history, which burned for two years and destroyed 3.6 million hectares (14,000 sq. m.). The Ministry of Forestry was an impotent agency in the face of presidential protection of the timber concessionaires.

The blatant wealth of Soeharto's family, the cronies and the *cukongs* offended ordinary Indonesians and *pribumi* entrepreneurs and elicited religiously defined responses. Islam had been a rallying point for the disgruntled for many years, but now the regime's attempt to co-opt Islamic interests obliged it to respond more positively to Islamic sensitivities than it would have done in the past. Some *cukongs*, too, recognised that their Indonesian social environment included people whose complaints were legitimate and, if allowed simply to fester, could threaten their own wealth. Some were no doubt moved by genuine concern for their fellow Indonesians. But, as noted above, Soeharto's efforts to get shares in *cukong* enterprises into the hands of *pribumi* cooperatives had little effect. Now the initiative was taken by NU and ICMI.

In 1990 Abdurrahman Wahid shocked many of his followers by announcing that NU would set up rural credit banks to support small entrepreneurs and farmers, run on Western lines, that is to say, charging interest in violation of Qur'anic prohibitions. Remarkably, NU's partner was to be Bank Summa, a part of the Astra group run by the Chinese Christian Suryadjaya family. Two thousand branches were to be set up. In fact

only nine were opened before Bank Summa collapsed under the weight of US\$720 million of non-performing loans in 1992. The nine branches were generally successful: after two years, three had broken even and four were showing profits. Bank Summa's shares in the bank were taken over by the newspaper *Jawa Pos*, one of the most enlightened regional newspapers in the country. The Astra group was taken over by the *cukongs* Prajogo Pangestu (b. 1942) and Liem Sioe Liong.

More significant was the **Bank Muamalat Indonesia** (Indonesian Commercial Transactions Bank), run strictly on Islamic lines, charging no interest but operating instead on the orthodox principal of profit- and loss-sharing, which opened in 1991. ICMI supported this initiative and Soeharto backed it with money from one of the foundations he controlled. When Indonesia faced a financial disaster six years later, **Bank Muamalat** fared better than its conventional counterparts because it was not locked into the financial commitments which bankrupted virtually all Indonesia's modern business sector.

As the popular desire for a fairer society and the regime's behaviour moved ever further apart, ABRI's repressive approach to all issues produced a disastrous incident of international significance. On 12 November 1991 a funeral procession at the Santa Cruz cemetery in the East Timorese capital Dili turned into a pro-independence demonstration. Before the lenses of international television and film photographers, ABRI opened fire on the crowd. The military later admitted that 19 were killed, a government investigation put the figure at 50, and other sources claimed it was 100 or more. One report from Portugal claimed that 271 died, 382 were wounded and 250 disappeared. This massacre put Indonesia's rule of East Timor irreversibly on the international human rights agenda. The governments of Canada, the Netherlands and Denmark suspended aid programmes. The American Congress – within which several Catholic Congressmen now began to take a leading role in Indonesian matters – voted to cut US\$2.3 million out of military training provided to ABRI. This mattered to ABRI, many of whose senior officers had received training in the United States. Portugal held the presidency of the European Union (EU) in the first half of 1992 and used this position to halt EU–Indonesia negotiations on the grounds of Jakarta's human rights record in East Timor. Soeharto ordered an inquiry into the Dili massacre, which was met with a combination of scepticism and surprise. The inquiry criticised ABRI for excessive use of force, two generals were removed from their posts and several soldiers were charged. Ali Alatas visited foreign capitals to try to cool the issue down.

In general, most governments around the world continued to see East Timor as a peripheral issue – however unpalatable – while NGOs, intellectuals and human rights activists gave it high priority. The Dili massacre was, however, unquestionably a turning point even for governments. ABRI's brutality was displayed on television screens around the world. East Timor activists outside Indonesia, notably Ramos-Horta, thereafter received much more international attention. The military captured the East Timorese leader Ray Kala Xanana Gusmão (b. 1946) in November 1992 and initially held him incommunicado, but surprisingly did not kill him. He was charged with rebellion, tried and sentenced to life imprisonment, shortly thereafter commuted to 20 years. But this local security triumph only produced a new, charismatic international hero for the East Timor cause.

As ABRI continued to supply the world with evidence of the regime's reliance on violence, the pressure on Western democratic governments to denounce Indonesia on human rights grounds increased. But so long as the economy looked sound and Soeharto's rule looked enduring, most governments were cautious about condemning Jakarta's human rights abuses. Most of the economists interested in Indonesia kept reassuring the world that Indonesia's economic fundamentals were fine. And the regime's repression looked effective, if clumsy and short-sighted.

The Portuguese and Netherlands governments took a rather different line. Portugal's locally domiciled Timorese community, networks of human rights activists and sense of national responsibility for East Timor enshrined in its constitution kept it at the international front line on East Timor issues. The United Nations still formally recognised Portugal as the legitimate administering power over East Timor. In the Netherlands, similar domestic pressures and the long tradition of Dutch involvement in Indonesia also produced an activist response. In early 1992 the Dutch government, which chaired the IGGI consortium, made it clear that it thought aid to Indonesia should be linked to an improved human rights performance. Soeharto's response reflected his estimation of his own and his nation's standing. He would not accept sermons from a foreign government and announced that Indonesia would accept no more aid from IGGI. He thereby effectively abolished the group that had channelled aid to Jakarta for 25 years. He won wide respect in Indonesia, even from many of his critics, for this strongly nationalist reaction.

Soeharto asked the World Bank to construct a new aid consortium without the Netherlands. He undoubtedly knew he could do this at no cost, for in 1991 the Netherlands contributed under 2 per cent of the IGGI total. The resultant Consultative Group on Indonesia included all former IGGI members except the Netherlands. It met in 1992 and increased its total aid contribution to Indonesia from the 1991 level (including the Dutch contributions) of US\$4.8 billion to US\$4.9 billion. CGI became the largest lending group for Indonesia until it was dissolved in 2007.

The June 1992 general election was another victory for **Golkar**, but nevertheless rang warning bells in Jakarta's corridors of power. **Golkar** got 68.1 per cent of the vote, down 5.1 per cent since 1987. PPP seems to have claimed 1 per cent of this, rising from 16.0 in 1987 to 17.0 in 1992. PDI was thought of as the big winner, rising from 10.9 to 14.9 per cent at the vote. Under its leader Soerjadi, PDI had run an imaginative campaign, calling for a limit on the number of terms a President could serve, depicting itself as the defender of the poor, enlisting the considerable talent and charisma of Sukarno's youngest son Guruh Sukarnoputra (b. 1953) and generally looking something like a genuine opposition party. ABRI seems to have concluded that it should enhance its vigilance lest democratic ideas spread too widely. But it was also concerned about Soeharto's courting of Islamic support, the rise of Habibie and the influence of ICMI.

ABRI was designed principally as an army and police force for internal security, not an external defence force. In 1993 the army had 211,000 personnel plus 99,000 civilian employees and aimed to grow to 243,000 personnel by 1999. The police had 180,000 service personnel plus 24,000 civilians and was planned to grow to 192,000 by 1999. By contrast, in 1993 the navy had only 42,000 service personnel plus 15,000 civilians and the air force 19,000 service personnel plus 10,000 civilian employees. Both the

navy and air force suffered from poor equipment and neither represented a very credible military force, although given the nation's archipelagic character these two branches would be the first line of defence in any international conflict. But such a conflict was not remotely likely in 1990s Indonesia. Its issues of security and stability were internal. In the face of advancing social change, ABRI adopted a repressive approach which deepened popular anger. This ensured that, if ever military repression faltered, the prospects of social conflict would be enhanced.

ABRI–Soeharto relations were a combination of mutual dependence and distrust. The latter became stronger after the March 1993 MPR session which re-elected Soeharto to his sixth term as President. He had been able to pick his Vice-President in the past, the last being Sudharmono, whom ABRI much disliked. The military this time acted to ensure a more congenial outcome by precipitately announcing that it was nominating General Try Sutrisno, formerly the ABRI commander, as Vice-President. Soeharto was thus presented with a fait accompli and, it seems, never quite trusted ABRI again. When he formed his new cabinet it was dominated by ABRI's adversary Habibie and supporters of his high-tech, state-industry vision for the future of Indonesia. Murdani was removed as Minister of Defence and Security. Soeharto promoted his brother-in-law Wismoyo to be ABRI chief of staff and, as ABRI commander, named Lieutenant General Feisal Tanjung (b. 1939). The latter was a Soeharto loyalist and practising Muslim. Many senior ABRI officers seem to have felt that it was time to organise a successor to Soeharto, who turned 72 in 1993, so as to ensure the nation's future and ABRI's place in it. Some thought that ABRI had manoeuvred Try Sutrisno – an amiable but not obviously intelligent officer – into position as Soeharto's successor. But it was not to be.

Soeharto sought tighter control of *Golkar* and to undermine potential non-military opponents. He got his loyal civilian follower Harmoko (b. 1939) into place as *Golkar*'s chairman in 1993, another shock to ABRI, with his daughter Tutut as a vice-chair and son Bambang as treasurer. He intervened in the PDI's choice of leaders, blocking first Soerjadi and then Sukarno's daughter Megawati Sukarnoputri (b. 1947). Megawati had not before played a political role and seemed to have none of the ambition, charisma, intelligence or cunning necessary to succeed. But she would soon come to symbolise powerfully Soeharto's oppression of opponents. In December 1993 she was finally elected as chair of PDI by delegates who complained publicly about regime pressure upon them. The government decided it was best to accept this outcome.

There were signs of emerging social conflict by this time, including religious conflict. Major brawls broke out between Muslims and non-Muslims in Jakarta in 1992 and some churches were attacked. ABRI was involved in several incidents, notably two in 1993, in which Islamic leaders and their followers were gunned down. Labour unrest was also on the rise and attracted international labour union scrutiny of Indonesia's affairs. In 1991 the government decreed a minimum wage, but workers continued to demand better conditions and pay. ABRI was inclined to see Communists behind every organised labour activity.

In Surabaya in May 1993 a female labour activist named Marsinah was abducted, brutally raped and tortured, and murdered. International outrage forced Indonesia to investigate the case but the ABRI captain who was convicted was released on appeal.

Suspicions remain that higher ranks in ABRI were involved. After a period of labour unrest in Medan in April 1994 a demonstration there organised by the unofficial trade union SBSI (*Serikat Buruh Sajahtera Indonesia*, Prosperous Workers' Union of Indonesia) deteriorated into an anti-Chinese riot in which one Chinese businessman died. ABRI commander Feisal Tanjung saw PKI subversion at work. The SBSI leader Dr Muchtar Pakpahan (b. 1953) was jailed and his union banned, but he was released by the Supreme Court in 1995.

Bill Clinton took over the American Presidency in 1993. American trade unions, human rights activists and concerned members of Congress found Democratic Clinton more responsive to their concerns about Indonesia than his predecessor Republican George H. W. Bush had been. And the United States was not the Netherlands: Soeharto was in no position to ignore American opinion. Under greater international scrutiny, in September 1993 Jakarta raised the minimum daily wage to the equivalent of US\$2, but there was little will or indeed institutional capacity to enforce it. In the same month, three US Congressional staff members visited East Timor. Many of the East Timorese who met with the visitors were subsequently taken away and beaten by ABRI. The powerful American Senate Foreign Relations Committee approved an arms sale amendment in September 1993 requiring the administration to assess Jakarta's human rights performance before approving arms sales. Earlier in the year the United States had already vetoed a plan by Jordan to sell some of its American F5 fighters to Indonesia.

The populace was unsettled, social conflict was spreading, anti-Soeharto feeling was strengthening in the military, middle class and political parties, critical overseas scrutiny was increasing and now the economy too, was giving warning signals. Although annual economic growth rates remained over 5 per cent through the mid-1990s, interest rates also stayed high. Many private enterprises went overseas for loans, acquiring debts denominated in US dollars or yen, while the Rupiah from which those loans would have to be repaid was floating downward. The government's external debt was also huge. By 1992 it was estimated that total (public and private) external debt was over US\$84 billion. This represented 67.4 per cent of GDP and a debt service ratio (debt as a percentage of exports) of 32.1 per cent. But this included a figure for private debt which was almost certainly too low. Some estimated total debt in fact to exceed US\$100 billion. As opportunities for international investors opened up elsewhere, and as some companies grew impatient with the corruption of business in Indonesia, foreign investment fell for four consecutive years, from about US\$33 billion in 1990 to about US\$6–7 billion in 1993.

In 1993–4 the government introduced policies to encourage greater foreign investment, which recovered in 1994. There followed a period of rapid growth: 8.1 per cent in 1995, then 7.5 per cent in 1996 and nearly 8 per cent in 1997. But inflation was not far behind the growth figures and foreign investment again fell. Jakarta's high-rollers made large overseas loan deals which would shortly bring the country to its knees. The Soeharto children became fabulously rich from their business enterprises. Many of these rested upon money which overseas interests were anxious to lend them, for a Soeharto family enterprise was sure to reap vast returns. It was said that the Soehartos only rarely invested capital of their own.

The regime became more repressive in the hope both of forestalling political threats and of extracting as much wealth as quickly as possible. State enterprises were a large part of the economy, representing about 30 per cent of GDP in the early 1990s. They were a major feature partly because many Indonesians retained a distrust of private capitalism – so long dominated by Western and Chinese commercial interests – and partly because in Soeharto's Indonesia such enterprises were an important source of elite patronage. As commercial enterprises, their performance generally ranged from poor to abysmal. Habibie's BPIS (*Badan Pengelola Industri Strategis*, Strategic Industries Management Board, established 1989) controlled a range of high-tech industries which lost billions of dollars in state funds. In 1992 he decided to buy 39 former East German navy ships which would cost an estimated US\$482 million to acquire and refurbish, that work to be done mainly by BPIS enterprises.

Critical and satirical comment in the public press about Habibie's elderly German warships project brought swift government reaction. In 1994 the government closed the news magazine *Editor* and the satirical *Détik*. But the greatest shock was caused by its closure of *Tempo*, Indonesia's foremost news weekly and a mainstay of the nation's intellectual life, after 23 years of publication. Goenawan Mohamad challenged the withdrawal of *Tempo*'s publishing licence through the courts, itself an unusual step, the principal function of which was to illustrate the weakness of Indonesia's judicial system. In 1995 a lower court and then an appeals court ruled the government's action illegal – a decision which came as a surprise – but it made no difference. *Tempo* stayed off the streets. The government soon learned that the communications revolution limited its powers, however, for *Tempo* came back in an electronic version on the internet.

Soeharto, Habibie and the security forces identified Abdurrahman Wahid as a potential threat. He continued to criticise ICMI. As Soeharto moved to accommodate Islamic demands over such issues as the wearing of the *jilbab* in schools, in 1992 Abdurrahman warned of the risks of moving towards an Islamic state. In 1994 the government and/or ICMI apparently backed a challenge to Abdurrahman's leadership of NU and in 1996 a rival NU board was proclaimed. Nevertheless Abdurrahman survived this and other forms of harassment.

The mix of religion and politics was becoming volatile by the mid-1990s. The number of mosques in Indonesia had roughly doubled in the previous decade and Islamic devotionalism was an accepted element of urban middle-class lifestyles. In villages, too, the sense of Islamic identity was heightened. This enhanced religiosity was also observable in Christian, Hindu and Buddhist communities. For example, the *Parisada Dharma Hindu* (Council for the Hindu Religion, established 1959 and affiliated with *Golkar* since 1968) was led by young Balinese Hindus, particularly leaders connected with the court of Ubud. It sponsored grand ceremonies and established new temples not only in Bali, but also in East Java (1992), North Sulawesi (1993) and Central Kalimantan (1994).



**Modern mosque in Makassar, Sulawesi, built in the 1990s with a five-pointed 'Pancasila style' roof**

The ‘greening’ of ABRI (that is, its greater Islamisation) was a common topic of discussion. In February 1995 Wismoyo was retired as ABRI chief of staff for unclear reasons – presumably he had lost the confidence of his brother-in-law Soeharto – and was replaced by the evidently devout Muslim General Hartono (b. 1941). He and ABRI commander Feisal Tanjung were also firm loyalists of Soeharto and his family. Under their leadership, ABRI apparently sought to combine the interests of the regime and rising Islamic religiosity into a conservative tide in support of security vigilance and against greater political openness. Pro-democracy ideas were regularly depicted as part of a Western threat to Islam, along with the internet, NGOs and the rest of globalisation. The Chinese business interests with whom the regime had worked to such immense mutual profit were also criticised for not sharing the benefits of wealth-creation with their poorer Muslim fellows. In December 1996 a Companionship Programme (**Program Kemitraan**) was announced, whereby individuals and companies earning over US\$45,000 annually would pay a 2 per cent tax to a foundation headed by Soeharto for distribution to the needy. By then, however, it was too late for the regime to save itself by cosmetic measures.

While there was a conservative element in Islam which responded positively to the regime’s anti-democratic and anti-foreign ideas, the religious tide also supported ideas of justice, openness and democracy. ICMI had grown into the most powerful group within the bureaucracy and an influential element in Indonesian intellectual life. It remained close to the regime under Habibie’s patronage. Soeharto’s son-in-law Brigadier General Prabowo was widely regarded also as an ally of Habibie and ICMI. In December 1995 he was made commander of the **Kopassus** Special Forces. Despite such closeness to the regime, however, much ICMI thinking supported reform, greater openness, reducing corruption and democratic evolution. Abdurrahman Wahid as the head of NU – which by the mid-1990s claimed a following of 30–40 million – continued to champion the values of honesty, justice and ethnic and religious pluralism.

Outside intellectual circles, however, there were continuing signs that interreligious and interethnic peace was under threat. In September–October 1995 riots spread in East Timor, sparked by reports that a Muslim guard at a prison there had publicly abused

Catholicism. Catholics attacked Muslim non-Timorese across the province. This provoked pro-Muslim demonstrations in Jakarta. Dr Amien Rais (b. 1944), chairman of **Muhammadiyah** (by then claiming 25 million followers) spoke about the need to come to the defence of Muslims in East Timor. Muslim–Christian relations were complicated by the fact that many Chinese were Christians, making it possible to amalgamate anti-Chinese and anti-Christian feelings. In October 1996 five people died when Muslims in Situbondo, East Java, burned nine Christian churches. Similar events took place in Tasikmalaya, West Java, in December, leaving four dead and Chinese property destroyed. In Makassar, Papua, and elsewhere there were demonstrations, social violence and kidnappings. By early 1997 reports were emerging from West Kalimantan of Dayaks and local Malays killing Madurese immigrants. Over a thousand deaths were claimed by some sources, and the Dayaks revived the practice of taking the heads of their victims.

During 1996 the regime's disintegration gathered pace. Its own worst features persuaded many Indonesians that their nation could no longer afford such a regime, for its costs now evidently outweighed its benefits. But no one could see how Soeharto's 30-year hold on power could be peacefully terminated. The forces opposing the regime were identifiable. Abdurrahman Wahid was an Islamically inspired opposition figure of great influence. PDI under Megawati was developing as a political party with significant backing from a broad range of society, including intellectuals, the urban and rural middle class, and the urban poor of Jakarta. Labour leader Muchtar Pakpahan was potentially a major national figure. Goenawan Mohamad led an Independent General Election Monitoring Committee (**Komite Independen Pemantau Pemilu**, established 1995), to reveal the degree of manipulation in the regime's electoral processes. All four people symbolised the regime's arbitrary oppression and harassment of its opponents.

Even within the power structure there were signs of discontent. Soeharto's nepotism and favouritism in military appointments caused factionalism within the military and aroused the anger of many ABRI officers, who felt that it was time for Soeharto to go. Public criticism of ABRI increased, including from retired officers. The military regarded such criticism as a sign that subversive forces were at work, so it stepped up its surveillance of activists, NGOs and student politics. ICMI stayed close to Habibie; the regime's critics within that organisation looked to him to lead reform and modernisation. But within ABRI there was disquiet at ICMI's influence and continuing animosity towards Habibie, his industrial empire and his ambitions.

Soeharto's six children meanwhile milked the opportunities they saw before them without moderation. It may be that their mother Ibu Tien, who herself had long been accused of corrupt practices, acted as a filter between Soeharto and the children, limiting the impact of the latter's rapaciousness. If so, her death in April 1996 removed that small element of constraint. For years rumours circulated that she had been accidentally shot when two of the children fired at each other in an argument over money. This tale, whether true or not, reflects the rottenness of the regime at its core, for Indonesians were prepared to consider that such a thing could happen.

One of the most blatant family business scandals erupted early in 1996. It was announced that Indonesia would build its own national car within the country, which would have a tax-free holiday to become established. By presidential decree the

contract went to Tommy Soeharto and the Korean car manufacturer Kia with a three-year exemption of taxes and duties. It soon transpired, however, that this venture was not going to build its national car in Indonesia at all. Rather, it would bring in fully built-up Kias, call them the national car, and thereby escape all taxes and duties, to the immense profit of the joint venture. Tommy said that he would send Indonesians to work in the Kia factory in Korea, which would make the car national. To add arrogant insult to avaricious absurdity, the new car was called the Timor. Soeharto approved the importation of 45,000 Timors in the first year. Both Japan and the United States protested against Indonesia within the World Trade Organisation for this flagrant violation of international trade rules. At a meeting of the Asia-Pacific Economic Cooperation group in Bogor in 1994, Soeharto had depicted himself as a champion of free trade, but it was now clear that family mattered more to him.

To prevent Megawati's PDI becoming a serious challenge, the regime intervened with violence and thereby perversely improved the party's popular standing. In June 1996 ABRI succeeded in manipulating an extraordinary PDI congress so as to unseat Megawati as chair and reinstall Soerjadi, whom Soeharto had until recently distrusted but who now seemed less threatening than Megawati. But Megawati and her supporters refused to recognise this, launched legal action against the government's interference and kept control of the party's Jakarta headquarters. There this defiance of the regime attracted much attention. Pro-democracy activists, NGOs and the angry urban poor rallied to Megawati's cause.

On 27 July 1996 Megawati's PDI headquarters was attacked by thugs ostensibly representing the Soerjadi faction, among whom were also found soldiers out of uniform and members of urban gangs close to ABRI. There can be no reasonable doubt that this was organised by the regime. The attackers succeeded in overpowering the building's defenders at significant cost in injury, death and damage. There followed two days of serious rioting in Jakarta. A subsequent investigation by Indonesia's Human Rights Commission (established 1993) said that 5 people died and 149 were wounded, but that 74 were still missing. The missing were largely from among the 200 or so whom ABRI arrested on the first day of riots. ABRI had evidently adopted the South American military fashion of 'disappearing' opponents. The government cast blame for the riots on a small leftist student organisation which had been active amongst labourers and had recently declared itself to be a political party called the People's Democratic Party (**Partai Rakyat Demokratik**, PRD). PRD's leaders and Muchtar Pakpahan were arrested. ABRI denounced PRD as an attempt to revive godless Communism and several Islamic organisations responded by endorsing ABRI's actions. Notable among these were **Muhammadiyah**'s youth wing, the government-backed **Majelis Ulama Indonesia** (Indonesian Islamic Scholars' Council, established 1975) and **Himpunan Mahasiswa Islam** (Islamic Students' Association). The head of PPP also supported ABRI's crushing of the supposedly Communist PRD.

Indonesia's international climate was becoming more inhospitable in both political and economic respects. Soeharto had been well received by Clinton on a state visit to Washington late in 1995, but that did not inhibit American anger at Tommy Soeharto's national car humbug the following year. Worst of all for the nation's international standing, the 1996 Nobel Peace Prize was awarded jointly to two leaders of the East

Timor cause, Bishop Belo and José Ramos-Horta. While many leading Indonesians respected Belo, almost all regarded Ramos-Horta as a shady agitator. To discover that his world standing was so very different truly shocked Indonesian leaders. No more did they like the fact that when one of the world's most respected figures, President Nelson Mandela of South Africa, visited Jakarta in July 1997, he spent two hours talking with the imprisoned Xanana Gusmão.

Indonesia now had enormous short-term debt as hot money flowed into the country, denominated largely in American dollars and thus exposed to adverse currency movements. This short-term debt may have been of the order of US\$30–40 billion by 1997. The banking system which handled all this money was poorly regulated, run rather like a mafia poker game, but with fewer rules. Japan, the economic engine of the entire Asian region, was still in the recession which persisted through the 1990s. So Indonesia was ill-placed to withstand any economic shocks. The weather, too, seemed to turn against the country as a severe El Niño drought reduced rice production by some 10 per cent over 1997–8 and exacerbated the problem of forest fires, especially in Sumatra and Kalimantan. But the World Bank, evidently impressed by the glitter of Jakarta, as late as May 1997 declared Indonesia's economic fundamentals to be sound.

The election campaign of May 1997 acted as a focus for political and social unrest. It was the most violent of the Soeharto period. Raucous political motorcades caused many deaths, estimated to total around 250. In Banjarmasin a mob of looters was trapped inside a burning shopping mall and around 130 died. In East Timor, indigenous guerrillas carried out sabotage attacks on polling booths and killed 18 ABRI personnel.

Soeharto had been determined to reverse the fall in the **Golkar** vote seen in the 1992 elections and was successful. He was helped by Abdurrahman Wahid's decision to abandon his informal alliance with Megawati Sukarnoputri. Instead he travelled the campaign trail by the side of Tutut, helping to gather NU votes for **Golkar**. PDI was devastated in the election, falling 11.9 per cent from the 1992 level of 14.9 per cent to a mere 3.0 per cent. Its votes went in roughly equal measure to PPP, up 5.5 per cent to 22.5, and **Golkar**, up 6.4 per cent to 74.5 per cent of the total vote. This was the highest percentage of the vote ever received by **Golkar** and it came ironically on the eve of the regime's collapse. In Madura, dissatisfied PPP supporters burned **Golkar** and government buildings and destroyed so many ballot boxes that the voting had to be repeated there.

Then the Asian currency crisis which began in Thailand hit Indonesia. The Rupiah had been at about Rp.2500/US\$, but it began to fall in July 1997. By August it was down 9 per cent. Bank Indonesia accepted that it could not defend the currency and allowed it to sink from then. By late October it was down to Rp.4000/US\$. Then it went into freefall. In January 1998 it bottomed at around Rp.17,000/US\$, having lost 85 per cent of its value. The Jakarta stock market plummeted. Effectively every modern enterprise in the nation was bankrupt, the savings of the middle class were wiped out and labourers were thrown out of work by the millions.

The government's first response to the crisis reflected its arrogance and lack of contact with reality. Reforms were announced, but family and crony projects – for example Tommy's national car – were protected. An agreement with the IMF in October 1997 led to the closure of 16 banks, but then two owned by the Soeharto family

were reopened. Thus commenced a stand-off between the IMF and Soeharto which became ever more public and confirmed to domestic and international observers that the regime was hopelessly mired in nepotism, corruption and incompetence. There were calls for reform – ***reformasi*** – from many quarters, to no avail. The central pillar of the regime, Soeharto himself, seemed shaky. In 1996 he went to Germany for tests on his heart and kidneys and was announced to be fit. In December 1997, however, he suffered what appears to have been a minor stroke. He was then 76 years old.

In January 1998 Soeharto announced an absurd budget which depended upon the plummeting Rupiah having the value it had six months before. He received phone calls from Bill Clinton in Washington, Helmut Kohl in Bonn and Hashimoto Ryutaro in Tokyo, and a visit from Singapore's Goh Chok Tong, all urging him to accept IMF reform proposals. On 15 January he seemed to do so, but in fact more conflict followed, with the IMF eventually threatening to withhold loans unless Soeharto adopted realistic reforms. Later in January Soeharto announced that he would stand for a seventh presidential term and hinted that he wanted Habibie as his new Vice-President. The Rupiah bottomed out thereafter.

Soeharto moved trusted confidants into crucial positions. His former adjutant and army chief of staff General Wiranto (b. 1947) was named ABRI commander in February 1998. Soeharto's son-in-law Lieutenant General Prabowo was given command of ***Kostrad*** in March. In advance of the March MPR session at least 20 student activists were kidnapped by security forces and nine of them were evidently murdered. Prabowo was popularly believed to be responsible for these and subsequent deaths of students. The MPR met in March, dutifully re-elected Soeharto as President and elected Habibie as Vice-President in accordance with Soeharto's wishes. Habibie's election destroyed most of the international community's lingering hopes for the regime. His reputation rested on a history of extravagant loss-making state enterprises, closeness to Soeharto and his cronies, Islamic politicking and a 'mad scientist' personal style which some thought to reveal more madness than science. Few guessed what reforms he would introduce when, within a few weeks, he would find himself Indonesia's third President. Soeharto's new cabinet was mainly a collection of cronies chosen by Tutut, who herself became Minister for Social Affairs. Bob Hasan was Minister for Trade, a role for which he soon demonstrated he had no capacity. Very few ICMI figures were included. ICMI now moved into the reformist camp.

Demands for ***reformasi*** escalated as the economic crisis deepened and the regime confirmed it was unable to reform itself. ***Muhammadiyah***'s Amien Rais was among the most prominent critics at this stage. Student demonstrations escalated. ABRI allowed this so long as the demonstrations stayed within campus boundaries, but by early May the students were on the streets of major cities. Major riots broke out in Medan. On 12 May ABRI marksmen shot dead four demonstrating students at Trisakti University in Jakarta. By this time, prominent military figures including Generals Wiranto and Susilo Bambang Yudhoyono (b. 1949, who was to become Indonesia's sixth President) were of the view that Soeharto's regime could no longer be defended.

The killing of the Trisakti students was a turning point. Their deaths, coming on top of economic collapse, ABRI brutality, regime corruption and the manifest impossibility of reform, destroyed the last tattered remnants of the regime's legitimacy and social

order. Massive riots broke out in many places, the worst being in Jakarta and Surakarta. **Cukong** and Soeharto family enterprises were prime targets for arson and looting. Liem Sioe Liang's Bank Central Asia was a frequent object of attack. His house in Jakarta was looted and burned. Over a thousand people died in Jakarta in the riots of 13–15 May. Hundreds were burned to death as they tried to loot shopping malls. There were horrific episodes of gang rapes reported. Shopkeepers tried to defend their premises with spray-painted slogans saying that the premises were owned by **pribumi** or by Muslims, or simply by writing **Allahu Akbar** (God is great) on their protective shutters. These were the worst urban riots in Indonesian history, with forty shopping malls and thousands of shops, houses, business premises and vehicles destroyed. Foreign enterprises and embassies evacuated staff and families as best they could, with Jakarta in flames, roads unsafe and flights overcrowded, as did wealthy Chinese families, who took their capital with them.

Soeharto went to Cairo for a summit meeting on 7 May 1998 but returned on 15 May. As the chaos in Jakarta continued, even ABRI members of the MPR were ready to support a special session to elect a new President. Soon **Golkar** expressed the same view. Students occupied the MPR building and no one tried to eject them. Amien Rais played a prominent role in demanding the end of Soeharto's rule. On 18 May Harmoko, speaker of the MPR, publicly asked Soeharto to resign in the national interest. On 19 May Soeharto met with nine prominent Islamic leaders including Abdurrahman Wahid and Nurcholish Madjid, but excluding Amien Rais, and sought their advice about whether he should step down.



*The 1998 riots: a devastated shopping street in the Mangga Dua district of Jakarta*

He then announced that he would oversee a period of reform and step down after fresh elections were held. But no proposal which kept him as President was credible either domestically or overseas. His attempt to create a reform cabinet collapsed on 20 May when 14 ministers with responsibility for economic and financial affairs refused to serve under him. Thus it was that, on the morning of 21 May 1998, television cameras were summoned to the presidential palace to witness a ceremony at which Soeharto announced his resignation. His Vice-President, Habibie, was immediately sworn in as Indonesia's third President (1998–9). Wiranto then announced that ABRI was united

and supported the new President, and that it would protect the Soeharto family and – implicitly – its fortune. Soeharto's years of power thus ended in disaster and disgrace.

The transition was not yet over. There were military movements which have yet to be fully explained which suggest that Prabowo came close to a coup attempt with his *Kostrad* forces. This did not, however, take place. Wiranto outmanoeuvred and removed him from the *Kostrad* command. Prabowo soon left to live for a time in unofficial exile in Jordan.

The first and essential step in reform and recovery had been taken. Soeharto was gone. ABRI asked the students occupying the MPR to depart and on 23 May they did so peacefully, as national heroes. There had been terrible bloodshed and destruction, ethnic and religious violence and political chaos. The economy was still a disaster. None of these issues would be readily or quickly resolved. Nor did many Indonesians really expect in May 1998 that Habibie would overturn the political structures of Soeharto's new order. Yet he soon began to do just that. Indonesia needed very dramatic reform measures and there was considerable surprise when Habibie emerged as their author.

## ***Chapter 24***

---

# **Reforming Indonesia, 1998–2004**

During his 17 months as Indonesia's third President (1998–9), Habibie introduced reforms that promised a more democratic, just and open society. But ongoing economic collapse, social violence, continuing political crisis and widespread doubts about the honesty and legitimacy of the government threatened to frustrate hopes for reform. Habibie was followed from October 1999 by Abdurrahman Wahid as the nation's fourth President. He displayed his usual intelligence, joviality, casual openness, commitment to pluralism and opposition to dogmatism. But these were balanced by his tendency to act erratically, his determination to retain power at any cost, and limitations due to his blindness, general ill health, lack of experience in government affairs and difficulty in finding people who were both honest and competent to serve in his government. After being dismissed as President by the nation's parliamentarians, Abdurrahman was succeeded by Megawati Sukarnoputri as the nation's fifth President, yet again as an interim leader. But of leading she did little. The nation's immense problems meanwhile continued.

When Habibie assumed the presidency from his mentor Soeharto on 21 May 1998, there were five main issues before him. These were (1) the future of *reformasi*, (2) the future of ABRI, (3) the future of dissident territories which sought to break away from the nation, (4) the future of Soeharto, his family, their wealth and their cronies, and (5) the future of the economy and the people's welfare. Seventeen months later, the first of these issues had seen significant positive developments, the second was moving towards a lessening of the military's role in political affairs, the third was resolved in the case of East Timor but in no other case, the fourth was unresolved and the fifth remained as intractable as before. Habibie commenced his presidency with a reputation which made him distrusted by student activists, the military, major political factions, foreign governments, overseas investors and international agencies. In the light of Indonesia's deep crisis and his own personal standing, his achievements were remarkable.

In mid-1998 the economy remained a disaster. Inflation reached 65.0 per cent for the year and the economy shrank by 13.6 per cent. Because of El Niño the rice harvest was down and it was revealed that the reports of surplus rice production in 1996–7 had been false. Some of the nation's major enterprises – such as Sempati Air run by Tommy Soeharto and Bob Hasan and the latter's PT Astra International, the country's largest automobile seller – were going out of operation. The Rupiah was worth less than

10,000/US\$, bottoming as low as 15,000–17,000/US\$. It was estimated that some 113 million Indonesians (56 per cent of the population) were below the poverty line. Some estimates said that 40 million Indonesians were at risk of starvation. Late in June 1998 the national budget had to be revised for the third time because its assumptions were again out of date. In the midst of this economic crisis, plot theories abounded. One was that the IMF itself was part of a worldwide Jewish conspiracy.



*President B. J. Habibie in 1999. Reproduced courtesy of Rex Features Ltd*

The pursuit of Soeharto proceeded slowly, to the volatile dissatisfaction of **reformasi** supporters. Soeharto said that he had only a small amount of savings and no money overseas – a claim difficult to reconcile with his family's lifestyle. Four of the foundations he controlled were reported in June 1995 to hold Rp.2.5 trillion, then equivalent to over a billion US dollars. In December 1998, seven Soeharto foundations were said to hold funds counted in quintillions of Rupiahs. An article in **Time** magazine of May 1999 claimed that the Soeharto family controlled US\$15 billion, including large tracts of land in Indonesia. Not everyone agreed and Soeharto denied this. In January 2000 **The Australian** newspaper put Soeharto family wealth at US\$2 billion, with Liem Sioe Liong's wealth at US\$1.8 billion and Bob Hasan's at US\$1.0 billion.

Habibie appointed a new Attorney General, army Major-General H. Andi Muhammad Ghalib (b. 1946), in June 1998. The legal profession and political activists were uncomfortable with a military man at the centre of the legal system. Their doubts whether he would pursue Soeharto and his cronies were only deepened when, a year later, the NGO Indonesian Corruption Watch published documents showing that leading **cukongs** Prajogo Pangestu and The Nin King (b. 1931) had deposited large amounts of money into accounts of Andi Ghalib and his wife. They agreed that they had done this, but claimed these were donations to the Indonesian Wrestling Association which Andi Ghalib headed – an organisation not previously accustomed to finances on this scale.

The government's lackadaisical pursuit of Soeharto, the slowness of investigations into the disappeared political activists and the Trisakti killings and riots of May 1998, and Habibie's failure to achieve a rapid economic turnaround – an unrealistic expectation in any case – led to calls for a special sitting of the MPR to dump him and

elect a new national leadership. At the end of June 1998 the DPR agreed that there should be a special MPR meeting but no date was fixed. Of the 100 government-nominated members of the existing MPR who represented functional groups, 41 were honourably discharged by Habibie. They included figures close to Soeharto, such as Hartono, the financier Fuad Bawazier (b. 1949), Bob Hasan and Anthony Salim (b. 1950). They were replaced by people close to Habibie.

Intergroup violence which had been rising since the mid-1990s spread and became still bloodier now, without the repressive structures of the Soeharto regime to restrain it. Some of this was connected with political party rivalries such as NU demonstrations in East Java which prevented Amien Rais, Chairman of **Muhammadiyah**, from travelling there in June 1998. Some of the violence arose from desperation caused by the economic crisis and from plain criminality. Most of it was interethnic and/or interreligious. Amien Rais addressed the issue of interethnic conflict by proposing that to avoid being scapegoated Chinese and others should be integrated fully into a **bangsa Indonesia** (Indonesian nation or people). The terms for indigenous and non-indigenous (**pribumi** and **non-pribumi**) Indonesians should be abandoned. This assimilation was at odds with the pluralistic view championed by Abdurrahman Wahid, who believed that tolerance should be such as to allow people to be whatever they liked.

Social violence took many forms. In Purwaréja, Central Java, in June 1998 Muslims attacked five churches and a local beach resort where cinema posters were shown which the mob regarded as immoral. Supporters and opponents of a local **kyai** clashed in Jépara in July, which led to the burning of public buildings and the looting of shops. In Jémbér Chinese shops, houses and a rice mill were destroyed and looted. Several thousand fishermen joined in anti-Chinese rioting in Cilacap in August. Similar violence was seen in towns and cities across the archipelago. Tragic episodes occurred in East Java from Malang to Banyuwangi in 1998. There rumours spread about ‘Ninjas’ – dangerous black-clad villains with supernatural powers. Supposed Ninjas who were murdered by mobs seem in fact to have been mentally ill. An estimated 100–200 died in these episodes of mass hysteria. NU warned its followers of the ever-present threat of black magic, and urged them to seek protection in frequent reading of the **Qur'an** and reciting the names of God. In early 1999 an estimated 100–150 supposed practitioners of black magic were murdered in Ciamis, West Java. Many were executed in public by murderers who claimed that they had political protection. Violence against Madurese immigrants in West Kalimantan continued, claiming dozens of lives. Sometimes violence was of the nature of local intervillage conflict. Across Java and elsewhere, village headmen were being deposed in mass actions reminiscent of the ‘people’s sovereignty’ depositions of officials early in the Revolution. Local police and military did little or nothing to stop most of these acts. In some cases they were reputed to have taken part. Some of the worst violence took place along Muslim–Christian lines in Ambon. These bloody episodes, which threatened interreligious tolerance across the country, are discussed below.

In three regions of the nation, social violence, hardship and the legacy of suppression under Soeharto strengthened local senses of identity in ways which threatened the integrity of the nation. These were Papua, East Timor and Aceh. The first was a part of Indonesia as a consequence of the deal done by the USA and UN in 1962–

3 and confirmed by the rigged ‘act of free choice’ of 1969. Papua was rich in resources of vital interest to the nation and the military had lucrative arrangements there. Local autonomy or independence activists lacked the sophisticated leadership, organisation, international support and weapons of their East Timorese and Acehnese counterparts. Their prospects of success seemed slight. The distinctive historical experience of East Timor meant that its excision from Indonesia would not necessarily set a precedent for the rest of the nation, however much it offended Indonesian nationalism and pride. Aceh was the most decisive case for Indonesia’s future. It had been a leader in resistance to the Dutch, loyal to the Republic during the Revolution and the centre of long-standing objection to the heavy-handed centralisation of the Soeharto regime. If it were to break away from the nation, other disgruntled regions might seek to follow.

In July 1998 Papuan protesters raised the flag of the Free Papua Organisation (OPM) on Biak and were met with ABRI retaliation. Three people were reported killed. In Jakarta, in May 1999 youthful demonstrators from the ‘West Papua Community’ (**Masyarakat Papua Barat**) demanded independence for their homeland. But they made no progress and received no significant support from other forces. Probably the worst violence in Papua took place in September 1999, when local people burned out the provincial parliament building and other buildings and vehicles. But the occasion was not a pro-independence rally. Rather it was local protest at the arrival of refugees from East Timor and Ambon.

Within a month of taking over the presidency, Habibie released several East Timorese political prisoners and promised an undefined special status to the territory. Ramos-Horta and others rejected this, since it would mean accepting the legality of Indonesia’s conquest. Foreign Minister Ali Alatas said that the East Timor arrangement being considered would be different from that applying to the Special Districts of Aceh and Yogyakarta, but it would still be within the context of a unitary – not a federal – Republic of Indonesia. Bishop Belo had a cordial meeting with Habibie in Jakarta in June 1998. Afterwards, he praised the President’s humanity, kindness, sympathy and openness. Clearly the political context in Jakarta had changed dramatically for East Timorese.

Ambassadors from the European Union visited East Timor in June 1998. Outside their hotel thousands of demonstrators demanded a referendum offering the choice of independence. Local political forces thus made it clear from the beginning that East Timor was unlikely to be mollified by special status within Indonesia. There were certainly East Timorese who supported continuing association with Indonesia, but events would prove them to be a small, if violent, minority. By July 1998 Belo was saying that the only solution was a UN-sponsored referendum. Local demonstrations supported this view. The UN Secretary-General’s Special Envoy for East Timor witnessed such a demonstration of activists carrying **Fretelin** flags when he visited Dili in December 1998.

In January 1999 Ali Alatas announced that, if the autonomy proposal for East Timor should prove unacceptable, the area would be given independence. Habibie himself said that by 1 January 2000 he wished not to be troubled by the East Timor issue any further: ‘My suggestion is, alright, give them independence.’ It was now official that East Timor’s future would be determined there and not in Jakarta. Xanana Gusmão was soon

moved from prison to a secure house in Jakarta. The government said that he would be released once the East Timor question was resolved. But some East Timorese expressed concerns that Jakarta would simply abandon East Timor with inadequate preparation for self-rule, as the Portuguese had done before.

Habibie had the support of few national-level political forces for his policy on East Timor. In February 1999 Megawati Sukarnoputri – already emerging as a likely winner of the promised general election – told a rally of over 150,000 supporters that East Timor was part of Indonesia and she would not accept its separation. The same views were expressed by Abdurrahman Wahid.

ABRI seems to have had yet another thought. Although evidence is still fragmentary, it seems that ABRI officers decided that, if a referendum should produce a vote for separation, they would engineer the devastation of East Timor. This was probably meant to be part revenge and part salutary warning to other parts of the nation which might seek greater autonomy.

A referendum offering East Timorese a choice between autonomy within Indonesia or independence was fixed by an agreement among Foreign Minister Ali Alatas, the UN Secretary-General Kofi Annan and the Portuguese Foreign Minister in New York in May 1999. The referendum was set for August 1999. ABRI facilitated attacks by pro-Indonesian Timorese militia groups on independence activists as the political temperature rose. While reports of this violence are contradictory, it seems that tens of proindependence activists were killed in the early months of 1999. From Jakarta Xanana Gusmão said that it might become necessary to resume the armed struggle. East Timor voter registration began in July 1999 in an atmosphere of militia violence. ABRI brought in reinforcements and predicted that civil war would erupt whichever side won the referendum. The military evidently had plans to ensure that this was so.

The East Timor referendum took place on 30 August 1999 in almost complete peace and quiet. That the pro-Indonesia militias did not disrupt the voting suggests strongly that they and their ABRI mentors expected to get, if not a victory, at least an outcome which was so equivocal that the Indonesian MPR could not accept it as a basis for granting independence. If so, they were wrong. A total of 446,953 votes were cast, representing a 98.6 per cent voter turnout. Of the 438,968 valid votes, 78.5 per cent were in favour of independence against 21.5 per cent for autonomy within Indonesia.

Upon the referendum outcome being announced, a reign of terror was unleashed by the pro-Indonesian militias with, according to some reports, the assistance of ABRI soldiers out of uniform. Pro-independence East Timorese were murdered, priests and nuns being particular targets. Private homes, business enterprises, public buildings, churches and much else was destroyed. At least 1300 were killed and much of East Timor's population of around 800,000 were turned into refugees, something like a quarter of them fleeing or being taken across the border into West Timor. On 7 September Xanana Gusmão was granted amnesty and released in Jakarta, after previous announcements that he would be flown to Dili and released to the UN mission there – almost surely to face the threat of assassination. He went immediately to the British Embassy in Jakarta. On the same day Bishop Belo, whose refugee-packed home had been attacked by the militias, was evacuated by Australian aircraft to safety in Darwin. Habibie declared martial law in East Timor but it was clear that he had no control of

events there.

On 12 September 1999 Habibie gave in to mounting international outrage and agreed to the entry of armed UN peacekeepers into East Timor. The first stage was the arrival of 2500 troops from Australia, New Zealand, Great Britain (the Gurkhas), Thailand, Singapore and the Philippines, under Australian command. Others were to follow. There was no resistance. ABRI and their militia collaborators withdrew. Thus began a period of UN-sponsored transition to independence for East Timor. Its people had been traumatised by 24 years of harsh rule and exploitation, punctuated by repeated ABRI excesses. Now they had to face the legacy of the scorched-earth departure of the military and militias which left the nascent country's infrastructure in ruins. Their experience of UN government and the attention of international aid agencies and NGOs was not going to be entirely positive. But at least Bishop Belo, José Ramos-Horta and Xanana Gusmão returned and, with others, were able to commence what they hoped would be a process of reconciling and rebuilding their devastated country. In fact the subsequent years of attempted nation-building in Timor Leste would be full of frustrations and conflicts. Indonesia was left with a legacy of wounded nationalist sentiments. Indonesians from the elite to lower levels particularly regarded the United Nations and Australia as having been anti-Indonesian in their approach to the East Timor issue.

Aceh's experience under Habibie lacked the resolution of East Timor but shared a good deal of the violence. With a population of over four million and vast energy resources, Aceh was a vital part of the nation. The period of effective martial law from 1990 to 1998, the so-called DOM period (*Daerah Operasi Militer*, Military Operations Area), had deepened the animosity of many Acehnese towards Jakarta and particularly towards ABRI, which displayed some of its worst brutality there. In August 1998 Wiranto visited Aceh, apologised for the suffering caused by ABRI and said that combat forces would be withdrawn within a month. Within a few weeks troops began to board ship, but in fact the withdrawals were a sham. ABRI was reinforcing there and violence escalated.

Rioting occurred regularly in Aceh, as it did in much of Indonesia, but in Aceh these episodes usually had a clearly separatist political focus. In May 1999 a clash between ABRI and local people in Lhokseumawe left around 30 dead and a hundred wounded. Separatists responded with attacks on ABRI, which claimed both dead and wounded among the military. In July 1999 ABRI attacked the religious school of Teungku Bantaqiah, who had recently come out of prison after serving a sentence for involvement with GAM. Bantaqiah, his wife and over 50 of his students and followers were killed. By this time around 240,000 people were internal refugees in Aceh. The Habibie government could achieve no resolution to the Aceh problem and, as was obvious in East Timor, so also in Aceh it was ABRI that was determining responses, not the civilian government in Jakarta.

As these crises on the outer margins of the nation threatened national unity – and in the case of East Timor ended in departure from the nation – Indonesia as a whole was moving towards greater democracy. This was a remarkable achievement, made possible largely by Habibie's commitment to political reform and the presence of pro-democracy activists in the main cities which inhibited ABRI brutality. What ABRI could get away

with in Papua, East Timor or Aceh would have produced civil war on the streets of Jakarta and other major cities.

Habibie began releasing political prisoners within weeks of becoming President, a vital step in the direction of both openness and reconciliation. Among them were regional separatists and elderly ex-PKI figures held for over thirty years. Amnesties were granted to H. Mohamad Sanusi and others arrested after the Tanjung Priok incident of 1984, including (posthumously) Hartono Dharsono. In November 1998 Habibie declared the late Mohammad Natsir to have been a leader of the nation, implying that even the PRRI rebellion could now be forgiven. ABRI released some of the student activists who had disappeared since the election campaign of 1997, but others remained missing and had presumably been murdered. Wiranto announced that the military could investigate those, including Prabowo, who were accused of kidnapping activists. While the pursuit of Soeharto made little progress, Bob Hasan was convicted of corruption in 2000 and sentenced to six years imprisonment, later reduced to three.

Political factions coalesced into new political parties as leaders began to prepare for the special sitting of the MPR and the elections that would follow. There was much fluidity and uncertainty. Given the role of Islamic leaders in the fall of Soeharto's regime, the ongoing Islamisation of Indonesian society and the severe deprivation which led many Indonesians to seek solace in religion, it was widely assumed that Islamic organisations would play a major role. But many people were also concerned about the risks of sectarianism and therefore hoped for a triumph of non-religious politics.

Eventually five major political parties were formed. Amien Rais established his PAN (*Partai Amanat Nasional*, National Mandate Party) with the support of **Muhammadiyah** members but an ideology of democratic, capitalist secularism. From his NU base, Abdurrahman Wahid launched PKB (*Partai Kebangkitan Bangsa*, National Awakening Party), supporting his long-held views in favour of tolerance, pluralism and a non-religious style of democracy. He was closely allied to Megawati Sukarnoputri, whose PDIP (*Partai Demokrasi Indonesia Perjuangan*, Indonesian Democracy Party of Struggle) had great support because of her image but little in the way of coherent ideology. She also seemed far more willing than the other parties to collaborate with Wiranto and ABRI. Several Islamic leaders, but not Abdurrahman Wahid, reacted to Megawati's evident popularity by claiming that Islam did not allow a woman to be a leader of the community. **Golkar** carried on, seeking to shake off the legacy of the Soeharto years by publicly apologising for past excesses and describing itself as a 'new **Golkar**'. Its dominant faction supported Habibie almost to the end. PPP also continued as a political party.

Political demonstrations were a daily occurrence in Jakarta and were frequent in the nation's other main cities. Student activists set the pace in demanding legal pursuit of Soeharto, the ending of ABRI's role in politics, economic recovery and the sacking of Habibie. Major riots sometimes broke out. On more than one occasion conflicts between demonstrators and security forces (or civilian anti-student thugs) led to injuries and deaths on both sides. In November 1998 the MPR agreed to hold elections in May or June 1999, to reduce ABRI representation in the legislature, to investigate Soeharto

for corruption and to allow parties to be formed with ideologies other than **Pancasila**.

Social and political conflict sometimes had religious overtones, and turned into bloody interreligious violence in eastern Indonesia. Riots in Jakarta in November 1998 caused the destruction of a mosque, 11 churches, two Christian schools, vehicles and other property and the burning or lynching of more than a dozen Christians (mainly Ambonese). From early 1999 there was very major Christian–Muslim conflict in Ambon itself and in surrounding areas. Houses, shops, religious buildings and government offices were burned and thousands of people were killed in the following months of violence. Religious leaders from both sides were unable to calm emotions there and government security forces could exercise only marginal restraint.

By March 1999 there were large-scale demonstrations in Jakarta calling for a **jihad** (holy war) to defend the Muslims of Ambon against Christian attacks. In April a bomb went off in Jakarta's Istiqlal mosque during prayer time. Several people were injured but no one was killed. There followed telephone threats to bomb the nearby central cathedral, where the authorities immediately placed a strong guard. One of Islam's more radical bodies, KISDI (**Komite Indonesia untuk Solidaritas Dunia Islam**, Indonesia Committee for the Solidarity of the Islamic World), decreed in August 1999 that the conflict in Ambon was already a true holy war for Muslims, but it did so without an authoritative legal opinion (**fatwa**) to support the claim. Interreligious violence carried on into 2001, producing deaths, injuries and physical destruction, and turning thousands of people in eastern Indonesia into refugees.

In such circumstances, the Indonesian people prepared for their first free elections in 44 years. By April 1999 a total of 48 parties had been registered. About 20 of them were popularly believed to be concoctions of the Soeharto family and cronies, intended to confuse the election outcome. There were two Indonesian Democracy Parties, one of them being Megawati's PDIP. There were three PNIs, one of them led by Soeharto's brother Probosutedjo (who, in the end, gained too few votes to win a seat). Several parties explicitly based themselves on Islamic ideology and identity, and generally rejected the idea that a woman could be President. Centre–regional relations naturally became a major issue in the campaign, with a clear consensus in favour of some form of decentralisation.



Indonesians were determined to make full use of the first opportunity to choose their own government in more than a generation. The campaign officially began on 19 May 1999. Election activities were assisted by overseas financial support. Professional-standard television advertisements and debates went along with wild but mostly jovial cavalcades. *Golkar* was caught out in several places trying to buy votes. Some violent clashes occurred, *Golkar* being a target for much animosity. There were also clashes between PPP and PKB followers, as both sought support from traditionalist Muslims. There were deaths and injuries (mostly from traffic accidents), Molotov cocktails were thrown, and property was damaged. Both PKB and PPP followers used amulets (*jimat*) for supernatural protection. Nevertheless, the campaign was a remarkably successful exercise in boisterous democracy. As tens of thousands rallied in support of PDIP, Megawati became the evident front-runner. She was subjected to a not-so-subtle campaign of slander that she was too partial to non-Muslims, dictatorial, corrupt and nepotistic, possibly pro-Communist and even a bigamist. But her supporters remained loyal.

The general election was carried out with remarkably few irregularities on 7 June 1999. At stake were 462 elected seats in the national parliament (DPR). To these would be added 38 places reserved for the military for a total of 500 members – this being the last parliament in which the military would have its own reserved seats. Provincial assembly seats were also up for election. The 500 seats in the national DPR would be combined with 65 functional group representatives (to be chosen by the national election commission) and 135 provincial representatives (to be chosen by the elected provincial assemblies and thus, at least to some extent, also reflecting the election outcome) to make up the People's Consultative Assembly (MPR) of 700 members. (These figures included representatives for East Timor who, after the outcome of the East Timor referendum, would no longer take seats in Indonesian national institutions.) The MPR would elect the President. The outcome of the national DPR elections was as shown in the following table.

Party	Valid votes	% Valid votes	Parliamentary seats	% Elected parliamentary seats
PDIP	35,706,618	33.7	153	33.1
<i>Golkar</i>	23,742,112	22.4	120	26.0
PPP	11,330,387	10.7	58	12.6
PKB	13,336,963	12.6	51	11.0
PAN	7,528,936	7.1	34	7.4
16 others	14,200,921	13.4	46	10.0
Total	105,845,93	99.9	462	100.1

The national election law decreed that parties must win 2 per cent or more of the vote (= 10 seats) to be allowed to stand in the next election of 2004; only six parties crossed this threshold. In the wake of this successful exercise in democracy, the Rupiah strengthened to under 7000/US\$.

Two voting patterns were significant, although given the extraordinary

circumstances of the 1999 election it was not certain that they would remain so. Firstly, there was still a distinction between the outer islands and Java, as was true in 1955. But now it was **Golkar** which was stronger in the outer islands. **Golkar** gained 80 of its 120 seats (66.7 per cent) outside Java, whereas PDIP won 68 of its 153 seats (44.4 per cent) outside Java. Secondly, in a rapidly Islamising society, the vast majority of voters had chosen leaders and parties whose platforms were secular in character. Attempts to capitalise on religious sentiment for electoral gain had failed.

Although Megawati's PDIP had come out in front, it was not certain that she would be elected President when the MPR met in October 1999. In the intervening weeks, as political manoeuvres proliferated around her, Megawati did little or nothing to build a coalition in support of her candidacy. Habibie was wounded by the East Timor debacle, but still a serious contender until people close to him were implicated in a banking scandal. When in October 1999 the MPR formally rejected his presidential address explaining his policies, he withdrew his candidature. Abdurrahman Wahid had meanwhile outmanoeuvred Megawati and was elected Indonesia's fourth President by the MPR. He was to last as President for barely 21 months. PDIP supporters reacted with angry demonstrations in several cities, but were mollified when Megawati was elected Vice-President. Amien Rais was elected chair of the MPR.

The first months of Abdurrahman Wahid's presidency produced a combination of hope, promise, vision, confusion and disillusionment. Given his parlous state of health and the powerful political forces which coalesced against him, one could hardly be certain from week to week whether he could survive, physically or as the elected head of his nation. Yet he displayed extraordinary personal energy, a determination to overthrow the oppressively hierarchical and centralising features of the Soeharto years and a willingness to think creatively which earned him much admiration. A punishing schedule of overseas visits won friends abroad and succeeded in cutting off much of the support going to GAM separatists in Aceh, but it also brought criticism that Abdurrahman was neglecting urgent domestic issues.



Vice-President Megawati Sukarnoputri with President Abdurrahman Wahid. Reproduced courtesy of Rex Features Ltd

Abdurrahman displayed a refreshing candour which, however, also led to contradictory, ill-thought-through public policy statements. Among the criticisms frequently made of him was that he was confusing his nation. A common political joke was that the nation's first President (Sukarno) was crazy about women, the second (Soeharto) was crazy about money, the third (Habibie) was just plain crazy and the fourth (Abdurrahman) drove everyone else crazy. The government functioned poorly and in particular made only little headway in addressing the on-going economic problems of the nation.

Abdurrahman encouraged pluralism and openness. He allowed Chinese again to conduct their religious ceremonies openly. He said the Acehnese should be allowed a referendum like East Timor, but then made it clear that the choices they would be given would not include separation from Indonesia. He decided that Irian Jaya would be renamed Papua but would not contemplate the area becoming independent. When he proposed to overturn the MPRS decision of 1966 which outlawed the teaching of Marxism and Communism, however, he provoked widespread demands for him to be removed as President and a resignation threat from his Minister for Law and Legislation, Professor Yusril Ihza Mahendra (b. 1956).

The nation's social setting remained in turmoil. Military brutality still occurred, even in the capital. Two episodes of military murders of civilian demonstrators took place at Sēmanggi, Jakarta, in November 1998 and September 1999. Economic hardship was widespread. Intergroup violence continued. Particularly dangerous was the killing between Muslims and Christians in Maluku, already noted above. Over a thousand people died there in the course of 1999. In Jakarta demonstrations estimated at up to 300,000 people responded to these events by demanding a holy war against Christians. An organisation called **Laskar Jihad** (Holy War Militia) sprang up in 2000 to implement that war.

**Laskar Jihad** was led by an Indonesian of Arab (Hadhrami) descent – a recurring pattern in radical Islamic groups – named Ja‘far Umar Thalib (b. 1961). He had been educated at a *Persatuan Islam pésantren* in East Java, the Saudi Arabian-sponsored Institute for the Study of Islam and Arabic (LIPIA – *Lembaga Ilmu Pěngětahuan Islam dan Bahasa Arab*) in Jakarta and the Mawdudi Institute in Pakistan. LIPIA was a major source of Wahhabi ideas in Indonesia, as well as of the works of the Egyptian Islamic Brotherhood ideologues Hassan al-Banna and Sayyid Qutb and the ideas of Sayyid Abul A’la Mawdudi. Thalib also studied with leading Middle Eastern *ulama* and had experience on the battlefields of the anti-Soviet *jihad* in Afghanistan. His **Laskar Jihad** maintained a force of around 3000 fighters in Maluku from 2000 to 2002, when it was shut down (just days after the Bali bombings discussed below) in response to a Saudi Arabian scholar’s *fatwa* declaring that it had strayed from its original objectives. **Laskar Jihad**’s funding was not clear, but there were unmistakable signs of support from parts of the Indonesian military, who saw the Ambonese Christians as partisans for the rebellious Republic of South Maluku that was crushed in 1950 and who were not averse to seeing social violence that might justify a return to military dominance of the state. Funding also seems to have come from Indonesian businessmen, including former cronies of the Soeharto regime, and international supporters. Several prominent politicians endorsed **Laskar Jihad**’s actions, including

Hamzah Haz (b. 1940) of PPP, shortly to become Vice-President of Indonesia (2001–4).

Another important group that formed at this time was the **Laskar Mujahidin** (Holy Warriors' Militia), which brought together several militia groups under the umbrella organisation **Majelis Mujahidin Indonesia** (MMI – Indonesian Holy Warriors' Council), established in 2000 in Yogyakarta and led by Abu Bakar Ba'asyir. Whereas **Laskar Jihad** openly conducted *jihad* against the Christians of Maluku, **Laskar Mujahidin** was a clandestine, but well-armed, operation with links to other violent Islamic groups such as the Abu Sayyaf of the southern Philippines. **Laskar Mujahidin** included some non-Indonesians in its ranks in Maluku.

Despite multiple differences and mutual criticisms and condemnations, these Muslim militia groups shared much in their ideologies. They believed that Islam was under threat from a conspiracy of the Christian West – particularly the United States – and Zionism and that there were plots to Christianise Indonesia. That the USA was an enemy of Islam seemed to them confirmed by the 1991 Gulf War and would be strengthened by the events which followed the 11 September 2001 al-Qaeda attacks in the United States, discussed below. These groups were 'Salafis' – that is, they aimed to follow the example of the pious ancestors of early Islam, the **Salaf al-Salih** – an ideology supported by Saudi Arabian resources and in Indonesia particularly by the **Dewan Da'wah Islamiyah Indonesia** and the **Majelis Ulama Indonesia** (Indonesian Ulama Council). The last was a government-funded body set up in 1975 with the aim of controlling Islamic opinion that became a bastion of conservative religious thought. Salafis were also committed to the introduction of Islamic law (*shari'ah*) and generally rejected democracy, but not all saw violence as legitimate. As increasing numbers of well-educated Salafi graduates returned to Indonesia from Saudi Arabia through the 1990s, their influence spread in **pésantrens** across Indonesia – but mainly in Java – and notably among students at secular universities. This constituted a network of tens of thousands of followers. The IAIN system, however, was largely immune to and a bastion against doctrinaire interpretations of religion.



Street banners in Jakarta, June 1999. The upper banner demands that the investigation of former President Soeharto be stopped lest there be bloodshed. The lower banner urges people to give blood to the Indonesian Red Cross

Intergroup conflict also occurred elsewhere. In Lombok, Christians were attacked and had to be evacuated. Even in normally peaceful Yogyakarta there was minor anti-Christian violence. Megawati visited Maluku but discovered that mere platitudes were of little effect. Internal refugees were now a significant social problem in several parts of the country. In Aceh, violence between separatists and security forces continued. The signing of a ceasefire agreement between GAM and the government in May 2000 suggested that at last there was some prospect of dialogue, but compromise was unlikely on the issue of Acehnese independence.

The human rights violations and corruption of the Soeharto era were pursued with greater vigour under President Abdurrahman. Soeharto sought to avoid interrogation on the grounds of ill health, but evidence in support of this claim was ambiguous. Investigators began to compile a clearer picture of the billions tucked away in Soeharto-controlled foundations. Abdurrahman said that, if Soeharto were convicted, he would pardon him. He said the same of Wiranto. The latter was initially coordinating Minister for Politics and Security in the cabinet. After investigators accused him of being among those responsible for the post-referendum violence in East Timor, the President sacked him in February 2000.

The police were separated from the rest of the military, such that ABRI no longer existed as a single entity. The military forces were internally divided and several officers were under investigation for human rights abuses and corruption, so the former ABRI role in the nation seemed incapable of being regained – at least for the time being. In May 2000, one civilian and 24 soldiers were convicted and sentenced for up to ten years for the killing of Teungku Bantaqiah the year before. The Lieutenant Colonel who had ordered the attack had, however, disappeared, stopping further pursuit up the chain of command. The parliamentary institutions of the new democracy meanwhile struggled to define their proper roles in a nation where neither the President nor the military any longer had much control.

Probably the most fundamental challenge facing the nation was to restore the rule of law. The police and legal institutions had been so corrupted by the Sukarno and Soeharto years, and so little amelioration had been achieved during Habibie's brief presidency, that almost the entire legal system still required rebuilding. Corruption, military excesses, mob violence, vigilante law, intergroup conflict, insecurity of person and property – none of these would be fixed without thoroughgoing reforms to restore the rule of law. But the barriers in the way of that were great, including tainted judges and police, and large amounts of money in the hands of corruptors.

Opportunities for abuse of power were many. Rich corruptors circled around the Abdurrahman regime like a school of sharks sensing fresh meat. Soon accusations emerged of shady deals involving people who held major roles in the nation, including the President. By mid-2001 it was abundantly clear that patterns of behaviour inherited from the past would not be easily transformed. No one could say with confidence whether the President and those who had major public responsibilities in the new Indonesia – the third-largest democracy in the world – would be able to control, investigate, eradicate, indeed even resist the corrupting opportunities which surrounded them.

Abdurrahman Wahid's chaotic presidency came to an end in mid-2001. In the DPR

a coalition formed to remove him from the presidency by convening a special session of the MPR. Abdurrahman tried to forestall this by ordering his Coordinating Minister for Political, Social and Security Affairs, Susilo Bambang Yudhoyono, to declare a state of emergency, which would have suspended parliamentary processes, but the latter refused to do so and was fired. But it was too late for Abdurrahman to save his presidency. In July the MPR met and dismissed him, elevating Vice-President Megawati Sukarnoputri to the presidency that many of her supporters had always believed was rightfully hers. After attempting for a few days to carry on, Abdurrahman bowed to the inevitable, moved out of the presidential palace and went to the USA for health treatment.

Megawati Sukarnoputri's presidency from 2001 until the national elections of 2004 witnessed few achievements, but after the chaos of the Abdurrahman period she at least restored an element of dignity to the office of President. Her critics, however, regarded this more as aloof immobility. She lacked the charisma of her father Sukarno, displayed little competence in administration or leadership and, in her aloofness and inwardness, was not unlike the style of the Soehartos. Her husband, Taufik Kiemas (b. 1942), was regarded as a power behind the throne, a political wheeler-dealer and financial facilitator. For all of this her party, the PDIP, would suffer major losses in the next elections.

Any Indonesian President in 2001 faced formidable problems that were the legacy of Soeharto's rule, of the economic and social crises that attended its demise and of the failure of the Habibie and Abdurrahman presidencies to overcome them. Corruption was rampant and perhaps even worse than in Soeharto's time, when it at least was more centrally sanctioned and controlled at national level. Although there was some recovery of overseas and domestic investment, corruption, along with a general environment of legal uncertainty and a deeply corrupted judicial system, ensured that investment did not reach the level required for full economic recovery.

Social problems were exacerbated by continuing population growth. A census was carried out in 2000, but administrative problems and insecurity in some areas meant that its results were not as reliable as previous censuses. It reported a total Indonesian population of 203.5 million, but some experts thought the true figure to be around 230 million. The economic position of the urban middle class was improving again, but for many Indonesians there was little or no work to be found and poverty was widespread. The percentage of the population living below the officially defined poverty line fell from 23 to 18 per cent over 1999–2002, but many Indonesians were only barely above that line, which is an artificial figure in any case. Indicators varied but continued to confirm that Indonesia remained a poor country. In 2007, for example, the UN World Food Programme reported that 13 million children under the age of five – nearly half of Indonesia's 28 million children in that category – suffered from chronic malnutrition and were both under-weight and under height.

The Indonesian presidency in the age of decentralisation was a very different thing from the all-powerful office it was under Soeharto. Indonesia's decentralisation, expressed in a 1999 law that began to take effect from 1 January 2001, rapidly turned the country from one of the most centralised in the world into one of the most decentralised. This policy rejected the oppressive centralisation of the Soeharto years and recognised the geo-political, cultural and ethnic realities of a nation made up of the

world's largest archipelago, but it also raised questions about what it was that held the nation together.

Except for defence, external affairs, justice, monetary matters and religious affairs, all other functions of government and the budgets to go with them were decentralised to local governments. Because of the fear of sparking secession movements on a significant scale in some areas of the country, power was not decentralised to special districts and provinces (of which there were 33 by 2007) but rather to lower level Regencies (*kabupaten*) and municipalities. The number of these increased as new local government districts were created; the total soon reached 440, each with its own budget, bureaucracy, elected representative structures, problems and aspirations. While political parties were organised nationally, their local manifestations had to address local issues and interests. Needless to say, the performance of these local governments varied considerably. Some were led by able and honest people, but many had problems both of competence and honesty. Local student activists, civil society groups and journalists readily exposed official dishonesty and incompetence. As a result, over the following years hundreds of local government officers and elected representatives, even extending to provincial governors, found themselves charged, tried, convicted and jailed on corruption charges. This contributed to a gradual strengthening of the rule of law across the country and greater caution on the part of corruptors. In such a country, the President could no longer simply command as had Soeharto, but must persuade, cajole, manipulate and mobilise symbols to achieve objectives. Megawati seemed to have few such skills.

The challenges facing Megawati increased when terrorism became a major world issue. Indonesia had already experienced plenty of terror of its own. From the actions of 'Turk' Westerling through *Darul Islam* to the conduct of ABRI in Aceh, Papua and East Timor or the interethnic and interreligious clashes of recent years, many Indonesians knew from bitter experience what terrorism was. From 1998 terrorist bombings had been increasing in Indonesia. While some of these bombings were the work of criminals, others were carried out by separatists or extremist Islamic groups. Targets were often Christian churches or symbols of Western influence such as hotels and shopping malls. There were some 50 such attacks over 1998–2001. As noted above, in April 1999 the Istiqlal mosque in Jakarta was bombed. In September 2000 the Jakarta Stock Exchange was bombed, leaving ten dead. On Christmas Eve December 2000, 38 bombs went off against Christian targets in 11 cities throughout Indonesia, killing 19; this was the first terrorist attack by the group that called itself *Jemaah Islamiyah* (JI), although at this stage JI was not yet identified by Indonesian police and intelligence.

Then came the 11 September 2001 al-Qaeda attacks upon New York and Washington, killing nearly 3000 people. As the Americans and their allies prepared to attack Afghanistan and its Taliban government that sheltered Osama bin Laden and al-Qaeda, Indonesia suddenly saw large demon-strations led by Indonesian veterans of the anti-Soviet *jihad* in Afghanistan. They denounced the United States and its allies and charged them with waging a war against Islam. One of the foremost groups to emerge at this stage was the Islamic Defenders' Front (FPI – *Front Pembela Islam*, est. 1998), led by Habib Muhammad Rizieq Syihab (b. 1965), an Indonesian of Arab (Hadhrami) descent, a *sayyid* (descendant of the Prophet) who was educated in LIPIA in Jakarta and

in Saudi Arabia and had taken part in the *jihad* in Afghanistan. FPI now rose to prominence by leading protests against the impending invasion of Afghanistan by the United States and its allies. FPI also specialised in violent attacks upon ‘places of immorality’, such as bars, massage parlours, discotheques and places of gambling and prostitution, as well as against religious groups which did not share Rizieq Syihab’s understanding of Islam, notably the *Ahmadiyya* variant of Islam. Professor Ahmad Syafi‘i Ma’arif (b. 1935), the head of *Muhammadiyah*, denounced FPI as ‘thugs in Arab robes’ (*preman bērjubah*)

The scale of anti-American demonstrations was a surprise to many, not least to the leadership of the centrist Islamic organisations *Muhammadiyah* and *Nahdlatul Ulama*. They had invested time in disagreeing with each other but now recognised that they faced a joint threat in the mobilisation of extremist versions of Islam. From this time on, *Muhammadiyah* and NU leaders began working more productively together to deny the religious authority of extremists. Younger Islamic thinkers, mainly from NU backgrounds, also set up a vigorous opposition to organisations such as *Laskar Jihad*, FPI and *Majēlis Mujahidin* in March 2001 when they created the Liberal Islamic Network (JIL – *Jaringan Islam Liberal*). JIL was led by Ulil Abshar-Abdalla (b. 1967), a *pēsantren*- educated Javanese from a leading NU family who was also a graduate of LIPIA. In its many publications and public debates, JIL positioned itself at the forefront of liberal interpretations of the faith, supporting secular democracy, gender equality, multiculturalism and intergroup tolerance. It won support from American sources such as the Ford and Asia Foundations, and bitter enmity and death threats from the Salafis.

Indonesia’s tragic entry into the front line of global terrorism followed barely a year after the al-Qaeda attacks in the USA. On 12 October 2002, the Sari Club and Paddy’s Bar at Kuta, Bali, were the targets of car and suicide bombs. This was the work of JI. The bombs killed 202 people, most of them young foreign nationals. The largest national group among the dead was 88 Australians, the second largest 38 Indonesians. More than 200 other people were injured. This was the largest terrorist attack in Indonesia’s history. The Indonesian police accepted specialist assistance from the Australian Federal Police and quickly began to unravel the JI conspiracy that lay behind the bombing. Ringleaders Imam Samudra (b. 1970), Ali Gufron (alias Mukhlis, b. 1960) and Amrozi bin Nurhasyim (b. 1962) were arrested along with others and tried. Imam Samudra and Amrozi were sentenced to death but the executions had not been carried out up to the time this chapter was written.

Abu Bakar Ba’asyir was identified as the spiritual leader (*amir*) of JI. Megawati’s government, however, seemed reluctant to pursue him and many ordinary and also prominent Indonesians continued to doubt that JI actually existed. Some even believed the idea that the Bali bombings were the work of the CIA, just as they believed that the 11 September 2001 attacks in the United States were part of a Jewish plot. Megawati came under great pressure from other governments, among them the United States and Australia, to act against Ba’asyir, whom they regarded as a top figure in Indonesia’s terrorist networks. He was sent to trial on treason and immigration charges in 2003 but convicted only of the latter. Later attempts to charge him with responsibility for other terrorist acts were also unsuccessful. Having spent just over two years in jail he was released in mid-2006; in December his conviction was overturned by the Indonesian

Supreme Court. An operational connection between Ba'asyir and JI terrorists was never established in court and – for all of his narrow religious views and support of a supranational caliphate – he publicly criticised acts of terror in Indonesia.

The impact of the 2002 Bali bombings was widespread in both positive and negative ways. Tourism in Bali – on which many livelihoods and much investment depended – was moribund for a year or more and only recovered slowly thereafter. The tension which had persisted between Australia and Indonesia since the separation of East Timor, however, turned to collaboration as both sides realised that they shared an interest in fighting terrorism. While parliamentarians on both sides still sometimes found it attractive to express hostility to the other, government leaders recognised that, like it or not, Australian and Indonesian fates were connected. The collaboration between the Australian Federal Police and the Indonesian police proved fruitful. In the years that followed, Indonesia was probably more successful than any other country in the world in identifying domestic terrorist networks, disrupting them, discovering their munitions, capturing or killing their activists, bringing them to trial and convicting them. But that disruption could not eliminate all acts of terror, much to the cost of many ordinary Indonesians.



*Abu Bakar Ba'asyir, 2007*

The most positive impact of the 2002 terrorist bombings, and of those that followed in subsequent years, was probably to undermine whatever sympathy there may have been among the majority of the pious Indonesian middle class for extremist views and violent actions and, with it, whatever doubts they still harboured about whether there were really terrorists at large in Indonesia. There were still leaders willing to doubt this. Vice-President Hamzah Haz hosted both Abu Bakar Ba'asyir and Ja'afar Umar Thalib to dinner and announced that there were no terrorists in Indonesia, but such claims were wearing thin. The Jakarta middle class was directly attacked when the Marriott hotel

was bombed in August 2003, killing twelve Indonesians (including the suicide bomber) and one European, and injuring many others. This was another JI attack. A further suicide bomb was detonated outside the Australian embassy in Jakarta in September 2004, killing nine Indonesians (including the bomber) and injuring some 180. Several Australian diplomats had lucky escapes. With the alienation of the middle class – and increasingly of Indonesians of all classes – the extremists were ever farther from any prospect of gaining power at national level.



*The wreckage of the Sari Club, Kuta, Bali after the October 2002 bombing. Reproduced courtesy of Rex Features Ltd © Sipa Press/Rex Features Ltd*

In 2002 advocates of the Islamisation of the Indonesian state also suffered a setback in the long parliamentary process of amending the national constitution. Just as those who wanted the Jakarta Charter – which would impose Islamic law on Muslims – were defeated in 1945, 1959 and 1968, so also in 2002 a similar provision was proposed by several small Islamic-based parties and was supported by Vice-President Hamzah Haz of PPP. By this time *shari‘ah* courts with jurisdiction over Islamic family law and charitable donations already existed, but the proponents of this constitutional amendment sought something more comprehensive. What that might be was never clear in detail, since what constitutes *shari‘ah* is a matter of debate among Muslim scholars. In any case, other political parties and both *Muhammadiyah* and NU – evidently nervous about more extremist forms of Islam gaining the initiative – opposed the amendment and it failed. Islamic-state activists regarded this as a decisive defeat. Some took the view that in decentralised Indonesia they could progress instead by introducing aspects of *shari‘ah* law at Regency or municipal level and thereby Islamise Indonesian state and society bit by bit. So the marginalisation of terrorists and the defeat of a constitutional amendment did not mean an end to aspirations for an Islamic state.

In the various episodes of religiously defined violence, suspicions were often voiced about a possible role played by sections of the Indonesian military. By this time, much progress had been made in dismantling the military’s role in government and society.

The electoral process was largely free of military meddling and the military's guaranteed positions in the parliament would come to an end with the elections of 2004. But the army's territorial system – which gave it a position of influence across society – was not abolished. As terrorism became an increasing problem, the military successfully argued that this territorial structure was important for counter-terrorism intelligence. Thus in Indonesia, as elsewhere, terrorism could provide state authorities with excuses to maintain or extend authoritarian practices. Spreading dissatisfaction with civilian government during the chaos of Abdurrahman Wahid's presidency and the general immobility of Megawati's also gave an opportunity for retired military officers to regain popular esteem and to be elected to several governorships in 2002–3. Megawati herself seemed more favourable to the military than to its critics.

In two areas of Indonesia secessionist sentiments remained strong and in both the military still thought it could offer solutions. In Papua, the prominent figure Theys Eluay (1937–2001) – a man with a complex history that included close relations with the military at times – was murdered in November 2001 after having become a leading public proponent of Papuan independence. Seven members of the army were later jailed for his murder. The Indonesian National Commission on Human Rights subsequently reported that the army and police were guilty of serious violations of human rights in Papua, including extrajudicial killings and torture.

In Aceh, Megawati initially approved attempts at a peaceful settlement with the GAM rebels, but this approach was to fail. Over 2002–3, Susilo Bambang Yudhoyono, now Coordinating Minister for Political and Security Affairs, attempted a settlement with the mediation of the Henry Dunant Centre for Humanitarian Dialogue of Geneva. This led to a cessation of hostilities at the end of 2002 but this soon broke down, at least in part because the military undermined it by organising attacks upon cease-fire monitors. With the agreement in tatters, in May 2003 Megawati declared martial law and unleashed the military in Aceh for the last time. This campaign may have done serious damage to GAM's military capacity, but it could not bring about peace. Once again both sides in the conflict were accused of human rights violations. Not until after the devastating earthquake and tsunami of December 2004 (discussed in the following chapter) would it at last become possible to achieve a settlement in Aceh which did not rest on repression.

Much of the first nine months of 2004 was taken up with politicking for Indonesia's parliamentary and presidential elections. Elections were held in April for the national DPR of 550 seats (now entirely elected) and for all of the fully elected provincial, *kabupaten* and municipal parliaments (DPRD – *Dewan Perwakilan Rakyat Daerah*), as well as for a new national-level institution, the Regional Representative Council (DPD – *Dewan Perwakilan Daerah*) of 128 members. This DPD was thought of as a sort of upper house, although it subsequently struggled to establish any clear role in national political life. The MPR – which Soeharto had used to legitimise his presidency and policies – would now consist of the DPR and DPD sitting together and thus be an entirely elected body. The MPR would no longer elect the President and Vice-President, who would instead be directly chosen by the people.

The April elections were an immense logistical enterprise. The total number of electors was 147 million, there were nearly 450,000 candidates standing for election

and some 585,000 polling stations, and over 600 million ballot papers had to be printed. The local election committees were largely staffed by civil society activists, which was thought to be a way to keep the elections free and fair. Despite a few problems, for the most part they were free, fair and peaceful. The election process was not, however, free from corruption, which led to several prominent figures from the election commission subsequently going to jail.

The results of the April 2004 parliamentary election at national level were as follows (ignoring some minor inconsistencies among various tabulations of the results).

<i>Party</i>	<i>Valid votes</i>	<i>% valid votes</i>	<i>Parliamentary seats</i>	<i>% Parliamentary seats</i>
<i>Golkar</i>	24,480,757	21.6	128	23.3
PDIP	21,026,629	18.5	110	20.0
PKB	11,989,564	10.6	53	9.6
PPP	9,248,764	8.2	57	10.4
<i>Demokrat</i>	8,455,225	7.5	58	10.5
PKS	8,325,020	7.3	45	8.2
PAN	7,303,324	6.4	54	9.8
Others	22,633,131	19.9	45	8.2
<i>Total</i>	113,462,414	100.0	550	100.0

There were several notable outcomes. Support for Megawati's PDIP declined dramatically from 33.7 per cent in the 1999 election to 18.5 per cent in 2004. Support for **Golkar**, however, remained fairly stable: 22.4 per cent in 1999, 21.6 per cent in 2004. Abdurrahman Wahid's PKB declined from 12.6 per cent (1999) to 10.6 per cent (2004) but remained a political party of significance. Several new parties emerged as significant forces, particularly **Partai Demokrat** led by Susilo Bambang Yudhoyono, which gained 7.5 per cent, and the Prosperous Justice Party (PKS – **Partai Keadilan Sjahera**), which gained 7.3 per cent. PKS was a party based on fundamentalist Islam but its election campaign downplayed Islamic issues and instead emphasised the fight against corruption and demands for justice and greater welfare. In the local parliamentary election in Jakarta, PKS indeed emerged as the largest party with nearly a quarter of all votes.

There were still signs of differing political loyalties between the outer islands and Java, with **Golkar** still stronger in the former. It gained 70 (55 per cent) of its 128 DPR members from the outer islands, whereas PDIP gained 72 (66 per cent) of its 110 members from Java constituencies. Women did not fare well. Despite an expectation that 30 per cent of parties' candidates would be female, in the end only 12 per cent of the elected members were women (1999: 9 per cent). The percentage of female DPR members among the larger parties was 14 per cent for **Golkar** and **Partai Demokrat** and 13 per cent for PAN and PKB. Fully 40 per cent of PKS candidates were women, but only three (7 per cent) of its elected DPR members. In the DPD, 21 per cent of members were female.

For the first time in Indonesian history, the President and Vice-President were directly elected by the people. This election was held in two rounds in July and September 2004. In the first round, all presidential and vice-presidential pairings

included one person with strong Islamic credentials. Wiranto was the presidential candidate from **Golkar**, Megawati Sukarnoputri from PDIP, Amien Rais from PAN, Susilo Bambang Yudhoyono from **Partai Demokrat** and Hamzah Haz from PPP. More than 155 million voters registered for an election that was again free and fair. Megawati emerged with 26.6 per cent of the vote and Susilo Bambang Yudhoyono with 33.6 per cent. So the September run-off was between these two.

It was notable that in the July presidential election, very many voters did not support the candidates endorsed by the parties that they had voted for in April, but rather shifted to other candidates. This confirmed that Indonesia's electorate was highly individualistic in its judgements and resistant to calls for loyalty from party leaders and so-called traditional authorities such as religious figures. Indonesia's new democracy, in other words, had struck roots in the populace. A significant number of registered voters also did not take part in the 2004 elections: 16 per cent in April, nearly 20 per cent in July and nearly 24 per cent in September, probably reflecting a certain election fatigue throughout this long process.

In the final round of presidential elections in September 2004, 153.3 million voters were registered and 116.7 million took part. Susilo Bambang Yudhoyono and his vice-presidential candidate Jusuf Kalla (b. 1942) won with 60.6 per cent of the votes. They carried every province in the nation except Bali, East Nusa Tenggara and Maluku. The political transition was marred by ill will on Megawati's part, as if she could not imagine that Indonesians could have elected anyone but her. But it was peaceful and Susilo Bambang Yudhoyono – commonly referred to as SBY – took over government as Indonesia's sixth President (2004–9). He had the strongest popular mandate of any President in Indonesian history. He succeeded in time to face one of the most devastating natural and humanitarian disasters ever to strike his nation.

## **Chapter 25**

---

# **Indonesia since 2004**

At the time this chapter was finalised – at the start of 2008 – it was of course too early to assess the historical importance of developments in the previous three and a half years. Certain matters stand out nevertheless and are likely to be of ongoing significance. This period has been characterised particularly by:

- a dreadful, deadly series of national disasters
- conflicts and controversies within the realm of religion
- further terrorist violence but successes against terrorist networks
- local-level developments in the now decentralised nation that strengthened democracy and the rule of law at one extreme while undermining tolerance and justice at the other
- generally indecisive yet modestly popular national-level leadership under President Susilo Bambang Yudhoyono and rather more decisive but less popular leadership by Vice-President Jusuf Kalla.

One of the realities of twenty-first century Indonesia is decentralisation. For most of the period of Indonesian independence, Indonesians and foreigners alike thought it possible to look to Jakarta to discover what was going on in the nation. The President – the flamboyant, chaotic Sukarno or authoritarian, methodical Soeharto – seemed the arbiter of most things in Indonesia, thus concealing many local realities. But that is no longer true. The powers of the presidential palace are sharply constrained by decentralisation to the 440 or so local government authorities across the archipelago. The President and Vice-President matter in Indonesia, but much less than at any time since the achievement of independence. So it is more difficult to tell a national story about Indonesia and organisationally impossible to tell 440 local stories. The reality of decentralisation has also made it more difficult to respond nationally to the challenges and disasters that afflict Indonesia in local contexts.

In forming his first cabinet in late 2004, Susilo Bambang Yudhoyono – generally regarded as decent, intelligent and indecisive – sought to satisfy as many elements in his unwieldy coalition of minor parties as possible. He thus created a cabinet that was short on cohesion and effectiveness. Beyond his own **Partai Demokrat**, the President relied upon the Islamist PBB and the at least semi-Islamist PKS, as well as the **Muhammadiyah**-born PAN, which seems to have made him reluctant to offend Islamic sensibilities.

The directly elected President and Vice-President, the DPR (People's Representative Council), the new DPD (Regional Representative Council), the judiciary, the new Constitutional Court (**Mahkamah Konstitusi Republik Indonesia**), local parliaments and governments and their directly elected heads, all had yet to work out their roles in Indonesia's new political system. As they did so, at national level Jusuf Kalla emerged as the first significantly active Vice-President since Mohammad Hatta in the 1950s. Initially **Golkar** represented the largest non-government party in the DPR, but late in 2004 Jusuf Kalla won the chairmanship of **Golkar**, thereby converting it overnight into a bloc of DPR votes on the government side – insofar as any group within the DPR could be thought of as a 'bloc' at all. This also put him at the head of a DPR faction larger than the coalition notionally headed by the President himself. Rumours of tensions and conflicting ambitions between President and Vice-President were common currency of political gossip, consistently denied by the actors themselves. Megawati's PDIP was now the main non-government party in the DPR.



*The future President Susilo Bambang Yudhoyono and his wife Kristiani Herawati voting in the presidential election, July 2004. Reproduced courtesy of Rex Features Ltd © Luhur Hertanto/Rex Features Ltd*

Rising world oil prices immediately set the government a major political and financial challenge. Indonesia subsidised domestic fuel prices for humanitarian and political reasons. But the rise in world oil prices from late 2004 mean that these subsidies might overwhelm the government budget. Subsidies that cost US\$7 billion in 2004 were expected to reach US\$14 billion in 2005 if no action was taken – one-quarter of all government expenditures. After much reluctance and resistance from almost all quarters, in October 2005 Jakarta raised the domestic price for petrol by 149 per cent, for diesel fuel by 161 per cent and for kerosene – vital for cooking – by 186 per cent. This was a tough, courageous decision, made more palatable by cash donations to the poorest Indonesians to assist them in the transition to higher prices. In the end, this was accepted by most of the public. Although it pushed the annual inflation figure up to 18 per cent – the highest in six years – consequent savings to the government budget made possible significant additional funding for health, education and village infrastructure across the country. Economic growth continued, the GDP expanding by 4.3 per cent in 2004, 5.6 per cent in 2005 and about 5.5 per cent in 2006 – positive but too low to deal

with widespread unemployment, underemployment and poverty.

Nature itself seemed to conspire against Indonesia. One should remember that this vast archipelago sits astride one of the most geologically unstable regions of the globe, dominated by the grinding sub-sea encounter of the Indo-Australian and Eurasian tectonic plates and a string of volcanoes that make Indonesia part of what is known as the 'Pacific ring of fire', where about 90 per cent of the world's earthquakes take place.

One of the world's worst earthquakes and the worst tsunami in recorded human history struck Indonesia and other areas around the Indian Ocean on 26 December 2004. The earthquake measured 9.0 on the Richter scale and its epicentre was off the west coast of North Sumatra. Aceh, in particular, was devastated. It is estimated that 167,000 died there, including 90,000 in Banda Aceh itself. Sri Lanka, India and Thailand also suffered the effects of the tsunami, the total number of dead around the Indian Ocean being of the order of 230,000. Vast stretches of Aceh near the sea simply disappeared forever, along with those who lived there. International governments and aid agencies, domestic Islamic organisations (including those often denounced for extremism and violence, such as FPI) and the Indonesian government responded to this horrific human tragedy as best they could. Three years later tens of thousands of Acehnese were still living in temporary housing and struggling to reconstruct their lives.



*A lone mosque remains standing in an Acehnese village wiped out by the tsunami of 26 December 2004.  
Reproduced courtesy of Rex Features Ltd © Action Press/Rex Features Ltd*

Aftershocks rocked Aceh for years and indeed across the whole of Indonesia the following months and years were marked by recurrent seismic events and panics about possible tsunamis. Sumatra was hit again by an earthquake measuring 8.2 on the Richter scale in March 2005; the island of Nias was particularly badly damaged. In December 2006 North Aceh survivors had to face severe floods.



*The Sidoarjo ‘mud volcano’ disaster, 2007*

In late May 2006, as Mount Mĕrapi rumbled ominously to the north, a devastating earthquake of 6.3 on the Richter scale struck south of Yogyakarta. Over 6000 people were killed and something like 1.5 million were rendered homeless. Again international aid was mobilised, but in this case the Indonesian government itself responded more effectively than had been the case in Aceh, given Yogyakarta’s central location and smaller – but still heart-rending – scale. Yet victims complained that aid and compensation were slow to flow; they denounced government indifference, lies, corruption and incompetence. In March 2007 West Sumatra suffered a 6.3 Richter earthquake, killing over 70 people. Another 8.4 Richter earthquake followed in September, killing over 20 people in Bĕngkulu, followed by two more major quakes off the Sumatran coast. And so the story went across the whole of this profoundly unstable archipelago.

East Java suffered an ecological disaster that some claimed was natural in origin, but was probably man-made. In May 2006 the company PT Lapindo Brantas – majority-owned by the Bakrie Group of the *pribumi* entrepreneur Aburizal Bakrie, Coordinating Minister for People’s Welfare in the government – was drilling an exploratory borehole near the town of Sidoarjo (south of Surabaya) in its search for gas. At about 1800 metres (9300 feet) water, steam and gas erupted. Before long there was a ‘mud volcano’ producing a flow of up to 150,000 cubic metres of mud a day. Villages and factories were buried, at various times the nearby railway line and road were cut, thousands of villagers were displaced and no one knew how to stop the flow. Lapindo Brantas claimed that this was a long-distance natural effect of the Yogyakarta earthquake which occurred at the same time. Most geologists, however, as well as PT Lapindo Brantas’s partners, accused the company of negligence in not using a steel casing in its drilling, which could have prevented such a disaster. Earthen dams were constructed to contain the massive mud lake that formed – dams that failed from time to time – and various schemes were considered for stemming the flow. Criminal investigations against Lapindo senior executives began and there were promises of

compensation. As of this writing, however, the mud continues to flow, it is being contained by dams and pumped into the sea, locals are dissatisfied with the government's and Lapindo's response to their losses, and there is no solution to the ongoing disaster.

Given Indonesia's geological volatility and the tragedies flowing from it with depressing regularity, it may seem strange that the Indonesian government proposes building a nuclear power station on the slopes of Mount Muria, near the north coast Javanese town of Jépara, seeking tenders in 2008, building to commence in 2010 and commissioning by 2017. Other nuclear power plants are also envisaged. This would be an answer to chronic shortages of electricity in Java and Bali. Indonesia's neighbour Australia supported the idea, eager to sell its uranium. Critics thought that the prospects of a geological event leading to a nuclear accident made this one of the maddest pieces of public policy one could imagine.

But out of this depressing history of natural disasters flowed an end to the GAM-led insurgency in Aceh. With international attention focused intensively on Aceh in the wake of the 2004 tsunami, both GAM and the Indonesian government began to negotiate a settlement. Jusuf Kalla led the government effort. Negotiations began in January 2005 in Helsinki and culminated in an understanding in July 2005, bringing to an end a conflict that had cost some 15,000 lives. A cease-fire was agreed; GAM would surrender its arms and accept the sovereignty of Indonesia; in return, GAM would be allowed to create its own political party. Only in Aceh would such local parties be accepted, for Indonesia otherwise insisted on parties having nationwide organisations precisely as a barrier to separationist movements. The agreement was implemented with good faith and only minor problems on both sides. In December 2006 local elections were held in Aceh and went smoothly. There was an 85 per cent turnout of the 2.6 million registered voters. In a landslide victory over seven other candidates, the former GAM figure Irwandi Yusuf (b. 1960) was elected governor of Aceh (2007–12). Second place in the election also went to a former GAM figure.

The Aceh elections were part of a process of electing local heads across the nation. In the course of 2005 over 180 provincial governors, *bupatis* and mayors were directly elected. Surprisingly, *Golkar* was victorious in only about 40 per cent of these posts, reflecting the broadening appeal of other political parties at local level. As democracy struck firmer roots, the United States resumed military aid to Indonesia in 2005, despite lingering concerns about human rights violations by Indonesian military, police and intelligence and the apparent impunity of perpetrators.

While there was improvement over the days of Soeharto and the brutal domination by ABRI, continuing human rights violations occurred. One of the most shocking was the September 2004 murder by poisoning of the human rights activist Munir (1965–2004) while on a Garuda flight from Jakarta to Amsterdam. An off-duty Garuda pilot was convicted of the murder in early 2008. There remained strong grounds for suspicions that the state intelligence organisation (*Badan Intelijen Indonesia*) was implicated. In May 2007 a land dispute in Pasuruan between local people and the marines ended with the latter shooting dead five locals, including women and a three-year-old child, and wounding others. Unlike in Soeharto's time, however, now such cases were widely reported in the press and activists resolutely pursued justice, even if

they still sometimes faced corrupt judges and corrupt and incompetent police.

Student activists, an energetic and free press, NGOs such as Indonesian Corruption Watch and an improving – but far from perfect – judiciary and police made life harder for corruptors, even high-profile ones. In April 2005 the governor of Aceh, Abdullah Puteh (b. 1948), was convicted of corruption and sentenced to ten years in jail. In February 2006 it was the turn of Megawati's former minister of religious affairs, Said Agil Husin al Munawar (b. 1954), who was sentenced to five years for corruptly using the money paid by *hajis* for their travel to Mecca. In mid-2007 over 100 local government heads and hundreds of local- and national-level legislators were under investigation for corruption.

Even the impunity of the Soeharto family may have begun to wear thin. The first indications under the new government were hardly positive, despite Susilo Bambang Yudhoyono's proclaimed commitment to fighting corruption and enhancing the rule of law. In October 2006 Tommy Soeharto was released from jail after serving only five years of a fifteen-year sentence for the murder of a judge. Within a few months it was revealed that a bank account of the Ministry of Justice had been used to transfer US\$10 million that Tommy said was his from a French bank to Indonesia. This curious transaction had the approval of the Minister of Justice and Human Rights Hamid Awaludin (b. 1960) and also seemingly implicated the State Secretary Yusril Ihza Mahendra, a leader of the Islamist PBB. But then there were signs that the government might after all be prepared to take action. Both of the implicated ministers lost their cabinet positions in a cabinet reshuffle in May 2007. Soon there were signs that legal action would be taken both against Tommy for various alleged corrupt dealings and against foundations controlled by his father. In the meantime, Soeharto's brother Probosutedjo, who had been sentenced to four years in 2003 for embezzling public funds but had postponed going to jail by appealing, admitted in October 2005 that he had paid bribes to various court officials up to the Supreme Court so as to gain a victory in his appeal. He failed and finally went to prison in November 2005 – after a last-minute, convenient but brief, hospitalisation for the sort of illness that so often attacks convicted corruptors. Soeharto himself died on 27 January 2008, taking with him much of the network of personal obligations that had hitherto served to protect him and his family.

In all of these events, Islamic organisations and leaders found themselves involved, often representing the interests of the disadvantaged, sometimes (as in the cases of Said Agil and Yusril Ihza Mahendra above) in ways that were less obviously commendable. Such leaders operated in a context that was highly dynamic, more democratic and open than during previous decades, and always under the ominous shadows of local extremism and terrorism and of international violence in Islamic states of the Middle East.

**Muhammadiyah** remained the dominant Modernist Islamic organisation and was conventionally regarded as ‘centrist’ or ‘moderate’. It had approximately 30 million followers and a wide range of subordinate organisations for women, young people, teenagers, tertiary students, followers of martial arts, scouts and young intellectuals. It had a vast number of educational and welfare institutions including nearly 4000 kindergartens, 940 primary schools, 1332 **madrasahs** (modern religious schools), over

2100 junior high schools, 979 high schools, 101 vocational schools, 13 schools for training religious teachers (*mualimin/mualimat*), 64 *pésantrens*, 36 universities, 30 public hospitals, 13 maternity hospitals, 80 maternity clinics, 20 polyclinics, 228 orphanages, and 5 people's credit banks (**Bank Pěrkreditan Rakyat**).

As pointed out in [Chapter 15](#), Islamic Modernism had two thrusts: the fundamentalist and puritan (returning to the original revelations of the seventh century for a truer understanding of Islam) and the modern (embracing new scientific knowledge, secular learning and modern styles). The potential tension between these two was neutralised so long as there was a common opponent: obscurantist interpretations of Islam. But as many of the intellectual, educational, welfare and social innovations brought by Modernism – that is, mainly by **Muhammadiyah** – came to be generally accepted, even by 'traditionalist' Muslims and organisations such as NU, the potential increased for difficulties between the two thrusts of Modernism.

Under the 1999–2005 leadership of Professor Ahmad Syafi'i Ma'arif, **Muhammadiyah** pursued approaches that more fundamentalist members found excessively innovative, pluralistic, multicultural and liberal, but this was reversed in 2005. At its once-in-five-years general congress in July, Syafi'i Ma'arif and like-minded liberals were voted out of the central leadership. The newly elected general chairman was Professor Din Syamsuddin (b. 1958). With him were elected new members who were generally regarded as representing the fundamentalist, puritan wing of **Muhammadiyah**. Their opponents were inclined to label them Wahhabis, partisans of the conservative Islam of Saudi Arabia. Din Syamsuddin, who holds a Ph.D. from UCLA, was regarded as an effective political operator and a religious conservative. He was also general secretary of the Indonesian Islamic Scholars' Council (MUI), long a source of doctrinaire interpretations of the faith. Progressive and liberal figures in **Muhammadiyah** were shocked at this outcome. It seemed as if the puritan side of **Muhammadiyah** had triumphed.

In mid-2005 MUI issued a series of legal opinions (*fatwas*) that were robustly conservative – not to say reactionary. Liberalism, pluralism and secularism were declared to be forbidden by Islam. Muslims were not to marry non-Muslims (despite specific Qur'anic approval for a Muslim man to marry a Jewish or Christian woman, as indeed had the Prophet Muhammad himself) or to engage in joint prayers with non-Muslims (a not unusual occurrence in multireligious Indonesia). A previous *fatwa* declaring **Ahmadiyya** heretical was renewed. There followed heated public controversy, physical attacks upon **Ahmadi** property and the threat of attacks upon prominent progressives, particularly the Liberal Islamic Network and its leading figures. The Islamic Defenders' Front (FPI) was prominent in these actions.

At the same time, some local government authorities were introducing regulations inspired by *shari'ah* law, particularly rules limiting women's freedoms and outlawing immorality (alcoholic drinks, karaoke bars, massage parlours, discotheques and so on). It was sometimes estimated that perhaps 10 per cent of Indonesia's 440 local governments were introducing such rules. They were particularly notable in former **Darul Islam** areas but by 2007 the enthusiasm for such regulations seemed to have diminished dramatically. Many Indonesians supported restrictions on immorality but were nervous about more general Islam-inspired restrictions on personal liberty,

particularly the way in which these regulations seemed to apply to the poor more than the rich. There were also doubts as to whether such local regulations exceeded the constitutional prerogatives of local governments.

Polygamy, too, was becoming fashionable in some elite circles. Polygamy had never been widely practised in Indonesia and was frowned upon by the national government, by most women and by the majority of men. Several high-profile cases were widely discussed. The most surprising was the case of the popular, photogenic TV evangelist Abdullah Gymnastiar (popularly known as Aa Gym, b. 1962). After winning an immense following, particularly among female fans, and making a lot of money, in late 2006 he took a second wife. His popularity collapsed overnight. The government responded to this new fashion by reasserting its ban on civil servants taking a second wife. In a 2007 Constitutional Court case brought by a man who claimed that limitations on polygamy infringed his freedom of religion, the Minister for Religious Affairs Maftuh Basuni (b. 1939) said that Islam was an inherently monogamous religion and only allowed polygamy in quite specific circumstances such as had prevailed at the time of the Prophet. But polygamy was one of the few religious issues on which the government seemed ready to take a stand.

In this fluid environment in which conservative interpretations of Islam often seemed to be advancing, not infrequently with the support of violent gangs of street thugs in Arab-style robes (and Nike shoes), Susilo Bambang Yudhoyono himself did nothing. The conservative or reactionary fringe movements of Islam were encouraged, notably organisations seeking the implementation of *shari‘ah* law such as the Islamic Defenders’ Front (FPI), Indonesian Holy Warriors’ Council (MMI) and **Hizbut Tahrir Indonesia** (HTI, a political party which believes that a universal caliphate will solve Indonesia’s problems and proposes to achieve this by refusing to take part in elections). But they always ran the risk of being associated with terrorism, which soon raised its head again in Indonesia.

On 1 October 2005 a second Islamic terrorist attack took place in Bali. Three suicide bombers entered sites popular with tourists in Kuta and nearby Jimbaran and blew themselves up. They killed fifteen Indonesians, four Australians and one Japanese. Another 129 people were wounded. Three other unexploded bombs were located by police. But Indonesian police were also continuing their success in capturing or killing terrorists. The Malaysian-born JI bomb-master Dr Azahari Husin (c. 1957–2005) was killed in a shoot-out in East Java in November 2005. In June 2007 the police captured another JI bomb-master, Abu Dujana (b. c. 1969–70), and the current JI leader Zarkasih (b. c. 1962).

As the police continued to disrupt JI’s networks, the hardline conservatives of MMI, HTI, FPI and the political activists of PKS may have overplayed their hand. The liberals of **Muhammadiyah** who were rejected from the organisation’s leadership in 2005 said that the voting had been influenced by activists from such organisations who attended the **Muhammadiyah** congress. Although others denied this, such organisations were evidently attempting to infiltrate and influence **Muhammadiyah**. This was their natural target, for most Islamist organisations have their roots in Modernist thinking and thus have a theological affinity with **Muhammadiyah**. They recognised that much of the influence of **Muhammadiyah** derived from its vast range of subordinate organisations,

particularly its schools and universities. So influencing such organisations – perhaps even taking them over – would be a short cut to greater social and political influence, in a replay of the strategy that the Communist Party attempted with **Sarekat Islam** nearly a century before. Liberals within **Muhammadiyah** had been warning for some time that this was going on.

In December 2006 the leadership of **Muhammadiyah** – the leadership which itself seemed to constitute a conservative takeover – was moved to defend the organisation from infiltration. A formal letter was issued over Din Syamsuddin's signature warning **Muhammadiyah** members and organisations to be aware that political parties, whether or not they claimed to be ideologically inspired by Islam, remained political parties and their principle objective was power. **Muhammadiyah** was a religious movement that promoted unity among Muslims, cooperation, tolerance and mutual respect with all elements of society. So it must be defended from 'the influence, mission, infiltration and interests of political parties'. PKS was specifically mentioned as an example. Thereafter PKS or any other political organisation was to be barred from using **Muhammadiyah** facilities for any purpose, including *Qur'an* studies. Given the scale and complexity of **Muhammadiyah**, the implementation of this directive would be imperfect. But it suggested that, as before in its history, the perception of a joint external threat might reconcile the fundamentalist and liberal wings of **Muhammadiyah**.

**Muhammadiyah** was not alone in facing infiltration. Despite profound ideological, social and theological differences, it seemed that HTI, MMI and FPI were having some success in infiltrating **Nahdlatul Ulama**. By mid-2007 NU claimed 40 million 'traditionalist' Muslim followers, although the precise number was unknowable since there was no formal membership process for most of these followers. The very looseness of this constituency lent it to infiltration. NU leaders began taking steps to educate branches in the basics of Orthodox thought and practice so as to make clear the incompatible differences between NU and extremist movements.

At the beginning of 2007, the NU general chairman Kyai Haji Hasyim Muzadi (b. 1944) and Din Syamsuddin of **Muhammadiyah** jointly declared that their organisations would work together against extremism and for moderation in Islam, for unity among all Muslims and for multiculturalism. They drew a different lesson from Middle East conflicts than that usually drawn by the hardline groups they were opposing: not that there was a war by the West on Islam, but rather that it was discord among Muslims – implicitly extremism – that had invited foreign intervention in Afghanistan, Iraq and Lebanon.

Conflict on the streets and competition among differing interpretations of Islam did not stop. Christian congregations were frequent targets of intimidation and violence. Christianity continued to spread, probably assisted by alienation from Islam produced by extremist actions. By 2007 at least 25 per cent of the population of Surakarta – a hotbed of radical Islam – was Christian. When Christian congregations were unable to gain permits from local governments to build new churches, they often took to meeting in hotels, private homes or other unofficial churches. These meetings were then threatened and attacked by FPI and like-minded groups on the grounds that they were 'illegal'. The national and local governments did nothing to prevent this and rarely took

action against perpetrators. In the swell of religious politics the overall direction of events remained unclear.

At the beginning of 2008 Indonesia was a nation with vast resources but a huge population placing heavy demands on those resources, of enlightened and hopeful people but vast numbers of poor, unhealthy and under-educated citizens, of questionably competent and frequently dishonest governments, of weak but strengthening rule of law, of democracy that its people seemed determined to defend, of great problems and great hopes, of dreamers, crooks and fools, in an international environment offering opportunities and – as always – many risks. The future of the world's greatest archipelagic nation would be complex, interesting and significant, as is its history.

---

# Notes and References

For full publication details see the Bibliography where works are listed in alphabetical order under each author/editor.

## Chapter 1: The Coming of Islam

On the role of Muslims in Southeast Asia early in the Islamic era, see Nakahara, ‘Muslim merchants in Nan-Hai’. Sultan Sulaiman’s gravestone is discussed in Montana, ‘Nouvelle donées sur les royaumes de Lamuri et Barat’. Other contemporaneous evidence for Islamisation is described in Damais, ‘L’épigraphie musulmane dans le Sud-Est Asiatique’, with references to previous literature; see also Damais, ‘Études javanaises, I: Les tombes musulmanes datées de Trälajå’; Chen, ‘Une pierre tombale ... retrouvée à Brunei’; and de Casparis, ‘Ahmat Majanu’s tombstone’. On the gravestone at Loran, see Kalus and Guillot, ‘Réinterprétation’. Chinese records are translated in Rockhill, ‘Notes on the relations and trade of China with the eastern archipelago’; Groeneveldt, *Notes on the Malay archipelago and Malacca*; and Ma Huan, *Ying-yai sheng-lan*. On Marco Polo’s account see Jack-Hinton, ‘Marco Polo in South-East Asia’. Cortesão, *Suma Oriental*, contains an edition of Tomé Pires in Portuguese and English translation.

The Indonesian chronicles described above are found in the following: A. H. Hill, ‘Hikayat Raja-raja pasai’; C. C. Brown, *Séjarah Melayu*; Olthof, *Babad Tanah Djawi*; Djajadiningrat, *Critische beschouwing van de Sadjarah Bantén*. Other legends are described in R. Jones, ‘Ten conversion myths’. The two sixteenth-century Javanese Islamic books have both been edited and translated by Drewes: *Een Javaanse primbon* and *Admonitions of Seh Bari*. See also Drewes, *Early Javanese code*. On the pre-1620 Malay text, see Johns, ‘On Qur’anic exegetes and exegesis’; Riddell, ‘Earliest Quranic exegetical activity’.

The Islamisation of Java down to the early nineteenth century is discussed in Ricklefs, *Mystic synthesis*. A survey of some of the controversies surrounding Islamisation, with special attention to the sources of Indonesian Islam, can be found in Drewes, ‘New light on the coming of Islam’. On the Sufi argument see Johns, ‘Sufism as a category’; and his more recent discussion in ‘Islamization in Southeast Asia’. See also van Bruinessen, ‘Origins and development of Sufi orders’; and Mustopo, *Kebudayaan Islam di Jawa Timur*.

## Chapter 2: General Aspects of Pre-colonial States and Major Empires, c.1300–1500

The general principles which underlay Indonesian states have been investigated in Moertono, *State and statecraft in old Java*; Schrieke, *Indonesian sociological studies* (see especially vol. II, p. 102 ff.); and Reid and Castles, *Pre-colonial state systems*; see also Gullick, *Indigenous political systems of western Malaya*. Particularly valuable studies of economic (and other) affairs are to be found in Reid, ‘Pre-colonial economy of Indonesia’ and *Southeast Asia in the age of commerce*.

The standard historical description of Majapahit, now rather out of date, is Krom, *Hindoe-Javaansche geschiedenis*. This is the main source for the discussion in Coedès, *Les états hindouisés*, which has been translated into English as *Indianised states of Southeast Asia*. Slametmuljana, *Story of Majapahit*, contains much useful material, but some of the suggestions seem inadequately documented. For the fifteenth century, all of these works are superseded by Noorduyn, ‘Majapahit in the fifteenth century’. The principal primary source for fourteenth-century Majapahit is available in English in Prapañca, *Deśawarṇana* (trans. Stuart Robson). An earlier edition, with a less fluent translation but with much other useful information, is given in Pigeaud, *Java in the 14th century*. The *Pararaton* is in Brandes, *Pararaton (Ken Arok)*.

C. C. Berg has published his arguments in several books and articles; see especially his *Rijk van de vijfoudige Buddha*.

On Malacca, see Wang, ‘First three rulers of Malacca’; Wake, ‘Malacca’s early kings and the reception of Islam’; and the early chapters of Meilink-Roelofsz, *Asian trade and European influence*. Wolters, *Fall of Śrivijaya* is an attempt to reconstruct Malacca’s origins. The major source for its trade is Cortesão, *Suma Oriental*.

## Chapter 3: The Arrival of the Europeans in Indonesia, c. 1509–1620

The background and development of Portuguese overseas expansion are described in Boxer, *Portuguese seaborne empire*; Subrahmanyam, *Portuguese empire in Asia*; and in Diffie and Winius, *Foundations of the Portuguese empire* (this, however, has some errors of detail concerning the Malay–Indonesian area). An excellent analysis of Dutch overseas activities is in Boxer, *Dutch seaborne empire*. Bruijn et al., *Dutch–Asiatic shipping*, is an authoritative work; see especially vol. I. See also Parry, *Europe and a wider world*, reprinted as *Establishment of the European hegemony*; and Masselman, *Cradle of colonialism*.

An examination of Portuguese and early English and Dutch activities in Indonesia is to be found in Meilink-Roelofsz, *Asian trade and European influence*. Much material is also included in Tiele, ‘Europeërs in den Maleischen archipel’. A Malay chronicler’s view of the conquest of Malacca is given in C. C. Brown, *Sējarah Mēlāyu*.

L. Andaya, *World of Maluku*, provides an account of European–Malukan interaction from the sixteenth to the eighteenth centuries. On sixteenth-century Maluku see also Abdurachman, ‘Moluccan responses to the first intrusions of the West’. Abdurachman et al., *Bunga rampai Sejarah Maluku (I)*, covers the sixteenth and

seventeenth centuries. On Solor, see Abdurachman, ‘Atakiwan, casados and tupassi’; and Barnes, ‘Avarice and iniquity at the Solor fort’; on Banda, see Villiers, ‘Trade and society in the Banda islands’.

The events surrounding the conquest of Batavia are described in Ricklefs, ‘Bantēn and the Dutch in 1619’; and Abeyasekere, *Jakarta*. An authoritative analysis of VOC financial records is to be found in de Korte, *Financiële verantwoording*. The authoritative social history of Batavia in the seventeenth century is Niemeijer, *Batavia*. See also Blussé, *Strange company*; and Jean Taylor, *Social world of Batavia*.

## Chapter 4: The Rise of New States, c. 1500–1650

There is much miscellaneous material on the states discussed in Chapter 4 in Meilink-Roelofsz, *Asian trade and European influence*. Important and stimulating analysis of the economic setting of these new states is contained in Reid’s articles ‘Age of commerce’ and ‘Seventeenth-century crisis’.

On Aceh and the states of the western archipelago, see Djajadiningrat, ‘Geschiedenis van het Soeltanaat van Atjeh’; Lombard, *Le Sultanat d'Atjéh au temps d'Iskandar Muda*; and Amirul Hadi, *Islam and state in Sumatra*; see also the earlier parts of Leonard Andaya, *Kingdom of Johor*.

On Java, see de Graaf and Pigeaud, *Eerste Moslimse vorstendommen op Java*; de Graaf, *De regering van Panembahan Sénapati Ingala*; and de Graaf, *De regering van Sultan Agung*. The first of these books lacks an index, which is to be found along with English summaries of the other books listed here and other of de Graaf’s writings in Pigeaud and de Graaf, *Islamic states in Java*. On Sultan Agung, see Ricklefs, ‘Islamising Java’ and *Mystic synthesis*. On the later years of Majapahit see Noorduyn, ‘Majapahit in the fifteenth century’. Bantēn prior to Islamic conquest is analysed in Guillot, Nurhakim and Wibisono, *Banten avant l'Islam* (in Indonesian, *Banten sebelum zaman Islam*). On early Sulawesi history and much other valuable information about the region, consult Pelras, *Bugis*. Guillot, ‘L’accord luso-soundanais de 1522’ discusses the role of the Portuguese.

The earliest Javanese chronicle so far discovered is published in Ricklefs, *Modern Javanese historical tradition*. Some Javanese chronicle views on the fall of Majapahit are also published in Ricklefs, ‘Consideration of three versions of the *Babad Tanah Djawi*’. The Cirébon chronicle is published and translated into Indonesian in Atja, *Carita Purwaka Caruban Nagari*; its authenticity is doubtful: the palaeography of the original manuscript and its use of Western rather than Javanese dates suggest in fact a twentieth-century origin for the text. See also the Indonesian translation in Sulendraningrat, *Purwaka Tjaruban Nagari*.

For sixteenth-century Java, of course Cortesão, *Suma Oriental*, is a major source. Van Goens’s reports are in de Graaf, *Vijf gezantschapsreizen van Rijklof van Goens*.

C. C. Berg’s arguments concerning Senapati are found in several of his publications, of which the most important for this purpose is ‘Twee nieuwe publicaties betreffende de geschiedenis en de geschiedschrijving van Mataram’. A reply is found in de Graaf, ‘Historische betrouwbaarheid der Javaanse overlevering’.

On Makassar see Pelras, ‘Religion, tradition and the dynamics of Islamization’ and ‘Les premières données occidentales concernant Célèbes-Sud’; Noorduyn, ‘Islamisering van Makasar’; Reid, ‘Rise of Makassar’; Noorduyn, *Een achttiende-eeuwse kroniek van Wadjo*; and Stapel, *Bonggaais verdrag*. The period before the rise of Gowa and Bone is analysed in Bougas, ‘Bantayan’. The early mosques of Lombok are discussed in Widjil Pangarsa, ‘Les mosquées de Lombok’. On the Makassarese and Balinese in the Lombok–Sumbawa area see de Hägerdal, *Hindu rulers*. Bali in the golden age of Gelgel is discussed in Vickers, *Bali*; and Creese, ‘Balinese *babad*’.

The difficulties of using the available historical sources concerning Gelgel are explored in an exchange between Hägerdal (‘Bali in the sixteenth and seventeenth centuries’) and Creese (‘Chronologies and chronograms’).

## Chapter 5: Literary, Religious and Cultural Legacies

There is a vast literature on the subjects covered in this chapter. Excellent but rather out of date introductions to the scholarship on Malay and Javanese are in Teeuw and Emanuels, *Studies on Malay and Bahasa Indonesia*; and Uhlenbeck, *Studies on the languages of Java and Madura*.

A major survey and analysis of classical Malay literature is found in Braginsky, *Heritage*. A still-useful introduction to classical Malay literature is Winstedt, *History of classical Malay literature*. On Hamzah Pansuri and the seventeenth-century Acehnese mystics and their doctrines much has been written; see Guillot and Kalus, ‘Stèle funéraire’(cautions regarding Guillot and Kalus’s analysis are expressed in Braginsky, ‘On the copy of Hamzah Fansuri’s epitaph’; their response follows Braginsky’s paper); Lombard, *Iskandar Muda*; Johns, ‘Malay Sufism’, ‘Islam in Southeast Asia’ and ‘Quranic exegesis’; Riddell, ‘Earliest Quranic exegetical activity’; van Nieuwenhuijze, *Šamsu'l-Dīn van Pasai*; al-Attas, *Mysticism of Hamzah Fansuri* and *Rānīrī and the Wujūdiyyah of 17th century Aceh*; Drewes, ‘Nūr al-Dīn al-Ranīrī's charge of heresy’; Drewes and Brakel, *Poems of Hamzah Fansuri*; Kraus, ‘Transformations’; Azra, *Origins of Islamic reformism*; and Ito, ‘Why did Nuruddin ar-Raniri leave Aceh?’. A broader analysis is found in Azra, ‘Opposition to Sufism’. Braginsky, ‘Structure, date and sources’ considers possible Mughal prototypes for *Hikayat Aceh*. An important study of *syair* in general and of a major nineteenth-century centre for *syair* writing is Matheson, ‘Questions arising from a nineteenth century Riau *syair*’. Malay literature available in translation is listed in Chambert-Loir, ‘Bibliographie de la littérature malaise en traduction’.

The most comprehensive survey of Javanese literature is in vol. I of Pigeaud, *Literature of Java*. Zoetmulder, *Pantheisme en monisme*, is still the best analysis of mystical Javanese Islam and is available also in English (*Pantheism and monism*) and in Indonesian (*Manunggaling kawula gusti*). On Islam in Java before c. 1830, see Ricklefs, *Mystic synthesis*. Much useful information on Javanese Islam and on Yasadipura I, as well as a valuable text, is contained in Soebardi, *Book of Cabolèk*. See also Ricklefs, ‘Yasadipura problem’. On Carik Bajra/Tirtawiguna and Ratu Pakubuwana, see Ricklefs, *Seen and unseen worlds*. Ekadjati, *Ceritera Dipati Ukur*, is

an important study of one ***babad*** tradition, as is Djajadiningrat, *Sadjarah Bantēn*. On the survival of Old Javanese literature in Islamised Java, see Barbara McDonald, *Old Javanese literature*; and Ricklefs, *Seen and unseen worlds*. English versions of three Javanese shadow plays can be found in Brandon, *On thrones of gold*.

On Old and Middle Javanese literature, see Zoetmulder, *Kalangwan*. On Middle Javanese see also Robson, *Wangbang Widéya*. Balinese ***babads*** are analysed in Worsley, *Babad Buleleng*; Hinzler, ‘Balinese babad’; Creese, ‘Balinese ***babad***’; and Schulte Nordholt, *Een Balische dynastie* (in English: *Spell of power*).

On Bugis and Makassarese, see especially Noorduyn, *Kroniek van Wadjo*; Noorduyn, ‘Origins of South Celebes historical writing’; and Cense, ‘Old Buginese and Macassarese diaries’.

An introduction to Indonesian art will be found in Holt, *Art in Indonesia*. A good introduction to Indonesian music is found in Hood and Macea, *Music*; more extensive discussions are contained in Sadie, *New Grove dictionary*. Kunst, *Music in Java*; and Kartomi, ‘Music in nineteenth century Java’, are important studies. On dance drama, see Soedarsono, *Wayang wong*.

## Chapter 6: Eastern Indonesia, c. 1630–1800

For an authoritative account of Maluku in this period, see L. Andaya, *World of Maluku*. On Minahasa, see Henley, *Nationalism and regionalism*. Knaap, *Kruidnagelen en Christenen*, is an authoritative study of Amboin in the later seventeenth century. On the events in South Sulawesi see L. Andaya, *The heritage of Arung Palakka* and ‘Kingship in Bone’; Jacobs, *Jesuit Makasar documents*; Noorduyn, *Kroniek van Wadjo*; Skinner, *Sja‘ir perang Mengkasar*; Stapel, *Bonggaais verdrag*; and Noorduyn, ‘Arung Singkang’. See also Wigboldus, ‘Minahasa c.1615–1680’; and Godée Molsbergen, *Geschiedenis van de Minahassa*. There is much information on the Makassarese and Bugis and their activities in the western archipelago in L. Andaya, *Kingdom of Johor*.

The Nusa Tenggara area is subject to penetrating historical and anthropological analysis in Fox, *Harvest of the palm*. Other useful materials are to be found in Noorduyn, *Bima en Sumbawa*. Concerning Bali, see Worsley, *Babad Buleleng*; Vickers, *Bali*; and particularly the important historical study of Mengwi contained in Schulte Nordholt, *Een Balische dynastie* (also in English as *Spell of power*). On the economic history of the VOC see Glamann, *Dutch-Asiatic trade*.

## Chapter 7: Western Indonesia, c. 1640–1800

B. Andaya, *To live as brothers*, is an outstanding analysis of Palembang and Jambi in the seventeenth and eighteenth centuries. For an account of the Malay world more generally in the period 1740–1800, seen largely from the point of view of the VOC’s affairs, see Vos, *Gentle Janus*. Lewis, *Jan Compagnie*, looks at the VOC in the Straits of Malacca from 1641 to 1795. For an analysis of upriver-downriver (*ulu-ilir*) dynamics in the west coast state of Barus, see Drakard, *Malay frontier*. Drakard’s book

**Kingdom of words** concerns Malay works of relevance to seventeenth-and eighteenth-century Minangkabau. An authoritative analysis of the turbulent history of East Sumatra and the Straits of Malacca is found in Barnard, **Multiple centres**.

## Chapter 8: Java, c. 1640–82

An authoritative discussion of the reign of Amangkurat I is in de Graaf, **Sunan Mangku-Rat I**; this work is summarised in English in Pigeaud and de Graaf, **Islamic states**. A major primary source is in de Graaf, **Vijf gezantschapsreizen van Rijklof van Goens**. The period is also discussed in Ricklefs, **Mystic synthesis**.

On the period of the Trunajaya rebellion, see also de Graaf, ‘Gevangenneming en dood van Raden Truna-Djaja’; and de Graaf, **Expeditie van Anthonio Hurdt**. Both of these are also summarised in Pigeaud and de Graaf, **Islamic states**.

On Bantēn and West Java generally, see Djajadiningrat, **Sadjarah Bantēn**; Talens, **Feodale samenleving**; and de Haan, **Priangan**. Guillot, ‘Politique vivrière’, is an important study of Sultan Agēng’s policies. On Shaikh Yusuf, see Azra, **Origins of Islamic reformism**; van Bruinessen, **Tarekat Naqsyabandiyah**; and Hamid, **Syekh Yusuf**.

## Chapter 9: Java, Madura and the VOC, c. 1680–1745

Accounts of this period are to be found in Ricklefs, **War, culture and economy**; Ricklefs, **Seen and unseen worlds**; and Ricklefs, **Mystic synthesis**. See also Nagtegaal, **Rijden op een Hollandse tijger**, which is available also in English (**Riding the Dutch tiger**). A survey of VOC records and a summary of one Javanese chronicle for the period 1726–43 are to be found in Remmelink, **Chinese War**. Some issues concerning the history of ideas are addressed in Ricklefs, ‘Unity and disunity’, while certain social, economic and demographic topics are discussed in Ricklefs, ‘Some statistical evidence’. The Surapati episode is the subject of de Graaf, **Moord op Kapitein François Tack** (this is summarised in Pigeaud and de Graaf, **Islamic states**); and Kumar, **Surapati**. Concerning Raja Sakti, see Kathirithamby-Wells, ‘Ahmad Shah ibn Iskandar’.

On social life and health conditions in Batavia, see Niemeijer, **Batavia**; van der Brug, **Malaria en malaise**; Jean Taylor, **Social world**; and Schoute, **Geneeskunde**. Vermeulen, **Chinezen te Batavia**, concerns the Chinese massacre and the associated conflict between Valckenier and van Imhoff. Hoadley, ‘Javanese, **peranakan** and Chinese elites in Cirebon’ is important on the late seventeenth and early eighteenth centuries.

## Chapter 10: Java and the VOC, c. 1745–92

On Central and East Java in this period see Ricklefs, **Jogjakarta under Sultan Mangkubumi**. The 1787–90 crisis is discussed further in Ricklefs, **Mystic synthesis**.

See also Louw, *Derde Javaansche successie-oorlog*. On the 1791 versions of *Yusuf* and *Iskandar*, see Ricklefs, *Seen and unseen worlds*. Kumar, ‘Javanese court society’, summarises a valuable source concerning Mangkunegara I. A very important analysis of rural social and economic conditions is found in Carey, ‘Waiting for the “just king”’. New light is shed upon Seh Ibrahim in van der Meiden, ‘A Turkish mediator’.

Concerning Java’s northeast coast, see Van Niel’s authoritative *Java’s northeast coast*; and Kwee, *Political economy* (which, however, overestimates VOC power in this period). On West Java, see Ota, *Changes of regime*. Concerning VOC finances, see de Korte, *Financiële verantwoording*.

## Chapter 11: Java, 1792–1830

The most important work on this period is Carey, *Power of prophecy*. Other important works by Carey are ‘Origins of the Java War’, ‘Satria and santri’, ‘Waiting for the “just king”’ and ‘Changing Javanese perceptions of the Chinese’. See also Ricklefs, ‘Dipanagara’s early inspirational experience’ and *Mystic synthesis*. On Javanese perceptions of relations with Batavia see Ricklefs, *Jogjakarta under Sultan Mangkubumi*; and on the Sepoy mutiny see Carey, ‘Sepoy conspiracy of 1815 in Java’. The standard history of the Java War itself is Louw and de Klerck, *Java-oorlog*. On Sëntot in Sumatra see Dobbin, *Islamic revivalism*. Concerning the Mangkunegaran see Pringgodigdo, *Ondernemingen van het Mangkoenagorosche rijk*. There is also much valuable information contained in Rouffaer, ‘Vorstenlanden’.

On colonial issues see Bastin, *Native policies of Sir Stamford Raffles* and *Raffles’ ideas on the land rent system in Java*; Wright, ‘East-Indian economic problems’; and Levyssohn Norman, *Britsche heerschappij over Java en onderhoorigheden*. An attempt to analyse the general social and economic circumstances of nineteenth-century Java is Boomgaard, *Children of the colonial state*. Van Niel, *Java’s northeast coast*, brings much of this discussion together.

## Chapter 12: Java, 1830–1900

The most important studies of the *cultuurstelsel* period are Elson, *Village Java*; and Fasseur, *Kultuurstelsel en koloniale baten* (also available in English translation as *Politics of colonial exploitation*). See also Elson, *End of the peasantry*; Boomgaard, *Children of the colonial state*; and Elson, *Javanese peasants and the colonial sugar industry*. Other major works on the nineteenth century are Booth, *Agricultural development* and ‘Living standards and distribution of income’; Hüsken, *Dorp op Java*; Djoko Suryo, ‘Economic crisis’ and *Sejarah sosial*; Elson, ‘Famine in Demak and Grobogan’ and ‘Impact of government sugar cultivation’; Fasseur, ‘Organisatie en sociaal-economische betekenis’, ‘Cultivation system and its impact’ and ‘Purse or principle’; Houben, *Kraton and Kumpeni*; Hugenholtz, ‘Famine and food supply’; Knight, ‘The people’s own cultivation’; Rush, *Opium to Java*; and Van Niel, ‘Function of landrent under the cultivation system in Java’ and ‘Measurement of change under the cultivation system in Java, 1837–1851’. Important papers reflecting the current state of

knowledge and argument on nineteenth-century Java economic history (as well as contributions on other subjects) are found in Booth et al., *Indonesian economic history*. Concerning Dutch colonial history, see Fasseur, *Indologen*; van den Doel, *Stille macht*; and Fasseur, *Indischgasten*.

On Suryengalaga and other late-nineteenth-century conspiracies see Kumar, ‘Suryengalagan affair’. See also Ruiter, ‘Tegal revolt in 1864’. Van Deventer’s report of 1904 is in his *Overzicht van den economische toestand*. On Javanese cultural activities see Pigeaud, *Literature of Java*; Behrend, ‘Suryanagara’; Soebardi, ‘Santri-religious elements as reflected in the Book of Tjéntini’; Kartomi, ‘Music in nineteenth century Java’; Sears, *Shadows of empire*; Florida, *Writing the past*; and Dewantara, *Beoefening van letteren en kunst in het Pakoe-Alamsche geslacht*. An English translation of the *Wedhatama* is in Robson, *Wedhatama*. On nineteenth-century artists see Holt, *Art in Indonesia*; Maronier, *Pictures of the tropics*; Carey, ‘Raden Saleh’; and Bachtiar, ‘Raden Saleh’. Adam, *Vernacular press*, covers the early Java-based publications. The economic activities of the Mangkunégaran are analysed in Pringgodigdo, *Ondernemingen van het Mangkoenagorosche rijk*.

On Javanese *bupatis* in this period see Sutherland, ‘Notes on Java’s regent families’. On the education of new *priyayi* see Brugmans, *Geschiedenis van het onderwijs in Nederlandsch-Indië*. Peasant protest is discussed in two works by Kartodirdjo: *The peasants’ revolt of Banten in 1888* and *Protest movements in rural Java*; the first of these contains much information on Islam in this period; the second proposes a classification of movements which has, however, been criticised. See also Drewes, *Drie Javaansche goeroe’s*; and Wiselius, ‘Djåjå Båjå’.

Nineteenth-century Javanese Islam and broader social changes are analysed in Ricklefs, *Polarising Javanese society*. See also van Bruinessen, ‘Origins and development of the Naqshbandi order’ and *Naqsyabandiyah*; Johns, ‘Qur’anic exegesis’ and ‘On Qur’anic exegetes’; Snouck Hurgronje, *Mekka*; and Steenbrink, *Beberapa aspek tentang Islam*. See also Dhofier, *Tradisi pesantren*. On Sadrach and indigenous Christians more generally, see Guillot, *L'affaire Sadrach*; Sutarman, *Sadrach’s community*; van Akkeren, *Sri and Christ*; and Ricklefs, *Polarising Javanese society*.

## Chapter 13: The Outer Islands, c. 1800–1910

There has been no full study of the outer islands in this period that analyses Dutch expansion throughout the area, and few local studies that reveal the Indonesian side of events. A survey of Dutch imperial aspects is, however, to be found in Fasseur, ‘Een koloniale paradox’, which covers 1830–70. A number of important essays are contained in Lopian and Day, *Papers of the Dutch–Indonesian historical conference 1976*. Much information is given in the regional articles in Paulus et al., *Encyclopaedie van Nederlandsch-Indië*. See also Maddison and Prince, *Economic growth*. On the period after c.1880, see Cribb, *Late colonial state*. On Dutch missionary activity in the nineteenth century see vol. I of Swellengrebel, *In Leijdeckers voetspoor*; and Coolsma, *Zendingseeuw*.

On Madura see Kuntowijoyo, *Perubahan sosial*; Sutherland, ‘Notes on Java’s regent families’; Mansurnoor, *Islam in an Indonesian world*. H. de Jonge, ‘State formation by contract’, is also useful on the nineteenth century. On Bali and Lombok see Utrecht, *Sedjarah hukum internasional di Bali dan Lombok*. A particularly valuable work on Bali is Schulte Nordholt, *Een Balische dynastie* (available in English as *Spell of power*). See also Schulte Nordholt, ‘Making of traditional Bali’; and Wiener, *Visible and invisible realms*. Anak Agung Gde Agung, *Bali pada abad XIX*, is a valuable survey of materials from a nationalist perspective. See also Vickers, *Bali*; and Boers, ‘Mount Tambora’. On Mads Lange’s extraordinary role, see Schulte Nordholt, ‘Mads Lange connection’. Van der Kraan, *Lombok*, is important but argues for economic causation in a less than convincing fashion. Events in Ambon are described authoritatively in Chauvel, *Nationalists, soldiers and separatists*. Fox, *Harvest of the palm*, concerns Nusa Tenggara. An interesting local analysis is found in Heersink, *Green gold of Selayar*.

Imperial rivalry in Kalimantan is described in Irwin, *Nineteenth-century Borneo*. On the Banjar war, see Helius Sjamsuddin, *Pegustian dan tumenggung*. See also Soeri Soeroto, ‘Beratib Beamaal movement in the Banjar War’. On economic developments in the later nineteenth century in Southeast Kalimantan, see Lindblad, *Between Dayak and Dutch*. Brooke rule in Sarawak is analysed in Runciman, *White rajahs*; and Pringle, *Rajahs and rebels*.

Concerning Palembang, see Woelders, *Sultanaat Palembang, 1811–1825*. The progress of Dutch imperialism in Sumatra is described in Schadee, *Geschiedenis van Sumatra’s oostkust*. Locher-Scholten, *Sumatraans Sultanaat*, concerns Jambi.

Three important articles by Dobbin greatly illuminated the Padri movement: ‘Economic change in Minangkabau as a factor in the rise of the Padri movement’, ‘Islamic revivalism in Minangkabau’, and ‘Tuanku Imam Bondjol’. Her work has been further developed and extended in Dobbin, *Islamic revivalism in a changing peasant economy*. Other valuable analyses are in Kraus, *Zwischen Reform und Rebellion*; van Bruinessen, *Tarekat Naqsyabandiyah di Indonesia*; and Dobbin, ‘Islamic fervour’. See also Abdullah, ‘Adat and Islam: an examination of conflict in Minangkabau’; and Mansoer et al., *Sedjarah Minangkabau*.

On Islamic issues generally, see van Bruinessen, ‘Origins and development of the Naqshbandi order’; and Steenbrink, *Beberapa aspek tentang Islam*.

Reid, *Contest for North Sumatra*, is an analysis of the origins and progress of the Aceh War, with special attention to diplomatic aspects. On the balance between imperial and economic motivations in the war, see H. Bakker, ‘Economisch belang van Noord-Sumatra’. For a description of the war itself see van’t Veer, *Atjeh-oorlog*; and Alfian, *Perang di jalan Allah*. See also Alfian, ‘Acheh Sultanate under Sultan Mohammad Daudsyah’. Snouck Hurgronje’s major study of Aceh is his *Atjëhers*, available in English as *Achehnese*. A convenient analysis of Snouck Hurgronje’s ideas is given in Benda, *Crescent and the rising sun*. Concerning the Batak region, see Perret, *Formation d’un paysage ethnique*; Situmorang, *Toba na Sae*; Castles, ‘Statelessness and stateforming tendencies among the Bataks’. A study of Christianisation among the Batak is in Kipp, *The early years of a Dutch colonial mission*. See also Bowen, *Sumatran politics and poetics*.

A penetrating study of border areas of the archipelago, 1865–1915, is in Tagliacozzo, *Secret trades, porous borders*.

## Chapter 14: A New Colonial Age

Van Deventer's article of 1899 is reprinted (along with much other valuable material) in Fasseur, *Geld en geweten*. Furnivall's *Netherlands India* is still a valuable source for subjects covered in this chapter, and for many other aspects of twentieth-century Dutch colonialism which are not discussed above; his *Colonial policy and practice* is also very valuable.

Dick et al., *The emergence of a national economy*, is an exceptionally important work. À Campo, *Koninklijke Paketvaart Maatschappij* (in English as *Engines of empire*) is the authoritative work on the KPM. On other economic aspects, see Booth's books *Indonesian economy* and *Agricultural development*; Lindblad, *Historical foundations*; Maddison and Prince, *Economic growth*; Elson, *Javanese peasants and the colonial sugar industry*; and Allen and Donnithorne, *Western enterprise in Indonesia and Malaya*. Breman, *Control of land and labour in colonial Java*, describes agrarian reform experiments in Cirébon and gives a detailed picture of village life in this period. Dick, *Surabaya*, is an analysis of that 'city of work' in the twentieth century.

On Sumatra see Stoler, *Capitalism and confrontation*; and Pelzer, *Planter and peasant*. American economic interests are analysed in Gould, *Americans in Sumatra*. Burger, *Sociologisch-economische geschiedenis*, also contains a stimulating analysis of this period. The beginnings of the oil industry are described in Schadee, *Geschiedenis van Sumatra's oostkust*; see also Paulus et al., *Encyclopaedie van Nederlandsch-Indië*; and H. Bakker, 'Economisch belang van Noord-Sumatra'. For a much more detailed account see Gerretson, *Geschiedenis der 'Koninklijke'*; translated into English as *History of the Royal Dutch*. Zed, *Kepialangan politik dan revolusi*, concerns Palembang 1900–50.

A general survey is found in Van Niel, *Emergence of the modern Indonesian elite*. See also Cribb, *Late colonial state*. Important works on the colonial context are van den Doel, *Stille macht*; and Fasseur, *Indologen*. Masons played a role in this period: see Stevens, *Vrijmetselarij*. The most comprehensive statistical picture of the period is contained in Departement van Landbouw, *Volkstelling 1930/Census 1930*. On educational reforms see Brugmans, *Geschiedenis van het onderwijs in Nederlandsch-Indië*. Groeneboer, *Weg tot het Westen*, analyses Dutch language policy. On population matters see Widjojo, *Population trends in Indonesia*. Boomgaard, 'Welfare services', is valuable. The development of the Indonesian administrative corps in this new age is analysed in Sutherland, *Making of a bureaucratic elite*. For a biography of Kartini, see Sitisoemandari, *Kartini*.

The works cited in Chapters 15 and 16 that concentrate on indigenous Indonesian affairs also contain much material on colonial policy and practice.

## Chapter 15: The First Steps towards National Revival, c. 1900–27

The events of this period have attracted much scholarly attention. Van Niel, *Emergence of the modern Indonesian elite*, is still a valuable survey. See also Elson, *Idea of Indonesia*, on the intellectual background of the very concept of the nation.

Concerning Abdul Rivai and *Bintang Hindia*, see Poeze, ‘Early Indonesian emancipation’. On Budi Utomo see Nagazumi, *Dawn of Indonesian nationalism*. Saminism is discussed in Benda and Castles, ‘Samin movement’; Bijleveld, ‘Saminbeweging’; and Shiraishi, ‘Dangir’s testimony’.

McVey, *Rise of Indonesian Communism*, is the most authoritative study of PKI up to 1926–7, and contains much material on the other political movements of the period, particularly SI. On Bantēn, see Williams, *Communism, religion and revolt*. Shiraishi, *Age in motion*, analyses radicalism in Java between 1912 and 1926. On ISDV see the introduction in Tichelman, *Socialisme in Indonesië*. A biography of Sneevliet is found in Perthus, *Henk Sneevliet*. On SI see further Korver, *Sarekat Islam*; Kartodirdjo, *Protest movements in rural Java*; Oates, ‘Afdeeling B’; Ensering, ‘Afdeeling B’; Kuntowijoyo, ‘Islam and politics’; Chusnul Hajati, ‘Tragedy of Cimareme’ and *Peristiwa Cimareme*; and Williams, *Sickle and crescent*. Trade union history is analysed in Ingleson, *In search of justice*. The best analysis of Communism in Minangkabau is in Schrieke, *Indonesian sociological studies*, vol. I. A more recent analysis is in A. Kahin, ‘1927 Communist uprising in Sumatra’. A biography of Tan Malaka up to 1945 is found in Poeze, *Tan Malaka*. Fox, *Harvest of the palm*, describes developments in Timor; Chauvel, *Nationalists, soldiers and separatists*, analyses Ambon; Bowen, *Sumatran politics*, concerns North Sumatra.

On the Javanese principalities in this period, see Larson, *Prelude to revolution*; and van den Haspel, *Overwicht in overleg*. The more conservative Javanese nationalist and youth movements are studied in van Miert, *Koel hoofd*. Dolk, *Twee zielen*, is a valuable reference on Javanese periodicals and intellectuals between 1900 and 1957. On Theosophy, see Tollenaere, *Politics of divine wisdom*; and Nugraha, *Mengikis batas*.

An analysis of the impact of Middle Eastern Islamic developments is found in Laffan, *Islamic nationhood and colonial Indonesia*. On twentieth-century Islamic thought in Indonesia, see Feener, *Muslim legal thought*; and Saleh, *Modern trends* (in Indonesian as *Teologi pemberuan*). Noer, *Modernist Muslim movement in Indonesia, 1900–1942*, is a survey of Islamic reform. On the movement in Minangkabau see Abdullah, *Schools and politics*. The role of Singapore in this is described in Roff, *Origins of Malay nationalism*. On the major Islamic reform movements in Java, see also Federspiel’s publications ‘Muhammadijah’ and *Islam and ideology*. Dobbin, ‘Accounting for the failure of the Muslim Javanese business class’, is an important analysis covering 1880–1940. Other important analyses of Islamic issues are found in van Bruinessen’s publication ‘Origins and development of the Naqshbandi order’, *Tarekat Naqsyabandiyah*, ‘Muslims ... and the Caliphate’, ‘Controversies and polemics’, and NU. Erni Haryanti Kahfi, ‘Islam and Indonesian nationalism’, is a valuable source on Haji Agus Salim. Important materials are also found in Steenbrink, *Beberapa aspek tentang Islam*, which contains *inter alia* material on Ahmad Khatib of Minangkabau; Johns, ‘Qur’anic exegesis’; and Baroroh Baried, ‘Islam and the

modernization of Indonesian women'. Murni Djamal, 'Origin of the Islamic reform movement', is a valuable survey of the early stages. Islamic educational developments are analysed in Steenbrink, *Pesantren, madrasah, sekolah* (in both Dutch and Indonesian editions). Essays on the reform movement in Java and on the government-recognised Islamic hierarchies are contained in Pijper, *Studien over de geschiedenis van de Islam in Indonesia, 1900–1950*; on the officially recognised Javanese religious, see also Hisyam, *Caught between three fires*. On Arab movements in Indonesia, see Mobini-Kesheh, *Hadrami awakening*. Hourani, *Arabic thought in the liberal age*, describes the Middle Eastern background of Islamic reform.

Surjomihardjo, 'National education', describes Indonesian educational efforts, including women's movements. The origins of Taman Siswa are described in Surjomihardjo, *Ki Hadjar Dewantara*; and McVey, 'Taman Siswa and the Indonesian national awakening'. See also Surjomihardjo, 'Suwardi Surjaningrat's ideals and national-revolutionary actions'. On the Javanese *priyayi* elite in this period see Sutherland, *Making of a bureaucratic elite*. Suryadinata, *Peranakan Chinese politics*, covers Chinese aspects of the period. On Minahasa, see Schouten, *Leadership and social mobility*; on Palembang, Zed, *Kepialangan politik dan revolusi*; and on North Sumatra, Perret, *Formation d'un paysage ethnique*.

## Chapter 16: Repression and Economic Crisis, 1927–42

A general survey of the events of this period is in Pluvier, *Overzicht van de ontwikkeling der nationalistische beweging in Indonesië in de jaren 1930 tot 1942*. For a detailed analysis concentrating on the urban 'secular' movements of 1927–34 see Ingleson, *Road to exile*. For the period 1936–42 see Abeysekere's publications 'Partai Indonesia Raja', 'Soetardjo petition', and *One hand clapping*. See also O'Malley, 'Pakempalan Kawulo Ngajogjakarta'.

There have been several studies of Sukarno; the best is Legge, *Sukarno: a political biography*. There is also much valuable material on Sukarno's thinking in Dahm, *Sukarnos Kampf um Indonesiens Unabhängigkeit* (in English under the title *Sukarno and the struggle for Indonesian independence*), but Dahm's interpretations of this material and his attempt to link it closely to traditional Javanese cultural phenomena have been criticised. Sukarno's four letters of 1933, first analysed in Ingleson, *Road to exile*, are discussed further in Kwantes, 'Soekarno's vier brieven'; and Hering, 'Nogmaals de vier brieven'. See also Giebels, *Soekarno, Nederlandsch onderdaan*. Noer, *Mohammad Hatta*; and Rose, *Indonesia free*, offer political biographies of Hatta. On the PNI-*Baru*, see Legge, 'Daulat Ra'jat'.

On Islamic matters see Noer, *Modernist Muslim movement in Indonesia, 1900–1942*; and van Bruinessen, 'Controversies and polemics'. Events in Minangkabau are treated in detail in Abdullah, *Schools and politics*; see also A. Kahin, 'Repression and regroupment'. Federspiel, *Islam and ideology*, should also be consulted. Arab movements are covered in Mobini-Kesheh, *Hadrami awakening*.

Probably the best general survey of the impact of the Depression in Indonesia is in O'Malley's unpublished doctoral dissertation 'Indonesia in the Great Depression'.

Furnivall, *Netherlands India*; and van Gelderen, *Recent development of economic foreign policy*, are still valuable although both were published in 1939. More recent contributions which should be consulted are Booth's publications 'Living standards and distribution of income', *Agricultural development*, and *Indonesian economy*. A useful general account which includes a comparison with India is Goswami, 'The Depression'. For more detailed local analyses, see Ingleson, 'Urban Java during the Depression'; Stoler, *Capitalism and confrontation*; Hüsken, *Dorp op Java*; and Elson, *Javanese peasants and the colonial sugar industry*. A major survey of the economy in the later years of Dutch rule is found in vol. I of Sutter, *Indonesianisasi*.

The Javanese bureaucratic class is treated in Sutherland, *Making of a bureaucratic elite*. The background to the Second World War in Indonesia is covered in Aziz, *Japan's colonialism and Indonesia*.

On the development of modern Indonesian literature, see Teeuw, *Modern Indonesian literature*, which analyses major works briefly and includes extensive bibliographies. See also the introduction to Kratz, *Sumber terpilih*; Jedamski, 'Balai Pustaka'; Teeuw, 'Impact of Balai Pustaka on modern Indonesian literature'; Sutherland, 'Pudjangga Baru'; Foulcher, '*Pujangga Baru*'; Jassin, *Pudjangga Baru* and *Amir Hamzah*. On prewar literature and Islam, see Kratz, 'Islamic attitudes'. Balinese artistic developments are described in Hinzler, 'Moderne schilderkunst'; for the period after the Second World War, see Hinzler, 'Moderne Balinese schilderkunst'. An authoritative reference work on foreign artists in Indonesia is to be found in Haks and Maris, *Lexicon*.

European issues are explored in van den Doel, *Stille macht*; Fasseur, 'Nederland en het Indonesische nationalisme'; and Drooglever, *Vaderlandse Club*. On connections between events in the Philippines and Indonesia, see Bootsma, *Buren in de koloniale tijd*.

## Chapter 17: The Second World War and the Japanese Occupation, 1942–5

No entirely satisfactory work covering the whole of Indonesia during the Second World War has been published. The best available survey is Aziz, *Japan's colonialism and Indonesia*. A comprehensive, but rather undigested, collection of material is in Waseda University, *Japanese military administration in Indonesia*. A briefer survey is in Reid, 'Indonesia: from briefcase to samurai sword'. A valuable collection of papers is to be found in Post and Touwen-Bouwsma, *Japan, Indonesia and the war*. Benda, *Crescent and the rising sun*, is a valuable work, but its isolation of Islam as the primary topic tends to obscure other aspects. A substantial analysis emphasising economic matters is in vol. I of Sutter, *Indonesianisasi*.

Sato, *War, nationalism and peasants*, is an important study of Java. See also Kurasawa, *Mobilisasi*. Hüsken, 'Islam and collective action', analyses the violence at the beginning of the occupation. B. Anderson has greatly illuminated the later stages of occupation in Java; see his 'Japan: "The light of Asia"', *Some aspects of Indonesian politics under the Japanese occupation*, and *Java in a time of revolution*. See also

Kobayashi, ‘*Kyai* and Japanese military’. Legge, *Sukarno: a political biography*; Noer, *Mohammad Hatta*; and Rose, *Indonesia free* (on Hatta) are valuable. Legge, *Intellectuals and nationalism*, is a study of Sjahrir’s circle. Mrázek, *Sjahrir*, provides a biography. Some important interpretative issues concerning Java under the Japanese are considered in Sluimers, “‘Nieuwe orde’ op Java”. See also Kurasawa, ‘Propaganda media on Java’.

Concerning areas occupied by the navy, see Drooglever, *Daad van vrije keuze*, on Papua; Schouten, *Leadership and social mobility*, on Minahasa; Chauvel, *Nationalists, soldiers and separatists*, on Ambon; and G. Robinson, *Dark side of paradise*, on Bali. On Sumatra see Piekaar, *Atjeh en de oorlog met Japan*; Reid, ‘Japanese occupation and rival Indonesian elites’; Reid, *Blood of the people*; van Langenberg, ‘North Sumatra 1942–1945’; and Zed, *Kepialangan politik dan revolusi*, on Palembang. Friend, *Blue-eyed enemy*, is a comparative analysis of Java and Luzon under the Japanese.

A good survey of the Japanese background to events can be found in Beasley, *Rise of modern Japan*. See also F. Jones, *Japan’s new order in East Asia*; and Elsbree, *Japan’s role in Southeast Asian nationalist movements*. Shimer and Hobbs, *Kenpeitai in Java and Sumatra*, presents the Kenpeitai’s own view of its role.

## Chapter 18: The Revolution, 1945–50

The Revolution has produced much scholarly writing of high quality. Reid, *Indonesian national revolution*, is the best guide to the Revolution throughout Indonesia. An earlier and more detailed study which concentrates on Java, and which ranks as one of the classic works of Indonesian history, is G. Kahin, *Nationalism and revolution*. Legge, *Sukarno: a political biography*, is also valuable. For an extensive study by a major participant, see Nasution, *Sekitar perang kemerdekaan Indonesia*. Vol. II of Sutter, *Indonesianisasi*, covers the Revolution with an emphasis on economic aspects.

The years 1945–6 in Java are analysed in B. Anderson, *Java in a time of revolution*. On West Java in the same period see Smail, *Bandung in the early revolution*. Lucas, ‘Social revolution in Pemalang’, and *One soul, one struggle* (in Indonesian as *Peristiwa tiga daerah*), cover the three regions affair. Events in Surakarta are described in Soejatno (Sujatno), ‘Revolution and social tensions in Surakarta’ and ‘Perubahan-perubahan sosial politik di Surakarta’. On Yogyakarta see Selosoemardjan, *Social changes in Jogjakarta*. The Revolution in Surabaya is analysed in Frederick, *Visions and heat*. Cribb, *Gangsters and revolutionaries*, sheds interesting light on the Revolution in Jakarta. The Madiun rebellion is discussed in Swift, *Road to Madiun*; and in D. Anderson, ‘Military aspects of the Madiun affair’. Bouman, *Van drie kleur tot rood-wit*, studies Indonesian officers who served in the colonial army. For studies of major military figures, see Nugroho, ‘Soedirman: Panglima yang menepati janjinya’; and Penders and Sundhaussen, *Abdul Haris Nasution*. See also Sundhaussen, *Road to power*. Noer, *Mohammad Hatta*; and Rose, *Indonesia free*, analyse the role of Hatta. See also Mrázek, *Sjahir*.

The Revolution outside of Java has so far received rather less attention. For essays on Aceh, East Sumatra, West Sumatra, South Sulawesi and Ambon, as well as parts of

Java, see A. Kahin, *Regional dynamics*. On Bali, see G. Robinson, *Dark side of paradise*; and Vickers, *Bali*. Madura is discussed in Touwen-Bouwsma, ‘Dutch, Indonesian Republicans and Negara Madura’. On the early stages in South Sulawesi, see Reid, ‘Australia’s hundred days’. Chauvel, *Nationalists, soldiers and separatists*, provides an authoritative account of Ambon. Reid, *Blood of the people* (available in Indonesian as *Perjuangan rakyat*), covers the early years of the Revolution in Aceh and East Sumatra. On the initial stages in Aceh, see also Piekaar, *Atjeh en de oorlog met Japan*. See also Reid, ‘Birth of the Republic in Sumatra’. Concerning Palembang, see Zed, *Kepialangan politik dan revolusi*.

On Papua, see Drooglever, *Daad van vrije keuze*. Schouten, *Leadership and social mobility*, covers Minahasa.

The final stages of the Revolution are covered in Feith, *Decline of constitutional democracy*. On international diplomatic aspects see A. Taylor, *Indonesian independence and the United Nations*; and McMahon, *Colonialism and Cold War*; the more general diplomatic context is described in Colbert, *Southeast Asia in international politics*.

Islamic aspects are covered in Boland, *Struggle of Islam*. See van Dijk, *Rebellion under the banner of Islam*; Soebardi, ‘Kartosuwiryo’; Chaidar, *Pemikiran politik*; and Horikoshi, ‘Dar ul-Islam movement’, on Kartosuwirjo and *Darul Islam*. On the role of Islamic political parties, see Noer, *Partai Islam di pentas nasional*.

On literature see Teeuw, *Modern Indonesian literature*; on art see Holt, *Art in Indonesia*. The role of van Mook is described in Yong, *Van Mook*.

## Chapter 19: The First Democratic Experiment, 1950–7

Feith, *Decline of constitutional democracy* is an exhaustive study of this period. Studies of various constituents of the political scene may be found in Hindley, *Communist Party of Indonesia*; Mortimer, *Indonesian Communism under Sukarno*; McVey, ‘Post-revolutionary transformation of the Indonesian army’; Legge, *Sukarno: a political biography*; Boland, *Struggle of Islam*; Noer, *Mohammad Hatta*; Noer, *Partai Islam di pentas nasional*; Rose, *Indonesia free* (on Hatta); Yusril Ihza, ‘Combining activism and intellectualism’ (on Natsir); and Penders and Sundhaussen, *Abdul Haris Nasution*. On Lekra, see Foulcher, *Social commitment*.

Booth’s books *Indonesian economy* and *Agricultural development* are important works for this period. For East Sumatran agrarian issues, see Stoler, *Capitalism and confrontation*; and Pelzer, *Planters against peasants*. On population growth see Widjojo, *Population trends in Indonesia*. Economic affairs up to 1955 are analysed in vols. III and IV of Sutter, *Indonesianisasi*.

Local studies of Javanese society are found in Selosoemardjan, *Social changes in Jogjakarta*; Castles, *Religion, politics and economic behavior in Java*; Jay, *Religion and politics in rural Central Java*; and Kuntowijoyo (Kuntowidjojo), ‘Sikap ekonomi dan keagamaan pengusaha desa industri’ (available in English as ‘Economic and religious attitudes of entrepreneurs in a village industry’). Geertz, *Religion of Java*, contains much information, but has been criticised for appearing to equate communal

identities (*santri* and *abangan*) with a social class category (*priyayi*). On Bali, see G. Robinson, *Dark side of paradise*.

An analysis of the 1955 (and 1971) elections is in van Marle, ‘Indonesian electoral geography’. On foreign policy see Fifield, *Diplomacy of Southeast Asia*; Drooglever, *Daad van vrije keuze* (on Papua); and Mozingo, *Chinese policy toward Indonesia*.

Indonesia’s regional crises have been analysed in several important works. See N. Sjamsuddin, *Republican revolt*, on Aceh. On Sulawesi see Harvey’s works *Pemberontakan Kahar Muzakkar* and *Permesta*; and Anhar Gonggong, *Abdul Qohhar Mudzakar*. The Torajan experience is described in Bigalke, *Tana Toraja*. Van Dijk, *Rebellion under the banner of Islam*, describes *Darul Islam* in Java, Sulawesi, Kalimantan and Aceh. See further Chaidar, *Pemikiran politik*. A case study of *Darul Islam* life is in K. Robinson, ‘Living in the hutan’. Leirissa, *PRRI Permesta*, employs much oral evidence from participants. See also Smail, ‘Military politics of North Sumatra’.

## Chapter 20: Guided Democracy, 1957–65

No general study of the guided democracy period has yet been published. The years 1957–9 are covered in detail in Lev, *Transition to guided democracy*. Analyses extending to 1962 are found in Feith’s ‘Dynamics of guided democracy’ and ‘Indonesia’. Hindley, *Communist Party of Indonesia*, extends to 1963. See also Reeve, ‘Sukarnoism and Indonesia’s “functional group” state’.

Leirissa, *PRRI Permesta*, is an important study of that rebellion; Mossman, *Rebels in paradise*, is an older journalistic account. On the Sulawesi rebellion see also Harvey, *Permesta*.

Studies covering the whole period with emphasis on particular aspects are found in Crouch, *Army and politics*; Mortimer, *Indonesian Communism under Sukarno*; Legge, *Sukarno: a political biography*; Boland, *Struggle of Islam*; van Bruinessen, ‘Controversies and polemics’; and McVey, ‘Post-revolutionary transformation of the Indonesian army’; all but the last two include analyses of the 1965 coup attempt and its various interpretations. A renewed examination of the evidence surrounding the 1965 coup attempt is in Roosa, *Pretext for mass murder*.

The economic troubles of the period are described in Booth, *Indonesian economy*; and Mackie, *Problems of the Indonesian inflation*. On military aspects, see further Sundhaussen, *Road to power*; and Penders and Sundhaussen, *Abdul Haris Nasution*. Coppel, *Indonesian Chinese*, covers the period. Other valuable studies are found in Foulcher, ‘Survey of events surrounding “Manikebu”’; Lee, ‘Taman Siswa in postwar Indonesia’; Rocamora, ‘Partai Nasional Indonesia, 1963–1965’; and Noer, *Partai Islam di pentas nasional*. Teeuw, *Modern Indonesian literature*, includes the writers of this period. Literary issues are also covered in Foulcher, *Social commitment*; Liu, ‘Pramoedya Ananta Toer and China’; and Kratz, ‘Islamic attitudes’.

The general inclination of scholars to see Sukarno as a social conservative despite his revolutionary rhetoric is challenged in Hauswedell, ‘Sukarno: radical or conservative?’

The foreign policy of this period has received considerable attention. See Bunnell, 'Guided democracy foreign policy'; and Mackie, *Konfrontasi: the Indonesia–Malaysia dispute*. Weinstein, *Indonesian foreign policy*, concentrates on the post-Sukarno years but includes material on this period. On China's role see Mozingo, *Chinese policy toward Indonesia*; and Jay Taylor, *China and Southeast Asia*; both of these include analyses of the 1965 coup attempt. American involvement is discussed in A. Kahin and G. Kahin, *Subversion as foreign policy*; and Fifield, *Southeast Asia in United States policy*, which extends to c.1962. Regarding the Gilchrist document, see the first chapter of Mody, *Indonesia under Suharto*.

## Chapter 21: Creating the New Order, 1965–75

Elson, *Suharto*, is an authoritative political biography of Soeharto. An earlier description of the Soeharto era up to 1985 is found in Mody, *Indonesia under Suharto*. H. McDonald, *Suharto's Indonesia*, is a wide-ranging account covering events to c.1979. Crouch, *Army and politics*, is an important analysis to c.1976 concentrating on military aspects. See also Sundhaussen, *Road to power*. Valuable essays are found in H. Hill, *Indonesia's new order*. Oey, *Indonesia after the 1971 elections*, contains several useful articles. The period of transition from old to new order is described in the above works. For more specific analyses, see Paget, 'Military in Indonesian politics'; Hindley, 'Alirans and the fall of the old order'; Cribb, *Indonesian killings of 1965–1966*; G. Robinson, *Dark side of paradise*; Webb, 'Sickle and the cross'; Samson, 'Islam in Indonesian politics'; and Sulistyo, *Palu arit di ladang tebu*. For a valuable local study of conflict and violence in East Indonesia, see Barnes, 'Fransiskus/Usman Buang Duran'.

Studies of various aspects of domestic politics are found in McVey, 'Post-revolutionary transformation of the Indonesian army', which extends to 1969; McIntyre, 'Divisions and power in the Indonesian National Party, 1965–1966'; Nishihara, *Golkar and the Indonesian elections of 1971*; and Ward, *Foundation of the Partai Muslimin Indonesia*. Boland, *Struggle of Islam*, extends to 1969. Feillard, *Islam et armée*, focuses on NU and the army. Latif, *Inteligensia Muslim dan kuasa*, covers the entire period. On the 1971 elections see Ward, *1971 election*; and van Marle, 'Indonesian electoral geography'. Jassin, *Angkatan '66*, contains early literary works of the 'generation of '66'. On Chinese aspects, see Coppel, *Indonesian Chinese*.

Political imprisonment up to mid-1977 is analysed in *Indonesia: an Amnesty International report*; the Indonesian edition of this (*Indonesia: Sebuah laporan Amnesti International*) has an introduction covering mid-1977 to October 1978. See also Fealy, *Release of Indonesia's political prisoners*. Several studies have been published concerning East Timor; the best are Jolliffe, *East Timor*; Dunn, *Timor: a people betrayed*; and Carey and Bentley, *East Timor at the crossroads*. The authoritative study of the Papua issue is Drooglever, *Daad van vrije keuze*. Osborne, *Indonesia's secret war*, is a serious journalistic account of Papuan resistance.

Religious issues have received considerable scholarly attention, and are discussed in several of the works referred to above. A fine overview of Islamic developments from

1967 to 2005 is in Feillard and Madinier, *Fin de l'innocence?* Regarding Islam, other important works are McVey, 'Faith as the outsider'; Nakamura, *Crescent arises over the banyan tree*, covering the period to 1970; Hefner, 'Islamizing Java?'; and Porter, *Managing politics and Islam*, which extends to Habibie's presidency. For basic statistics resting upon the censuses of 1971 and 1980 see Biro Pusat Statistik, *Beberapa ciri pemeluk agama*. G. Jones, 'Religion and education', analyses Christianisation. Hadiwijono, *Man in the present Javanese mysticism*, contains an important study of Kebatinan. See also Mulder, *Mysticism and everyday life*; Stange, "Legitimate" mysticism'; and Subagya, *Kepercayaan*, which is written from a critical Catholic viewpoint. Islamic educational work and related matters are discussed in Steenbrink, *Pesantren, madrasah, sekolah* (of which there are both Dutch and Indonesian editions); and Sudjoko Prasodjo et al., *Profil pesantren*.

On the ending of confrontation see Weinstein, *Indonesia abandons confrontation*; and Mackie, *Konfrontasi: the Indonesia–Malaysia dispute*. For foreign relations in general see Weinstein, *Indonesian foreign policy*, which extends to c.1974; and Heinzlmeir, *Indonesiens Aussenpolitik nach Sukarno, 1965–1970*. On ASEAN see Anwar, *Indonesia in ASEAN*; and Jorgensen-Dahl, *Regional organisation and order in South-East Asia*. Mozingo, *Chinese policy toward Indonesia*, extends to 1967; Jay Taylor, *China and Southeast Asia*, extends to 1972.

A valuable analysis of how the economy and political power intersected over the whole Soeharto era is in Robison and Hadiz, *Reorganising power*. Economic affairs are analysed in H. Hill, *Indonesian economy*; Booth, *Indonesian economy*; Booth and McCawley, *Indonesian economy during the Soeharto era*; and in Booth, *Agricultural development*. Another important analysis of the connections between politics and economic policy is Liddle, 'Relative autonomy'. Robison, *Indonesia: the rise of capital*, analyses the business affairs of the new order elite within the general context of new order society and economics up to the mid-1980s. On the sources and impact of corruption, see R. Brown, 'Indonesian corporations'. On oil, see especially Carlson, *Indonesia's oil*, which was written before the consequences of the Pertamina crisis of 1975 had become clear. Drake, *National integration*, is a valuable statistically based study focusing on the new order period into the 1980s. Indonesia's economy and society are seen within a wider ASEAN context in Kühne, *Bevölkerungs und Beschäftigungsentwicklung*, which extends to c.1971; and Wong, *ASEAN economies in perspective*, which extends to c.1976. A superb local study of agricultural transformations in East Java is Hefner, *Political economy of mountain Java*.

Valuable essays on cultural developments are found in Hooker, *Culture and society*. Soetjipto Wirosardjono et al., *Gita Jaya*, is an official analysis of Jakarta's development during 1966–77; on this see also Abeysekere, *Jakarta*.

## Chapter 22: The New Order at its Peak, 1976–88

Several of the works cited for Chapter 21 extend into the later 1970s and 80s, including notably Elson, *Suharto*. See also Robison and Hadiz, *Reorganising power*; Mody, *Indonesia under Suharto*; Robison, *Indonesia: the rise of capital*; H. Hill, *Indonesian*

economy; H. Hill, *Indonesia's new order*; Feillard and Madinier, *Fin de l'innocence?*; Latif, *Inteligensia Muslim dan kuasa*; Porter, *Managing politics and Islam*; Hooker, *Culture and society*; Booth and McCawley, *Indonesian economy during the Soeharto era*; Booth, *Agricultural development*; Booth, *Indonesian economy*; Drake, *National integration*; Anwar, *Indonesia in ASEAN*; Carey and Bentley, *East Timor at the crossroads*; Liddle, 'Relative autonomy'; Hefner, 'Islamizing Java?'; Feillard, *Islam et armée*; and R. Brown, '*Indonesian corporations*'.

An outstanding general assessment of the period under discussion here is to be found in Schwarz, *Nation in waiting*. Jenkins, *Suharto and his generals*, is an important political history from 1975 to 1983. For an authoritative analysis of military-political issues, see Lowry, *Armed forces*.

On *Pancasila* and P4, see Morfit, 'Pancasila'. A significant aspect of Indonesian foreign relations to 1990 is covered in Suryadinata, 'Indonesia–China relations'.

Economic aspects are persuasively analysed in Dick et al., *The emergence of a national economy*. See further Booth, 'State and economic development'; and Hadi Soesastro, 'Political economy of deregulation', which is set in the context of the 1980s generally. Analyses of the lives of people seeking survival in the urban informal sector are to be found in Jellinek, *Wheel of fortune*; and Bijlmer, *Ambulante straatberoepen*. For discussion of social class issues, see Tanter and Young, *The politics of middle class Indonesia*.

In addition to the works already mentioned, important studies of Islamic aspects of the period are to be found in Feener, *Muslim legal thought*; Saleh, *Modern trends*; van Bruinessen, 'Indonesia's ulama and politics' and *NU*; Munhanif, 'Khittah of 1926'; Aswab Mahasin, 'Islam in Indonesia'; Bambang Pranowo, 'Islam and party politics'; Barton, 'Neo-Modernism'; Feillard, 'Traditionalist Islam and the state'; Din Syamsuddin, 'Muhammadiyah da'wah'; and Hefner, *Civil Islam*. There are several biographies of Abdurrahman Wahid; an admiring 'authorised' biography is given in Barton, *Gus Dur*.

## Chapter 23: The Challenge, Crisis and Collapse of the New Order, 1989–98

Several of the works mentioned for Chapters 21 and 22 extend into the 1990s, including Elson, *Suharto*; H. Hill, *Indonesia's new order*; Booth, *Indonesian economy*; Robison and Hadiz, *Reorganising power*; R. Brown, 'Indonesian corporations'; Hooker, *Culture and society*; Schwarz, *Nation in waiting*; Lowry, *Armed forces*; Carey and Bentley, *East Timor at the crossroads*; Feillard and Madinier, *Fin de l'innocence?*; Latif, *Inteligensia Muslim dan kuasa*; Feener, *Muslim legal thought*; Saleh, *Modern trends*; Porter, *Managing politics and Islam*; Feillard, *Islam et armée*; van Bruinessen, *NU*; Bambang Pranowo, 'Islam and party politics'; Barton, 'Neo-Modernism'; Feillard, 'Traditionalist Islam and the state'; Din Syamsuddin, 'Muhammadiyah da'wah'; Barton, *Gus Dur*; and Hefner, *Civil Islam*. See also Eklöf, *Power and political culture*, on PDI; and Aspinall, *Opposing Suharto*.

A detailed account of 1997–2000 is in van Dijk, *Country in despair*. On the

economic crisis beginning in 1997, see H. Hill, *Indonesian economy*; and Jomo, *After the storm*.

An important investigation of military thinking and practice late in the Soeharto era is Honna, ‘Military ideology’; see further Honna, *Military politics and democratization*. Valuable essays on the demise of the regime are in Forrester and May, *Fall of Soeharto*. An exhaustive study of the background and development of the riots in Surakarta in May 1998 is in Mulyadi, Soedarmono et al., *Runtuhnya kekuasaan ‘Kraton Alit’*. Purdey, *Anti-Chinese violence*, is valuable. Among the biographies of Habibie, one is Makmur Makka, *BJH*.

On Aceh, see Kell, *Roots of Acehnese rebellion*; and G. Robinson, ‘Rawan’. On Timor, as well as Carey and Bentley, *East Timor at the crossroads*, see Carey, ‘Catholic Church’; and Sherlock, ‘Political economy’.

In addition to the works noted above, religious issues are also covered in Feillard, ‘Indonesia’s emerging Muslim feminism’; and Hefner, ‘Islam, state and civil society’. On Hindu issues, see F. L. Bakker, ‘Balinese Hinduism’.

Social and economic issues are considered in many of the works listed above. On the devastation caused in Indonesia’s forests, see Poffenberger, ‘Rethinking Indonesian forest policy’. Assessments of population and human resource issues are found in G. Jones and Hull, *Indonesia assessment*. A valuable overview of some basic data from the 1990 census is in Chambert-Loir, ‘Démographie’. An interesting attempt to assess the impact of economic growth at village level is Edmundson, ‘Do the rich get richer, the poor get poorer?’

## Chapter 24: Reforming Indonesia, 1998–2004

A comprehensive historical survey of this crucial period is yet to be written. A detailed account of 1997–2000 is in van Dijk, *Country in despair*. An analysis of electoral and legislative reforms through 2001 is found in King, *Half-hearted reform*. On constitutional reform, see Lindsey ‘Indonesian constitutional reform’. Military issues are assessed in Mietzner, *Politics of military reform*. There are discussions of the Habibie period and the 1999 election in Emmerson, *Indonesia beyond Suharto*. See also Robison and Hadiz, *Reorganizing power*.

On regional issues, see Haris et al. *Indonesia di ambang perpecahan?*, which concerns Aceh, Riau, Irian Jaya and East Timor. On Aceh, see also Siapno, *Gender, Islam, nationalism and the state*. Concerning conflicts in East Indonesia, see van Klinken, ‘Maluku wars’; and Duncan, ‘The other Maluku’. East Timor is discussed in Greenlees and Garran, *Deliverance*; see also Moore, ‘Indonesian military’s last years in East Timor’. On Papua, see Mote and Rutherford, ‘From Irian Jaya to Papua’.

For a biography of Habibie, see Makmur Makka, *BJH*. See also Ali, *Esai politik tentang Habibie*. Barton, *Gus Dur*, offers a positive assessment of Abdurrahman Wahid’s presidency.

On Islamic extremism and terrorism, see the outstanding study in Hasan, *Laskar Jihad*; and the International Crisis Group’s analyses (accessible via the ICG website <http://www.crisisgroup.org/home/index.cfm?id=2959&l=1>), particularly the ICG

reports *Al-Qaeda in Southeast Asia* and *Indonesia's terrorist network*. On Front Pěmbela Islam, see Jajang Jahroni, 'Defending the majesty of Islam'. A useful overview (but not entirely persuasive analysis) of some episodes of social violence is in Sidel, *Riots, pogroms, jihad*.

On Islamic issues more generally, see further Porter, *Managing politics and Islam*; Feillard and Madinier, *Fin de l'innocence?*; Latif, *Inteligensia Muslim dan kuasa*; Hasbullah, 'Cultural presentation'. Azra, *Konteks berteologi*, offers an authoritative view of contemporary developments within Indonesian Islam.

## Chapter 25: Indonesia since 2004

At the time of writing this chapter, no authoritative analysis of the time since 2004 has appeared. The discussion here rests mainly upon contemporary reports and personal observation. Most publications so far have an ephemeral character, as is to be expected. The annual surveys of Indonesian affairs in *Asian Survey* for 2004 and 2005 are useful.

---

# Bibliography

Note: Works are listed in alphabetical order for each author/editor.

## Journal abbreviations

<b>AS</b>	<i>Asian Survey</i>
<b>BEFEO</b>	<i>Bulletin de l'École Française d'Extrême-Orient</i>
<b>BIES</b>	<i>Bulletin of Indonesian Economic Studies</i>
<b>BKI</b>	<i>Bijdragen tot de Taal-, Land- en Volkenkunde</i>
<b>BSOAS</b>	<i>Bulletin of the School of Oriental and African Studies</i>
<b>JAS</b>	<i>Journal of Asian Studies</i>
<b>JMBRAS</b>	<i>Journal of the Malaysian Branch, Royal Asiatic Society</i>
<b>JSEAH</b>	<i>Journal of Southeast Asian History</i>
<b>JSEAS</b>	<i>Journal of Southeast Asian Studies</i>
<b>MAS</b>	<i>Modern Asian Studies</i>
<b>MIISI</b>	<i>Majalah Ilmu-Ilmu Sastra Indonesia/Indonesian Journal of Cultural Studies</i>
<b>RIMA</b>	<i>Review of Indonesian and Malayan Affairs</i>
<b>SI</b>	<i>Studia Islamika</i>
<b>TBG</b>	<i>Tijdschrift voor Indische Taal-, Land- en Volkenkunde uitgegeven door het (Koninklijk) Bataviaasch Genootschap van Kunsten en Wetenschappen</i>
<b>VBG</b>	<i>Verhandelingen van het (Koninklijk) Bataviaasch Genootschap van Kunsten en Wetenschappen</i>
<b>VKI</b>	<i>Verhandelingen van het Koninklijk Instituut voor Taal-, Land- en Volkenkunde</i>

- Abdullah, Taufik. 'Adat and Islam: an examination of conflict in Minangkabau'. *Indonesia*, no. 2 (Oct. 1966), pp. 1–24.
- . *Schools and politics: the Kaum Muda movement in West Sumatra (1927–1933)*. Ithaca, NY: Cornell Modern Indonesia Project Monograph Series, 1971.
- . and Sharon Siddique (eds). *Islam and society in Southeast Asia*. Singapore: Institute of Southeast Asian Studies, 1986.
- Abdurachman, Paramita R. 'Atakiwan, casados and tupassi: Portuguese settlements and Christian communities in Solor and Flores (1536–1630)'. *Masyarakat Indonesia*, vol. 10, no. 1 (1983), pp. 83–117.
- . 'Moluccan responses to the first intrusions of the West', pp. 161–88 in Soebadio and Sarvaas (eds), *Dynamics of Indonesian history* (see below).
- . et al. (eds). *Bunga rampai Sejarah Maluku (I)*. Jakarta: Lembaga Penelitian Sejarah Maluku, 1973.
- Abeyasekere, Susan. *Jakarta: a history*. Singapore, etc.: Oxford University Press, 1987.
- . *One hand clapping: Indonesian nationalists and the Dutch, 1939–1942* [Clayton, Victoria:] Monash Papers on Southeast Asia no. 5, 1976.
- . 'Partai Indonesia Raja, 1936–42: a study in cooperative nationalism'. *JSEAS*, vol. 3, no. 2 (Sept. 1972), pp. 262–76.
- . 'The Soetardjo petition'. *Indonesia*, no. 15 (Apr. 1973), pp. 81–107.
- Adam, Ahmat B. *The vernacular press and the emergence of modern Indonesian consciousness (1855–1913)*.

- Ithaca, NY: Cornell University Southeast Asia Program, 1995.
- Akkeren, Philip van. *Sri and Christ: a study of the indigenous church in East Java*. London: Lutterworth, 1970.
- Alfian, Teuku Ibrahim. ‘Acheh Sultanate under Sultan Mohammad Daudsyah and the Dutch war’, pp. 147–66 in Kartodirdjo, *Profiles* (see below).
- *Perang di jalan Allah: Perang Aceh 1873–1912*. Jakarta: Pustaka Sinar Harapan, 1987.
- Ali, Fachry. *Esai politik tentang Habibie: iptek dan transformasi kekuasaan*. Jakarta: Balai Pustaka, 1999.
- Allen, G. C., and Audrey G. Donnithorne. *Western enterprise in Indonesia and Malaya: a study in economic development*. London: Allen & Unwin, 1957.
- Anak Agung Gde Agung, Ide. *Bali pada abad XIX. Perjuangan rakyat dan raja-raja menentang kolonialisme Belanda 1808–1908*. Yogyakarta: Gadjah Mada University Press, 1989.
- Andaya, Barbara Watson. *To live as brothers: southeast Sumatra in the seventeenth and eighteenth centuries*. Honolulu: University of Hawai’i Press, 1993.
- Andaya, Leonard Y. *The heritage of Arung Palakka: a history of South Sulawesi (Celebes) in the seventeenth century*. VKI vol. 91. The Hague: Martinus Nijhoff, 1981.
- *The kingdom of Johor, 1641–1728*. Kuala Lumpur: Oxford University Press, 1975.
- ‘The nature of kingship in Bone’, pp. 115–25 in Reid and Castles (eds), *Precolonial state systems* (see below).
- *The world of Maluku: Eastern Indonesia in the early modern period*. Honolulu: University of Hawai’i Press, 1993.
- Anderson, B. R. O’G. ‘Japan: “The light of Asia”’, pp. 13–50 in Josef Silverstein (ed.). *Southeast Asia in World War II: four essays*. [New Haven:] Yale University Southeast Asian Studies Monograph Series no. 7, 1966.
- *Java in a time of revolution: occupation and resistance, 1944–1946*. Ithaca, NY: Cornell University Press, 1972.
- *Some aspects of Indonesian politics under the Japanese occupation, 1944–1945*. Ithaca, NY: Cornell Modern Indonesia Project Interim Reports Series, 1961.
- Anderson, David Charles. ‘The military aspects of the Madiun affair’. *Indonesia* no. 21 (Apr. 1976), pp. 1–63.
- Anhar Gonggong. *Abdul Qohhar Mudzakkar: dari patriot hingga pemberontak*. Yogyakarta: Ombak, 2004.
- Anwar, Dewi Fortuna. *Indonesia in ASEAN: foreign policy and regionalism*. Jakarta: PT Pustaka Sinar Harapan; Singapore: Institute of Southeast Asian Studies, 1994.
- Aspinall, Edward. *Opposing Suharto: compromise, resistance and regime change in Indonesia*. Stanford, CA: Stanford University Press, 2005.
- Aswab Mahasin (ed.). ‘Islam in Indonesia: in search of a new image’. *Prisma: the Indonesian Indicator* no. 35 (Mar. 1985).
- Atja (ed. & trans.). *Carita Purwaka Caruban Nagari: karya sastra sebagai sumber pengetahuan sejarah*. 2nd revised edn. [Bandung:] Proyek Pengembangan Permuseuman Jawa Barat, 1986.
- Attas, Muhammad Naguib al-. *The mysticism of Hamzah Fansuri*. Kuala Lumpur: University of Malaya Press, 1970.
- *Rānīrī and the Wujūdiyyah of 17th century Aceh*. Singapore: Monographs of the Malaysian Branch of the Royal Asiatic Society 3, 1966.
- Aziz, M. A. *Japan’s colonialism and Indonesia*. The Hague: Martinus Nijhoff, 1955.
- Azra, Azyumardi. *Konteks berteologi di Indonesia: pengalaman Islam*. Jakarta: Penerbit Paramadina, 1999.
- ‘Opposition to Sufism in the East Indies in the seventeenth and eighteenth centuries’, pp. 665–86 in Frederik de Jong and Bernd Radtke (eds). *Islamic mysticism contested: thirteen centuries of controversies and polemics*. Leiden, etc.: Brill, 1999.
- *The origins of Islamic reformism in Southeast Asia: networks of Malay-Indonesian and Middle Eastern ‘ulamā’ in the seventeenth and eighteenth centuries*. Crows Nest NSW and Honolulu: Asian Studies Association of Australia in association with Allen & Unwin and University of Hawai’i Press, 2004.
- Bachtiar, Harsja W. ‘Raden Saleh: aristocrat, painter, and scientist’. *MIISI* vol. 6, no. 3 (Aug. 1976), pp. 31–79.
- Bakker, Freek L. ‘Balinese Hinduism and the Indonesian state: recent developments’. *BKI* vol. 153, no. 1 (1997), pp. 15–41.
- Bakker, H. ‘Het economisch belang van Noord-Sumatra tijdens de Atjehoorlog, 1873–1910’, pp. 41–65 in A. H. P. Clemens and J. Th. Lindblad (eds). *Het belang van de buitengewesten: economische expansie en koloniale staatsvorming in de buitengewesten van Nederlands-Indië, 1870–1942*. Amsterdam: NEHA, 1989.
- Bambang Pranowo. ‘Islam and party politics in rural Java’. *SI* vol. 1, no. 2 (1994), pp. 1–19.
- Barnard, Timothy P. *Multiple centres of authority: society and environment in Siak and Eastern Sumatra, 1674–1827*. Leiden: KITLV Press, 2003.
- Barnes, R. H. ‘Avarice and iniquity at the Solor fort’. *BKI* vol. 143, nos. 2–3 (1987), pp. 208–36.
- ‘Fransiskus/Usman Buang Duran: Catholic, Muslim, Communist’. *BKI* vol. 159, no. 1 (2003), pp. 1–29.
- Baroroh Baried. ‘Islam and the modernization of Indonesian women’, pp. 139–54 in Abdullah and Siddique (eds). *Islam and society in Southeast Asia* (see above).
- Barton, Greg. *Gus Dur: the authorised biography of Abdurrahman Wahid*. Jakarta and Singapore: Equinox Publishing, 2002.

- ‘Neo-Modernism: a vital synthesis of traditionalist and Modernist Islamic thought in Indonesia’. *SI* vol. 2, no. 3 (1995), pp. 1–75.
- Bastin John. *The native policies of Sir Stamford Raffles in Java and Sumatra: an economic interpretation*. Oxford: Clarendon, 1957.
- *Raffles’ ideas on the land rent system in Java and the Mackenzie land tenure commission*. *VKI* vol. 14. ’s-Gravenhage: Martinus Nijhoff, 1954.
- Bayly, C. A., and D. H. A. Kolff (eds). *Two colonial empires: comparative essays on the history of India and Indonesia in the nineteenth century*. Dordrecht & Boston: M. Nijhoff, 1986.
- Beasley, W. G. *The rise of modern Japan*. New York: St Martin’s Press (now Palgrave Macmillan); London: Weidenfeld & Nicolson, 2000.
- Behrend, T. E. ‘The writings of K. P. H. Suryanagara: shifting paradigms in nineteenth-century Javanese thought and letters’. *BKI*, vol. 155, no. 3 (1999), pp. 390–415.
- Benda, Harry J. *The crescent and the rising sun: Indonesian Islam under the Japanese occupation, 1942–1945*. The Hague and Bandung: W. van Hoeve, 1958.
- and Lance Castles. ‘The Samin movement’. *BKI* vol. 125, no. 2 (1969), pp. 207–40.
- Berg, C. C. *Het rijk van de vijfoudige Buddha*. (Verhandelingen der Koninklijke Nederlandse Akademie van Wetenschappen, Afd. Letterkunde, vol. 69, no. 1) Amsterdam: NV Noord-Hollandsche Uitgevers Maatschappij, 1962.
- ‘Twee nieuwe publicaties betreffende de geschiedenis en de geschiedschrijving van Mataram’. *Indonesië* vol. 8 (1955), pp. 97–128.
- Bigalke, Terance W. *Tana Toraja: a social history of an Indonesian people*. Singapore: Singapore University Press, 2005.
- Bijleveld, J. ‘De Saminbeweging’. *Koloniaal Tijdschrift* vol. 12 (1923), pp. 10–24.
- Bijlmer, Joseph Johannes Maria. *Ambulante straatberoepen in Surabaya: een studie naar kleinschalige economische activiteiten*. Vrije Universiteit te Amsterdam doctoral thesis. Amsterdam: VU Uitgeverij, 1987.
- Biro Pusat Statistik. *Beberapa ciri pemeluk agama di Indonesia 1980*. Jakarta: Biro Pusat Statistik, Bagian Statistik Kesejahteraan Rakyat, [1984].
- *Sensus Penduduk 1971/1971 population census*. 33 vols. Jakarta: Biro Pusat Statistik, 1971–5.
- *Statistik Indonesia 1986*. Jakarta, 1987.
- Blussé, Leonard. *Strange company: Chinese settlers, mestizo women and the Dutch in VOC Batavia*. *VKI* vol. 122. Dordrecht & Riverton: Foris, 1986.
- Boers, Bernice de Jong. ‘Mount Tambora in 1815: a volcanic eruption in Indonesia and its aftermath’. *Indonesia* no. 60 (Feb. 1996), pp. 36–60.
- Boland, B. J. *The struggle of Islam in modern Indonesia*. *VKI* vol. 59. The Hague: Martinus Nijhoff, 1971.
- Boomgaard, Peter. *Children of the colonial state: population growth and economic development in Java, 1795–1880*. Amsterdam: Free University Press, 1989.
- ‘The welfare services in Indonesia, 1900–1942’. *Itinerario* vol. 10, no. 1 (1986), pp. 57–81.
- Booth, Anne. *Agricultural development in Indonesia*. Sydney, etc.: Allen & Unwin, 1988.
- *The economic development of Southeast Asia, 1870–1985*. Clayton: Monash University Centre of Southeast Asian Studies Working Paper 63, 1990.
- *The Indonesian economy in the nineteenth and twentieth centuries: a history of missed opportunities*. Basingstoke and London: Macmillan (now Palgrave Macmillan) in association with the Australian National University, Canberra, 1998.
- ‘Living standards and the distribution of income in colonial Indonesia: a review of the evidence’. *JSEAS* vol. 19, no. 2 (Sept. 1988), pp. 310–34.
- ‘The state and economic development in Indonesia: the ethical and new order eras compared’, pp. 111–26 in R. J. May and William J. O’Malley (eds). *Observing change in Asia: essays in honour of J. A. C. Mackie*. Bathurst: Crawford House, 1989.
- and Peter McCawley (eds). *The Indonesian economy during the Soeharto era*. Kuala Lumpur, etc.: Oxford University Press, 1981.
- Booth, Anne et al. (eds). *Indonesian economic history in the Dutch colonial era*. New Haven: Yale University South-East Asia Studies Monograph Series 35, 1990.
- Bootsma, N. A. *Buren in de koloniale tijd: de Philippijnen onder Amerikaans bewind en de Nederlandse, Indische en Indonesische reacties daarop, 1898–1942*. *VKI* vol. 119. Dordrecht & Riverton: Foris, 1986.
- Bougas, Wayne A. ‘Bantayan: an early Makasarese kingdom, 1200–1600 A.D.’ *Archipel* no. 55 (1998), pp. 83–123.
- Bouman, B. *Van driekleur tot rood-wit: de Indonesische officieren uit het KNIL, 1900–1950*. Leiden University doctoral thesis, 1995.
- Bowen, John R. *Sumatran politics and poetics: Gayo history, 1900–1989*. New Haven and London: Yale University Press, 1991.
- Boxer, C. R. *The Dutch seaborne empire, 1600–1800*. London: Hutchinson, 1965; Harmondsworth: Penguin, 1973.
- *The Portuguese seaborne empire, 1415–1825*. New York: Alfred A. Knopf, 1969.

- Braginsky, Vladimir. *The heritage of traditional Malay literature: a historical survey of genres, writings and literary views*. Leiden: KITLV Press; Singapore: Institute of Southeast Asian Studies, 2004.
- ‘On the copy of Hamzah Fansuri’s epitaph published by C. Guillot & L. Kalus.’ *Archipel* no. 62 (2001), pp. 21–33.
- ‘Structure, date and sources of *Hikayat Aceh* revisited: the problem of Mughal–Malay literary ties.’ *BKI* vol. 162, no. 4 (2006), pp. 441–67.
- Brandes, J. L. A. (ed. & trans.). *Pararaton (Ken Arok) of het boek der koningen van Tumapēl en van Majapahit*. 2nd edn, ed. N. J. Krom. *VBG* vol. 62 (1920).
- Brandon, James R. (ed.). *On thrones of gold: three Javanese shadow plays*. Cambridge, MA: Harvard University Press, 1970.
- Breman, Jan. *Control of land and labour in colonial Java: a case study of agrarian crisis and reform in the region of Cirebon during the first decades of the 20th century*. *VKI* vol. 101. Dordrecht and Cinnaminson, NJ: Foris, 1983.
- Brown, C. C. (trans.). *Séjarah Melayu, or Malay annals*. Kuala Lumpur: Oxford University Press, 1970. Originally published in *JMBRAS* vol. 25, pts. 2–3 (Oct. 1952).
- Brown, Rajeswary Ampalavanar. ‘Indonesian corporations, cronyism and corruption’. *MAS* vol. 40, no. 4 (2006), pp. 953–92.
- Brug, P. H. van der. *Malaria en malaise: de VOC in Batavia in de achttiende eeuw*. Amsterdam: De Bataafsche Leeuw, 1994.
- Brugmans, I. J. *Geschiedenis van het onderwijs in Nederlandsch-Indië*. Groningen and Batavia: J. B. Wolters’ Uitgevers-Maatschappij NV, 1938.
- Bruijn, J. R., et al. (eds). *Dutch-Asiatic shipping in the 17th and 18th centuries (1595–1795)*. 3 vols. The Hague, etc.: Martinus Nijhoff, 1979–87.
- Bruinessen, Martin van. ‘Controversies and polemics involving the Sufi orders in twentieth-century Indonesia’, pp. 705–28 in Frederik de Jong and Bernd Radtke (eds). *Islamic mysticism contested: thirteen centuries of controversies and polemics*. Leiden, etc.: Brill, 1999.
- ‘Indonesia’s ulama and politics: caught between legitimising the status quo and searching for alternatives’. *Prisma* no. 49 (June 1990), pp. 52–69.
- ‘Muslims of the Dutch East Indies and the Caliphate question’. *SI* vol. 2, no. 3 (1995), pp. 115–40.
- *NU: tradisi, relasi-relasi kuasa, pencarian wacana baru*. Yogyakarta: LKIS & Pustaka Pelajar, 1994.
- ‘The origins and development of the Naqshbandi order in Indonesia’. *Der Islam* vol. 67, pt. 1 (1990), pp. 150–79.
- ‘The origins and development of Sufi orders (*tarekat*) in Southeast Asia’. *SI* vol. 1, no. 1 (April–June 1994), pp. 1–23.
- *Tarekat Naqsyabandiyah di Indonesia: survei historis, geografis dan sosiologis*. Intro. Hamid Algar. Bandung: Penerbit Mizan, 1992.
- Bunnell, Frederick P. ‘Guided democracy foreign policy: 1960–1965’. *Indonesia* no. 2 (Oct. 1966), pp. 37–76.
- Burger, D. H. *Sociologisch-economische geschiedenis van Indonesia*. Intro. by J. S. Wigboldus. 2 vols. Amsterdam: Koninklijk Instituut voor de Tropen; Wageningen: Landbouwhogeschool; Leiden: Koninklijk Instituut voor Taal-, Land- en Volkenkunde, 1975.
- Campo, J. N. F. M. à. *Koninklijk Paketvaart Maatschappij: stoomvaart en staatsvorming in de Indonesische archipel, 1888–1914*. Hilversum: Verloren, 1992.
- *Engines of empire: steamshipping and state formation in colonial Indonesia*. Hilversum: Verloren, 2002.
- Carey, P. B. R. ‘The Catholic Church, religious revival and the nationalist movement in East Timor, 1975–98’. *Indonesia and the Malay world* vol. 27, no. 78 (1999), pp. 77–95.
- ‘Changing Javanese perceptions of the Chinese communities in Central Java, 1755–1825’. *Indonesia* no. 37 (Apr. 1984), pp. 1–47.
- ‘The origins of the Java War (1825–30)’. *English Historical Review* vol. 91, no. 358 (Jan. 1976), pp. 52–78.
- *The power of prophecy: Prince Dipanagara and the end of an old order in Java, 1785–1855*. Leiden: KITLV Press, 2007.
- ‘Raden Saleh, Dipanagara and the painting of the capture of Dipanagara at Magelang’. *JMBRAS* vol. 55, pt. 1 (1982), pp. 1–25.
- ‘Satria and santri: some notes on the relationship between Dipanagara’s kraton and religious supporters during the Java War (1825–30)’, pp. 271–318 in Ibrahim Alfian et al. (eds). *Dari babad dan hikayat sampai sejarah kritis: kumpulan karangan dipersembahkan kepada Prof. Dr. Sartono Kartodirdjo*. Yogyakarta: Gadjah Mada University Press, 1987.
- ‘The sepoy conspiracy of 1815 in Java’. *BKI* vol. 133, nos 2–3 (1977), pp. 294–322.
- ‘Waiting for the “just king”: the agrarian world of South-Central Java from Guyanti (1755) to the Java War (1825–30)’. *MAS* vol. 20, pt. 1 (Feb. 1986), pp. 59–137.
- and G. Carter Bentley (eds). *East Timor at the crossroads: the forging of a nation*. London: Cassell, SSRC, 1995.

- Carlson, Sevinc. *Indonesia's oil*. Washington, DC: Center for Strategic and International Studies, Georgetown University, 1976. Reprinted Boulder, CO.: Westview, 1977.
- Casparis, J. G. de. 'Ahmat Majanu's tombstone at Pengkalan Kempas and its Kawi inscription'. *JMBRAS* vol. 53, pt. 1 (1980), pp. 1–22.
- Castles, Lance. *Religion, politics and economic behavior in Java: the Kudus cigarette industry*. New Haven: Yale University Southeast Asia Studies Cultural Report Series no. 15, 1967.
- . 'Statelessness and stateforming tendencies among the Bataks before colonial rule', pp. 67–76 in Reid and Castles, *Pre-colonial state systems* (see below).
- Cense, A. A. 'Old Buginese and Macassarese diaries'. *BKI* vol. 122, no. 4 (1966), pp. 416–28.
- Chaidar, Al-. *Pemikiran politik proklamator Negara Islam Indonesia S. M. Kartosoevirjo: fakta dan data sejarah Darul Islam* [Jakarta:] Penerbit Buku Islam Kaffah, 1420/1999.
- Chambert-Loir, Henri. 'Bibliographie de la littérature malaise en traduction'. *BEFEO* vol. 62 (1975), pp. 395–439.
- . 'La démographie indonésienne'. *Archipel* no. 51 (1996), pp. 29–34.
- Chauvel, Richard. *Nationalists, soldiers and separatists: the Amboinese islands from colonialism to revolt, 1880–1950*. *VKI* vol. 143. Leiden: KITLV, 1990.
- Chen Dasheng. 'Une pierre tombale du début du XIV<sup>e</sup> siècle retrouvée à Brunei'. *Archipel* no. 42 (1991), pp. 47–52.
- Chusnul Hajati. *Peristiwa Cimareme 1919: perlawanan H. Hasan terhadap peraturan pembelian padi*. Semarang: Mimbar, Yayasan Adikarya Ikapi and The Ford Foundation, 2000.
- . 'The tragedy of Cimareme: the resistance of Haji Hasan to the colonial power in 1919'. *SI* vol. 3, no. 2 (1996), pp. 59–84.
- Coedès, George. *Les états hindouisés d'Indochine et d'Indonésie*. New edn. Paris: Editions E. de Boccard, 1964.
- . *The Indianized states of Southeast Asia*. Trans. Susan Brown Cowing, ed. Walter F. Vella. Honolulu: East-West Center Press, 1968.
- Colbert, Evelyn. *Southeast Asia in international politics, 1941–1956*. Ithaca, NY and London: Cornell University Press, 1977.
- Coolsma, S. *De zendingseeuw voor Nederlandsch Oost-Indië*. Utrecht: G. H. E. Breijer, 1901.
- Coppel, Charles A. *Indonesian Chinese in crisis*. Kuala Lumpur, etc.: Oxford University Press, 1983.
- Cortesão, Armando (ed. & trans.). *The Suma Oriental of Tomé Pires and the book of Francisco Rodrigues*. 2 vols. London: Hakluyt Society, 1944.
- Creese, Helen. 'Balinese *babab* as historical sources: a reinterpretation of the fall of Gèlgèl'. *BKI* vol. 147 (1991), nos 2–3, pp. 236–60.
- . 'Chronologies and chronograms: an interim response to Hägerdal'. *BKI* vol. 151, no. 1 (1995), pp. 125–31.
- Cribb, Robert. *Gangsters and revolutionaries: the Jakarta people's militia and the Indonesian Revolution, 1945–1949*. North Sydney: Asian Studies Association of Australia in association with Allen & Unwin, 1991.
- . (ed.). *The Indonesian killings of 1965–1966: studies from Java and Bali*. Monash Papers on Southeast Asia no. 21. Clayton: Monash University Centre of Southeast Asian Studies, 1990.
- . (ed.). *The late colonial state in Indonesia: political and economic foundations of the Netherlands Indies, 1880–1942*. Leiden: KITLV, 1994.
- Crouch, Harold. *The army and politics in Indonesia*. Ithaca, NY and London: Cornell University Press, 1978.
- Dahm, Bernard. *Sukarno and the struggle for Indonesian independence*. Trans. Mary F. Somers Heidhues. Ithaca, NY and London: Cornell University Press, 1969.
- . *Sukarnos Kampf um Indonesiens Unabhängigkeit: Werdegang und Ideen eines asiatischen Nationalisten*. Berlin and Frankfurt am Main: Alfred Metzner Verlag, 1966.
- Damais, Louis-Charles. 'L'épigraphie musulmane dans le Sud-Est Asiatique'. *BEFEO* vol. 54 (1968), pp. 567–604.
- . 'Études javanaises, I: Les tombes musulmanes datées de Trålåjå'. *BEFEO* vol. 48, pt. 2 (1957), pp. 353–415.
- Departemente van Landbouw, Nijverheid en Handel and Departement van Economische Zaken. *Volkstelling 1930/Census of 1930 in the Netherlands Indies*. 8 vols. Batavia: Landsdrukkerij, 1933–6.
- Deventer, C. Th. Van. *Overzicht van den economischen toestand der inlandsche bevolking van Java en Madoera*. The Hague: Martinus Nijhoff, 1904.
- Dewantara, Ki Hadjar. *Beoefening van letteren en kunst in het Pakoe-Alamsche geslacht*. Djokjakarta: H. Buning, 1931.
- Dhofier, Zamakhayari. *Tradisi pesantren: studi tentang pandangan hidup kyai*. Jakarta: LP3ES, 1982.
- Dick, H. W. *Surabaya, city of work: a socioeconomic history, 1900–2000*. Athens, OH: Ohio University Center for International Studies, Research in International Studies, Southeast Asia Series no. 106, Ohio University Press, 2002.
- Dick, Howard, Vincent J. H. Houben, J. Thomas Lindblad and Thee Kian Wie. *The emergence of a national economy: an economic history of Indonesia, 1800–2000*. Crows Nest NSW and Honolulu: Asian Studies Association of Australia in association with Allen & Unwin and University of Hawai'i Press, 2002.
- Diffee, Bailey W., and George D. Winius. *Foundations of the Portuguese empire, 1415–1580*. Minneapolis, MN: University of Minnesota Press and Oxford University Press, 1977.
- Dijk, C. van. *A country in despair: Indonesia between 1997 and 2000*. Leiden: KITLV Press, 2001.

- ***Rebellion under the banner of Islam: the Darul Islam in Indonesia.*** *VKI* vol. 94. The Hague: Martinus Nijhoff, 1981.
- Din Syamsuddin, M. ‘The Muhammadiyah da‘wah and allocative politics in the New Order Indonesia’. *SI* vol. 2, no.2 (1995), pp. 35–71.
- Djajadiningrat, Hoesein. ‘Critisch overzicht van de in Maleische werken vervatte gegevens over de geschiedenis van het Soeltanaat van Atjeh’. *BKI* vol. 65 (1911), pp. 135–265.
- ***Critische beschouwing van de Sadjarah Bantēn: bijdrage ter kenschetsing van de Javaansche geschiedschrijving.*** Haarlem: Joh. Enschedé en Zonen, 1913.
- Djoko Suryo. ‘Economic crisis and its impact on rural Java: a case study of the Semarang residency in the latter half of the 19th century’, pp. 115–30 in Taufik Abdullah and Sartono Kartodirdjo (eds). ***Papers of the fourth Indonesian–Dutch history conference, 24–29 July 1983.*** 2 vols. Yogyakarta: Gadjah Mada University Press, 1986.
- ***Sejarah sosial pedesaan Karesidenan Semarang 1830–1900.*** Yogyakarta: Pusat Antar Universitas Studi Sosial, Universitas Gadjah Mada, 1989.
- Dobbin, Christine. ‘Accounting for the failure of the Muslim Javanese business class: examples from Ponorogo and Tulungagung (1880–1940)’. *Archipel* no. 48 (1994), pp. 87–101.
- ‘Economic change in Minangkabau as a factor in the rise of the Padri movement, 1784–1830’. *Indonesia* no. 23 (Apr. 1977), pp. 1–38.
- ‘Islamic fervour as a manifestation of regional personality in colonial Indonesia: the Kamang area, West Sumatra, 1803–1908’. *Archipel* no. 56 (1998), pp. 295–317.
- ***Islamic revivalism in a changing peasant economy: central Sumatra, 1784–1847.*** London and Malmö: Curzon, 1983.
- ‘Islamic revivalism in Minangkabau at the turn of the nineteenth century’. *MAS* vol. 8, no. 3 (1974), pp. 319–45.
- ‘Tuanku Imam Bondjol (1772–1864)’. *Indonesia* no. 13 (Apr. 1972), pp. 5–35.
- Doel, H. W. van den. ***De stille macht: het Europese binnenlandse bestuur op Java en Madoera, 1808–1942.*** Amsterdam: Uitgeverij Bert Bakker, 1994.
- Dolk, Liesbeth. ***Twee zielen, twee gedachten: tijdschriften en intellectuelen op Java (1900–1957).*** *VKI* vol. 159. Leiden: KITLV Uitgeverij, 1993.
- Drakard, Jane. ***A kingdom of words: language and power in Sumatra.*** Kuala Lumpur: Oxford University Press, 1999.
- ***A Malay frontier: unity and duality in a Sumatran kingdom.*** Ithaca, NY: Studies on Southeast Asia, Southeast Asia Program, Cornell University, 1990.
- Drake, Christine. ***National integration in Indonesia: patterns and policies.*** Honolulu: University of Hawai’i Press, 1989.
- Drewes, G. W. J. (ed. & trans.). ***The admonitions of Seh Bari.*** The Hague: Martinus Nijhoff, 1969.
- (ed. and trans.). ***An early Javanese code of Muslim ethics.*** The Hague: Martinus Nijhoff, 1978.
- ***Drie Javaansche goeroe’s: hun leven, onderricht en messiasprediking.*** Leiden: Drukkerij A. Vros, 1925.
- (ed. & trans.). ***Een Javaanse primbon uit de zestiende eeuw.*** Leiden: E. J. Brill, 1954.
- ‘New light on the coming of Islam to Indonesia?’ *BKI* vol. 124, no. 4 (1968), pp. 433–59.
- ‘Nūr al-Dīn al-Ranīrī’s charge of heresy against Hamzah and Shamsuddin from an international point of view’, pp. 54–9 in Grijns and Robson (eds), *Cultural contact* (see below).
- and L. F. Brakel (eds and trans.) ***The poems of Hamzah Fansuri.*** Dordrecht and Cinnaminson: Foris, 1986.
- Drooglever, P. J. ***Een daad van vrije keuze: de Papoea’s van westelijk Nieuw-Guinea en de grenzen van het zelfbeschikkingsrecht.*** Amsterdam: Boom, 2005.
- ***De Vaderlandse Club 1929–1942: totoks en de Indische politiek.*** Franeker: Uitgeverij T. Wever BV, 1980.
- Duncan, Christopher R. ‘The other Maluku: chronologies of conflict in North Maluku’. *Indonesia* no. 80 (Oct. 2005), pp. 53–80.
- Dunn, James. ***Timor: a people betrayed.*** Milton, Queensland: Jacaranda, 1983.
- Edmundson, Wade C. ‘Do the rich get richer, the poor get poorer? East Java, two decades, three villages, 46 people’. *BIES* vol. 30, no. 2 (Aug. 1994), pp. 133–48.
- Ekadjati, E. Suhardi. ***Ceritera Dipati Ukur: karya sastra sejarah Sunda.*** Jakarta: Pustaka Jaya, 1982.
- Eklöf, Stefan. ***Power and political culture in Suharto’s Indonesia: The Indonesian Democratic Party (PDI) and decline of the New Order (1986–98).*** Copenhagen: NIAS, 2004.
- Elsbree, Willard H. ***Japan’s role in Southeast Asian nationalist movements, 1940 to 1945.*** Cambridge, MA: Harvard University Press, 1953.
- Elson, Robert. ***The end of the peasantry in Southeast Asia: a social and economic history of peasant livelihood, 1800–1990s.*** Basingstoke, etc.: Macmillan (now Palgrave Macmillan) in association with the Australian National University, Canberra, 1997.
- ‘The famine in Demak and Grobogan in 1849–50: its causes and circumstances’. *RIMA* vol. 19, no. 1 (Winter 1985), pp. 39–85.

- ***The idea of Indonesia: a history.*** Cambridge, etc.: Cambridge University Press, 2007.
- ‘The impact of government sugar cultivation in the Pasuruan area, East Java, during the cultivation system period’. **RIMA** vol. 12, no. 1 (June 1978), pp. 26–55.
- ***Javanese peasants and the colonial sugar industry: impact and change in an East Java residency, 1830–1940.*** Singapore, etc.: Oxford University Press, 1984.
- ***Suharto: a political biography.*** Cambridge: Cambridge University Press, 2001.
- ***Village Java under the cultivation system 1830–1870.*** Sydney: Asian Studies Association of Australia in association with Allen & Unwin, 1994.
- Emmerson, Donald K. (ed.). ***Indonesia beyond Suharto: polity, economy, society, transition.*** Armonk, NY, and London: M. E. Sharpe, 1999.
- Ensinger, Else. ‘Afdeeling B of Sarekat Islam: a rebellious Islamic movement’, pp. 99–122 in Kooiman and van der Veer (eds), ***Conversion, competition and conflict*** (see below).
- Erni Haryanti Kahfi. ‘Islam and Indonesian nationalism: the political thought of Haji Agus Salim’. **SI** vol. 4, no. 3 (1997), pp. 1–63.
- Fasseur, C. ‘The cultivation system and its impact on the Dutch colonial economy and the indigenous society in nineteenth-century Java’, pp. 137–54 in Bayly and Kolff (eds), ***Two colonial empires*** (see above).
- ‘Een koloniale paradox: de Nederlandse expansie in de Indonesische archipel in het midden van de negentiende eeuw (1830–1870)’. **Tijdschrift voor Geschiedenis** vol. 92 (1979), pp. 162–86.
- (ed.). ***Geld en geweten: een bundel opstellen over anderhalve eeuw Nederlands bestuur in de Indonesische archipel.*** 2 vols. Den Haag: Martinus Nijhoff, 1980.
- ***Indischgasten.*** Amsterdam: Uitgeverij Bert Bakker, 1997.
- ***De Indologen: Ambtenaren voor de oost, 1825–1950.*** Amsterdam: Uitgeverij Bert Bakker, 1993.
- ***Kultuurstelsel en koloniale baten: de Nederlandse exploitatie van Java 1840–1860.*** Leiden: Universitaire Pers, 1975.
- ‘Nederland en het Indonesische nationalisme: de balans nog eens opgemaakt’. **Bijdragen en mededelingen betreffende de geschiedenis der Nederlanden** vol. 99, no. 1 (1984), pp. 21–44.
- ‘Organisatie en sociaal-economische betekenis van de gouvernementssuikercultuur in enkele residenties op Java omstreeks 1850’. **BKI** vol. 133, nos. 2–3 (1977), pp. 261–93.
- ***The politics of colonial exploitation: Java, the Dutch and the cultivation system.*** Trans. R. E. Elson and Ary Kraal. Ithaca, NY: Cornell University Southeast Asia Program, 1992.
- ‘Purse or principle: Dutch colonial policy in the 1860s and the decline of the cultivation system’. **MAS** vol. 25 no. 1 (1991), pp. 33–52.
- Fealy, Greg. ***The release of Indonesia’s political prisoners: domestic versus foreign policy, 1975–1979.*** Clayton: Monash University Centre of Southeast Asian Studies Working Paper 94, 1995.
- Fedderspiel, Howard M. ‘The Muhammadiyah: a study of an orthodox Islamic movement in Indonesia’. **Indonesia** no. 10 (Oct. 1970), pp. 57–79.
- ***Islam and ideology in the emerging Indonesian state: the Persatuan Islam (PERSIS), 1923 to 1957.*** Leiden, etc.: Brill, 2001.
- Feener, R. Michael. ***Muslim legal thought in modern Indonesia.*** Cambridge, etc.: Cambridge University Press, 2007.
- Feillard, Andrée. ‘Indonesia’s emerging Muslim feminism: women leaders on equality, inheritance and other gender issues’. **SI** vol. 4, no. 1 (1997), pp. 83–111.
- ***Islam et armée dans l’Indonésie contemporaine: les pionniers de la tradition.*** Cahier d’Archipel 28. Paris: Editions l’Harmattan, Association Archipel, 1995.
- ‘Traditionalist Islam and the state in Indonesia: the road to legitimacy and renewal’, pp. 129–53 in Robert W. Hefner and Patricia Horvatich (eds). ***Islam in an era of nation-states: politics and religious renewal in Muslim Southeast Asia.*** Honolulu: University of Hawai’i Press, 1997.
- Feillard, Andrée, and Rémy Madinier. ***La fin de l’innocence? L’Islam indonésien face à la tentation radicale de 1967 à nos jours.*** Paris: Les Indes Savants & IRASEC, 2006.
- Feith, Herbert. ***The decline of constitutional democracy in Indonesia.*** Ithaca, NY: Cornell University Press, 1962.
- ‘Dynamics of guided democracy’, pp. 309–409 in McVey (ed.), ***Indonesia*** (see below).
- ‘Indonesia’, pp. 183–278 in George McTurnan Kahin (ed.). ***Governments and politics of Southeast Asia.*** 2nd edn. Ithaca, NY: Cornell University Press, 1964.
- Fifield, Russell H. ***The diplomacy of Southeast Asia, 1945–1958.*** New York: Harper & Row, 1958. Reprinted [Hamden, CT:] Archon, 1968.
- ***Southeast Asia in United States policy.*** New York: Praeger, 1963.
- Florida, Nancy. ***Writing the past, inscribing the future: history as prophecy in colonial Java.*** Durham [NC] and London: Duke University Press, 1995.
- Forrester, Geoff, and R. J. May (eds). ***The fall of Soeharto.*** Singapore: Select, 1999.
- Foulcher, Keith R. ‘**Pujangga Baru**’: literature and nationalism in Indonesia 1933–1942 [Adelaide:] Flinders University Asian Studies Monograph no. 2, 1980.

- **Social commitment in literature and the arts: the Indonesian ‘Institute of People’s Culture’ 1950–1965.** Clayton: Centre of Southeast Asian Studies, Monash University, 1986.
- ‘A survey of events surrounding “Manikebu”: the struggle for cultural and intellectual freedom in Indonesian literature’. *BKI* vol. 125, no. 4 (1969), pp. 429–65.
- Fox, James J. ***Harvest of the palm: ecological change in eastern Indonesia.*** Cambridge, MA and London: Harvard University Press, 1977.
- Frederick, William H. ***Visions and heat: the making of the Indonesian Revolution.*** Athens: Ohio University Press, 1989.
- Friend, Theodore. ***The blue-eyed enemy: Japan against the West in Java and Luzon, 1942–1945.*** Princeton: Princeton University Press, 1988.
- Furnivall, J. S. ***Colonial policy and practice: a comparative study of Burma and Netherlands India.*** Cambridge University Press, 1948.
- ***Netherlands India: a study of plural economy.*** Intro. A. C. D. de Graeff. Cambridge University Press, 1939. Reprinted 1967.
- Geertz, Clifford. ***The religion of Java.*** Glencoe: Free Press, 1960.
- Gelderen, J. van. ***The recent development of economic foreign policy in the Netherlands East Indies.*** London, etc.: Longmans, Green, 1939.
- Gerretson, [F.] C. ***Geschiedenis der ‘Koninklijke’.*** 3 vols in 4. Haarlem: J. Enschedé, 1932–41.
- ***History of the Royal Dutch.*** 4 vols. Leiden: E. J. Brill, 1958.
- Giebels, Lambert. ***Soekarno, Nederlandsch onderdaan: biografie 1901–1950.*** Amsterdam: Uitgeverij Bert Bakker, 1999.
- Glamann, Kristof. ***Dutch-Asiatic trade 1620–1740.*** Copenhagen: Danish Science Press; The Hague: Martinus Nijhoff, 1958.
- Godée Molsbergen, E. C. ***Geschiedenis van de Minahassa tot 1829.*** Weltevreden: Landsdrukkerij, 1928.
- Goswami, O. ‘The Depression, 1930–1935: its effects on India and Indonesia’. *Itinerario* vol. 10, no. 1 (1986), pp. 163–76.
- Gould, James W. ***Americans in Sumatra.*** The Hague: Martinus Nijhoff, 1961.
- Graaf, H. J. de (ed.). ***De expeditie van Anthonio Hurdt, Raad van Indië, als Admiraal en Superintendent naar de binnenlanden van Java, Sept-Dec. 1678, volgens het journaal van Johan Jurgen Briel, Secretaris.*** ’s-Gravenhage: Martinus Nijhoff, 1971.
- ‘Gevangenneming en dood van Raden Truna-Djaja, 26 Dec. 1679–2 Jan. 1680’. *TBG* vol. 85, pt. 2 (1952), pp. 273–309.
- ‘De historische betrouwbaarheid der Javaanse overlevering’. *BKI* vol. 112, no. 1 (1956), pp. 55–73.
- ***De moord op Kapitein François Tack, 8 Febr. 1686.*** Amsterdam: H. J. Paris, 1935.
- ***De regering van Panembahan Sénapati Ingala.*** *VKI* vol. 13. ’s-Gravenhage: Martinus Nijhoff, 1954.
- ***De regering van Sultan Agung, vorst van Mataram 1613–1645, en die van zijn voorganger Panembahan Séda-ing-Krapjak 1601–1613.*** *VKI* vol. 23. ’s-Gravenhage: Martinus Nijhoff, 1958.
- ***De regering van Sunan Mangku-Rat I Tegal-Wangi, vorst van Mataram 1646–1677.*** 2 vols. *VKI* vols. 33, 39. ’s-Gravenhage: Martinus Nijhoff, 1961, 1962.
- (ed.). ***De vijf gezantschapsreizen van Rijklof van Goens naar het hof van Mataram, 1648–1654.*** ’s-Gravenhage: Martinus Nijhoff, 1956.
- and Th. G. Th. Pigeaud. ***De eerste Moslimse vorstendommen op Java: studiën over de staatkundige geschiedenis van de 15de en 16de eeuw.*** *VKI* vol. 69. ’s-Gravenhage: Martinus Nijhoff, 1974.
- Greenlees, Don, and Robert Garran. ***Deliverance: the inside story of East Timor’s fight for freedom.*** Crows Nest, NSW: Allen & Unwin, 2002.
- Grijns, C. D., and S. O. Robson (eds). ***Cultural contact and textual interpretation: papers from the fourth European colloquium on Malay and Indonesian studies, held in Leiden in 1983.*** *VKI* vol. 115. Dordrecht and Cinnaminson: Foris, 1986.
- Groeneboer, Kees. ***Weg tot het Westen: het Nederlands voor Indië 1600–1950; een taalpolitieke geschiedenis.*** *VKI* vol. 158. Leiden: KITLV Uitgeverij, 1993.
- Groeneveldt, W. P. ***Notes on the Malay archipelago and Malacca compiled from Chinese sources.*** *VBG* vol. 39, pt. 1 (1877).
- Guillot, C. ***L'affaire Sadrach: un essai de christianisation à Java au XIXe siècle.*** Paris: Editions de la Maison des Sciences de l’Homme, 1981.
- ‘La nécessaire relecture de l’accord luso-soundanais de 1522’. *Archipel* no. 42 (1991), pp. 53–76.
- ‘La politique vivrière de Sultan Ageng (1651–1682)’. *Archipel* no. 50 (1995), pp. 83–118.
- and Ludvig Kalus. ‘La stèle funéraire de Hamzah Fansuri’. ***L’horizon nousantarien: mélange en hommage à Denys Lombard,*** vol. 4. *Archipel* no. 60 (2000), pp. 3–24.
- Lukman Nurhakim and Sonny Wibisono. ***Banten avant l’Islam: étude archéologique de Banten Girang (Java-Indonésie) 932?–1526.*** Monographies no. 173. Paris: Publications de l’École Française d’Extrême-Orient, 1994.

- , — and — **Banten sebelum zaman Islam: Kajian arkeologi di Banten Girang (932?–1526)**. Trans. Winarsih Partaningrat Arifin and Henri Chambert-Loir. Jakarta: Pusat Penelitian Arkeologi Nasional, École Française d'Extrême-Orient, 1996.
- Gullick, J. M. **Indigenous political systems of western Malaya**. London: Athlone, 1958.
- Haan, F. de. **Priangan: de Preanger-Regentschappen onder het Nederlandsch bestuur tot 1811**. 4 vols. [Batavia:] Bataviaasch Genootschap van Kunsten en Wetenschappen, 1910–1912.
- Hadi, Amirul. **Islam and state in Sumatra: a study of seventeenth-century Aceh**. Leiden and Boston: Brill, 2004.
- Hadi Soesastro, M. ‘The political economy of deregulation in Indonesia’. *AS* vol. 29, no. 9 (Sept. 1989), pp. 853–69.
- Hadiwijono, Harun. **Man in the present Javanese mysticism**. Baarn: Bosch & Keuning, 1967.
- Hägerdal, Hans. ‘Bali in the sixteenth and seventeenth centuries: suggestions for a chronology of the Gelgel period.’ *BKI* vol. 151, no. 1 (1995), pp. 101–24.
- **Hindu rulers, Muslim subjects: Lombok and Bali in the seventeenth and eighteenth centuries**. Bangkok: White Lotus Press, 2001.
- Haks, Leo, and Guus Maris (eds). **Lexicon of foreign artists who visualized Indonesia (1600–1950)**. Utrecht: Gert Jan Bestebreurtje, 1995.
- Hamid, Abu. **Syekh Yusuf Makassar: seorang ulama, Sufi dan pejuang**. Jakarta: Yayasan Obor Indonesia, 1994.
- Haris, Syamsuddin, et al. **Indonesia di ambang perpecahan? Kasus Aceh, Riau, Irian Jaya, dan Timor Timur**. Jakarta: Penerbit Erlangga, 1999.
- Harvey, Barbara S. **Pemberontakan Kahar Muzakkar. Dari tradisi ke DI/TII**. Jakarta: Pustaka Utama Grafiti, 1989.
- **Permesta: half a rebellion**. Ithaca, NY: Cornell Modern Indonesia Project Monograph Series, 1977.
- Hasan, Noorhaidi. **Laskar Jihad: Islam, militancy and the quest for identity in post-New Order Indonesia**. Ithaca, NY: Southeast Asia Program Publications, Southeast Asia Program, Cornell University, 2006.
- Hasbullah, Moeflich. ‘Cultural presentation of the Muslim middle class in contemporary Indonesia.’ *SI* vol. 7, no. 2 (2000), pp. 1–58.
- Haspel, C. Ch. van den. **Overwicht in overleg: hervormingen van justitie, grondgebruik en bestuur in de vorstenlanden op Java, 1880–1930. VKI** vol. 111. Dordrecht and Cinnaminson: Foris, 1985.
- Hauswedell, Peter Christian, ‘Sukarno: radical or conservative? Indonesian politics 1964–5’. *Indonesia* no. 15 (Apr. 1973), pp. 109–43.
- Heersink, Christiaan Gerard. **The green gold of Selayar: a socio-economic history of an Indonesian coconut island c.1600–1950; perspectives from a periphery**. Vrije Universiteit te Amsterdam doctoral dissertation, 1995.
- Hefner, Robert W. **Civil Islam: Muslims and democratization in Indonesia**. Princeton and Oxford: Princeton University Press, 2000.
- ‘Islam, state and civil society: ICMI and the struggle for the Indonesian middle class’. *Indonesia* no. 56 (Oct. 1993), pp. 1–35.
- ‘Islamizing Java? Religion and politics in rural east Java’. *JAS* vol. 46, no. 3 (Aug. 1987), pp. 533–54.
- **The political economy of mountain Java: an interpretive history**. Berkeley, etc.: University of California Press, 1990.
- Heinzlmeir, Helmut. **Indonesiens Aussenpolitik nach Sukarno, 1965–1970: Möglichkeiten und Grenzen eines bündnisfreien Entwicklungslandes**. Hamburg: Mitteilungen des Instituts für Asienkunde, 1976.
- Henley, David. **Nationalism and regionalism in a colonial context: Minahasa in the Dutch East Indies**. *VKI* vol. 168. Leiden: KITLV Press, 1996.
- Hering, B. B. ‘Nogmaals de vier brieven van Ir. Soekarno’. *BKI* vol. 145, nos 2–3 (1989) pp. 281–94.
- Hill, A. H. (ed. & trans.). ‘Hikayat Raja-raja Pasai: a revised romanised version of Raffles MS 67, together with an English translation’. *JMBRAS* vol. 33, no. 2 (1960), pp. 1–215.
- Hill, Hal. **The Indonesian economy**. 2nd edn. Cambridge, etc.: Cambridge University Press, 2000.
- (ed.). **Indonesia's new order: the dynamics of socio-economic transformation**. St Leonards, NSW: Allen & Unwin, 1994.
- Hindley, Donald. ‘Alirans and the fall of the old order’. *Indonesia* no. 9 (Apr. 1970), pp. 23–66.
- **The Communist Party of Indonesia, 1951–1963**. Berkeley and Los Angeles: University of California Press, 1966.
- Hinzler, H. I. R. ‘The Balinese babad’, pp. 39–52 in Kartodirdjo (ed.), **Profiles** (see below).
- ‘Moderne Balinese schilderkunst na 1945’. *Aziatische Kunst* vol. 27, no. 4 (Sept. 1997), pp. 2–17.
- ‘Moderne schilderkunst van Bali, 1930–1940’. *Aziatische Kunst* vol. 24, no. 4 (Dec. 1994), pp. 2–20.
- Hisyam, Muhamad. **Caught between three fires: the Javanese pangulu under the Dutch colonial administration 1882–1942**. Jakarta: INIS, 2001.
- Hoadley, Mason C. ‘Javanese, **peranakan** and Chinese elites in Cirebon: changing ethnic boundaries’. *JAS* vol. 47, no. 3 (Aug. 1988), pp. 503–17.
- Holt, Claire. **Art in Indonesia: continuities and change**. Ithaca, NY: Cornell University Press, 1967.
- Honna, Jun. ‘Military ideology in response to democratic pressure during the late Suharto era: political and institutional contexts’. *Indonesia* no. 67 (Apr. 1999), pp. 77–126.
- **Military politics and democratization in Indonesia**. London and New York: RoutledgeCurzon, 2003.

- Hood, Mantle, and José Macea. ***Music***. Handbuch der Orientalistik, dritte Abteilung: Indonesien, Malaysia und die Philippinen unter Einschluss der Kap-Malaien in Südafrika, sechster Band. Leiden and Köln: E. J. Brill, 1972.
- Hooker, Virginia Matheson (ed.). ***Culture and society in new order Indonesia***. Kuala Lumpur, etc.: Oxford University Press, 1993.
- Horikoshi, Hiroko. ‘The Dar ul-Islam movement in West Java (1948–62): an experience in the historical process’. ***Indonesia*** no. 20 (Oct. 1975), pp. 59–86.
- Houben, Vincent J. H. ***Kraton and Kumpeni: Surakarta and Yogyakarta 1830–1870***. ***VKI*** vol. 164. Leiden: KITLV, 1994.
- \_\_\_\_\_, J. Thomas Lindblad et al. ***Coolie labour in colonial Indonesia: a study of labour relations in the outer islands, c.1900–1940***. Wiesbaden: Harrassowitz Verlag, 1999.
- Hourani, Albert. ***Arabic thought in the liberal age, 1798–1939***. London: Oxford University Press, 1970.
- Hugenholtz, W. R. ‘Famine and food supply in Java, 1830–1914’, pp. 155–88 in Bayly and Kolff (eds), ***Two colonial empires*** (see above).
- Hüsken, Frans. ***Een dorp op Java: sociale differentiatie in een boerengemeenschap, 1850–1980***. Overveen: ACASEA, 1988.
- \_\_\_\_\_. ‘Islam and collective action: rural violence in North Central Java in 1942’, pp. 123–54 in Kooiman (ed.), ***Conversion, competition and conflict*** (see below).
- Indonesia: an Amnesty International report***. London: Amnesty International, 1977.
- Indonesia: sebuah laporan Amnesti Internasional***. London: Amnesti International, 1979.
- Ingleson, John. ***In search of justice: workers and unions in colonial Java, 1908–1926***. Singapore, etc.: Oxford University Press, 1986.
- \_\_\_\_\_. ***Road to exile: the Indonesian nationalist movement 1927–1934***. Singapore, etc.: Heinemann Educational (Asia), 1979.
- \_\_\_\_\_. ‘Urban Java during the Depression’. ***JSEAS*** vol. 19, no. 2 (Sept. 1988), pp. 292–309.
- International Crisis Group. ***Al-Qaeda in Southeast Asia: The case of the ‘Ngruki network’ in Indonesia***. Asia briefing. Jakarta/Brussels: International Crisis Group, 8 August 2002.
- \_\_\_\_\_. ***Indonesia’s terrorist network: How Jemaah Islamiyah works***. Jakarta/Brussels: International Crisis Group, 11 December 2002.
- Irwin, Graham. ***Nineteenth-century Borneo: a study in diplomatic rivalry***. Singapore: Donald Moore, 1967. Originally published as ***VKI*** vol. 15 (1955).
- Ito, Takeshi. ‘Why did Nuruddin ar-Raniri leave Aceh in 1054 A.H?’ ***BKI*** vol. 134, no. 4 (1978), pp. 489–91.
- Jack-Hinton, Colin. ‘Marco Polo in South-East Asia’. ***JSEAH*** vol. 5, no. 2 (Sept. 1964), pp. 43–103.
- Jacobs, Hubert (ed.). ***The Jesuit Makasar documents (1615–1682)***. Rome: Jesuit Historical Institute, 1988.
- Jajang Jahroni. ‘Defending the majesty of Islam: Indonesia’s Front Pembela Islam (FPI), 1998–2003.’ ***SI*** vol. 11, no. 2 (2004), pp. 197–256.
- Jassin, H. B. (ed.). ***Amir Hamzah: Radja penjair Pudjangga Baru***. Djakarta: Gunung Agung, 1962.
- \_\_\_\_\_. (ed.). ***Angkatan ’66. Prosa dan puisi***. Djakarta: Gunung Agung, 1968.
- \_\_\_\_\_. (ed.). ***Pudjangga Baru: Prosa dan puisi***. Djakarta: Gunung Agung, 1963.
- Jay, Robert R. ***Religion and politics in rural Central Java***. New Haven: Yale University Southeast Asia Studies Cultural Report Series no. 12, 1963.
- Jedamski, Doris. ‘Balai Pustaka: a colonial wolf in sheep’s clothing’. ***Archipel*** no. 44 (1992), pp. 23–46.
- Jellinek, Lea. ***The wheel of fortune: the history of a poor community in Jakarta***. Sydney, etc.: Asian Studies Association of Australia in association with Allen & Unwin, 1991.
- Jenkins, David. ***Suharto and his generals: Indonesian military politics, 1975–1983***. Ithaca, NY: Cornell Modern Indonesian Project Monograph Series, publication no. 64, 1984.
- Johns, A. H. ‘Islam in Southeast Asia: reflections and new directions’. ***Indonesia*** no. 19 (Apr. 1975), pp. 33–55.
- \_\_\_\_\_. ‘Islamization in Southeast Asia: reflections and reconsiderations with special reference to the role of Sufism’. ***Tonan Ajia Kenkyū (Southeast Asian Studies)*** vol. 31, no. 1 (June 1993), pp. 43–61.
- \_\_\_\_\_. ‘Malay Sufism, as illustrated in an anonymous collection of 17th century tracts’. ***JMBRAS*** vol. 30, pt. 2 (no. 178) (Aug. 1957).
- \_\_\_\_\_. ‘On Qur’anic exegetes and exegesis: a case study in the transmission of Islamic learning’, pp. 3–49 in Peter G. Riddell and Tony Street (eds). ***Islam: essays on scripture, thought and society: a Festschrift in honour of Anthony H. Johns***. Leiden, etc.: Brill, 1997.
- \_\_\_\_\_. ‘Qur’anic exegesis in the Malay world: in search of a profile’, pp. 257–87 in A. Rippin (ed.). ***Approaches to the history of the interpretation of the Qur’an***. Oxford: Oxford University Press, 1988.
- \_\_\_\_\_. ‘Sufism as a category in Indonesian literature and history’. ***JSEAH*** vol. 2, no. 2 (July 1961), pp. 10–23.
- Jolliffe, Jill. ***East Timor: nationalism and colonialism***. St Lucia: University of Queensland Press, 1978.
- Jomo, K. S. (ed.). ***After the storm: Crisis, recovery and sustaining development in four Asian economies***. Singapore: Singapore University Press, 2004.
- Jones, F. C. ***Japan’s new order in East Asia: its rise and fall, 1937–45***. London: Oxford University Press, 1954.
- Jones, Gavin W. ‘Religion and education in Indonesia’. ***Indonesia*** no. 22 (Oct. 1976), pp. 19–56.

- and Terence H. Hull (eds). *Indonesia assessment: population and human resources*. Canberra: Research School of Pacific and Asian Studies, Australian National University; Singapore: Institute of Southeast Asian Studies, 1997.
- Jones, Russell. ‘Ten conversion myths from Indonesia’, pp. 129–58 in Levzion (ed.), *Conversion to Islam* (see below).
- Jonge, Huub de. ‘State formation by contract: the Madurese regency of Sumenep, the VOC, and the Netherlands East Indies, 1680–1883’. *RIMA* vol. 16, no. 2 (1982), pp. 37–58.
- Jorgensen-Dahl, Arnfinn. *Regional organization and order in South-East Asia*. London and Basingstoke: Macmillan (now Palgrave Macmillan), 1982.
- Kahin, Audrey R. ‘The 1927 Communist uprising in Sumatra: a reappraisal’. *Indonesia* no. 62 (Oct. 1996), pp. 19–36.
- (ed.). *Regional dynamics of the Indonesian Revolution: unity from diversity*. Honolulu: University of Hawai’i Press, 1985.
- ‘Repression and regroupment: religious and nationalist organizations in West Sumatra in the 1930s’. *Indonesia* no. 38 (Oct. 1984), pp. 39–54.
- and George McT. Kahin. *Subversion as foreign policy: the secret Eisenhower and Dulles debacle in Indonesia*. New York: New Press, 1995.
- Kahin, George McTurnan. *Nationalism and revolution in Indonesia*. Ithaca, NY: Cornell University Press, 1952.
- Kalus, Ludvik, and Claude Guillot. ‘Réinterprétation des plus anciennes stèles funéraires islamiques nousantariennes: II. La stèle de Leran (Java) date de 475/1082 et les stèles associées.’ *Archipel* no. 67 (2004), pp. 17–36.
- Kartodirdjo, Sartono. *The peasant’s revolt of Banten in 1888, its conditions, course and sequel: a case study of social movements in Indonesia*. VKI vol. 50. ’s-Gravenhage: Martinus Nijhoff, 1966.
- (ed.). *Profiles of Malay culture: historiography, religion and politics*. [Jakarta:] Directorate General of Culture, Ministry of Education and Culture, 1976.
- *Protest movements in rural Java: a study of agrarian unrest in the nineteenth and early twentieth centuries*. Singapore, etc.: Oxford University Press, 1973.
- Kartomi, Margaret J. ‘Music in nineteenth-century Java: a precursor to the twentieth century’. *JSEAS* vol. 21, no. 1 (Mar. 1990), pp. 1–34.
- Kathirithamby-Wells, J. ‘Ahmad Shah ibn Iskandar and the late 17th century “holy war” in Indonesia’. *JMBRAS* vol. 43, pt. 1 (1970), pp. 48–63.
- Kell, Tim. *The roots of Acehnese rebellion 1989–1992*. Ithaca, NY: Cornell Modern Indonesia Project publication no. 74, 1995.
- King, Dwight Y. *Half-hearted reform: electoral institutions and the struggle for democracy in Indonesia*. Westport, CT.: Praeger, 2003.
- Kipp, Rita Smith. *The early years of a Dutch colonial mission: the Karo field*. Ann Arbor: The University of Michigan Press, 1990.
- Klinken, Gerry van. ‘The Maluku wars: bringing society back in’. *Indonesia* no. 71 (Apr. 2001), pp. 1–26.
- Knaap, G. J. *Kruidnagelen en Christenen: de Verenigde Oost-Indische Compagnie en de bevolking van Ambon 1656–1696*. VKI vol. 125. Dordrecht and Providence: Foris, 1987.
- Knight, G. R. ‘“The people’s own cultivation”: rice and second crops in Pekalongan residency, north Java, in the mid-nineteenth century’. *RIMA* vol. 19, no. 1 (Winter 1985), pp. 1–38.
- Kobayashi Yasuko. ‘*Kyai* and Japanese military’. *SI* vol. 4, no. 3 (1997), pp. 65–98. Kooiman, Dick, Otto van den Muijzenberg and Peter van der Veer (eds). *Conversion, competition and conflict: essays on the role of religion in Asia*. Amsterdam: Free University Press, 1984.
- Korte, J. P. de. *De jaarlijkse financiële verantwoording in de Verenigde Oostindische Compagnie*. Leiden: Martinus Nijhoff, 1984.
- Korver, A. P. E. *Sarekat Islam 1912–1916: opkomst, bloei en structuur van Indonesië’s eerste massabeweging*. Amsterdam: Historisch Seminarium van de Universiteit van Amsterdam, 1982.
- Kraan, Alfons van der. *Bali at war: a history of the Dutch–Balinese conflict of 1846–49*. Monash Paper no. 34. [Clayton: Monash University Centre of Southeast Asian Studies, 1995.]
- *Lombok: conquest, colonization and underdevelopment, 1870–1940*. Singapore, etc.: Heinemann Educational (Asia), 1980.
- Kratz, E. U. ‘Islamic attitudes toward modern Indonesian literature’, pp. 60–93 in Grijns and Robson (eds), *Cultural contact* (see above).
- (ed.). *Sumber terpilih sejarah sastra Indonesia abad XX*. Jakarta: KPG (Kepustakaan Populer Gramedia), Yayasan Adikarya IKAPI and The Ford Foundation, 2000.
- Kraus, Werner. ‘Transformations of a religious community: the Shattariyya Sufi brotherhood in Aceh’, pp. 169–89 in Sri Kuhnt-Saptodewo, Volker Grabowsky and Martin Grossheim (eds). *Nationalism and cultural revival in Southeast Asia: perspectives from the centre and the region*. Wiesbaden: Harrassowitz Verlag, 1997.
- *Zwischen Reform und Rebellion: über die Entwicklung des Islams in Minangkabau (Westsumatra) zwischen den beiden Reformsbewegungen der Padri (1837) und der Modernisten (1908): ein Beitrag zur*

- Geschichte der Islamisierung Indonesiens.** Beiträge zur Südasiensforschung Südasiens-Institut Universität Heidelberg, Band 89. Wiesbaden: Franz Steiner Verlag, 1984.
- Krom, N. J. **Gouverneur Generaal Gustaaf Willem van Imhoff.** Amsterdam: P. N. van Kampen & Zoon, 1941.
- **Hindoe-Javaansche geschiedenis.** 2nd edn. 's-Gravenhage: Martinus Nijhoff, 1931.
- Kühne, Dietrich. **Bevölkerungs- und Beschäftigungsentwicklung in den ASEANLändern seit 1960.** Hamburg: Mitteilungen des Instituts für Asienkunde, 1975.
- Kumar, Ann. 'Javanese court society and politics in the late eighteenth century: the record of a lady soldier. Part I: The religious, social, and economic life of the court'. *Indonesia* no. 29 (April 1980), pp. 1–46.
- 'Javanese court society and politics in the late eighteenth century: the record of a lady soldier. Part II: Political developments: the courts and the Company, 1784–1791'. *Indonesia* no. 30 (Oct. 1980), pp. 67–111.
- (ed. & trans.) **Surapati, man and legend: a study of three babad traditions.** Leiden: E. J. Brill, 1976.
- 'The "Suryengalagan affair" of 1883 and its successors: born leaders in changed times'. *BKI* vol. 138, nos 2–3 (1982), pp. 251–84.
- Kunst, J. **Music in Java: its history, its theory and its technique.** 3rd enlarged edn, ed. E. L. Heins. 2 vols. The Hague: Martinus Nijhoff, 1973.
- Kuntowijoyo (Kuntowidjojo). 'Economic and religious attitudes of entrepreneurs in a village industry: notes on the community of Batur'. Trans. Mitsuo Nakamura. *Indonesia* no. 12 (Oct. 1971), pp. 47–55.
- 'Islam and politics: the local Sarekat Islam movements in Madura, 1913–20', pp. 108–38 in Abdullah and Siddique (eds), *Islam and society in Southeast Asia* (see above).
- **Perubahan sosial dalam masyarakat agraris: Madura, 1850–1940.** Jogjakarta: Mata Bangsa, 2002.
- 'Sikap ekonomi dan keagamaan pengusaha didesa industri: Komentar tentang masjarakat Batur'. *Buletin Fakultas Sastra dan Kebudajaan* no. 4 (1971), pp. 163–72.
- Kurasawa, Aiko. **Mobilisasi dan kontrol: studi tentang perubahan sosial di pedesaan Jawa 1942–1945.** Jakarta: Yayasan Karti Sarana & Penerbit PT Gramedia Widiasarana Indonesia, 1993.
- 'Propaganda media on Java under the Japanese 1942–1945'. *Indonesia* no. 44 (Oct. 1987), pp. 59–116.
- Kwantes, R. C. 'Ir. Soekarno's vier brieven'. *BKI* vol. 143, nos 2–3 (1987), pp. 293–311.
- Kwee Hui Kian. **The political economy of Java's northeast coast c.1740–1800.** Leiden and Boston: Brill, 2006.
- Laffan, Michael Francis. **Islamic nationhood and colonial Indonesia: the umma below the winds.** London and New York: RoutledgeCurzon, 2003.
- Langenberg, Michael van. 'North Sumatra 1942–1945: the onset of a national revolution', pp. 33–64 in McCoy (ed.), *Southeast Asia under Japanese occupation* (see below).
- Lapian, A. B., and Anthony Day (eds). **Papers of the Dutch–Indonesian historical conference held at Noordwijkerhout, the Netherlands, 19 to 22 May 1976.** Leiden and Jakarta: Bureau of Indonesian Studies, 1978.
- Larson, George D. **Prelude to revolution: palaces and politics in Surakarta, 1912–1942.** VKI vol. 124. Dordrecht and Providence: Foris, 1987.
- Latif, Yudi. **Inteligensia Muslim dan kuasa: genealogi inteligensia Muslim Indonesia abad ke-20.** Bandung: Mizan, 2005.
- Lee Kam Hing. 'The Taman Siswa in postwar Indonesia'. *Indonesia* no. 25 (Apr. 1978), pp. 41–59.
- Legge, John D. '**Daulat Ra'jat** and the ideas of Pendidikan Nasional Indonesia'. *Indonesia* no. 32 (Oct. 1981), pp. 151–68.
- **Intellectuals and nationalism in Indonesia: a study of the following recruited by Sutan Sjahrir in occupation Jakarta.** [Ithaca, NY:] Cornell Modern Indonesia Project Monograph Series, 1988.
- **Sukarno: a political biography.** 2nd edn. Sydney, etc.: Allen & Unwin, 1985.
- Leirissa, R. Z. **PRRI Permesta: strategi membangun Indonesia tanpa komunis.** Jakarta: Pustaka Utama Grafiti, 1991.
- Lev, Daniel S. **The transition to guided democracy: Indonesian politics 1957–1959.** Ithaca, NY: Cornell Modern Indonesia Project Monograph Series, 1966.
- Levtzion, Nehemia (ed.). **Conversion to Islam.** New York and London: Holmes & Meier, 1979.
- Levyssohn Norman, H. D. **De Britsche heerschappij over Java en onderhoorigheden (1811–1816).** 's-Gravenhage: Gebroeders Belinfante, 1857.
- Lewis, Dianne. **Jan Compagnie in the Straits of Malacca, 1641–1795.** Athens, OH: Ohio University Center for International Studies, 1995.
- Liddle, R. William. 'The relative autonomy of the third world politician: Soeharto and Indonesian economic development in comparative perspective'. *International Studies Quarterly* vol. 35 (1991), pp. 403–27.
- Lindblad, J. Thomas. **Between Dayak and Dutch: the economic history of Southeast Kalimantan, 1880–1942.** VKI vol. 134. Dordrecht and Providence: Foris, 1988.
- (ed.). **Historical foundations of a national economy in Indonesia, 1890s–1990s.** Koninklijke Nederlandse Akademie van Wetenschappen Verhandelingen, Afd. Letterkunde, nieuwe reeks 167. Amsterdam, etc.: North-Holland, 1996.
- Lindsey, Tim. 'Indonesian constitutional reform: muddling towards democracy.' *Singapore Journal of International and Comparative Law* vol. 6 (2002), pp. 244–301.

- Liu, Hong. 'Pramoedya Ananta Toer and China: the transformation of a cultural intellectual'. *Indonesia* no. 61 (Apr. 1996), pp. 119–43.
- Locher-Scholten, Elsbeth. *Sumatraans Sultanaat en koloniale staat: de relatie Djambi-Batavia (1830–1907) en het Nederlandse imperialisme*. VKI vol. 161. Leiden: KITLV Uitgeverij, 1994.
- Lombard, Denys. *Le carrefour javanais: essai d'histoire globale*. 3 vols. Paris: Editions de l'École des Hautes Études en Sciences Sociales, 1990.
- — — *Le Sultanat d'Atjéh au temps d'Iskandar Muda, 1607–1636*. Paris: École Française d'Extrême-Orient, 1967.
- Louw, P. J. F. *De derde Javaansche successie-oorlog (1746–1755)*. Batavia: Albrecht & Rusche; 's Hage: Martinus Nijhoff, 1889.
- — — and E. S. de Klerck. *De Java-oorlog van 1825–30*. 6 vols. 's Hage: Martinus Nijhoff, Batavia: Landsdrukkerij, 1894–1909.
- Lowry, Robert. *The armed forces of Indonesia*. St Leonards, NSW: Allen & Unwin, 1996.
- Lucas, Anton. *One soul, one struggle: region and revolution in Indonesia*. Sydney: Asian Studies Association of Australia in association with Allen & Unwin, 1991.
- — — *Peristiwa tiga daerah: revolusi dalam revolusi*. Intro. Sartono Kartodirdjo. Jakarta: Pustaka Utama Grafiti, 1989.
- — — 'Social revolution in Pemalang, Central Java, 1945'. *Indonesia* no. 24 (Oct. 1977), pp. 87–122.
- Ma Huan. *Ying-yai sheng-lan: 'The overall survey of the ocean's shores' (1433)*. Ed. and trans. J. V. G. Mills. Cambridge University Press, 1970.
- McCoy, Alfred W. (ed.). *Southeast Asia under Japanese occupation*. [New Haven:] Yale University Southeast Asia Studies Monograph Series no. 22, 1980.
- McDonald, Barbara. *Old Javanese literature in eighteenth-century Java: a consideration of the processes of transmission*. Clayton: Monash University Centre of Southeast Asian Studies Working Paper no. 41 [1986].
- McDonald, Hamish. *Suharto's Indonesia*. Sydney: Fontana/Collins, 1980.
- McIntyre, Angus. 'Divisions and power in the Indonesian National Party, 1965–1966'. *Indonesia* no. 13 (Apr. 1972), pp. 183–210.
- Mackie, J. A. C. *Konfrontasi: the Indonesia–Malaysia dispute, 1963–1966*. Kuala Lumpur, etc.: Oxford University Press, 1974.
- — — *Problems of the Indonesian inflation*. Ithaca, NY: Cornell Modern Indonesia Project Monograph Series, 1967.
- McMahon, Robert J. *Colonialism and Cold War: the United States and the struggle for Indonesian independence, 1945–1949*. Ithaca, NY: Cornell University Press, 1981.
- McVey, Ruth T. 'Faith as the outsider: Islam in Indonesian politics', pp. 199–225 in James P. Piscator (ed.). *Islam in the political process*. Cambridge, etc.: Cambridge University Press in association with the Royal Institute of International Affairs, 1983.
- — — (ed.). *Indonesia*. New Haven: HRAF, 1963.
- — — 'The post-revolutionary transformation of the Indonesian army'. *Indonesia*, no. 11 (Apr. 1971), pp. 131–76; no. 13 (Apr. 1972), pp. 147–81.
- — — *The rise of Indonesian Communism*. Ithaca, NY: Cornell University Press, 1965.
- — — 'Taman Siswa and the Indonesian national awakening'. *Indonesia* no. 4 (Oct. 1967), pp. 128–49.
- Maddison, Angus, and Gé Prince (eds). *Economic growth in Indonesia 1820–1940*. VKI vol. 137. Dordrecht and Providence: Foris, 1989.
- Makmur Makka, A. *BJH: Bacharuddin Jusuf Habibie, his life and career*. 3rd edn. [Jakarta:] PT Pustaka CIDESINDO, 1996.
- Mansoer, M. D., et al. *Sedjarah Minangkabau*. Djakarta: Bhratara, 1970.
- Mansurnoor, Iik Arifin. *Islam in an Indonesian world: ulama of Madura*. Yogyakarta: Gadjah Mada University Press, 1990.
- Marle, A. van. 'Indonesian electoral geography under Orla and Orba', pp. 37–59 in Oey (ed.), *Indonesia after the 1971 elections* (see below).
- Maronier, J. H. *Pictures of the tropics: a catalogue of drawings, water-colours, paintings and sculptures in the collection of the Royal Institute of Linguistics and Anthropology in Leiden*. 's-Gravenhage: Martinus Nijhoff, 1967.
- Masselman, George. *The cradle of colonialism*. New Haven and London: Yale University Press, 1963.
- Matheson, Virginia. 'Questions arising from a nineteenth century Riau syair'. *RIMA* vol. 17 (1983), pp. 1–61.
- Meiden, G. W. van der. 'A Turkish mediator between Mangkubumi and the Dutch East India Company (1753–1754)'. *RIMA* vol. 15, no. 2 (1981), pp. 92–107.
- Meilink-Roelofsz, M. A. P. *Asian trade and European influence in the Indonesian archipelago between 1500 and about 1630*. The Hague: Martinus Nijhoff, 1962.
- Miert, Hans van. *Een koel hoofd en een warm hart: nationalisme, Javanisme en jeugdbeweging in Nederlands-Indië, 1918–1930*. Amsterdam: De Bataafsche Leeuw, 1995.
- Mietzner, Marcus. *The politics of military reform in post-Suharto Indonesia: Elite conflict, nationalism, and institutional resistance*. Policy Studies 23. Washington: East–West Centre, 2006.

- Mobini-Kesheh, Natalie. *The Hadrami awakening: community and identity in the Netherlands East Indies, 1900–1942*. Ithaca, NY: Cornell University Southeast Asia Program, 1999.
- Mody, Nawaz B. *Indonesia under Suharto*. New York: Apt, 1987.
- Moertono, Soemarsaid. *State and statecraft in old Java: a study of the later Mataram period, 16th to 19th century*. Revised edn. Ithaca, NY: Cornell Modern Indonesia Project Monograph Series, 1981.
- Montana, Suwedi. ‘Nouvelles données sur les royaumes de Lamuri et Barat’. *Archipel* no. 53 (1997), pp. 85–95.
- Moore, Samuel. ‘The Indonesian military’s last years in East Timor: an analysis of its secret documents.’ *Indonesia* no. 72 (Oct. 2001), pp. 9–44.
- Morfit, Michael. ‘Pancasila: the Indonesian state ideology according to the new order government’. *AS* vol. 21, no. 8 (Aug. 1981), pp. 838–51.
- Mortimer, Rex. *Indonesian Communism under Sukarno: ideology and politics, 1959–1965*. Ithaca, NY and London: Cornell University Press, 1974.
- Mossman, James. *Rebels in paradise: Indonesia’s civil war*. London: Jonathan Cape, 1961.
- Mote, Octavianus, and Danielyn Rutherford. ‘From Irian Jaya to Papua: the limits of primordialism in Indonesia’s troubled east.’ *Indonesia* no. 72 (Oct. 2001), pp. 115–40.
- Mozingo, D. *Chinese policy toward Indonesia, 1949–1967*. Ithaca, NY and London: Cornell University Press, 1976.
- Mrázek, Rudolf. *Sjahrir: politics and exile in Indonesia*. Ithaca, NY: Cornell University Southeast Asia Program, 1994.
- Mulder, Niels. *Mysticism and everyday life in contemporary Java: cultural persistence and change*. Singapore: Singapore University Press, 1978.
- Mulyadi, M. Hari, Soedarmono et al. *Runtuhnya kekuasaan ‘Kraton Alit’: studi radikalasi sosial ‘wong Sala’ dan kerusuhan Mei 1998 di Surakarta*. Solo: Lembaga Pengembangan Teknologi Pedesaan, 1999.
- Munhanif, Ali. ‘The khittah of 1926 reexamined: views of the NU in post-Cipasung congress’. *SI* vol. 3, no. 2 (1996), pp. 85–119.
- Murni Djamal. ‘The origin of the Islamic reform movement in Minangkabau: life and thought of Abdul Karim Amrullah’. *SI* vol. 5, no. 3 (1998), pp. 1–45.
- Mustopo, Moehamad Habib. *Kebudayaan Islam di Jawa Timur: kajian beberapa unsur budaya masa peralihan*. Yogyakarta: Jendela, 2001.
- Naerssen, F. H. van, and R. C. de Jongh. *The economic and administrative history of early Indonesia*. Handbuch der Orientalistik, dritte Abteilung; Indonesien, Malaysia und die Philippinen unter Einschluss der Kap-Malaien in Südafrika, siebenter Band. Leiden and Köln: E. J. Brill, 1977.
- Nagazumi Akira. *The dawn of Indonesian nationalism: the early years of the Budi Utomo, 1908–1918*. Tokyo: Institute of Developing Economies, 1972.
- Nagtegaal, Luc. *Riding the Dutch tiger: the Dutch East Indies Company and the northeast coast of Java, 1680–1743*. *VKI* vol. 171, Leiden: KITLV, 1996.
- . *Rijden op een Hollandse tijger: de noordkust van Java en de V. O. C. 1680–1743*. Rijksuniversiteit te Utrecht doctoral thesis, 1988.
- Nakahara, M. ‘Muslim merchants in Nan-Hai’, pp. 1–10 in Raphael Israeli and Anthony H. Johns (eds). *Islam in Asia*, vol. II: *Southeast and East Asia*. Jerusalem: Magnes Press, Hebrew University, 1984.
- Nakamura, Mitsuo. *The crescent arises over the banyan tree: a study of the Muhammadiyah movement in a central Javanese town*. Yogyakarta: Gadjah Mada University Press, 1983.
- Nasution, A. H. *Sekitar perang kemerdekaan Indonesia*. 11 vols. Bandung: Penerbit Angkasa, 1977–9.
- Niemeijer, Hendrik E. *Batavia: een koloniale samenleving in de zeventiende eeuw*. [Amsterdam:] Uitgeverij Balans, 2005.
- Nieuwenhuijze, C. A. O. van. *Šamsu'l-Dīn van Pasai: bijdrage tot de kennis der Sumatraansche mystiek*. Leiden: E. J. Brill, 1945.
- Nishihara, Masashi. *Golkar and the Indonesian elections of 1971*. Ithaca, NY: Cornell Modern Indonesia Project Monograph Series, 1972.
- Noer, Deliar. *The Modernist Muslim movement in Indonesia, 1900–1942*. Singapore, etc.: Oxford University Press, 1973.
- . *Mohammad Hatta: biographi politik*. Jakarta: LP3ES, 1990.
- . *Partai Islam di pentas nasional: kisah dan analisis perkembangan politik Indonesia 1945–1965*. Bandung: Penerbit Mizan, 1420/2000.
- Noorduyn, J. *Een achttiende-eeuwse kroniek van Wadjo': Buginese historiografie*. 's-Gravenhage: H. L. Smits, 1955.
- . ‘Arung Singkang (1700–1765): how the victory of Wadjo’ began’. *Indonesia* no. 13 (Apr. 1972), pp. 61–8.
- . (ed.). *Bima en Sumbawa: bijdragen tot de geschiedenis van de Sultanaten Bima en Sumbawa door A. Ligvoet en G. P. Rouffaer*. *VKI* vol. 129. Dordrecht and Providence: Foris, 1987.
- . ‘De Islamisering van Makasar’. *BKI* vol. 112, no. 3 (1956), pp. 247–66.
- . ‘Majapahit in the fifteenth century’. *BKI* vol. 134, nos. 2–3 (1978), pp. 207–74.
- . ‘Origins of South Celebes historical writing’, pp. 137–55 in Soedjatmoko et al. (eds). *An introduction to*

- Indonesian historiography.** Ithaca, NY: Cornell University Press, 1965.
- Nugraha, Iskandar P. **Mengikis batas timur dan barat: gerakan Theosofi & nasionalisme Indonesia.** Jakarta: Komunitas Bambu, 2001.
- Nugroho Notosusanto. ‘Soedirman: panglima yang menepati janjinya’, pp. 47–62 in Taufik Abdullah et al. (eds). **Manusia dalam kemelut sejarah.** Jakarta: Lembaga Penelitian, Pendidikan dan Penerangan Ekonomi dan Sosial, 1978.
- Oates, William A. ‘The afdeeling B: an Indonesian case study’. **JSEAH** vol. 9, no. 1 (Mar. 1968), pp. 107–16.
- Oey Hong Lee (ed.). **Indonesia after the 1971 elections.** London and Kuala Lumpur: Oxford University Press, 1974.
- Olthof, W. L. (ed. & trans.). **Babad Tanah Djawi in proza: Javaansche geschiedenis.** 2 vols. ’s-Gravenhage: M. Nijhoff, 1941.
- O’Malley, William J. ‘Indonesia in the Great Depression: a study of East Sumatra and Jogjakarta in the 1930’s’. Cornell University Ph.D. thesis, Ann Arbor: University Microfilms, 1977.
- ‘The Pakempalan Kawulo Ngajogjakarta: an official report on the Jogjakarta People’s Party of the 1930’s’. **Indonesia** no. 26 (Oct. 1978), pp. 111–58.
- Osborne, Robin. **Indonesia’s secret war: the guerilla struggle in Irian Jaya.** Sydney, etc.: Allen & Unwin, 1985.
- Ota Atsushi. **Changes of regime and social dynamics in West Java: Society, state and the outer world of Banten, 1750–1830.** Leiden and Boston: E. J. Brill, 2006.
- Paget, Roger K. ‘The military in Indonesian politics: the burden of power’. **Pacific Affairs** vol. 40, nos. 3–4 (Fall and Winter 1968), pp. 294–314.
- Parry, J. H. **Europe and a wider world.** London: Hutchinson, 1949. Reprinted as **The establishment of the European hegemony, 1415–1715.** New York and Evanston: Harper & Row, 1961.
- Paulus, J., et al. (eds). **Encyclopaedie van Nederlandsch-Indië.** 8 vols. ’s-Gravenhage: Martinus Nijhoff; Leiden: E. J. Brill, 1917–40.
- Pelras, Christian. **The Bugis.** Oxford: Blackwell, 1996.
- ‘Les premières données occidentales concernant Célèbes-Sud’. **BKI** vol. 133, nos. 2–3 (1977), pp. 227–60.
- ‘Religion, tradition and the dynamics of Islamization in South Sulawesi’. **Archipel** no. 29 (1985), pp. 107–35.
- Pelzer, Karl J. **Planters against peasants: the agrarian struggle in East Sumatra 1947–1958.** **VKI** vol. 97. ’s-Gravenhage: Martinus Nijhoff, 1982.
- **Planter and peasant: colonial policy and the agrarian struggle in East Sumatra, 1863–1947.** **VKI** vol. 84. ’s-Gravenhage: Martinus Nijhoff, 1978.
- Penders, C. L. M., and Ulf Sundhaussen. **Abdul Haris Nasution: a political biography.** St Lucia, etc.: University of Queensland Press, 1985.
- Perret, Daniel. **La formation d’un paysage ethnique: Batak et Malais de Sumatra Nord-Est.** Monographies no. 179. Paris: Presses de l’École Française d’Extrême-Orient, 1995.
- Perthus, Max. **Henk Sneevliet: revolutionair-socialist in Europa en Azië.** Nijmegen: Socialistiese Uitgeverij Nijmegen, 1976.
- Piekaar, A. J. **Atjeh en de oorlog met Japan.** ’s-Gravenhage and Bandung: Hoeve, 1949.
- Pigeaud, Theodore G. Th. **Java in the 14th century: a study in cultural history.** 5 vols. The Hague: Martinus Nijhoff, 1960–3.
- **Literature of Java: catalogue raisonné of Javanese manuscripts in the library of the University of Leiden and other public collections in the Netherlands.** 4 vols. The Hague: Martinus Nijhoff; Leiden: Bibliotheca Universitatis Lugduni Batavorum; Leiden University Press, 1967–80.
- and H. J. de Graaf. **Islamic states in Java, 1500–1700: eight Dutch books and articles by Dr H. J. de Graaf, as summarised by Theodore G. Th. Pigeaud, with a comprehensive list of sources and a general index of names composed by H. J. de Graaf.** **VKI** vol. 70. The Hague: Martinus Nijhoff, 1976.
- Pijper, G. F. **Studiën over de geschiedenis van de Islam in Indonesia, 1900–1950.** Leiden: E. J. Brill, 1977.
- Pluvier, J. M. **Overzicht van de ontwikkeling der nationalistische beweging in Indonesië in de jaren 1930 tot 1942.** ’s-Gravenhage and Bandung: W. van Hoeve, 1953.
- Poeze, Harry A. ‘Early Indonesian emancipation: Abdul Rivai, van Heutz and the *Bintang Hindia*’. **BKI** vol. 145, no. 1 (1989), pp. 87–106.
- **Tan Malaka. Strijder voor Indonesië’s vrijheid: levensloop van 1897 tot 1945.** **VKI** vol. 78. ’s-Gravenhage: Martinus Nijhoff, 1976.
- Poffenberger, Mark. ‘Rethinking Indonesian forest policy’. **AS** vol. 37, no. 5 (May 1997), pp. 453–69.
- Porter, Donald J. **Managing politics and Islam in Indonesia.** London & New York: RoutledgeCurzon, 2002.
- Post, Peter, and Elly Touwen-Bouwsma (eds). **Japan, Indonesia and the war: myths and realities.** **BKI** vol. 152, no. 4 (1996).
- Prapañca. **Deśawarṇāna (Nāgarakrtāgama).** Trans. Stuart Robson. **VKI** vol. 169. Leiden: KITLV, 1995.
- Pringgodigdo, A. K. **Geschiedenis der ondernemingen van het Mangkoenagorosche rijk.** ’s-Gravenhage: Martinus Nijhoff, 1950.
- Pringle, Robert. **Rajahs and rebels: the Ibans of Sarawak under Brooke rule, 1841–1941.** Ithaca, NY: Cornell University Press, 1970.

- Purdey, Jemma. *Anti-Chinese violence in Indonesia, 1996–1999*. Singapore: Asian Studies Association of Australia in association with Singapore University Press; Honolulu: University of Hawai'i Press in association with Asian Studies Association of Australia, 2006.
- Reeve, David. ‘Sukarnoism and Indonesia’s “functional group” state’. Part one: ‘Developing Indonesian democracy’, *RIMA* vol. 12, no. 2 (1978), pp. 43–94. Part two: ‘Implementing “Indonesian democracy”’, *RIMA* vol. 13, no. 1 (1979), pp. 53–115.
- Reid, Anthony. ‘An “age of commerce” in Southeast Asian history’. *MAS* vol. 24, no. 1 (1990), pp. 1–30.
- ‘Australia’s hundred days in South Sulawesi’, pp. 201–24 in David P. Chandler and M. C. Ricklefs (eds). *Nineteenth and twentieth century Indonesia: essays in honour of Professor J. D. Legge*. Clayton: Centre of Southeast Asian Studies, Monash University, 1986.
- ‘The birth of the Republic in Sumatra’. *Indonesia* no. 12 (Oct. 1971), pp. 21–46.
- *The blood of the people: revolution and the end of traditional rule in northern Sumatra*. Kuala Lumpur, etc.: Oxford University Press, 1979.
- *The contest for North Sumatra: Atjeh, the Netherlands and Britain, 1858–1898*. London, etc.: Oxford University Press, 1969.
- ‘Indonesia: from briefcase to samurai sword’, pp. 16–32 in McCoy (ed.), *Southeast Asia under Japanese occupation* (see above).
- *The Indonesian national revolution, 1945–1950*. Hawthorn, Vic.: Longman, 1974.
- ‘The Japanese occupation and rival Indonesian elites: Northern Sumatra in 1942’. *JAS* vol. 35, no. 1 (Nov. 1975), pp. 49–61.
- *Perjuangan rakyat: revolusi dan hancurnya kerajaan di Sumatra*. Jakarta: Pustaka Sinar Harapan, 1987.
- ‘The pre-colonial economy of Indonesia’. *BIES* vol. 20, no. 2 (Aug. 1984), pp. 151–67.
- ‘The rise of Makassar’. *RIMA* vol. 17 (Winter/Summer 1983), pp. 117–60.
- ‘The seventeenth-century crisis in Southeast Asia’. *MAS* vol. 24, no. 4 (1990), pp. 639–59.
- *Southeast Asia in the age of commerce 1450–1680*. 2 vols. New Haven and London: Yale University Press, 1988–93.
- and Lance Castles (eds). *Pre-colonial state systems in Southeast Asia: the Malay Peninsula, Sumatra, Bali-Lombok, South Celebes*. Kuala Lumpur: Monographs of the Malaysian Branch of the Royal Asiatic Society no. 6, 1975.
- Remmelink, Willem. *The Chinese War and the collapse of the Javanese state, 1725–1743*. *VKI* vol. 162. Leiden: KITLV, 1994.
- Ricklefs, M. C. ‘Banten and the Dutch in 1619: six early “pasar Malay” letters’. *BSOAS* vol. 39, pt. 1 (1976), pp. 128–36.
- ‘A consideration of three versions of the *Babad Tanah Djawi*, with excerpts on the fall of Madjapahit’. *BSOAS* vol. 35, pt. 2 (1972), pp. 285–315.
- ‘Dipanagara’s early inspirational experience’. *BKI* vol. 130, nos 2–3 (1974), pp. 227–58.
- ‘Islamising Java: the long shadow of Sultan Agung’. *Archipel* no. 56 (1998), pp. 469–82.
- *Jogjakarta under Sultan Mangkubumi, 1749–1792: a history of the division of Java*. London, etc.: Oxford University Press, 1974.
- *Modern Javanese historical tradition: a study of an original Kartasura chronicle and related materials*. London: School of Oriental and African Studies, 1978.
- *Mystic synthesis in Java: A history of Islamisation from the fourteenth to the early nineteenth centuries*. Norwalk: EastBridge, 2006.
- *Polarising Javanese society: Islamic and other visions c.1830–1930*. Singapore: Singapore University Press; Honolulu: University of Hawai'i Press; Leiden: KITLV Press, 2007.
- *The seen and unseen worlds in Java, 1726–49: history, literature and Islam in the court of Pakubuwana II*. Honolulu: Asian Studies Association of Australia in association with Allen & Unwin and University of Hawai'i Press, 1998.
- ‘Some statistical evidence on Javanese social, economic and demographic history in the later seventeenth and eighteenth centuries’. *MAS* vol. 20, no. 1 (1986), pp. 1–32.
- ‘Unity and disunity in Javanese political and religious thought of the eighteenth century’. *MAS* vol. 26, no. 4 (1992), pp. 663–78.
- *War, culture and economy in Java, 1677–1726: Asian and European imperialism in the early Kartasura period*. Sydney: Asian Studies Association of Australia in association with Allen & Unwin, 1993.
- ‘The Yasadipura problem’. *BKI* vol. 153, no. 2 (1997), pp. 173–83.
- Riddell, Peter. ‘Earliest Qur’anic exegetical activity in the Malay-speaking states’. *Archipel* no. 38 (1989), pp. 107–24.
- Robinson, Geoffrey. *The dark side of paradise: political violence in Bali*. Ithaca, NY and London: Cornell University Press, 1995.
- ‘Rawan is as rawan does: the origins of disorder in new order Aceh’. *Indonesia* no. 66 (Oct. 1998), pp. 127–56.

- Robinson, Kathy. 'Living in the hutan: jungle village life under the Darul Islam'. *RIMA* vol. 17 (Winter/Summer 1983), pp. 208–29.
- Robison, Richard. *Indonesia: the rise of capital*. North Sydney: Allen & Unwin, 1986.
- and Vedi R. Hadiz. *Reorganising power in Indonesia: the politics of oligarchy in an age of markets*. London and New York: RoutledgeCurzon, 2004.
- Robson, S. O. (ed. & trans.). *Wangbang Widaya: a Javanese Panji romance*. The Hague: Martinus Nijhoff, 1971.
- (ed. and trans.). *The Wedhatama: an English translation*. KITLV Working Paper no. 4. Leiden: KITLV, 1990.
- Rocamora, J. Eliseo. 'The Partai Nasional Indonesia, 1963–1965'. *Indonesia* no. 10 (Oct. 1970), pp. 143–81.
- Rockhill, W. W. 'Notes on the relations and trade of China with the eastern archipelago and the coast of the Indian Ocean during the fourteenth century'. *T'oung Pao*, vol. 14 (1913), pp. 473–6; vol. 15 (1914), pp. 419–47; vol. 16 (1915), pp. 61–159, 236–71, 374–92, 435–67, 604–26.
- Roff, William R. *The origins of Malay nationalism*. London and New Haven: Yale University Press, 1967.
- Roosa, John. *Pretext for mass murder: The September 30th movement and Suharto's coup d'état in Indonesia*. Madison: The University of Wisconsin Press, 2006.
- Rose, Mavis. *Indonesia free: a political biography of Mohammad Hatta*. Ithaca, NY: Cornell Modern Indonesia Project Monograph Series no. 67, 1987.
- Rouffaer, G. P. 'Vorstenlanden'. *Adatrechtbundles* vol. 34, pp. 233–378.
- Ruiter, Tine. 'The Tegal revolt in 1864', pp. 81–98 in Kooiman (ed.), *Conversion, competition and conflict* (see above).
- Runciman, Steven. *The white rajahs: a history of Sarawak from 1841 to 1946*. Cambridge: Cambridge University Press, 1960.
- Rush, James R. *Opium to Java: revenue farming and Chinese enterprise in colonial Indonesia, 1860–1910*. Ithaca, NY and London: Cornell University Press, 1990.
- Sadie, Stanley (ed.). *The new Grove dictionary of music and musicians*. 20 vols. London: Macmillan (now Palgrave Macmillan), 1980.
- Saleh, Fauzan. *Modern trends in Islamic theological discourse in 20th century Indonesia*. Leiden, etc.: Brill, 2001.
- *Teologi pembaruan: pergeseran wacana Islam Sunni di Indonesia abad XX*. Jakarta: Serambi, 2004.
- Samson, Allan A. 'Islam in Indonesian politics'. *AS* vol. 8, no. 12 (Dec. 1968), pp. 1001–17.
- Sato, Shigeru. *War, nationalism and peasants: Java under the Japanese occupation, 1942–1945*. St Leonards, NSW: Asian Studies Association of Australia in association with Allen & Unwin, 1994.
- Schadee, W. H. M. *Geschiedenis van Sumatra's oostkust*. 2 vols. Amsterdam: Oostkust van Sumatra-Instituut, 1918–19.
- Schoute, D. *De geneeskunde in den dienst der Oost-Indische Compagnie in Nederlandsch-Indië*. Amsterdam: J. H. de Bussy, 1929.
- Schouten, M. J. C. *Leadership and social mobility in a Southeast Asian society: Minahasa, 1677–1983*. VKI vol. 179. Leiden: KITLV Press, 1998.
- Schrieke, Bertram. *Indonesian sociological studies: selected writings of B. Schrieke*. 2 vols. The Hague and Bandung: W. van Hoeve, 1955–7.
- Schulte Nordholt, Henk. *Een Balische dynastie: hierarchie en conflict in de negara Mengwi 1700–1940*. Vrije Universiteit te Amsterdam doctoral thesis, 1988.
- 'The Mads Lange connection. A Danish trader on Bali in the middle of the nineteenth century: broker and buffer'. *Indonesia* no. 32 (Oct. 1981), pp. 16–47.
- 'The making of traditional Bali: colonial ethnography and bureaucratic reproduction'. *History and Anthropology* vol. 8, nos. 1–4 (1994), pp. 89–127.
- *The spell of power: a history of Balinese politics, 1650–1940*. VKI vol. 170. Leiden: KITLV, 1996.
- Schwarz, Adam. *A nation in waiting: Indonesia's search for stability*. 2nd ed. St Leonards, NSW: Allen & Unwin, 1999.
- Sears, Laurie J. *Shadows of empire: colonial discourse and Javanese tales*. Durham [NC] and London: Duke University Press, 1996.
- Selosoemardjan. *Social changes in Jogjakarta*. Ithaca, NY: Cornell University Press, 1962.
- Sherlock, Stephen. 'Political economy of the East Timor conflict'. *AS* vol. 36, no. 9 (Sept. 1996), pp. 835–51.
- Shimer, Barbara Gifford, and Guy Hobbs (trans.). *The Kenpeitai in Java and Sumatra (Selections from Nihon Kenpei Seishi)*. Intro. Theodore Friend. Ithaca, NY: Cornell Modern Indonesia Project translation series publication no. 65, 1986.
- Shiraishi, Takashi. *An age in motion: popular radicalism 1912–1926*. Ithaca, NY and London: Cornell University Press, 1990.
- 'Dangir's testimony: Saminism reconsidered'. *Indonesia* no. 50 (Oct. 1990), pp. 95–120.
- Siapno, Jacqueline Aquino. *Gender, Islam, nationalism and the state in Aceh: the paradox of power, co-optation and resistance*. London: RoutledgeCurzon, 2002.
- Sidel, John T. *Riots, pogroms, jihad: religious violence in Indonesia*. Ithaca, NY: Cornell University Press, 2006.

- Sitisoemandari Soeroto. *Kartini: sebuah biografi*. Jakarta: Gunung Agung, 1986.
- Situmorang, Sitor. *Toba na Sae: sejarah lembaga sosial politik abad XIII–XX*. Jakarta: Komunitas Bambu, 2004.
- Sjamsuddin, Helius. *Pegustian dan tumenggung: akar sosial, politik, etnis dan dinasti perlawanan di Kalimantan Selatan dan Kalimantan Tengah, 1859–1906*. Jakarta: Balai Pustaka, 2001.
- Sjamsuddin, Nazaruddin. *The republican revolt: a study of the Acehnese rebellion* [Singapore:] Institute of Southeast Asian Studies, 1985.
- Skinner, C. (ed. & trans.). *Sja'ir perang Mengkasar (The rhymed chronicle of the Macassar war) by Entji' Amin VKI* vol. 40. 's-Gravenhage: Martinus Nijhoff, 1963.
- Slametmuljana. *A story of Majapahit*. Singapore: Singapore University Press, 1976.
- Sluimers, L. “Nieuwe orde” op Java: de Japanse bezettingspolitiek en de Indonesische elites, 1942–1943’. *BKI* vol. 124, no. 3 (1968), pp. 336–67.
- Smail, John R. W. *Bandung in the early revolution, 1945–1946: a study in the social history of the Indonesian revolution*. Ithaca, NY: Cornell Modern Indonesia Project Monograph Series, 1964.
- ‘The military politics of North Sumatra: December 1956–October 1957’. *Indonesia* no. 6 (Oct. 1968), pp. 128–87.
- Snouck Hurgronje, C. *The Acehnese*. Trans. A. W. S. O’Sullivan. 2 vols. Leyden: E. J. Brill, 1906.
- *De Atjehers*. 2 vols. Batavia: Landsdrukkerij; Leiden: E. J. Brill, 1893–4.
- *Mekka in the latter part of the nineteenth century: daily life, customs and learning; the Moslims of the East-Indian-Achipelago*. Trans. J. H. Monahan. Leyden: E. J. Brill; London: Luzac, 1931.
- Soebadio, Haryati, and Carine A. du Marchie Sarvaas (eds). *Dynamics of Indonesian history*. Amsterdam, etc.: North-Holland, 1978.
- Soebardi, S. (ed. & trans.). *The book of Cabolèk: a critical edition with introduction, translation and notes, a contribution to the study of the Javanese mystical tradition*. The Hague: Martinus Nijhoff, 1975.
- ‘Kartosuwiryo and the Darul Islam rebellion in Indonesia’. *JSEAS* vol. 14, no. 1 (March 1983), pp. 109–33.
- ‘Santri-religious elements as reflected in the book of Tjéntini’. *BKI* vol. 127, no. 3 (1971), pp. 331–49.
- Soedarsono. *Wayang wong: the state ritual dance drama in the court of Yogyakarta*. Yogyakarta: Gadjah Mada University Press, 1984.
- Soeharto. *Pikiran, ucapan dan tindakan saya: otobiografi*. As explained to G. Dwipayana and Ramadhan K. H. [Jakarta:] Pt. Citra Lamtoro Gung Persada, 1989.
- Soejatno. ‘Perubahan-perubahan sosial politik di Surakarta sesudah 1945’. *Buletin Fakultas Sastra dan Kebudajaan* no. 4 (1971), pp. 186–94.
- ‘Revolution and social tensions in Surakarta, 1945–1950’. Trans. Benedict Anderson. *Indonesia* no. 17 (Apr. 1974), pp. 99–111.
- Soeri Soeroto. ‘The Beratib Beamaal movement in the Banjar War’, pp. 167–77 in Kartodirdjo (ed.), *Profiles* (see above).
- Soeria Nata Atmadja. *De regenten-positie*. Bandoeng: A. C. Nix [1940].
- Soetjipto Wirosardjono et al. (eds). *Gita Jaya: Catatan H. Ali Sadikin, Gubernur Kepala Daerah Khusus Ibukota Jakarta 1966–1977*. Jakarta: Pemerintah Daerah Khusus Ibukota [1977].
- Stange, Paul. “Legitimate” mysticism in Indonesia’. *RIMA* vol. 20 (Summer 1986), pp. 76–117.
- Stapel, F. W. *Het Bonggaais verdrag*. [’s-Gravenhage: no publ.,] 1922.
- Steenbrink, Karel A. *Beberapa aspek tentang Islam di Indonesia abad ke-19*. Jakarta: Bulan Bintang, 1984.
- *Pesantren, madrasah, sekolah: pendidikan Islam dalam kurun moderen*. Jakarta: LP3ES, 1986.
- *Pesantren, madrasah, sekolah: recente ontwikkelingen in Indonesisch Islamonderricht*. Meppel: Krips Repro, 1974.
- Stevens, Th. *Vrijmetselarij en samenleving in Nederlands-Indië en Indonesië, 1764–1962*. Hilversum: Verloren, 1994.
- Stoler, Ann Laura. *Capitalism and confrontation in Sumatra's plantation belt, 1870–1979*. New Haven and London: Yale University Press, 1985.
- Subagya, Rahmat [pseud. of Jan Bakker]. *Kepercayaan, kebatinan, kerohanian, kejiwaan dan agama*. [Yogyakarta:] Kanisius [1976].
- Subrahmanyam, Sanjay. *The Portuguese empire in Asia, 1500–1700: a political and economic history*. London and New York: Longman, 1993.
- Sudjoko Prasodjo et al. *Profil pesantren: laporan hasil penelitian pesantren al-Falak dan delapan pesantren lain di Bogor*. [Jakarta:] Lembaga Penelitian, Pendidikan dan Penerangan Ekonomi dan Sosial [1975].
- [Sulendraningrat, P. S.] *Purwaka Tjaruban Nagari*. Djakarta: Bhratara, 1972.
- Sulistya, Hermawan. *Palu arit di lading tebu: sejarah pembantaian massal yang terlupakan (Jombang-Kediri 1965–1966)*. Jakarta: KPG (Kapustakaan Populer Gramedia), Yayasan Adikarya IKAPI, and The Ford Foundation, 2000.
- Sundhaussen, Ulf. *The road to power: Indonesian military politics 1945–1967*. Kuala Lumpur: Oxford University Press, 1982.
- Surjomihardjo, Abdurrachman. ‘An analysis of Suwardi Surjaningrat’s ideals and national-revolutionary actions

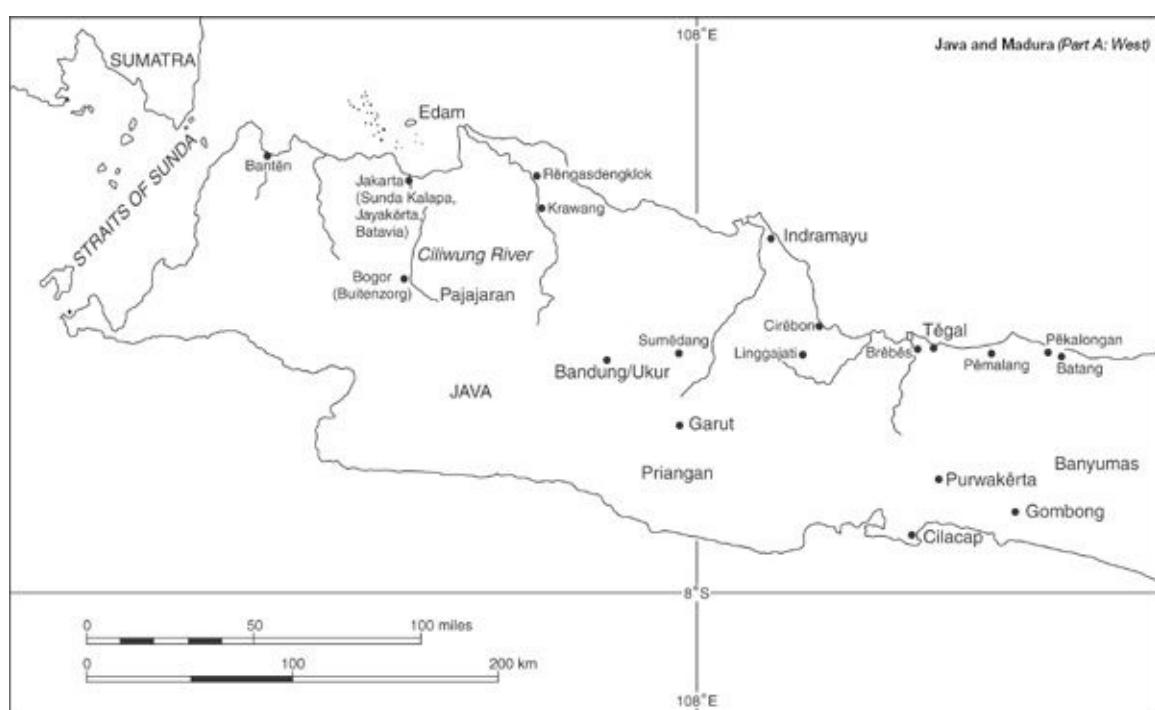
- (1913–1922)’. *MIISI* vol. 2, no. 3 (1964), pp. 371–406.
- Ki Hadjar Dewantara dan Taman Siswa dalam sejarah Indonesia modern. Jakarta: Penerbit Sinar Harapan, 1986.
- ‘National education in a colonial society’, pp. 277–306 in Soebadio and Sarvaas (eds), *Dynamics of Indonesian history* (see above).
- Suryadinata, Leo. ‘Indonesia–China relations: a recent breakthrough’. *AS* vol. 30, no. 7 (July 1990), pp. 682–96.
- *Peranakan Chinese politics in Java, 1917–1942*. Revised edn. Singapore: Singapore University Press, 1981.
- Sutarmam Soediman Partonadi. *Sadrach’s community and its contextual roots: a nineteenth century Javanese expression of Christianity*. Amsterdam and Atlanta: Rodopi, 1990.
- Sutherland, Heather. *The making of a bureaucratic elite: the colonial transformation of the Javanese priyayi*. Singapore, etc.: Heinemann Educational (Asia), 1979.
- ‘Notes on Java’s regent families’. *Indonesia* no. 16 (Oct. 1973), pp. 113–47; no. 17 (Apr. 1974), pp. 1–42.
- ‘Pudjangga Baru: aspects of Indonesian intellectual life in the 1930s’. *Indonesia* no. 6 (Oct. 1968), pp. 106–27.
- Sutter, John O. *Indonesianisation: politics in a changing economy, 1940–1955*. 4 vols. Ithaca, NY: Cornell Southeast Asia Program Data Paper no. 36, 1959.
- Swellengrebel, J. L. *In Leijdeckers voetspoor. Anderhalve eeuw Bijbelvertaling en taalkunde in de Indonesische talen*. 2 vols. *VKI* vols. 68, 82. ’s-Gravenhage: Martinus Nijhoff, 1974, 1978.
- Swift, Ann. *The road to Madiun: the Indonesian Communist uprising of 1948*. Ithaca, NY: Cornell Modern Indonesia Project Monograph Series, 1989.
- Tagliacozzo, Eric. *Secret trades, porous borders: smuggling and states along a Southeast Asian frontier, 1865–1915*. New Haven and London: Yale University Press, 2005.
- Talens, Johan. *Een feodale samenleving in koloniaal vaarwater: staatsvorming, koloniale expansie en economische onderontwikkeling in Banten, West-Java (1600–1750)*. Hilversum: Verloren, 1999.
- Tanter, Richard, and Kenneth Young (eds). *The politics of middle class Indonesia*. Monash Papers on Southeast Asia no. 19. Clayton: Centre of Southeast Asian Studies, Monash University, 1990.
- Taylor, Alastair M. *Indonesian independence and the United Nations*. Ithaca, NY: Cornell University Press, 1960.
- Taylor, Jay. *China and Southeast Asia: Peking’s relations with revolutionary movements*. Revised edn. New York: Praeger, 1976.
- Taylor, Jean Gelman. *The social world of Batavia: European and Eurasian in Dutch Asia*. Madison: University of Wisconsin Press, 1983.
- Teeuw, A. ‘The impact of Balai Pustaka on modern Indonesian literature’. *BSOAS* vol. 35, pt. 1 (1972), pp. 111–27.
- *Modern Indonesian literature*. 2nd edn. 2 vols. The Hague: Martinus Nijhoff, 1979.
- with the assistance of H. W. Emanuels. *A critical survey of studies on Malay and Bahasa Indonesia*. ’s-Gravenhage: Martinus Nijhoff, 1961.
- Tichelman, F. (ed.). *Socialisme in Indonesië: de Indische Sociaal-Democratische Vereeniging, 1897–1917*, vol. I. Dordrecht and Cinnaminson: Foris, 1985.
- Tiele, P. A. ‘De Europeërs in den Maleischen archipel’. *BKI* vol. 25 (1877), pp. 321–420; vol. 27 (1879), pp. 1–69; vol. 28 (1880), pp. 260–340, 395–482; vol. 29 (1881), pp. 153–214, 332; vol. 30 (1882), pp. 141–242; vol. 32 (1884), pp. 49–118; vol. 35 (1886), pp. 257–355; vol. 36 (1887), pp. 199–307.
- Tollenaere, H. A. O. de. *The politics of divine wisdom: Theosophy and labour, national and women’s movements in Indonesia and South Asia, 1875–1947*. Nijmegen: Uitgeverij Katholieke Universiteit Nijmegen, 1996.
- Touwen-Bouwsma, Elly. ‘The Dutch, the Indonesian republicans and the Negara Madura, 1945–1950’, pp. 71–90 in Kees van Dijk, Huub de Jonge and Elly Touwen-Bouwsma (eds). *Across Madura Strait: the dynamics of an insular society*. Leiden: KITLV, 1995.
- Uhlenbeck, E. M. *A critical survey of studies on the languages of Java and Madura*. ’s-Gravenhage: Martinus Nijhoff, 1964.
- Utrecht, E. *Sedjarah hukum internasional di Bali dan Lombok (Pertjobaan sebuah studi hukum internasional regional di Indonesia)*. [Bandung:] Sumur Bandung, 1962.
- Van Niel, Robert. *The emergence of the modern Indonesian elite*. The Hague and Bandung: W. van Hoeve, 1960.
- ‘The function of landrent under the cultivation system in Java’. *JAS* vol. 23, no. 3 (May 1964), pp. 357–75.
- *Java’s northeast coast, 1740–1840: a study in colonial encroachment and dominance*. Leiden: CNWS Publications, 2005.
- ‘Measurement of change under the cultivation system in Java, 1837–1851’. *Indonesia* no. 14 (Oct. 1972), pp. 89–109.
- Veer, Paul van’t. *De Atjeh-oorlog*. Amsterdam: Uitgeverij de Arbeiderspers, 1969.
- Vermeulen, J. Th. *De Chinezen te Batavia en de troebelen van 1740*. Leiden: N. V. Boeken Steendrukkerij Eduard Ijdo, 1938.
- Vickers, Adrian. *Bali: a paradise created*. Ringwood, Vic. etc.: Penguin, 1989.
- Villiers, John. ‘Trade and society in the Banda islands in the sixteenth century’. *MAS* vol. 15, no. 4 (1981), pp. 723–50.
- Vos, Reinout. *Gentle Janus, merchant prince: the VOC and the tightrope of diplomacy in the Malay world, 1740–*

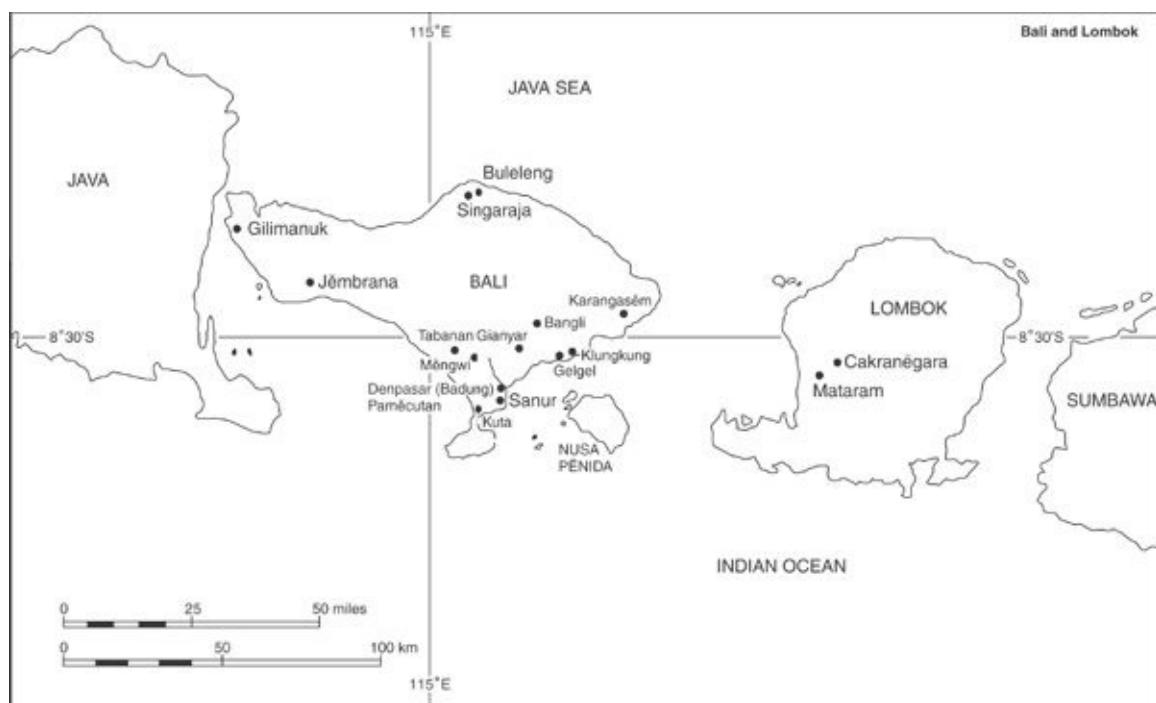
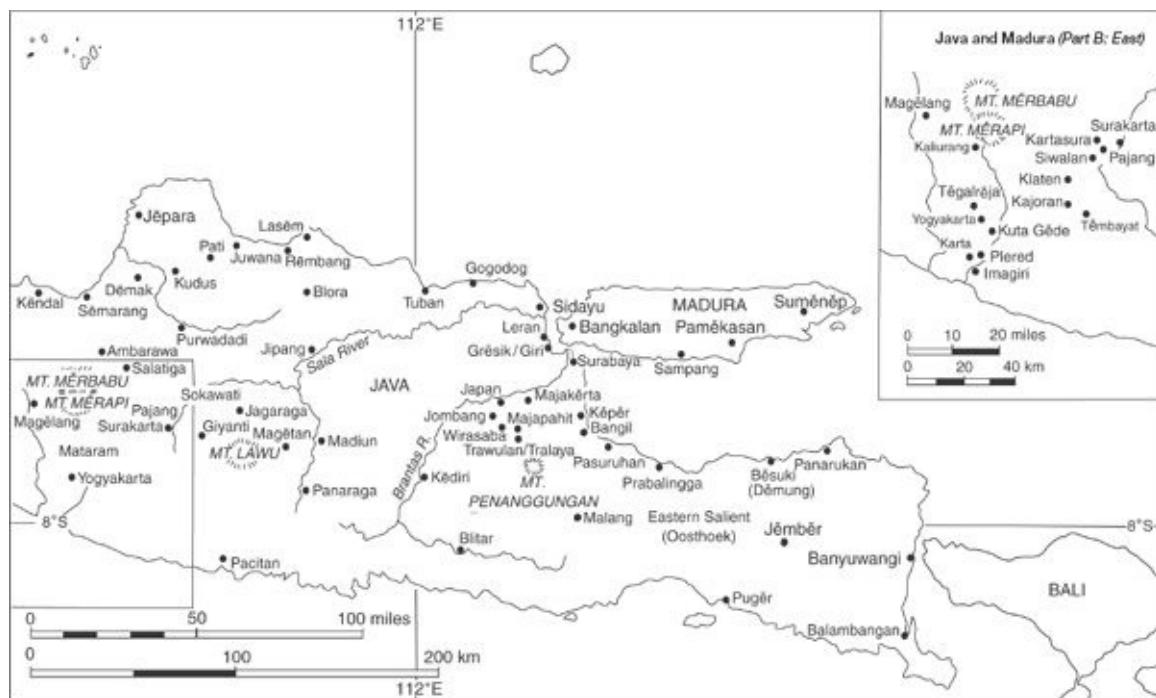
1800. Trans. Beverley Jackson. **VKI** vol. 157. Leiden: KITLV, 1993.
- Wake, Christopher. 'Malacca's early kings and the reception of Islam'. **JSEAH** vol. 5, no. 2 (Sept. 1964), pp. 104–28.
- Wang Gungwu. 'The first three rulers of Malacca', pp. 97–107 in Wang Gungwu. **Community and nation: essays on Southeast Asia and the Chinese**. Singapore and North Sydney: Heinemann Educational (Asia) and George Allen & Unwin Australia, 1981. Originally published in **JMBRAS** vol. 41, pt. 1 (1968), pp. 11–22.
- Ward, K. E. **The foundation of the Partai Muslimin Indonesia**. Ithaca, NY: Cornell Modern Indonesia Project Interim Report Series, 1970.
- . **The 1971 election in Indonesia: an East Java case study** [Clayton, Vic:] Monash University Centre of Southeast Asian Studies Papers on Southeast Asia no. 2, 1974.
- Waseda University, Okuma Memorial Social Sciences Research Institute. **Japanese military administration in Indonesia**. Washington, DC: US Department of Commerce, Office of Technical Services, Joint Publications Research Service, 1963. Trans. of **Indonesia ni Okeru Nihon Gunsei no Kenkyu**. Tokyo: Kinokuniya Shoten, 1959.
- Webb, R. A. F. Paul. 'The sickle and the cross: Christians and Communists in Bali, Flores, Sumba and Timor, 1965–67'. **JSEAS** vol. 17, no. 1 (Mar. 1986), pp. 94–112.
- Weinstein, Franklin B. **Indonesia abandons confrontation: an inquiry into the functions of Indonesian foreign policy**. Ithaca, NY: Cornell Modern Indonesia Project Interim Reports Series, 1969.
- . **Indonesian foreign policy and the dilemma of dependence: from Sukarno to Soeharto**. Ithaca, NY and London: Cornell University Press, 1976.
- Widjil Pangarsa, Galih. 'Les mosquées de Lombok, évolution architecturale et diffusion de l'Islam'. **Archipel** no. 44 (1992), pp. 75–93.
- Widjojo Nitisastro. **Population trends in Indonesia**. Ithaca, NY and London: Cornell University Press, 1970.
- Wiener, Margaret J. **Visible and invisible realms: power, magic and colonial conquest in Bali**. Chicago and London: University of Chicago Press, 1995.
- Wigboldus, Jouke S. 'A history of the Minahasa c.1615–1680'. **Archipel** no. 34 (1987), pp. 63–101.
- Williams, Michael Charles. **Communism, religion and revolt in Banten**. Athens, Ohio: Ohio University Centre for International Studies Monographs in International Studies, Southeast Asia Series no. 86, 1990.
- . **Sickle and crescent: the Communist revolt of 1926 in Banten**. Ithaca, NY: Cornell Modern Indonesia Project Monograph Series no. 61, 1982.
- Winstedt, Richard. **A history of classical Malay literature**. Kuala Lumpur, etc.: Oxford University Press, 1969. A reprinting of the revised edition originally published in **JMBRAS** vol. 31, pt. 3 (1958; but published in 1961).
- Wiselius, J. A. B. 'Djâjâ Bâjâ, zijn leven en profetieën'. **BKI** vol. 19 (1872), pp. 172–217.
- Woelders, M. O. **Het Sultanaat Palembang, 1811–1825**. **VKI** vol. 72. 's-Gravenhage: Martinus Nijhoff, 1975.
- Wolters, O. W. **Early Indonesian commerce: a study of the origins of Srivijaya**. Ithaca, NY: Cornell University Press, 1967.
- . **The fall of Srivijaya in Malay history**. Ithaca, NY: Cornell University Press, 1970.
- Wong, John. **ASEAN economies in perspective: a comparative study of Indonesia, Malaya, the Philippines, Singapore, and Thailand**. London and Basingstoke: Macmillan (now Palgrave Macmillan), 1979.
- Worsley, Peter John (ed. & trans.). **Babad Buleleng: a Balinese dynastic genealogy**. 's-Gravenhage: H. L. Smits; The Hague: Martinus Nijhoff, 1972.
- Wright, H. R. C. **East-Indian economic problems of the age of Cornwallis and Raffles**. London: Luzac, 1961.
- Yong Mun Cheong. **H. J. van Mook and Indonesian independence: a study of his role in Dutch-Indonesian Relations, 1945–48**. The Hague: Martinus Nijhoff, 1982.
- Yusril Ihza. 'Combining activism and intellectualism: the biography of Mohammad Natsir (1908–1993)'. **SI** vol. 2, no. 1 (1995), pp. 111–47.
- Zed, Mestika. **Kepialangan politik dan revolusi: Palembang, 1900–1950**. Jakarta: LP3ES, 2003.
- Zoetmulder, P. J. **Kalangwan: a survey of Old Javanese literature**. The Hague: Martinus Nijhoff, 1974.
- . **Manunggaling kawula gusti. Pantheïsme dan monisme dalam sastra suluk Jawa: suatu studi filsafat**. Trans. Dick Hartoko. Jakarta: Perwakilan Koninklijk Instituut voor Taal-, Land- en Volkenkunde, Lembaga Ilmu Pengetahuan Indonesia, Penerbit PT Gramedia, 1990.
- . **Pantheism and monism in Javanese suluk literature: Islamic and Indian mysticism in an Indonesian setting**. Ed. & trans. M. C. Ricklefs. KITLV Translation Series 24. Leiden: KITLV, 1995.
- . **Pantheïsme en monisme in de Javaansche soeloek-litteratuur**. Nijmegen: J. J. Berkhouwt, 1935.

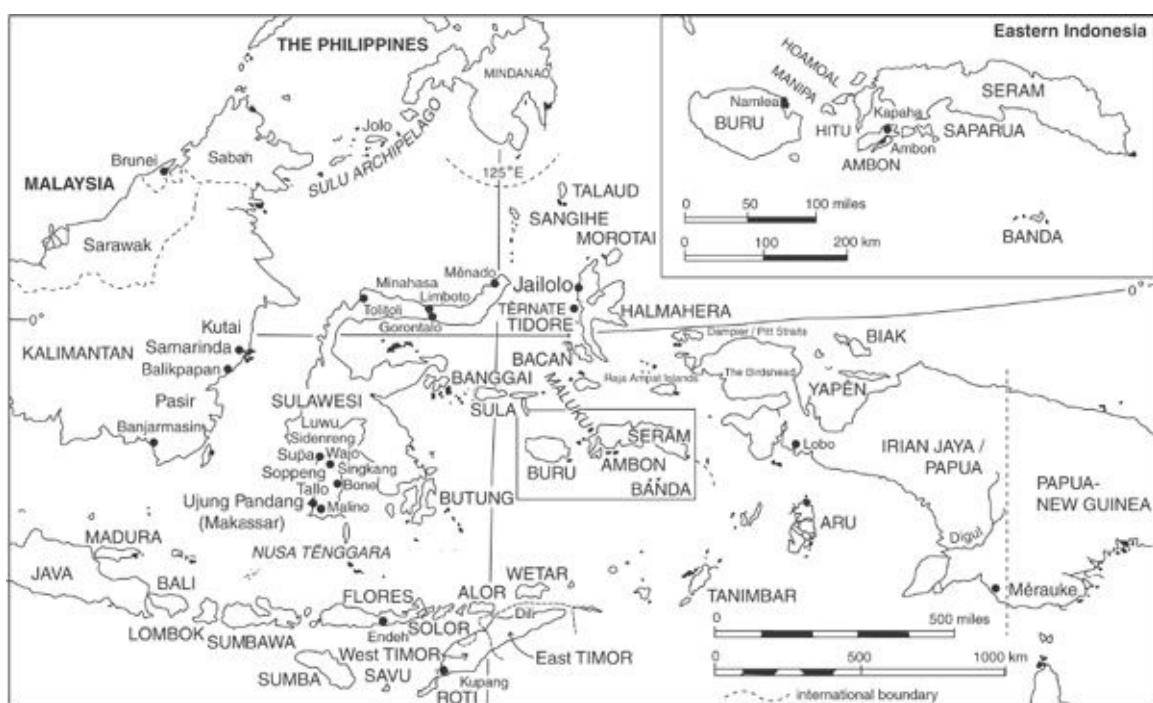
# Maps

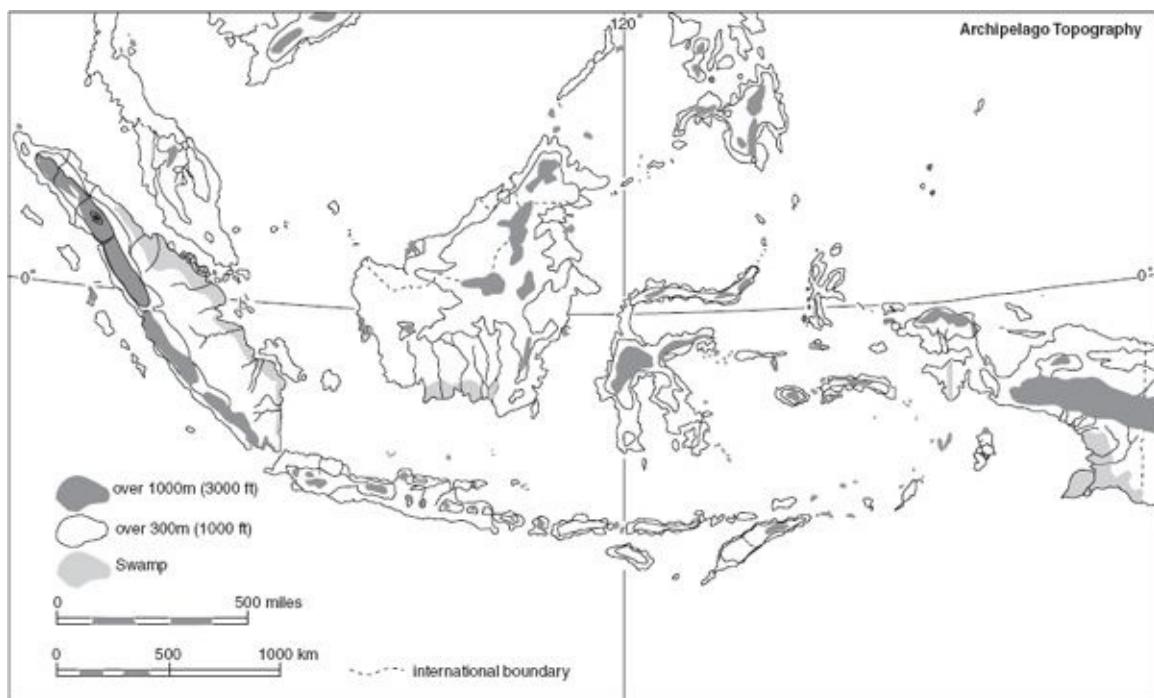
Note: these maps necessarily contain place names which are not contemporaneous with one another.











---

# Index

*Note: Readers who fail to locate a modern Indonesian personal name or publication title under the expected spelling should check possible alternative spellings (see pp. xv–xvi above).*

- Aachen *Technische Hochschule*, 367  
*Abadi*, 336, 341  
*Abangan* (Javanese nominal Muslim), 160, 197, 209, 217, 255, 258, 264, 266, 277, 281, 285, 312, 327, 333, 336, 345, 356; origins of, 158–9  
‘Abd al-Baqi, M., 96  
‘Abduh, M., 202, 204  
Abdul Aziz, Sayyid, 11  
Abdul Hamid II (of Pontianak), 261, 270  
Abdul Jalil (of Johor), 83  
Abdul Kadir, 123  
Abdullah Gymnastiar (Aa Gym), 411  
Abdullah Muhammad Maulana Matarani, 52  
Abdullah Puteh, 409  
Abdul Rahman (of Palembang), 82, 84  
Abdul Rahman, Tungku, 310, 313  
Abdul Rahman Nasiruddin (of Jambi), 172  
Abdul Rakhman (of Banjarmasin), 170  
Abdurrahman Wahid, 335–7, 359, 368, 370, 374–5, 376, 378, 380, 382, 384, 386, 388–9, 391–2, 394–6, 401, 401  
Abdurrauf (of Singkil), 56, 158  
Abendanon, J. H., 189–90  
Abikoesno Tjokrosoejoso, 238, 245  
ABRI (Armed forces of the Republic of Indonesia), 350–95 *passim*, 397, 408  
Abu Dujana, 411  
Abu Lais, 26  
Abulmafakhir Mahmud Abdulkadir, 52  
Abu Sayyaf, 393  
Aceh, Acehnese, 6, 7, 18, 19, 26, 31, 34–8, 53, 56–7, 60, 80, 82, 96, 172, 173, 174, 175–6, 179, 184, 287, 334, 339, 353, 359, 366, 409; Aceh War, 135, 176–8, 184, 196; Japanese occupation of, 236, 239; Revolution in, 257, 267; 1950s rebellion of, 283–4, 291, 300, 307; granted special district status, 303; renewed separatism and agreement, 354, 364, 385, 387–8, 392, 394, 397, 401, 408; earthquake and tsunami in, 406–7  
*Aceh, Hikayat*, 57  
Achmad Siddiq, 357  
act of free choice (in Papua), 309, 337, 385  
Adabiyah School, 204  
Adam, Sultan (of Banjarmasin), 170  
*adat* (custom), 140, 173–4, 177, 178, 202, 204, 210–11, 303  
Adi Santika, 130  
Adityavarman, 172  
Adventists, Seventh Day, 333  
Affandi, 251  
Afghani, Jamal ad-Din al-, 202  
Afghanistan, 397, 412; anti-Soviet *jihad* in, 358, 393, 397  
Agam, 172  
*agama Jawa*, 14

Agéng, Ratu (of Yogyakarta), 140  
Agéng, Sultan, 95–8, 100  
Agil Husin al Munawar, Said, 409  
Agrarian Law, 150  
Agung, Sultan, 37, 44, 47–53, 60, 61, 86, 87, 88, 90, 91, 109, 120, 128, 129, 152, 294  
Agung Made Aléngkajéng, 78, 79  
Agung Made Munggu, 78  
Agung Anom, 78  
Ahmad, Sultan (of Malacca), 25  
Ahmadiyya, 397, 410  
Ahmad Khatib (of Minangkabau), 203–4, 205, 207  
Ahmad Khatib (of Sambas), 158  
Ahmad Najamuddin (of Palembang), 171  
Ahmad Syah (of Pahang), 37, 38  
Ahmad Tajuddin (of Palembang), 85  
Ahmad Zainuddin (of Jambi), 172  
Ahmad Majanu, 6  
Audit, D. N., 265, 266, 277, 279, 286, 288–9, 292, 296, 305, 306, 308, 311–12, 316, 317, 319, 320, 327  
Aisyiyah, 205  
Alas, 176  
Alatas, Ali, 360, 370, 385, 386  
Alauddin Riayat Syah I (of Johor), 34, 35  
Alauddin Riayat Syah II (of Johor), 36  
Alauddin Riayat Syah al-Kahar (of Aceh), 35  
Alauddin Riayat Syah al-Mukamil (of Aceh), 36  
Alauddin Tumenanga ri Gaukanna, 54, 70  
Albuquerque, A. de, 25  
Alexander the Great, 51, 57  
Ali, M., 285  
Al-Baba firms, 283  
Ali Gufron (Mukhlas), 398  
Alimin Prawirodirdjo, 213, 217, 288  
Ali Murtopo, 314, 330, 338, 339, 340, 346  
Ali Mughayat Syah (of Aceh), 6, 34–5  
*aliran* (currents, streams), 277, 323, 327, 343, 356  
Ali Sastroamidjojo, 220, 283–6, 288–92, 301, 317, 319, 330  
Alit, Pangeran, 87  
Alor, 166  
Aluk, 167, 168, 280  
Amangkurat, Ratu, 108, 111, 115  
Amangkurat I, 51, 52, 81, 86–93, 94  
Amangkurat II, 93–4, 97, 98, 99–103; as crown prince, 89–93  
Amangkurat III, 103–5, 115, 123  
Amangkurat IV, 106–8  
Ambarawa, 253  
Ambon, Ambonese, 26, 27, 28, 30–2, 42, 69, 70–1, 73, 74, 86, 102–3, 104, 106, 129, 130, 137, 141, 142, 168, 173, 179, 193, 201, 252, 270, 278–9, 300, 385, 389, 393  
Amboyna Massacre, 32  
Amien Rais, 376, 380, 384, 388, 391, 403  
Amiens, Peace of, 73  
Amir Hamzah (poet), 229, 257  
Amir Hamzah (uncle of the Prophet), 57, 58, 61; *Hikayat Amir Hamzah*, 57; *Menak Amir Hamsa*, 60  
Amir Mahmud, 339  
Amir Sjarifuddin, 228, 239, 253, 254, 258, 259, 262, 263–7  
Amnesty International, 337, 342, 346  
Amuntai, 239  
Amongraga, Seh, 60, 152  
Amrozi bin Nurhasyim, 398  
Amsterdam, Sultan, 72  
*Anak semua bangsa*, 338  
*Anbiya, Sérat*, 61

**Anggér-Agěng, Angěr-Arubiru**, 124  
Annan, Kofi, 386  
Anrangkusuma, 101, 102  
**Ansor**, 296, 312  
Antasari, Pangeran, 170  
**Apodeti** (Timorese Popular Democratic Association), 342  
**Aqsa, al-**, 41  
Arabia, Arabs, 3–8, 11, 14, 23, 24, 26, 38, 84, 85, 96, 129, 148, 152, 153, 157, 173, 179, 203–4, 219, 228, 296, 305, 341, 357, 368, 393–4, 397, 410; Arabic script and language, *passim*  
areca, 22  
**Arjuna Sasrabau, Kakawin**, 58, 61  
**Arjunawijaya, Kakawin**, 58  
**Arjunawiwāha, Kakawin**, 58  
Aru (East Indonesia), 169  
Aru (Sumatra), 35, 36  
Ashanti War, 176  
ASEAN (Association of South East Asian Nations), 336, 343, 347, 349, 358, 359, 360  
Asia Foundation, 398  
Asian–African Conference, 284–5, 360  
**Asian Wall Street Journal**, 359  
**Asrama Indonesia Merdeka**, 244  
**Asrar al-'arifin**, 56  
assassination attempts on Sukarno, 298, 299, 307  
Astra, 369, 370, 382  
Astra Ingala, 83  
**attoriolong**, 63  
Australia, Australians, 232, 237, 252, 259, 262, 263, 342, 347, 361, 366, 387, 398–400, 408, 411; *The Australian*, 383  
Azahari, A. M., 310  
Azahari Husin, 411  
Azhar, Al-, mosque (Jakarta), 324  
Azhar University, Al- (Cairo), 355

Baab Ullah, 27  
Ba'asyir, Abu Bakar, 357–8, 393, 398, 399  
**babad**, 60–1, 62. *See also individual titles*  
Bacan, 8, 73  
Badung, 164  
Bagelen, 146  
Baghdad, 15, 355  
Bagus Buang, 130  
Bahrum Rangkuti, 251  
Bajra, Carik (Tirtawiguna), 61  
**Bakorstanas** (National Stability Maintenance Coordinating Body), 361  
Bakrie, Aburizal, 369, 407  
**Balai Pustaka**, 221, 229  
Balambangan, 12–13, 43, 46, 48, 52, 78–9, 113, 123  
Bali, *passim*; non-Islamisation of, 15–16; Majapahit conquest of, 21; pre-colonial literatures of, 62; Dutch conquest of, 164–6; modern painting style of, 221–2; bombings in, 398–400, 411. *See also Surapati, names of individual persons and kingdoms*  
Balikpapan, 252  
Bambang Soeharto, 369, 372  
Banda, Bandanese, 8, 27–8, 31, 32, 70, 71, 73, 104, 106, 137, 169, 171, 220, 227  
Banda Aceh, 176, 177, 257, 406  
Bandung, 130, 189, 191, 198, 212, 217, 218–19, 220, 226, 243, 251, 252, 257, 259, 262, 267–70, 274, 302, 349, 367; Institute of Technology at, 217, 356, 367; 1955 conference at, 284–5, 360  
Bangil, 104  
Bangka, 84, 85, 161, 171, 259  
Bangkalan, 162  
Bangkara, 174  
Bangli, 164–6

Banjarmasin, 49, 52, 77, 117, 169, 170, 244, 378; Banjarmasin War, 170  
Bank Central Asia, 358, 380  
**Bank Muamalat Indonesia**, 370  
Bank of China, 315  
Bank Summa, 370  
Banna, Hasan al-, 393  
Bantaqiah, Teungku, 388, 395  
Bantēn, *passim*; foundation of, 40; golden age of, 95–6; submission to Dutch, 98, 130; *cultuurstelsel* in, 146; Islamic Communism in, 214; *Sējarah Bantēn*, 12, 191  
**Banteng, Barisan**, 259–60  
Banteng Division, 291  
Banyumas, 146  
Banyuwangi, 384  
Barabudhur (Borobudur), 44, 358  
Bari, Seh, 13, 14  
**Baron Sakendher, Sērat**, 134  
Barus, 174  
Batak, 35, 173, 174, 190, 221, 222, 228, 229, 236, 257, 258, 289, 291; Batak War, 174. *See also names of individuals*  
Batam, 344  
Batavia, *passim*; foundation of, 33; unhealthiness of, 111  
**batik** (intricately dyed fabric), 63, 153, 200  
Batuah, Datuk, 211  
bauxite, 231  
Bayansirullah, 26  
Bayat, Sunan, 11, 50, 51, 90  
Běběluk, 60  
**Belenggoe**, 229  
Belgium, 29, 144, 263  
Bělitung, 84, 171, 259  
Belo, Bishop C. F. X., 365, 378, 385, 387  
Bencoolen, *see* Běngkulu  
Běndara, Ratu, 122–3  
Bengal, 14  
Běngkulu, 82, 98, 142, 171, 174, 227, 407  
**benteng-stelsel**, 141  
benzoin, 22–3  
Berg, C. C., 20, 44  
Bergson, H., 198  
Berkeley mafia, 331  
Běsuki, 90  
betel, 156, 159, 173  
**Bhāratayudha, Kakawin**, 57, 58, 59, 61, 62  
Biak, 385  
**bid'a** (illegal innovation), 203, 204  
**Bina Graha**, 341  
Bintan, 36  
Bintang, Zacharias, 103  
**Bintang Hindia**, 197, 198  
birds of paradise, 169  
Blenheim, battle of, 104  
Blitar, 328, 335; **Peta** uprising at, 245  
Blitar, Pangeran, 107  
Blora, 201, 335  
**Bodi Caniago**, 172  
Body for the Supporters (or Spreaders) of Sukarnoism, 314  
Bogor (Buitenzorg), 130, 170, 199, 279, 305, 320, 328, 332, 377  
Bonang, Sunan, 11–12  
Bone, 54, 74–5, 77, 94, 167, 168, 250, 259  
Bonjol, 173. *See also* Imam Bonjol  
Bonnet, R., 221

Borneo Oil Company, 185  
Bosch, J. van der, 144–5, 161  
Both, P., 46  
Boven Digul, 214, 227  
BPIS (Strategic Industries Management Board), 374  
Braam, J. P. van, 85  
**Bramartani**, 154, 159  
Brantas River, 17, 46, 47, 102, 103  
**Bratayuda, Sérat**, 58, 61  
Brawijaya Division, 300, 301, 315, 318, 320, 332, 335  
Brazil, 28  
Brébés, 255  
Britain, British, English, *passim*; arrival of in Indonesia, 31–2; replace Dutch during Napoleonic Wars, 137, 162, 163, 167, 168, 171; in early Revolution, 252–4, 259, 261; during Confrontation, 309–11, 313. *See also* East India Company and individual names  
Brooke, J., 169  
Brunei, 4, 6, 7, 8, 9, 23, 169, 310  
BTI (Indonesian Peasant Front), 285, 308, 315  
bubonic plague, 188  
Buddhism, Buddhists, 3, 5–6, 8, 15–16, 20–2, 39, 40, 43, 58, 60, 159, 197, 201, 217, 313, 333, 356, 358, 375  
**Budi Utomo**, 197–9, 200, 201, 205, 206, 207, 218, 219, 228  
Bugis, *passim*; Islamisation of, 54; pre-colonial literature of, 63. *See also* individual names  
Buitenzorg, *see* Bogor  
Bukittinggi, 244, 299, 300  
Buleleng, 78, 79, 163–4  
**Bulog** (Logistics Affairs Board), 332  
**Bumi Manusia**, 338  
Bupatis' Union (**Regentenbond**), 199, 206  
Burhanuddin Harahap, 286–8, 299, 300, 307  
Burma, 21, 241, 242, 245, 267, 284, 302  
Buru, 337  
Bush, H. W., 373  
**Bustan as-Salatin**, 56, 57  
Butung, 74, 75

Cabolek, **Sérat Cabolek**, 60, 61–2  
Cairo, 202, 204, 212, 226, 355, 380  
Cakranégara, 165  
Cakraningrat line: establishment of, 47; status reduced of, 162  
Cakraningrat II, 103–4  
Cakraningrat III, 106  
Cakraningrat IV, 107–11 *passim*, 114–17 *passim*  
calendars: Śaka, 5, 6, 50–1; *Anno Javanico*, 51  
caliph, caliphate, 212, 226, 398, 411  
**Calon Arang, Kidung**, 62  
Caltex, 185, 275, 300, 316, 332, 341, 344  
Cambay, 14  
Cambodia, 21, 360  
camphor, 18, 22–3, 65  
campus normalisation, 350  
Canada, Canadian, 341, 370  
cannibalism, 174, 179  
Capellen, G. A. G. Ph. van der, 140, 167  
Cape of Good Hope, 25, 98, 108, 117, 137  
Carter, J., 346  
cassava, 151, 185, 186  
Catholic church: in East Timor, 365, 376. *See also* Belo, Christianity  
Catholic Party, *see* Partai Katholik  
cattle, trade in, 77, 167  
Ceaușescu, N. 353, 363  
Cek Ko-po, 38

census: of 1651, 88; of 1770s, 124. *See also* population  
**Centhini, Sérat**, 152  
Central Intelligence Agency (CIA), 314, 319, 398  
Central Intelligence Board (Indonesian), 310  
Ceylon, *see* Sri Lanka  
CGI (Consultative Group on Indonesia), 371  
Chairil Anwar, 251  
Chairul Saleh, 295, 303, 312, 314, 316, 319, 328, 332  
Champa, 21  
Chen Yi, 315  
China, People's Republic of, 284, 290, 296, 305, 306, 310–18 *passim*, 341, 364, 366  
Chinese, *passim*; role in Islamisation, 3, 4, 6, 7, 8, 14; protection of Malacca, 22; Putri Cina, 39; massacre of, 113–14, 115; animosity towards, 235, 289, 305, 326, 330, 342, 351, 367, 373, 376, 384  
cholera, 140, 142, 147, 163, 177  
Christianity, Christianisation, Christians, 27–8, 29, 30, 36, 54, 70–2, 76–7, 97, 103, 110, 153–4, 167, 168, 174, 190, 193, 201, 205, 219, 222, 228, 249, 250, 258, 261, 270, 276, 278, 287, 289, 323, 333–4, 335, 353, 356, 357, 358, 370, 375, 385, 393, 410; animosity, violence towards, 69, 91, 92, 167, 236, 257, 280, 333, 334, 376, 389, 394, 397, 413; animosity, violence towards Islam/Muslims: 277, 280, 376. *See also* Maluku: Muslim–Christian violence in; Christian Party, *see* Parkindo. *See also* Dominican, Jesuit, Catholic church  
Christison, P., 252  
**Chuo Sangi-in**, 241, 244  
Ciamis, 384  
Cianjur, 170, 200  
CIDES, 368  
Cik di Tiro, 177  
Cikini, assassination attempt at, 298  
Cilacap, 384  
Ciliwung River, 49  
Cina, Putri, 39  
cinnamon, 150  
Cirébon, 39, 46, 48, 49, 87, 91, 92, 97, 101–6 *passim*, 113, 137, 149, 151, 236, 247, 261  
Clinton, W. J., 373, 378, 379  
Cloon, D. van, 111–12  
clove, 18, 23, 24, 31, 42, 69, 70, 71, 130, 150, 168  
coal, 170, 262  
cockfighting, 168, 173  
coconut, 95, 185  
Coen, J. P., 32–3, 49–50, 100  
coffee, 76, 105, 112, 130, 137, 139, 144–55 *passim*, 163, 168, 172, 184, 185, 186, 222, 223, 365  
Cold War, impact of: during Revolution, 267; during Soeharto period, 347–8, 362; of ending of, 363–4  
Colijn, H. 224  
Colombo powers, 284  
Comintern, 206, 213  
**Comité voor het Javaansch Nationalisme**, 211  
confrontation (against Malaysia), 310, 311, 313, 318, 330  
Constantinople, 24  
Constituent Assembly, 283, 287, 298, 301, 302–3  
Constitution: of 1945, 246, 249, 254; of 1950, 270; attempt to draft new, 283, 287, 298, 301; of 1945 restored, 302–3, 304, 357; amendment, 400  
Constitutional Court, 404, 411  
Constitutional Regulation (1854), 147  
Coolen, C. L., 153–4  
copra, 184, 186, 222  
Coromandel, 14  
cotton, 22–3, 77, 359  
coup attempt (1965), *see* **Gestapu**  
Covarrubias, M., 222  
Crawfurd, J., 138  
**cukong**, 325–6, 332, 333, 340, 358, 362, 367, 369–70, 380, 383  
**cultuurstelsel** (cultivation system), 144–50, 152, 155, 157  
Czechoslovakia, 230, 267

Daendels, H. W., 135–7, 138, 139, 143, 162, 169  
Daha, 8  
Dahlan, A., 205  
**dakwah**, 323. See also *Dewan Da'wah*  
Dale, T., 33  
Dalém Baturenggong, 53  
Daludalu, 173  
Damar Wulan (Damar Bulan), 57, 58, 60  
Dampier Straits, 72  
Danuréja (of Kartasura), 108–10  
Danuréja I (of Yogyakarta), 134  
Danuréja II, 134, 136–7  
Danuréja IV, 141  
Darsono Notosudirdjo, 209, 210, 213  
**Darul Islam**, 264–5, 276, 280, 283, 284, 293, 300, 303, 307, 346, 358, 397, 411  
Daud Beureu'eh, 236, 267, 284, 291, 303  
Daud Syah, Tuanku, 178  
Daya, 35  
Dayak, 170, 239, 369, 376  
decentralisation: in Ethical period, 193–4; in post-Soeharto period, 396–7, 400, 404  
deforestation, 105, 369  
Delacroix, F., 153  
Dělanggu, 264  
Děli, 35, 36, 175, 236  
Děmak, 10, 18, 21, 38–41, 43, 45, 60, 103, 104, 114, 124  
Democratic League, 305  
Děmung, 90  
Denmark, Danes, 54, 95, 164, 370  
Den Pasar, 166, 261  
Depression, impact of, 185, 188, 192, 195, 216, 222–4, 225, 231  
**Děrmagandhul, Sěrat**, 159  
**Deśawarnana**, 20, 21  
**Detik**, 374  
Development Plans, Five-Year (*Rěpělita*), 337, 341  
Deventer, C. Th. van, 151–3, 183  
Dewa Anom (of Sukawati), 78  
Dewa Agung: of Gelgel, 52; of Klungkung, 78, 79, 164, 165, 166  
**Dewan Da'wah Islamiyah Indonesia**, 334, 393  
**Dewan Sanyo**, 244  
Dewanara, Ki Hajar (Suwardi Surjaningrat), 205–6, 211, 217, 227, 241, 245, 288  
**Dewa Ruci, Sěrat**, 61  
Dharmala group, 369  
**Dharmaśūnya, Kakawin**, 58  
Dharsono, Hartono, 347, 352, 358, 388  
diamonds, 23, 65  
Dias, B., 25  
Diemen, A. van, 69, 70  
Dili, 365, 370–1, 386, 387  
Diniyah School, 204  
Din Syamsuddin, 410, 412  
Dipanagara, Pangeran (son of Pakubuwana I), 106–7  
Dipanagara, Pangeran (of Yogyakarta), 140–2, 209  
Diponěgoro Division, 300, 301, 315, 318, 320, 329  
Djajaadiningrat, 190  
Djajadiningrat, H., 191  
Djamil Djambek, M. 204  
**Djawi Hisworo**, 211  
Djuanda Kartawidjaja, 295–303 *passim*, 312  
doctors, numbers of, 188, 324, 348  
Doktěr-Jawa, 156, 189, 197, 198. See also STOVIA  
DOM (Military Operations Area, in Aceh), 364, 387

Dominican order, 27  
**Door duisternis tot licht**, 190  
Douwes Dekker, E., 150, 205  
Douwes Dekker, E. F. E. (Setiabuddhi), 205–6, 208, 217, 231  
DPD (Regional Representative Council), 401, 403, 404  
DPR (People's Representative Council, parliament), 278, 288, 302, 345, 390–1, 395, 401–3, 404–5  
DPRD (Regional People's Representative Council), 401  
DPR-GR (People's Representative Council – Gotong Royong), 305, 332, 338, 384  
Drake, F., 31  
Du Bus, Fort, 168–9  
Dulles, J. F., 301  
Dur, Gus, *see* Abdurrahman Wahid  
Dutch, *passim*; arrival of in Indonesia, 28–30; expelled from Indonesia, 298  
Dutch language, 155–6, 189, 190, 191, 204, 238  
dysentery, 142, 163

earthquakes, 91, 163, 401, 406–7, 408  
East India Company (English), 31, 49, 72, 102, 117  
East Indonesia, federal state of (NIT), 261, 268, 270, 292  
East Java, federal state of, 263  
East Sumatra, federal state of, 263, 270  
East Timor, *see* Timor, East Edam (island), 130  
**Editor**, 374  
education: Ethical reforms, 189–93; expansion in 1950s, 274; Soeharto-era expansion of, 348. *See also hoofdenscholen, pésantron*  
'Eereschuld, een', 183  
Egypt, Egyptians, 14, 50, 204, 212, 219, 282, 285, 286, 358, 393. *See also* Cairo  
elections: of 1955, 286–7; of 1957, 297, 299; of Soeharto era, 339, 345, 352–3, 359, 371, 378–9; of 1999, 390–1; of 2004, 401–3; local, 408  
**elmu nabi Adam**, 201  
El Niño, 48, 378, 382  
England, English, *see* Britain English War, Fourth, 134  
Erbervelt, P., 113  
Erucakra, 106, 141, 200  
Ethical policy, 165, 183–95, 198, 208, 220, 221, 224, 229; Soeharto era compared with, 322–3  
European Union, 370, 385

Fadhillah Khan, 40  
family planning, 349  
famine, 91, 149, 151, 163, 237  
Fatahillah, 40  
Feisal Tanjung, 372, 373, 375  
fifth force, 316–17, 318  
flag: Indonesian (**Dwiwarna, Sang Merah-Putih**), 242, 244, 247, 358; OPM, 385; **Fretelin**, 386  
Flores, 8, 76, 166, 227  
Fock, D., 190, 194  
Ford, G., 342  
Ford Foundation, 398  
Formosa, *see* Taiwan  
FPI (Islamic Defenders' Front), 397, 398, 406, 411, 413  
France, French, 31, 54, 112, 130, 134, 135, 137, 162, 175, 176–7, 231, 360, 367, 409  
Frederikse, J., 106  
Freitas, J. de, 27  
**Fretelin** (Revolutionary Front of Independent East Timor), 342, 347, 361, 386  
Fuad Bawazier, 384

Gadjah Mada University, 257  
GAM (Independent Aceh Movement), 364, 388, 392, 394, 401, 408  
Gama, V. de, 25  
gambier, 172

gambling, 12, 168, 173, 364, 397. *See also* cockfighting  
*gamelan*, 64, 197  
Gandhi, Indira, 353  
*ganyang Malaysia*, 311. *See also* confrontation  
GAPI (Indonesian Political Federation), 230, 231  
Garéndi, R. M., 115, 116, 123  
Garibaldi, G., 218  
Garuda hijacking, 352  
Garut, 208, 264  
*Garwa Kancana, Suluk*, 109  
*Gatholoco, Suluk*, 159  
Gede, Kiai (of Jambi), 83  
Gelgel, 52, 53, 77–8, 79  
Generation of 45, 251, 353  
Generation of 66, 322  
*Gérakan Hidup Baru*, 297  
*Gérakan Rakyat Baru*, 245, 297  
*Gérinda*, 225  
*Gérindo*, 228, 236  
Germany, Germans, 208, 221, 230, 231, 235, 246, 316, 363, 367, 374, 379  
*Gérwani* (Indonesian Women's Movement), 308, 319, 320  
*Gestapu* (coup attempt of 1965), 318–20, 326, 327  
Ghalib, Andi M., 383–4  
Gianyar, 78, 164–6  
Gilchrist letter, 316  
Giri, Sunan/Panembahan, 11, 12–13, 41–2, 43, 45, 50, 51–2, 69, 91, 94  
Girīndrawardhana Ranawijaya, 39  
Girīśawardhana, 20  
*Giyanti, Babad*, 61–2  
*Giyugun*, 242, 250. *See also* *Peta*  
Goa (India), 25, 27, 309  
Goddess of the Southern Ocean, 45, 48, 52, 53, 125, 126, 140, 142  
Goenawan Mohamad, 353, 374, 376  
Goens, R. van, 44, 69, 87, 93  
*goeroe ordonnantie*, 213, 241  
Gogodog, 91–2  
Goh Chok Tong, 379  
gold, 18, 22–3, 24, 35, 54, 80, 83, 84, 170, 172, 281  
Gold Coast, 176  
*Golkar, Sekber Golkar*, 314, 338–408 *passim*  
Gombong, 232  
Gorbachev, M. 363–4, 366  
Gorontalo, 75, 300  
Governor General of VOC: post created, 31  
Gowa, 19, 54, 69–75, 87, 89, 90, 167  
Graaff, S. de, 194  
Graeff, A. C. D. de, 220, 225  
Grēsik, 6, 12, 13, 14, 41, 46, 47  
guided democracy: origins of, 290, 292; general characteristics of, 294–5  
Gujerat, Gujeratis, 14, 22, 23, 49, 56  
Guntur, Raden Mas, 105, 123  
Gunungjati, Sunan, 11, 12, 40  
Gunungsitoli, 175  
Gurkhas, 387  
Guruuh Sukarnoputra, 373

Habibie, B. J., 367–8, 372, 374, 376, 377, 379–80, 381–92, 395, 396  
Hadhrāmis, *see* Arabia, Arabs  
Hadikusumo, Ki Bagus, 242, 245  
Hadi subeno Sosrowerdojo, 317, 330  
*Hadith (Sunnah)*, 202–3, 357

Hairul Alam Kamaluddin Kaicili Asgar, 73  
Hairun (of Ternate), 27  
Haji, Raja (of Johor), 85  
Haji, Sultan (of Bantēn), 96–8, 101  
*hajj*, *see* pilgrimage  
Halim air base, 317, 318–20, 326  
Halmahera, 72, 244  
Hamēngkubuwana I (Mangkubumi), 116, 118–29, 133  
Hamēngkubuwana II, 125, 126, 129–38, 140, 141  
Hamēngkubuwana III, 134, 137, 138, 140  
Hamēngkubuwana IV, 140  
Hamēngkubuwana V, 140, 153  
Hamēngkubuwana VIII, 59, 255  
Hamēngkubuwana IX, 255, 268, 269, 279, 281, 282, 299, 300, 325, 329, 330, 339  
Hamid Awaludin, 409  
Hamzah Haz, 393, 399, 400, 403  
Hamzah Pansuri, 56, 57  
Hanafi School of Law, 4  
Hanbali School of Law, 4, 212  
Hardi, 296, 301, 317  
*Harian Rakjat*, 285, 306, 320  
Harmoko, 372, 380  
*Harsawijaya, Kidung*, 62  
Hartingh, N., 120  
Hartono, 375, 384  
Hartono Dharsono, *see* Dharsono  
Hartsinck, A., 127  
Hasan, Bob, 369, 380, 382, 383, 384, 388  
Hasanuddin (of Bantēn), 40  
Hasanuddin Kaicili Gasea, 72  
Hasanuddin Tumenanga ri Balla'pangkana, 74, 87  
Hasjim Asjari, 212, 242–3, 355  
Hassan, A., 212, 226  
Hasyim Muzadi, 412  
Hatta, M., 219–20, 225, 226, 227, 239, 241–7, 249, 254, 256, 260–70 *passim*, 280, 281, 290, 292, 295–301 *passim*, 305, 339, 345, 405  
Hawke, R. J., 361  
Hayam Wuruk, 20, 21  
head-hunting, 179, 376  
*Heeren XVI* (Directors of the VOC), 30, 31, 32, 103, 112, 113, 116–17, 134  
Hegel, G. W. F., 198  
*Heijo*, 240, 242, 247, 250, 251, 258  
Henry Dunant Centre, 401  
Henry 'the Navigator', 24  
Heutsz, B. van, 177, 178, 189, 190, 192, 198  
*Havea brasiliensis*, 185. *See also* rubber  
Hidayatullah, Pangeran (of Banjarmasin), 170  
*Himpunan Mahasiswa Islam*, 378  
Hinduism, Hindu-Buddhism, 5–6, 8, 13–22 *passim*, 39, 40, 43, 50, 52, 53, 57–63 *passim*, 123, 165, 174, 197, 201, 217, 277, 333, 356, 363, 375. *See also* Bali, Balinese  
Hiroshima, 246  
Hitler, A., 230  
Hitu, Hituese, 26, 30, 42, 69–70  
*Hizbulah, Barisan*, 244, 251, 264, 276  
Hoamoal, 69, 70, 71, 75  
Hohendorff, J. A. Baron van, 115, 119  
holy war (*jihad*): victory guaranteed by *Usulbiyah*, 109; Pakubuwana II in, 114, 115; Aceh War as, 177; World War II not, 241; Indonesian Revolution as, 253; killing of PKI as, 327; as aim of JI, 358; against Christians, 389, 393.  
*See also* *Komando Jihan, Laskar Jihad, Laskar Mujahidin, MMI*  
honey, 22–3  
*hongi*, 71

**hoofdenscholen**, 156, 189  
Hoorn, J. van, 103  
Horie Choso, 240  
**hormat circulaire**, 156  
Hormuz, 25  
horses, trade in, 22, 167  
Houtman, C. de, 29  
HTI (*Hizbut Tahrir Indonesia*), 411, 412  
**hulubalang**, see *uleëbalang*  
Hurdt, A., 93

IAIN (State Institutes for Islamic Studies), 356, 394  
Ibn Battuta, 4  
Ibnu Sutowo, 299, 336, 341, 367  
Ibn Sa‘ud, 212  
Ibrahim, Seh, 120  
Ibrahim, Tuanku (Sultan Ali Alauddin Mansur Syah), 175, 177  
ICMI (All-Indonesia Union of Muslim Intellectuals), 368, 370, 372, 374, 376, 377, 380  
Idenburg, W. F., 184, 189, 201  
Idham Chalid, 296, 302, 303, 329, 355–6  
IGGI (Inter-Governmental Group on Indonesia), 331, 341, 342, 366, 371  
**ijma‘**, 202  
**ijtihad**, 202–3  
Ilanun, 72, 73, 85  
Iljas Jacub, 226, 227  
Imaduddin Abdulrahim, 356  
Imagiri, 52  
**Imam, al-**, 203  
Imam Bonjol, 173  
Imam Samudra, 398  
Imam Sjafei, 328  
IMF (International Monetary Fund), 309, 317, 330, 331, 341, 379, 383  
Imhoff, G. W. Baron van, 116–17, 118–19  
Indéragiri, 36, 174  
India, Indians, 3, 8, 10, 14, 15, 18, 22–3, 25, 50, 56, 81, 95, 138, 139, 153, 169, 174, 176, 184, 203, 221, 252, 253, 262, 284, 305, 309, 349, 353, 363, 406  
Indian Ocean, 25, 45, 85, 93, 135, 142, 406  
*Indië weerbaar* (defence of the Indies), 194, 206–7  
indigo, 105, 139, 145, 147, 149, 150, 163  
*Indische Partij*, 198, 205, 206, 211, 217  
*Indische Vereeniging*, 219  
Indo-Europeans, 153, 154, 198, 205, 206, 217, 223, 228, 252, 253  
Indonesian Corruption Watch, 383, 409  
Indonesian language (*Bahasa Indonesia*): origins, 221; in Japanese period, 238; spread after independence, 274, 293, 348; in East Timor, 365  
Indonesian People’s Congress, 230  
*Indonesia Raya* (anthem), 242, 247, 261  
*Indonesia Raya* (newspaper), 336, 341  
*Indonesia tumpah darahku*, 222  
inflation, 209, 237, 256, 264, 275, 283, 304–5, 308, 313, 318, 331, 333, 337, 344–5, 374, 382, 405  
Inggit Garnasih, 217  
*Insulinde*, 206, 208  
*International Herald Tribune*, 367  
Interpol, 317  
Investigating Committee for Preparatory Work for Indonesian Independence, 245  
IPTN, 367  
Iqbal, M., 251  
Iranian Revolution, 347  
Iran–Iraq War, 344  
Iraq, 412  
Irian Jaya, *see* Papua

iron, 22  
irrigation, 78, 96, 156, 184, 187, 275, 348  
*Irshad, al-*, 204, 229  
Irwandi Yusuf, 408  
ISDV (Indies Social-Democratic Association), 206, 207, 208–9, 213  
*Iskandar, Carita Sultan*, 51, 109, 128  
*Iskandar Dhulkarnain, Hikayat*, 57  
Iskandar Muda, 35, 36–8, 56, 57  
Iskandar Syah (of Malacca), 22  
Iskandar Thani Alauddin Mughayat Syah, 38, 56  
Islam, *passim*; first evidence of, 3–16; 19th-century reform in, 157–9, 172–4; Modernism in, 174, 202–5; Islamic Communism, 208, 209, 211; Communism forbidden in, 298; recent extremism in, 352, 397–400, 410, 412–13.  
*See also* holy war, mystic synthesis, Padris, Sufism, names of individual orders, persons, organisations and parties  
Islamic Brotherhood, 393  
Israel, 285; Arab–Israeli War, 341  
Istiqlal mosque, 389, 397  
*Itinerario near Oost ofte Portugaels indien*, 29

Ja‘far Umar Thalib, 393, 399  
Jagaraga, 45, 106  
Jailolo, 73  
Jakarta Charter, 246, 249, 302, 303, 336, 400  
Jakarta-Pnom Penh-Hanoi-Beijing-Pyongyang axis, 318, 330  
Jaka Tingkir, 43–4, 45  
Jambi, 32, 36, 80, 81–3, 87, 171–2, 175  
*Jam‘iyat Khair*, 204  
Jangrana I, 103  
Jangrana II, 103, 106  
Jangrana III, 107  
Janssens, J. W., 137  
Japan, Japanese, 23, 27, 28, 31, 32, 95, 106, 153, 178, 179, 185, 222, 223, 228, 230, 231, 232, 254, 257, 258, 259, 273, 280, 316, 330, 336, 340, 342, 353, 367, 377, 378, 411; occupation of Indonesia, 157, 235–55, 257, 264, 295, 297, 325  
Japan (in Java), 46  
Jassin, H. B., 312–13  
Java, Javanese, *passim*; pre-colonial literature of, 58–62; Islamic mystic synthesis in, 60  
Javanese Wars of Succession, 104–5, 107, 119–20, 129, 130  
Java Sea, battle of, 232  
Java War, 135, 136, 141–2, 144, 167, 173, 209  
*Jawa Hokokai*, 243, 244, 245  
*Jawa Pos*, 370  
Jayakerta, 32, 33, 40  
Jayalengkara, 48  
*Jejak langkah*, 338  
Jembér, 384  
Jayanagara, 20  
Jayaningrat, Adipati, 107, 141  
Jayapusrita, 106, 107  
Jeddah, 207  
Jehovah’s Witnesses, 333  
Jelantik, Gusti Gede, 165  
Jembrana, 164  
Jépara, 32, 34, 39, 41, 47, 49, 88, 90, 93, 99, 102, 103, 107, 116, 118, 146, 190, 384, 408  
Jesuit order, 27  
Jews, 24, 383, 398, 410; Zionism, 393  
JI (*Jemaah Islamiyah*), 358, 397, 398, 399, 411–12  
*jihad*, *see* holy war  
JIL (Liberal Islamic Network), 398, 411  
Jimbaran, 411  
Jipang, 44, 45

- John Paul II, 365–6  
Johor, 26, 34–8, 41, 80–5 *passim*, 92, 102, 358  
Jolo, 7  
*Jong Ambon*, 201  
Jonge, B. C. de, 224, 227  
*Jong Java*, 201, 217  
*Jong Sumatranen Bond*, 201  
Jonker, Captain, 102  
July 3rd Affair, 260  
Juwana, 91, 103, 114
- Kahar Muzakkar, 280, 307  
Kajoran, Raden, 90, 94  
Kakiali, 42, 69–70  
Kalijaga, Sunan, 11–12, 44, 45  
Kalimantan, *passim*; Islamisation of, 8, 42; 19th-century imperial rivalry in, 169–70, 179; ecological damage in, 369, 378; ethnic violence in, 376, 384. *See also individual toponyms*  
Kalinyamat, Ratu, 41  
Kaliurang, 267  
Kalla, J., 403, 404, 405, 408  
KAMI, 326, 328  
Kampar, 36  
Kant, I., 198  
Kapaha, 70  
KAPPI, 326  
Karangasém (Bali), 78, 79, 163–6  
Karta, 48  
Kartasura, 58, 61, 94–118 *passim*, 125  
*Kartasura, Babad*, 61  
Kartini, 190, 207  
Kartosuwigjo, S. M., 264–5, 279, 280, 284, 307, 347  
KASI, 326  
*Kaum Bétawi*, 201, 224  
*kawin gantung*, 217  
*Kebatinan* (indigenous mystical sects), 333, 335, 340. *See also kěpěrcayaan*  
Kécik, Raja, 83–4  
Kédah, 37, 82  
*Kédhiri, Babad*, 159  
Kédiri, 8, 39, 45, 46, 93, 97  
Kédu, 146  
*Keibodan*, 240  
Kennedy, J. F., 308, 309  
Kennedy, R. F., 309, 313  
Képér, 94  
*kěpěrcayaan* (belief), 340, 351. *See also kebatinan*  
*kéroncong*, 28  
Kértarājasa Jayawardhana, 20  
Kew letters, 137  
Khalwatiyya, Khalwatiyya-Yusuf, 97  
Khrushchev, N., 315  
Kia, 377  
Kidul, Ratu or Nyai Loro, *see Goddess of the Southern Ocean*  
*kidung*, 62  
killings of 1965–6, 326–7  
KISDI, 389  
Kissinger, H., 342  
Klungkung, 78, 79, 164–6  
KNIP (Central Indonesian National Committee), 249, 250, 254, 262, 263  
KOOGA, 313  
Kohl, H., 379  
Koiso Kuniaki, 243, 244, 246

**Komando Jihad**, 346, 358  
**Koninklijke, de**, 178, 184–5. *See also* Shell  
**Konstituante**, *see* Constituent Assembly  
**Kopassus** (Special Forces), 354, 376  
**Kopkamtib** (Operational Command for Restoration of Security and Order), 326, 336, 339, 340–1, 361  
Korea, 285, 301, 361, 377; Korean War boom, 278, 281  
**Kostrad** (Army Strategic Reserve Command), 311, 313, 319–20, 364, 367, 379, 381  
**Kota Pilang**, 172  
Kotawaringin, 169  
Koxinga, 71  
KPM (Royal Mail Steam Packet Company), 184, 275, 298  
Krakatau, 163  
Krakatau Steel, 344  
Krapyak, Seda ing, 46–7  
**Kraton, Babad**, 125  
**kris** (dagger), 63, 105, 166  
Kuching, 169  
Kudus, 41, 42, 46  
Kudus, Sunan, 11, 41, 43  
Kuning, Sunan, 115  
Kupang, 76  
Kurani, Ibrahim al-, 96  
Kuta, 398, 411  
Kuta Gëde, 46, 48  
Kutai, xii, 42, 77, 185  
Kutaraja, *see* Banda Aceh

**La Galigo**, 63  
**Lajar terkembang**, 229  
La Mappanjuki, 250  
Lampung, 37, 40, 84, 105, 130, 188, 365  
Lamreh, 4, 7  
Lancaster, J., 31  
land rent, 139, 145  
Langkat, 175, 176, 184  
Lapindo Brantas, 407–8  
Lasém, 47  
**Laskar Jihad**, 393, 398  
**Laskar Mujahidin**, 393  
Lawu, Mount, 115  
Lawu, Sunan, 115  
Lebanon, 412  
Lee Kuan Yew, 318  
Left Wing (*Sayap Kiri*), 262, 263, 264  
Leiden University, 177, 191, 255  
Leimena, J., 296, 303, 312, 314, 319, 329  
**Lekra**, 296, 308, 312, 335  
Lenin's theses on the national and colonial questions, 209–10  
Leran, 3–4  
Leyte Gulf, battle of, 245  
Lhokseumawe, 364, 387  
Liberal Islamic Network, *see* JIL  
liberal period (c.1870–1900), 148, 150, 151, 156, 183  
Libya, 364  
Liem Sioe Liong, 325, 358, 370, 380, 383  
Limapuluh Kota, 172  
Limboto, 75  
Limburg Stirum, J. P. Count van, 207, 208  
Lincoln, A., 218  
Linggajati, 261, 262  
Linschoten, J. H. van, 29

Lintau, 173  
Li Peng, 366  
LIPIA (Institute for the Study of Islam and Arabic), 393, 397, 398  
Lipura, 45  
liquefied natural gas, 341, 344, 364  
literacy rate, 193, 274, 324, 348  
LKN (National Cultural Institute), 308, 313  
Lobo, 168  
*Lokapala*, 58, 61  
Lombok, 8, 23, 42, 52, 53, 62, 75, 78, 105, 163, 164–5, 193, 252, 394  
Loosdrecht, A. A. van de, 168  
Lubis, Zulkifli, 290, 298, 307  
Lukman, M. H., 265, 266, 277, 279, 305, 319, 327  
Luwu, 54, 259

Macao, 28  
Macapagal, D., 310, 313  
mace, 18, 23, 25, 69  
Madiun, 39, 45, 103, 106, 146, 320; PKI rebellion at, 265–7, 276, 277, 280, 301  
Madura, Madurese, *passim*; Islamisation of, 43. *See also individual personal names and toponyms*  
Madura, federal state of, 263  
Maeda Tadashi, 244, 247  
Maetsuycker, J., 69, 74, 93  
Maftuh Basyuni, 411  
Magélang, 142, 189, 253, 254, 334  
Magellan, F., 27  
Magétan, 106  
*Mahabharata*, 57  
*Mahkota Ségala Raja-raja*, 57  
*Mahmillub* (Extraordinary Military Courts), 328, 332  
Mahmud, Raja Muda (of Riau), 83  
Mahmud Badaruddin (of Palembang), 84, 171  
Mahmud Syah (of Aceh), 176–7  
Mahmud Syah (of Malacca), 25  
Ma Huan, 6  
Maimun, daughter of, 3  
maize, 151  
Maja, Kyai, 141, 142, 209  
Maja Agung, 47  
Majakerta, 156, 217  
Majapahit, xii, 5, 10, 12, 15, 17, 18, 20–1, 39, 41, 43, 44, 45, 47, 52, 53, 62, 79, 92, 124, 159, 172, 209, 211; golden crown of, 93, 101

**Majelis Ulama Indonesia** (MUI), 378, 393–4, 410  
Makassar, Makassarese, *passim*; Islamisation of, 42, 54; pre-colonial literature of, 63; Dutch conquests of, 74, 167  
Malabar, 14  
Malacca, 6–92 *passim*, 186; foundation of, 21–2; Islamisation of, 6, 7, 11, 22; Portuguese conquest of, 7, 25, 40; Dutch conquest of, 38, 69, 70, 80; British occupation of, 137, 174  
Malacca, Straits of, 9, 18, 31, 34–7, 81–5 *passim*, 174, 179  
Malang, 39, 47, 104, 121, 123, 251, 384  
malaria, 111, 142, 169, 188  
**Malari** riots, 240–1, 358  
Malaya, Malays, *passim*; Federation of Malaya, 301, 309–10  
Malay literature, 10–11, 55–7  
Malaysia, Federation of, 180, 310–18, 330, 336, 349, 358, 364, 367, 369, 411  
Malik, Adam, 259, 260, 314, 316, 329, 330, 331, 336  
Malik as-Salih, 4, 10  
Malik az-Zahir, daughter of, 4  
Malik Ibrahim, 6, 14  
Maliki School of Law, 4  
Malino, 260  
Mallaby, A. W. S., 253  
Maluku (Moluccas, ‘Spice Islands’): Islamisation of, 8–9; origin of name, 26; Muslim–Christian violence in, 389, 393. *See also* South Maluku, Republic of, and individual personal names and toponyms  
Mamiek Soeharto, 368  
**Manar, al-**, 41  
Mandala Command, 308  
Mandar Syah (of Ternate), 71, 72  
Mandela, N., 378  
Mangkubumi (brother of Pakubuwana II), *see* Hamengkubuwana I  
Mangkubumi (uncle of Dipanagara), 142  
Mangkunegara (brother of Pakubuwana II), 108  
Mangkunegara I (Mas Said), 116, 118–24, 126–9  
Mangkunegara II, 134–5, 139, 143  
Mangkunegara IV, 152  
Mangkunegara VII, 211  
Mangkunegara VIII, 259  
Mangkunegaran house, 138, 152–5 *passim*, 211  
Mangkunegaran Legion, 135, 137, 138, 141, 154  
**Manikēbu**, 312–13  
**Manipol** (-USDEK), 304, 308, 312, 313  
Mansur (of Tidore), 9, 26  
Mansur, Mas, 241, 243, 245  
Mansur Syah (of Malacca), 6  
Manuel, Dom, 27  
Maphilindo, 310  
Marah Roesli, 221  
Marcos, F., 361  
**Mardijkers**, 104  
marine corps, 332, 335, 409  
Maring, G., 206  
Marlborough, Duke of, 104  
Marriott hotel bombing, 399  
Ma'ruf Syah (of Pēdir), 6  
Marsinah, 373  
**Masyumi**, 242–3, 244, 245, 251, 253, 258, 263–6, 276–92, 296–307, 314, 326, 334, 336, 341  
Mataram (Java), 38–140 *passim*  
Mataram (Lombok), 164, 165  
Mataram, Kyai Gedhe, 44  
Mataram, Pangeran Arya, 107  
Mauritius, 137  
Mawdudi, Sayyid Abdul A'la, Mawdudi Institute, 393  
**Max Havelaar**, 150, 183  
Mecca, 10, 40, 52, 56, 60, 88, 96, 109, 152, 157–8, 172, 174, 203–4, 205, 212, 226, 241, 286, 302, 347, 367, 368,

409. *See also* pilgrimage  
Medan, 252, 257, 262, 274, 279, 283, 291, 300, 316, 373, 380  
**Medan Prijaji**, 200  
Medina, 96, 210, 296  
Mégal Iskandar Syah, 22  
Megawati Sukarnoputri, 372, 376–405 *passim*  
Měmpawah, 169  
Ménado, 75, 142, 152, 171, 173, 250, 300  
Menak, 58, 60, 61  
Měngwi, 77, 78, 164–5  
Méntawai, 178  
Mérapi, Mount, 91, 140, 407; Mérapi–Mérbabu area, 320  
Messerschmitt, 367  
MIAI (Supreme Islamic Council of Indonesia), 229–30, 231, 240, 241, 242  
middle class: in 19th-century Java, 148, 157; in 1950s, 274; in Soeharto period, 344, 362, 363, 365, 373, 376, 379; Islam among, 362, 368, 375, 399; since Soeharto, 396; alienated by terrorism, 399–400  
Middle Javanese, 20, 62  
Middleton, H., 31  
Military technology: transfer of, 104–5; modern disparity in, 161; Soviet, 307  
Minahasa, 75, 190, 201, 289  
Minangkabau, 8, 63, 82, 83, 84, 85, 102, 142, 163, 172–4, 178, 196 *et seqq. passim*  
Mindanao, 7, 72  
**Mintaraga, Sērat**, 58, 61  
Mintaredja, M. Safaat, 338  
Minye Tujo, 4, 6  
Misbach, H., 208, 209  
Mitterand, F., 360  
MMI (Indonesian Holy Warriors' Council), 393, 398, 411, 412  
Mochtar Kusumaatmadja, 360  
Mochtar Lubis, 251, 290, 336, 341  
Mook, H. J. van, 252, 254, 260, 262, 263; Van Mook line, 263, 266, 267  
Morotai (Moro), 27, 244, 252  
mouse plagues, 163  
Mountbatten, L., 252  
MPR (Peoples' Consultative Assembly), 302, 338, 345, 384, 390, 391, 401  
MPRS (Provisional People's Consultative Assembly), 305, 332, 335, 336, 392  
Muarakumpe, 172  
Muchtar Lutfi, 226, 227  
Muhammad, the Prophet, 10, 11, 56, 57, 58, 84–5, 109, 202, 205, 210, 211, 296, 397, 410, 411  
Muhammad Daud Syah, Tuanku (Ibrahim Mansur Syah), 177  
Muhammad Fakhruddin (of Jambi), 171  
**Muhammadiyah**, 168, 205 *et seqq. passim*; numbers of followers of, 205, 376, 410  
Muhammad Sēman, 170  
Muhammad Syah (of Aceh), 175  
Muhammad Syah (of Malacca), 22  
Muhammad Syah (of Pahang), 6  
Muis, Abdul, 207, 208, 210, 229  
Mukmin, Al-, 357  
Multatuli, 150, 205  
**Munir, al-**, 204  
Munir Said Thalib, 409  
**Murba, Partai**, 266, 276, 278, 287, 290, 291, 292, 314, 316, 339  
Murdani, L. B., 353, 357, 358, 360, 361, 372  
Muria, Mount, 408  
Murya, Sunan, 11  
Musso, 213, 214, 217, 265–6, 312  
Muwardi, 259  
Muzaffar Syah (of Malacca), 22  
Muzaffar Syah (of Pēdir), 6  
Myanmar, *see* Burma  
mystic synthesis, 60, 153, 157, 158, 159

*Nāgarakertāgama*, 20  
Nagasaki, 246  
Nakasone Yasuhiro, 353  
Napoleon, L., 135  
Napoleon Bonaparte, 135  
Napoleon III, 175  
Napoleonic Wars, 137, 139, 144  
Naqshabandiyya, 96, 158, 165, 174, 202, 203, 204. *See also* Qadiriyya wa Naqshabandiyya  
*Nasakom*, 306, 312, 316–17, 318  
Nasser, G. A., 285  
Nasution, A. H., 258–9, 264, 265, 266, 276, 281–320 *passim*, 325, 328, 352  
Natadiningrat, 136, 137  
Natakusuma (brother of Hamēngkubuwana II), *see* Pakualam I  
Natakusuma, Raden Adipati (of Kartasura), 110, 111, 114, 115  
national car (Timor), 377, 378, 379  
national Communism, 258, 266, 276  
National Conference, National Development Conference (1957), 297  
*Nāgarakertāgama* Council (*Dewan Nasional*), 292, 296, 297, 304  
National Front (est.1960), 306, 313  
National Front for the Liberation of West Papua, 299, 306  
National Party, 224  
National Planning Council, 304  
Natsir, M., 226, 258, 276, 278–9, 280, 290, 299–300, 301, 302, 307, 331, 334, 336, 388  
Nawawi, Shaikh M., 158  
Neck, J. van, 29  
*Nederlandsch Indische Vrijzinnige Bond*, 208  
*Negara Islam Indonesia*, *see* *Darul Islam*  
Nehru, J., 285, 309  
Netherlands Trading Company (NHM), 145, 149  
*Newsweek*, 346  
*New York Times, The*, 346, 366  
New Zealand, 387  
Ngampel-Děnta, 11, 48, 51  
Ngruki, 357  
Ngrurah Rai, I Gusti, 261  
Nguyen Co Thach, 360  
Nias, 37, 175, 407  
Nigeria, 341  
Ninjas, 384  
Nirartha, 53  
*Nītiśāstra, Kakawin*, 61  
Nixon, R., 337, 341  
Njono Prawiro, 328  
Njoto, 265, 277, 279, 306, 308, 319, 327  
Nobel Peace Prize, 378  
Non-Aligned Movement, 360–1, 366  
November promises, 208  
NU (*Nahdlatul Ulama*), 212 *et seqq. passim*; numbers of followers of, 412  
Nu, U, 285  
nuclear power, 408  
Nuku, Kaicili, 72–3  
*Nur ad-daqā’iq*, 56  
Nurcholish Madjid, 356, 380  
nutmeg, 18, 23, 25, 27, 69, 71, 150  
  
October 17 affair, 282, 286, 288, 290  
*Oetoesan Hindia*, 217  
Office for Religious Affairs, 238, 240, 243  
oil, 178, 184–5, 186, 222, 231, 262, 275, 291, 299, 300, 310, 332, 336–7, 340, 341, 343, 344, 348, 353, 354, 359, 364, 405. *See also* *Pertamina*  
Old Javanese language and literature, 20, 57, 58, 60, 61, 62, 211

Omar Dhani, 308, 313, 317, 318, 319–20, 328, 332  
OPEC, 341  
opium, 83, 93, 96, 98, 99, 100, 105, 111, 140, 148, 151, 152, 163, 165–6, 173, 179, 202, 211  
OPM (Free Papua Organisation), 337, 385  
*Opsus* (Special Operations), 314, 330  
*orang laut*, 21, 82, 83  
Osama bin Laden, 397  
OSVIA (Training school for native officials), 189, 190, 198, 199, 200  
Outhoorn, W. van, 103

P4, 351  
Pacific ring of fire, 406  
Padang, 137, 173, 175, 204, 252, 262, 299, 300  
Padangpajang, 204  
Paddy's Bar, 398  
Padris, Padri War, 142, 157, 172–4, 196  
Pahang, 6, 36, 37, 38, 83  
Pajajaran, 8, 40–1, 45, 134  
Pajang, 43–4, 45, 47, 60, 94, 124  
*Pakempalan Politik Katolik Jawi*, 201  
Pakistan, Pakistanis, 251, 284, 302, 353, 393  
Pakpahan, Muchtar, 373, 376, 378  
Pakualam I (Natakusuma), 134, 136–8  
Pakualam II, 153  
Pakualam III, 153  
Pakualam VII, 198  
Pakualam VIII, 256  
Pakualaman Corps, 138  
Pakualaman house, 152, 153, 154, 197, 211  
Pakubuwana, Ratu, 61, 107, 108, 109, 110, 111, 15, 128  
Pakubuwana I (Pugér), 61, 90, 92–3, 94, 102, 103–6, 123  
Pakubuwana II, 108–16, 117–19  
Pakubuwana III, 119–27  
Pakubuwana IV, 127–9, 133–9  
Pakubuwana V, 152  
Pakubuwana VI, 142  
Pakubuwana XI, 198  
Pakubuwana XII, 259–60  
Palakka, Arung, 74–5, 90, 94, 97  
Palembang, 7, 21, 36, 41, 52, 80–9 *passim*, 102, 130, 171–2, 175, 184, 201, 219, 252, 262, 274, 298  
Palestine, 366  
Palm, W. A., 127  
Pamanahan, Kyai Gédhe, 44  
Pamécutan, 166  
Pamékasan, 90, 162  
PAN (National Mandate Party), 388, 391, 402, 403, 404  
Panaraga, 45, 46, 106, 115  
Panarukan, 39, 52  
Pancasila: origin of, 245–6; becomes partisan, 283, 298; compulsory indoctrination in, 351; as sole ideological foundation, 355, 357–8; Soeharto abuse of, 352  
Pandawas, *Hikayat Pandawa Jaya*, 57  
Pane, Armijn, 229, 238  
Pane, Samusi, 221, 229, 238  
Panggung, Sunan, 60  
Pan-Islam, 207, 210, 213, 215, 216, 226  
*Panitisastro, Sérat*, 61  
Panji, 57, 58, 60, 61, 62  
Panji Sakti, 78  
*pantun*, 57, 221  
Papua, Papuans, 72, 168–9, 214, 252, 269, 279, 284–5, 288, 289, 293, 298, 299, 306–9, 310, 311, 337, 343, 354, 376, 385, 388, 392, 397, 401

Paramadina, 356  
*Paramayoga*, 152  
Parameswara, 21, 22, 83  
Parameswara Dewa Syah, 22  
*Pararaton*, 20, 62  
Pariaman, 32  
*Parindra*, 228, 230  
*Parisada Dharma Hindu*, 375  
*Parkindo* (Christian Party), 276, 278, 280, 287, 296, 302, 303, 339  
Parman, S., 315, 318–19  
*Parmusi*, 336, 338, 339  
*Partai Demokrat*, 402, 403, 404  
*Partai Islam Indonesia*, 230  
*Partai Katholik*, 276, 278, 287, 292, 296, 339  
*Partai Murba*, see *Murba*  
*Partai Sarekat Islam*, 210, 219  
*Partai Sarekat Islam Indonesia*, see *PSII*  
*Partindo*, 224–8 *passim*, 258  
Pasai, 4, 7–8, 10, 14, 17, 35, 40, 56; *Hikayat Raja-raja Pasai*, 10–11, 15  
Pasir, 42, 77  
*Pasundan* (organisation), 201  
Pasundan, federal state of, 263, 268, 270  
Pasuruan, 39, 43, 45–6, 47, 102, 104, 117, 146, 147, 409  
Patah, Raden, 39  
Pati, 45, 49, 104  
Patras, A., 112  
Pattimura (Thomas Matulesia), 168  
Pattinngalloang, 73  
*patturioloang*, 63  
pawnshops, pawnshop workers, 152, 156, 202, 210, 224  
PBB (Crescent Star Party), 404, 409  
PDI (Indonesian Democracy Party), 339, 345, 353, 359, 366, 371, 372, 376, 377, 379  
PDIP (Indonesian Democracy Party of Struggle), 388, 389, 390, 391, 396, 402–3, 405  
Peace Corps, 316  
pearls, mother-of-pearl, 169  
Pědir, 6, 35, 172, 364  
*Pědoman*, 336, 341  
Pegu, 23  
Pěkalongan, 146, 149, 252, 255  
Pěkik, 48, 51–2, 87, 89  
*Pělita*, 352  
*Pělopor, Barisan*, 244  
Pěmalang, 255  
*Pěmuda Rakyat*, 285, 296, 308, 318–19, 320  
Penang, 138, 172, 174, 175  
Pěnanggungan, Mount, 39  
Pěnangsang, Arya, 44  
Pěngging, 43  
Pěngkalan Kěmpas, 6  
People's Democratic Front, 264–6  
pepper, 18, 22–3, 25, 29, 31, 35, 37, 40, 76, 80, 81, 82–4, 86, 96, 98, 100, 129, 139, 150, 163, 171, 175–6, 184, 185  
Perak, 36, 82, 85  
*Perdjuangan kita*, 254  
*Pěrhimpunan Indonesia*, 219–20, 281  
*pěrintah halus*, 192  
Perlak, 4  
*Pěrnesta*, 292, 298, 299, 300, 307, 331  
*Pěrmi*, 226–7  
*Pěrmina*, 299, 332, 336  
*Pěrmufakatan Islam*, 212  
*Pěrsatuan Bangsa Indonesia*, 224, 228

**Persatuan Islam**, 212, 217, 226, 393  
Persia, 14, 23, 36, 57, 89, 90, 95, 106, 219  
**Persyarikatan Ulama**, 205  
**Pertamin**, 336  
**Pertamina**, 336, 341, 344, 354, 367  
**pésantren** (Islamic school), 115, 140, 158, 159, 199, 205, 213, 240, 241, 243, 253, 355, 356, 357, 393, 394, 398, 410  
**Pésindo**, 258, 259, 285  
**Peta**, 242, 245, 247, 250, 251, 258  
Petition of 50, 352, 358  
**Petrus** killings, 354  
Pham Van Dong, 285  
Philippines, Filipinos, 7, 24, 30, 72, 82, 95, 153, 180, 193, 228, 232, 241, 245, 267, 301, 310, 313, 336, 349, 361, 387, 393; battle of Philippine Sea, 243. *See also* Mindanao, Sulu archipelago  
pigs, trade in, 77, 163  
**Pikiran, ucapan dan tindakan saya**, 366  
pilgrimage to Mecca: *hajj*, 40, 60, 109, 152, 157–8, 172, 174, 203, 207, 286, 302, 367, 368; *umroh*, 347, 368  
piracy, pirates, 49, 77, 82, 83, 85, 90, 98, 99, 164, 169, 171, 179  
Pires, T., 7–10, 14, 15, 22, 33, 35, 38, 39, 41, 43  
pitch, 22–3  
Pitt Straits, 72  
PKB (National Awakening Party), 388, 390, 391, 402, 403  
PKI (Indonesian Communist Party), 209–10, 213–19 *passim*, 255, 258, 265–6, 277–8, 279–323 *passim*, 326–8, 330, 333–9 *passim*, 359, 361, 373, 388; membership of, 209, 280, 285, 308, 317  
PKN, 225  
PKS (Prosperous Justice Party), 402, 403, 404, 412  
plastics, 359  
Plered, 87–94 *passim*, 124–5  
PNI (Indonesian Nationalist Party), 218–339 *passim*, 345, 389  
**PNI-Baru**, 225, 226, 227, 230, 239  
**Poedjangga Baroe**, 229  
Polem Muhammad Daud, Panglima, 178  
police actions, Dutch, 261, 262–3, 267–8  
Polo, Marco, 4  
Pol Pot, 360  
polygamy, 411  
Pontianak, 169, 170, 261  
population: before c.1800, 17–18, 96, 112, 133; in 19th century, 146, 152, 179; in 20th century, 187–8, 194, 273–4, 324, 348, 356; in 2000, 396; urban, 274, 325, 349  
Portugal, Portuguese, 7, 22, 23, 24–41 *passim*, 50, 53, 54, 55, 69, 73–4, 80, 81, 82, 102, 104, 166, 309, 342, 347, 365, 370, 371, 386; ‘black Portuguese’, 76  
poultry, trade in, 77  
PPP (United Development Party), 339, 345–59 *passim*, 366, 371, 378, 379, 389, 390, 391, 393, 400, 402, 403  
PPP-KI, 219  
Prabalingga, 189  
Prabowo Subianto, 354, 364, 376, 379, 381, 388  
Prajogo Pangestu, 370, 383  
Prambanan, 44  
Pramoedya Ananta Toer, 200, 251, 296, 308, 326, 337–8, 346, 359  
Prawata (of Demak), 41  
PRD, 378  
Preparatory Committee for Indonesian Independence, 246, 249  
Preparatory Union of the Islamic Community, 238  
Priangan, 93, 97–8, 105, 129, 130, 144, 145, 150, 173, 213, 214, 243  
**pribumi** (indigenous Indonesians), 340, 367, 369–70, 380, 384, 407  
**primbon**, 13, 14  
Pringgalaya, 118  
Probosutedjo, 338, 389, 409  
prostitution, 179–80, 364, 397  
**priyayi** (member of the official class), 156–7, 159–60, 196–200, 201, 208, 213, 217, 218, 225, 236, 243, 250, 278  
PRRI (Revolutionary Government of the Indonesian Republic), 299–301, 302, 306, 307, 310, 331, 335, 388  
PSI (Indonesian Socialist Party), 263, 276–307 *passim*, 314, 326, 341, 354

PSII (*Partai Sarekat Islam Indonesia*), 219, 226, 227, 228, 230, 238, 240, 244, 264, 287; *Barisan Penyadar PSII*, 228

Pugér (son of Amangkurat I), *see* Pakubuwana I

Pugér (brother of Krupyak), 46

*puputan*, 165, 166

Purbaya (brother-in-law of Pakubuwana II), 110–11

Purbaya (brother of Amangkurat IV), 107

Purbaya (brother of Sultan Agung), 87, 91

*Purwaka Caruban Nagari*, 40

Purwaréja, 384

PUSA (All-Aceh Union of *Ulamas*), 236, 283–4

*pusaka* (holy regalia), 45, 93, 104, 105, 325

*Pustakaraja Purwa*, 152

*Putera*, 240–1, 243

*putihan*, *see* *santri*

Qadiriyya, 96, 174, 202

Qadiriyya wa Naqshabandiyya, 158, 202

Qaeda, al-, 393, 397, 398

*Qur'an*, 5, 10, 13, 14, 50–1, 57, 109, 158, 193, 202–3, 325, 357, 370, 384, 410, 412

Qutb, Sayyid, 393

radio, 180, 238, 251, 253, 260, 266, 282, 319, 320

Radjiman Wediodiningrat, 198, 207, 245, 246

Raffles, T. S., 137–9, 143, 162, 171, 175

railways, tramways, 148, 149, 156, 159, 187, 202, 210, 217, 251, 407

Raja Adat, Raja Alam, Raja Ibadat, 172

Raja Ampat islands, 72

*Raja-raja Pasai, Hikayat*, 10–11, 15

Rājasanagara, 20

Rājasawardhana, 20

Rama, Panémbahan, *see* Kajoran

*Rama, Sērat*, 58, 61

*Rāmāyana*, 57, 58, 62

Ramos-Horta, J., 347, 371, 378, 385, 387

Rangga, Raden, 136, 137

*Rangga Lawe, Kidung*, 62

Raniri, Nuruddin ar-, 56, 63

Rashid Rida, M., 202, 204

Rasul, Haji (Abdul Karim Amrullah), 204, 205, 211, 231, 241

rattan, 22–3

Ratu, Pangeran, 52

*ratu adil* (just king), 106, 141, 154, 200, 209, 225

Ratulangie, G. S. S. J., 250, 259

Raymond, G., 31

Razak, Tun Abdul, 330

Reede tot de Parkeler, J. F. Baron van, 135

*reformasi* (reform), 379, 380, 282, 383

regional autonomy, *see* decentralisation

Rēmbang, 103, 114, 116, 117, 118, 184, 190

Rēngasdengklok, 247

*Renville* agreement, 263–4

*Republika*, 368

*Retnadhōemilah*, 197

Riau, 82, 83–4, 85, 259

rice, *passim*; trade in, 11, 18, 19, 22–3, 49, 53, 54, 65, 77, 86, 88, 99, 101, 105, 163, 188; self-sufficiency in, 348, 353, 382

Rivai, Abdul, 197, 207

Rizieq Syihab, Habib M., 397

Rodim, 38

Roeslan Abdulgani, 290, 296, 329, 351

*romusha*, 242  
Ronggawarsita, 152  
Rooseboom, W., 166  
rosewater, 22  
Roti, Rotinese, 76–7, 166, 167, 201  
Rotterdam, prince, 72  
Rotterdam, fort, 74  
Round Table agreements, 269, 284, 288, 289  
RPKAD (para-commandos), 320, 328, 354  
rubber, 184, 185, 186, 222, 223, 231, 237, 262, 275, 281, 289  
**Rukun Tetangga**, 243  
**Rumah kaca**, 338  
Russia, Russians, 153, 206; Russian Revolution, 208. *See also* Soviet Union

Sabah, 310, 311  
**Sabilillah, Barisan**, 251, 276  
Sadikin, Ali, 352  
Sadrach Surapranata, 154  
Said, Mas, *see* Mangkunegara I  
Said ad-Din Bérgat Syah, 27, 30  
Saifuddin (of Tidore), 71, 72  
Saint-Martin, I. de, 98  
Sakirman, 315  
Sakti, Raja (Ahmad Syah ibn Iskandar), 102  
Salahuddin (of Aceh), 35  
Sala, *see* Surakarta Salafis, 393–4, 398  
**Salah asuhan**, 229  
Sala River, 17, 45, 46, 104, 118, 187  
Salatiga, 121, 137  
Saleh, Raden, 153  
Salim, Agus, 207, 210, 213, 217, 219, 226, 228, 244, 245, 267  
Salim, Anthony, 384  
Salim, Sudomo, *see* Liem Sioe Liong  
Salim group, 369  
Salman mosque, 356  
salt, 24, 162, 172  
Samanhudi, 201  
Sambas, 158, 169, 170  
Samin, Surantika, Saminist movement, 201, 335  
Samudra, 3, 4, 10–11  
sandalwood, 10, 18, 23, 65, 76, 365  
Sangihe, 75  
**Sang pemula**, 200  
Santa Cruz cemetery, 370  
**santri** (devout Javanese Muslim), 159, 199, 255, 264, 265, 266, 285, 296, 312, 327  
Sanusi, M., 358, 388  
Saparua, 168  
Sarawak, 169, 310, 311, 336  
**Sarekat Adat Alam Minangkabau**, 210  
**Sarekat Ambon**, 201  
**Sarekat Dagang Islam**, 200  
**Sarekat Dagang Islamiyah**, 199  
**Sarekat hijau**, 213  
**Sarekat Islam**, *see* SI  
**Sarekat Kaum Buruh Indonesia**, 220  
**Sarekat Rakyat**, 210, 213  
Sari Club, 398, 400  
Sarifah, Ratu, 129–30  
Sasaks, 53, 165  
Sasraningrat, 190  
Savu, Savunese, 76, 166, 167, 201

Sawito Kartowibowo, 345, 350  
SBSI (Prosperous Workers' Union of Indonesia), 373  
Section B (of SI), 207, 208, 213, 217  
*Seinendan*, 240  
*Séjarah Bantén*, 12, 191  
*Séjarah Melayu*, 10–11, 55  
Sela Gilang, 45, 92  
Sémanggi, murders at, 392  
Sémarang, 93, 99, 101, 103, 105, 114, 115, 118, 123, 137, 151, 153, 184, 190, 207, 252, 253, 262, 274, 349  
Semaun, 207, 209–10, 213, 217, 219  
Sempati Air, 382  
Senapati Ingala, 44–6, 48, 92  
Séntot (Ali Basa Prawiradirdja), 136, 142, 209  
sepoy conspiracy, 139  
Sequeira, D. L. de, 25  
Serdang, 175  
Serrão, F. de, 26  
Shafi'i School of Law, 4, 56, 202, 203, 212, 229, 241  
Shaleh Darat, Kyai, 158  
*Sharab al-'ashiqin*, 56  
*shari'ah, sarengat* (Islamic law), 4, 60, 109, 128, 158, 172, 202, 226, 230, 264, 283, 394, 400, 411. *See also* Jakarta Charter, Shafi'i School of Law  
*shari'ah* (Islamic) courts, 368, 400  
Shattariyya, 96, 127, 158, 172, 174, 202  
Shell, Royal Dutch, 185, 224, 275, 298, 300, 316, 332, 342  
Shibata Yaichiro, 253  
*Shu Sangi-kai*, 241  
SI (*Sarekat Islam*), 200–1, 206–10, 212, 213, 216, 217, 225  
Siak, 36, 83, 84, 85, 174, 175, 176  
Siam, *see* Thailand  
Sidayu, 29, 46  
Sidenreng, 77  
Sidoarjo mud volcano, 407–8  
Sigit Soeharto, 346, 368  
Sihanouk, N., 285  
Siliwangi Division, 259, 263–7 *passim*, 290, 300, 318, 347, 358  
silk, 22  
Simatupang, T. B., 258, 276, 281, 282, 345  
Simbolon, M., 289, 290, 291, 298, 299, 307, 331  
*Sinar Harapan*, 359  
Singamangaraja, Si, 174  
Singapore, 139, 163, 169, 174–9 *passim*, 203, 212, 213, 214, 232, 235, 240, 246, 301, 309–10, 311, 318, 336, 379, 387  
Singasari, Pangeran (brother of Amangkurat II), 91  
Singasari, Pangeran (brother of Pakubuwana II), 116, 118, 123  
Singhawikramawardhana, 20  
Singkang, Arung, 77  
Singkil, 56, 158, 174  
Sinuhun, Ratu (of Palembang), 82  
Sitijénar, Sunan, 11, 60  
Sitor Situmorang, 308, 335  
*Sitti noerbaya*, 221  
Situbondo, 355, 357, 376  
Siwalan, 47  
Sjafruddin Prawiranegara, 278, 299, 300, 307, 331, 336  
Sjahrir, Sutan, 219, 220, 225, 227, 239, 243, 247, 249, 254, 256, 258, 259–63, 267, 281, 307  
Sjam (Kamarusaman bin Ahmad Mubaiddah), 296, 314, 315, 319, 332, 359  
slavery, slaves, 22–3, 28, 32, 37, 54, 65, 71, 76, 78, 82, 85, 98, 99, 100, 113, 145, 149, 162–3, 165, 166, 168, 175, 179  
Sloot, J. A., 94  
smallpox, 72, 85, 147, 163, 167, 170

Sneevliet, H. J. F. M., 206, 207, 208, 217  
Snouck Hurgronje, C., 177, 178, 189, 190, 203, 322  
SOBSI (All-Indonesia Workers' Organisation Centre), 277, 280, 283, 297, 298, 308, 328  
**Sociaal Democratische Arbeiderspartij**, 208  
Société Général de Surveillance, 359  
Socialist Party, 258. *See also* PSI  
social revolutions (1945–6), 255–7  
Socotra, 25  
Soedirman, 242, 258–9, 260, 265, 266, 268, 269, 301  
Soeharto, 232, 268, 308, 311, 313, 314, 315, 318, 319–84, 385–97 *passim*, 401, 404, 409; family of, *see individual names*  
Soemitro, 340–1  
**Soenda Berita**, 200  
**Soenting Melajoe**, 204  
**Soerat Kabar Bahasa Melajoe**, 154  
Soerjadi, 371, 372, 377  
Soeryadjaya, 370  
Soetardjo Kartohadikoesoemo, 228–9, 231, 245  
Soetomo (Bung Tomo), 253  
Solor, 8, 27, 166  
Soppeng, 74  
**Sorāndaka, Kidung**, 62  
Sosrokardono, 207, 208, 213  
Soumokil, Ch., 270  
South Maluku, Republic of, 270, 393  
South Sumatra, federal state of, 263  
Soviet Union, 210, 213, 246, 262, 265, 267, 288, 290, 297, 306–7, 309, 310–11, 312, 314, 315, 316, 318, 331, 341, 342, 358, 360, 363; anti-Soviet *jihad*, 358, 393  
Spain, Spanish, 27, 28–9, 30, 31, 32, 53, 54, 69, 70, 71, 73, 75, 230  
Special Bureau (of PKI), 315, 319  
Speelman, C. J., 69, 74, 75, 92, 93, 99, 100  
Spies, W., 221  
Sri Lanka (Ceylon), 73, 102, 105, 107, 108, 111, 130, 284, 406  
**Sri Rama, Hikayat**, 57  
**Sri Tanjung, Kidung**, 62  
Śrīvijaya, 3  
Stanvac, 185, 275, 300, 316, 332, 341, 344, 354  
steam shipping, 150, 157, 159, 161, 180, 184, 298  
steel, 341, 344, 359  
Stevenson Rubber Restriction Scheme, 185  
Stock Exchange, Jakarta, bombing of, 397  
STOVIA (School for training native doctors), 189, 190, 191, 197, 198, 201. *See also* Doktēr-Jawa  
Struggle Union, 259  
**Studerenden Vereeniging Minahasa**, 201  
Study Clubs: of Sukarno, 218; of Sutomo, 218, 219, 224  
**Suara Pembaruan**, 359  
Subandrio, 296, 303, 306, 310, 311, 312, 314, 316, 319, 327, 328, 332  
**Sudamala, Kidung**, 62  
Sudharmono, 354, 361, 372  
Sudisman, 265, 277, 332  
Sudjajono, 251  
Sudjono Humardani, 340  
Sudomo, 338, 341  
Sudwikatmono, 338  
Suez Canal, 150, 157  
Suffah Institute, 264  
Sufis, Sufism (Islamic mystics, mysticism, *tarekat*): in Islamisation, 5–6, 15–16; in pre-18th century Aceh, Sulawesi and Java, 13–15, 50, 56, 96–7; in 18th century, 60, 108–9, 111, 114, 115, 127; in 19th century, 140, 152, 157, 158, 172, 174; after 19th century, 197, 202, 204, 209, 210, 264, 325, 345, 355, 356. *See also* mystic synthesis and individual orders  
sugar, 28, 93, 96, 99, 112, 139, 145, 146–51, 154, 155, 184, 185–6, 188, 202, 222–3, 224, 237, 262

Sugar Law, 150  
Suharto, *see* Soeharto  
Suhitā, 20  
Sukadana, 32, 46, 47, 52–3  
Sukarno, 216–333 *passim*, 335, 337, 348, 351, 366, 372, 392, 395, 404; *Barisan Sukarno*, 327  
Sukawati (Bali), 78  
Sukiman Wirjosandjojo, 219, 220, 230, 258, 276, 279–80, 300  
Sulaiman bin Abdullah bin-al Basir, 4, 14  
Sulawesi, *passim*. *See also individual toponyms*  
sulphur, 22  
Sulu archipelago, 7, 9, 85, 310  
*suluk*, 60  
*Suma Oriental*, *see* Pires, T.  
*Sumatra Thawalib*, 211  
Sumba, 10, 23, 76, 166, 167  
Sumbawa, 8, 23, 52, 53, 75, 78, 163, 166  
Sumēdang, 50  
Sumēnēp, 162  
Sumitro Djojohadikusumo, 297, 299, 307, 335, 354  
Sumual, H. N. V., 292, 298, 307, 331  
*sunan* (term), 11  
Sunda, Sundanese, 8, 22, 40–1, 63, 64, 146, 147, 149, 150, 179, 186, 198, 200, 201, 265, 289; Straits of, 31, 130  
*Sunda, Kidung*, 62  
Sunda Kalapa, 40  
Sungkar, Abdullah, 357–8  
Supa, Datu of, 261  
Supardjo, 318, 332  
*Supersēmar* (11 March letter of instruction), 328, 330  
Supreme Advisory Council, 304, 306  
Supreme Operations Command (*Koti*), 308, 311  
Surabaya, *passim*; Islamisation of, 8; 1620 description of, 46; rebellion of, 106–7; battle of, 253  
Surachman, 328  
Surakarta, 43, 61, 118 *et seqq. passim*; as name for Jayakērtā, 40  
Surapati (of Banjarmasin), 170  
Surapati (of Java), 100–2, 103, 104; descendants of, 106, 107, 109, 117, 121, 123  
Surat, 106  
Surengrana, 107  
Surinam, 149, 176. *See also* West Indies  
Surjopranoto, 209, 211, 213, 230  
Surjodiningrat, 225  
Surkati, A., 204  
Suro, Mbah, 335  
*Surya Raja, Sērat*, 125  
Suryengalaga, 152  
Susilo Bambang Yudhoyono, 380, 395, 401–5, 409, 411  
Susuruh, 45  
Sutan Maharadjā, Datuk, 204, 210  
Sutomo, 218, 224, 228  
Suwardi Surjaningrat, *see* Dewantara  
Suzuki Kantaro, 246  
Syafi‘i Ma’arif, A., 397, 410  
*syair*, 57, 221  
Syamsuddin of Pasai, 56  
Syria, 23, 31  
  
Tabanan, 79, 164, 166  
Tabariji, 27  
Tack, F., 93–4, 98, 101–2  
Taha Saifuddin, 172  
Tahir Jalaluddin, M., 203–4  
Taiwan (Formosa), 71, 237, 301, 310, 361

**Taj as-Salatin**, 57, 61; **Sērat Tajusalatin**, 61  
Taj ul-Alam, 38, 56  
Takdir Alisjabana, 229  
Talaud, 75  
Tallo, 73  
**Taman Siswa**, 211, 217, 224, 227, 241, 288, 296  
tamarind, 22  
Tambora, Mount, 163  
Tamjidillah, 170  
Tanah Datar, 172, 173  
**Tanah Jawi, Babad**, 11–12, 45, 61  
Tanaka Kakuei, 340  
Tanimbar, 169  
Tanjung Priok, 358, 359, 388  
Tan Malaka, 210, 213, 219, 258, 259, 260, 265, 266, 268, 276, 290, 295  
Tapa, Kyai, 129–30  
Tapanuli, 173, 257, 264, 291  
**Tapel Adam**, 61  
Tarakan, 252  
Tasikmalaya, 370  
Taufik Kiemas, 396  
tea, 130, 150, 184, 185–6, 237  
Tēbuirēng, 355  
Tēgal, 49, 93, 103, 146, 255; Tēgal-Wangi, 93  
Tēgalsari, 116  
Tēgalrēja, 140, 141  
telegraph, 156, 159, 180, 316  
telephone, 180  
Telukabesi, 70  
Tēmbayat, 50–1, 61, 90, 109, 128  
**Tempo**, 353, 374  
**Tēntara Kangjēng Nabi Muhammad**, 211  
**Tēntara Kēamanan Rakyat**, 253  
Terauchi Hisaichi, 246  
Tērnate, 8, 26–7, 30, 31, 42, 69–73, 75, 106, 171  
Tetun, 365  
textiles, 18, 22–3, 65, 76, 93, 98, 99, 100, 105, 148, 172, 264, 333  
Thailand, Thais (Siam, Siamese), 21, 22, 23, 75, 82, 95, 102, 242, 282, 302, 310, 336, 340, 349, 360, 379, 387, 406  
Thamrin, M. H., 224, 228, 231  
Thanom Kittikachorn, 340  
Thawalib School, 204  
Thedens, J., 117  
The Nin King, 383  
Theosophy, 198, 217  
Theys Eluay, 401  
three regions affair, 255  
Tiananmen Square, 364  
Tidore, 8–9, 26–7, 30, 31, 71–2, 73, 75  
Tien Soeharto, 338, 346, 347, 377  
timber, trade in, 33, 47, 86, 88, 99, 101, 105, 107, 336, 369  
**Time**, 383  
Timor, 8, 10, 23, 65, 76, 102, 130, 166–7, 179, 201  
Timor, East: Indonesian conquest and rule of, 342–86 *passim*, 395; independence won by, 386–7, 390, 391  
Timor Gap, 366  
**Timorsch Verbond**, 201  
tin, 80–5 *passim*, 161, 171, 184, 186, 231  
Tirtayasa, *see* Agéng, Sultan  
Tirtoadisurjo, 199–200  
Titiek Soeharto, 354, 368  
Tjarda van Starkenborgh Stachouwer, A. W. L., 224, 230–1, 232  
Tjipto Mangunkusumo, 198, 205–6, 208, 217, 220

Tjokroaminoto, H. O. S., 200, 207, 208, 210, 212, 213, 217, 226, 227, 238, 264  
tobacco, cigarettes, 150, 173, 184, 185–6, 222, 237, 333  
Tojo Hideki, 242, 243  
Tolitoli, 208  
Tommy Soeharto, 369, 377, 378, 379, 382, 409  
Topasses, 76  
Toraja, Torajans, 75, 167–8, 250, 280  
Tralaya and Trawulan graves, 5–6, 8  
transmigration, 188, 325, 346  
treaties, contracts, agreements: Portuguese–Bantēn, 40; Dutch–Gowa, 54; Dutch–Tidore, 71, 73; Dutch–Tērnate, 71; Dutch–Riau, 83; of Bungaya, 74, 167; Dutch–Palembang, 80, 81, 84; Portuguese–Palembang, 81; Malay–Bugis, 83; Dutch–Javanese, 88, 89, 92, 93, 99, 105, 108, 110, 116, 118, 119, 123, 128–9, 134, 135, 136, 137; Dutch–Jambi, 83, 171, 172; Dutch–Bantēn, 96; of Guyanti, 120; of Salatiga, 121; Surakarta–Yogyakarta, 124, 128–9; Dutch–Bali, 164; Dutch–Lombok, 165; Dutch–Kalimantan, 169, 170; Dutch–Minangkabau, 173; Dutch–Indēragiri, 174; Dutch–Siak, 174, 175, 176; Dutch–Nias, 175; of London, 174–5, 176, 179; of Sumatra, 176; other Dutch–British, 179; Short Declaration, 178; of Revolution, 261, 263, 269, 284, 288, 289; Indonesia–USA, 280; Indonesia–China, 284; Indonesia–Malaysia, 330; Indonesia–Australia, 366

Trēnggana, 38–40, 41, 43  
Trēngganu, 4, 10  
Tribhuwanā Wijayottunga Dewī, 20  
*Tri Koro Dharmo*, 201  
Triple A Movement, 238–9, 240  
Trisakti University, students murdered at, 380, 384  
Trunajaya, 75, 90–4, 97, 99, 102, 104, 116  
Try Sutrisno, 361, 372  
tsunami (2004), 406  
Tuban, 8, 39, 45, 91  
tuberculosis, 268  
Tulang Bawang, 130  
Turkey, Turks, 24, 120, 175, 176, 212, 219  
Tutut Soeharto, 368, 372, 379, 380  
typhoid, 147, 149

Ubud, 375  
UDT (Timorese Democratic Union), 342  
Ujung Pandang, fort, 74. *See also* Makassar Ukur, 50  
*ulama*, Acehnese, 38, 177, 178, 196, 236, 239, 257, 284, 291, 364–5  
*uleebalang*, 37, 38, 177, 178, 236, 257  
Ulil Abshar-Abdalla, 398  
unilateral action campaign, 312, 313, 315  
unions: trade, 202, 206, 207, 209, 210, 211, 213, 220, 224, 277, 283, 298, 373; student, 350. *See also* SOBSI  
United Nations (UN), 259, 262–3, 267–8, 278, 285, 298, 309, 316, 330, 337, 360, 361, 371, 385, 386–7, 396  
United States of America, Americans, 145, 172, 175, 176, 178, 185, 193, 217, 222, 231, 275, 291, 309, 310–11, 312, 313, 314, 315, 316, 318, 319, 328, 341–2; in World War II, 232, 237, 243–4, 245, 246, 251–2; in Revolution, 249, 262–3, 267, 268; aid agreement with, 280; support of PRRI, 300–1; in Papua settlement, 307, 309; support for Soeharto, 331, 337, 359; after Cold War, 364, 366, 370, 373, 378; after Soeharto, 397, 398. *See also* Caltex, Stanvac, Cold War  
United States of Indonesia, 261, 263, 269, 270  
University of Baghdad, 355  
University of California, Berkeley, 331  
University of Indonesia, 313, 328, 390  
Untung, 318  
Usalam, Molana, 12  
USSR, *see* Soviet Union. *See also* Russia  
*Usulbiyah, Kitab*, 50–1, 109  
'Uthman, 3

Valckenier, A., 113, 117  
Van Tien Dung, 360  
Velsen, J. van, 114  
Vienna, Congress of, 144

Vietnam, Vietnamese, 21, 95, 153, 310, 313, 315, 316, 342, 360  
Village Law (1979), 351  
Village Regulation (1906), 188–9, 351  
Vlaming van Outshoorn, A. de, 70–1  
VOC (*Vereenigde Oost-Indische Compagnie*), 29–134 *passim*; foundation of, 29–30  
*Volksraad* (People's Council), 194, 206–8, 210, 224, 227, 228, 230–2, 245  
*Vrije woord, het*, 209

Wachid Hasjim, 243, 245, 281, 355, 357  
Wahab Chasbullah, 212  
Wahhabis, 172–3, 212, 393, 410  
Wahid, Abdurrahman, *see* Abdurrahman Wahid  
Wahidin Soedirohoesodo, 197–9  
Wajo, 77  
Walilanang, Sunan, 11  
*wali sanga* (nine saints), 6, 11–12, 40, 41, 47, 50, 51, 59, 60. *See also names of individual walis.*  
Washington, G., 218  
wax, 22–3  
*wayang* (shadow-play), 57, 58–9, 62, 63, 101, 153, 197, 238, 295, 328  
*Wederopbouw*, 211  
*Wedhatama*, 152–3  
Weltevreden (Gambir), 156, 189, 197  
Westerling, 'Turk', 261, 269–70, 397  
West Indies, 145. *See also* Surinam  
West Kalimantan, federal state of, 261, 270  
West New Guinea, *see* Papua  
*Wicara Kras*, 127  
Widjojo Nitisastro, 335  
widow-burning, 8, 166  
Wijayakrama, 33  
Wijayaparakramawardhana, 20  
Wikramawardhana, 20  
Wilatikta, 12  
*wilde vaart*, 29  
wild schools ordinance, 227  
Wilhelmina, 183, 206  
William V, 73, 137  
Wilopo, 279, 281–2, 339  
Winter, C. F., Sr., 154  
Wiraguna, 86–7  
Wiranto, 379, 380, 381, 387, 388, 394–5, 403  
Wirasaba, 46, 47  
Wismoyo Arismunandar, 367, 372, 375  
Wiwoho Poerbohadidjojo, 230, 231  
women: in 2004 elections, 402–3; freedoms restricted, 368, 411; education for, 190, 204; in political organisations, 227, 308; as leaders, 389  
World Bank, 317, 331, 353, 371, 378  
World Trade Organisation, 377  
*Wulang Pakubuwana II, Sérat*, 111  
*Wulang Reh*, 128

Xanana Gusmão, R. K., 371, 378, 386, 387  
Xavier, F., 27  
*Xinhua*, 330

Yamin, M., 221, 222, 228, 238, 245, 259, 260, 279, 283, 295, 304  
Yani, A., 300, 308, 311, 313–14, 316, 317, 318–19  
Youth Pledge, 222  
Yasadipura I, 61  
Yogya, 120–1

Yogyakarta, 43, 121 *et seqq. passim*

***Yudanagara Wulang***, 61

Yugoslavia, 361, 363

Yunus (of Jépara), 39, 41

Yusril Ihza Mahendra, 392, 409

Yusuf Makassar, Shaikh, 96–8

Yusup, Molana (of Bantěn), 40

***Yusup, Sērat***, 50–1, 109, 128

Zainal Abidin (of Těrnate), 42

Zainul Arifin (of Bantěn), 129, 130

Zainul Asyikin (of Bantěn), 130

Zarkasih, 411

***Zeven Provinciën***, 227

Zheng He, 22

Zhou Enlai, 285, 315, 316, 317

Zia Ul-Haq, 353

Zijlker, A. sJ., 184

# Table of Contents

Title Page	4
Copyright	5
Dedication	6
Contents	7
List of Illustrations	9
List of Maps	11
Preface	12
A Note on Orthography	15
Abbreviations and Acronyms	17
Part I: The Emergence of the Modern Era	19
1. The Coming of Islam	20
2. General Aspects of Pre-colonial States and Major Empires, c. 1300–1500	33
3. The Arrival of the Europeans in Indonesia, c.1509–1620	40
4. The Rise of New States, c.1500–1650	50
5. Literary, Religious and Cultural Legacies	70
Part II: Struggles for Hegemony, c. 1630–1800	81
6. Eastern Indonesia, c.1630–1800	82
7. Western Indonesia, c. 1640–1800	92
8. Java, c.1640–82	98
9. Java, Madura and the VOC, c. 1680–1745	111
10. Java and the VOC, c.1745–92	129
Part III: The Creation of a Colonial State, c. 1800–1910	142
11. Java, 1792–1830	143
12. Java, 1830–1900	153
13. The Outer Islands, c.1800–1910	169
Part IV: The Emergence of the Idea of Indonesia, c. 1900–42	188
14. A New Colonial Age	189
15. The First Steps towards National Revival, c.1900–27	201
16. Repression and Economic Crisis, 1927–42	219
Part V: The Destruction of the Colonial State, 1942–50	235
17. The Second World War and the Japanese Occupation, 1942–5	236
18. The Revolution, 1945–50	249
Part VI: Independent Indonesia	272
19. The First Democratic Experiment, 1950–7	273

20. Guided Democracy, 1957–65	293
21. Creating the New Order, 1965–75	320
22. The New Order at its Peak, 1976–88	341
23. The Challenge, Crisis and Collapse of the New Order, 1989–98	360
24. Reforming Indonesia, 1998–2004	379
25. Indonesia since 2004	400
Notes and References	410
Bibliography	431
Maps	451
Index	456